ANALECTA ORIENTALIA
COMMENTATIONES SCIENTIFICAE DE REBUS ORIENTIS ANTIQUI
53

COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CATEGORIES

STRUCTURAL STUDIES IN THE SYNTAX OF SHENOUTEAN SAHIDIC

1986

PONTIFICIUM INSTITUTUM BIBLICUM
I-00187 ROMA PIAZZA PILOTTA 35

ARIEL SHISHA-HALEVY

COPTIC GRAMMATICAL CATEGORIES

STRUCTURAL STUDIES IN THE SYNTAX OF SHENOUTEAN SAHIDIC

1986

PONTIFICIUM INSTITUTUM BIBLICUM

I-00187 ROMA PIAZZA PILOTTA 35

ISBN 88-7653-255-2

IURA EDITIONIS ET VERSIONIS RESERVANTUR

©

PRINTED IN ITALY

TIPOGRAFIA POLIGLOTTA DELLA PONTIFICIA UNIVERSITÀ GREGORIANA
PIAZZA DELLA PILOTTA, 4 - ROMA

For Malca, with lots of love and gratitude

FOREWORD

This book is not a Coptic grammar, nor is it cast in the semblance of one: it is a series of studies of a fairly central area of Coptic syntax, a detailed systematic charting of a subsystem or more or less continuous range of grammatical phenomena.

It is with great pleasure and warmth of feeling that I wish to acknowledge the help and advice I have enjoyed for the last decade from my colleagues and close friends: N. Barri (Jerusalem), W.-P. Funk (Berlin-DDR), J. Horn (Göttingen), B. Layton (New Haven) and H. Quecke (Rome). To my teacher, Prof. H. B. Rosén of the Department of Linguistics, the Hebrew University, I owe my initiation into structural linguistics, and much more than that: a great many ideas in this book may be traced back to his brilliant lectures and stimulating classroom talks.

I am deeply thankful for the privilege of having been able to study under Prof. H. J. Polotsky since 1963 in the Departments of Linguistics and Egyptian, the Hebrew University. He has been an unfailing source of friendly encouragement, wise advice, constant inspiration — ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲩϫⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ. ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁⲯϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲛ-ⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉⲩⲏⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲣϫ; ⲟⲩϫⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ, ⲡⲁⲥⲁⲥ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲛⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ ⲛⲥⲁⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ, ⲉⲕⲕⲩⲃⲉⲣⲛⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲥⲛⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ.

My sincere thanks are extended to Mr. G. D. Myers, who spared no effort in improving my English style.

A. Shisha-Halevy

CONTENTS

Foreword VII

Preliminary Chapter: Aims, Scope and Method 1

Chapter 1. A Polyparadigmatic Patterning of Modifiers, in Unmarked, Position-Marked or Morphematic Cohesion 15

Chapter 2. The Adverbal Modifier Focalized: The Second Tense in Micro-/Macrosyntactic and Categorial Perspective 61

Chapter 3. The So-Called " Direct Object " Adverbal Expansion: Patterns, Paradigmatics and Distribution 105

Chapter 4. The Adnominal Nominal Modifier: A Definable ' Adjective ' Category in Coptic? 129

Chapter 5. Excursus: Neuter Gender as a Syntagmatically Manifested, Paradigmatically Defined Category 141

Chapter 6. The Augens, an Anaphoric-Cohesion Modifier of Pronominal Reference. Syntactic Prosody 155

Chapter 7. The Conjunctive: An N-Marked Conjugated Adnexal Modifier 185

Appendix: Textual Sources Constituting the Corpus 215

A. Editions of Published Manuscripts 215

B. Unpublished Fragments 218

Bibliographical References 221

Additional Remarks and References 237

Indices: Index of Subjects Discussed 239

Coptic Morphs and Words 249

Index Locorum 253

PRELIMINARY CHAPTER

AIMS, SCOPE AND METHOD

0.0.1 Rationale; selection of problems

0.1 Corpus; authenticity

0.1.1 Criteria of Shenouteanity

0.1.2 On Shenoute's Style

0.2 Statement of methodological orientation

0.2.1.1 Relationships, syntagmatic and paradigmatic; opposition and neutralization

0.2.1.2 Pattern and category

0.2.1.3 Profile of a grammatical phenomenon; identity; models

0.2.2 Levels, hierarchies, directions of analysis

0.2.3 Non-attestation

0.2.4 The Saussurean dualities

0.2.5 Macrosyntactic analysis

0.3 The modifier: a primary or hyper-category

0.4 Coptic grammatical research: a retrospect

0.5 Technical notification

" Das Koptische wird sobald keiner auslernen, und ich muss m ich bescheiden, wenn der Weg, den ich zeige, der richtige ist "

L. Stern, *Koptische Grammatik*, xv

" Willst du dich am Ganzen erquicken,
So mußt du das Ganze im Kleinsten erblicken "

Goethe, *Sprüche*

" Die paritätische Verbindung von Mikroskopie und Makrosko pie bildet das Ideal der wissenschaftlichen Arbeit; in Wirklichkeit kommt meistens die eine gegen die andere zu kurz "

Schuchardt-Brevier, 410

0.0.1 RATIONALE. SELECTION OF PROBLEMS

This study or series of studies aims primarily at being a methodologically conscious account of several interrelated phenomena in the grammar of an important literary corpus of Coptic; namely, the application of the procedures of structural analysis to the linguistic data in the works of SHENOUTE, the fourth-

fifth century Archimandrite. Secondarily, it is meant as a detailed description of a Coptic grammatical system made with programmatic and consistent regard for procedural tenets — indeed beginning with the principle of strictly *corpus-based* statements, " corpus " meaning a homogenous set of data, as idiolectal and synchronic as possible, and reflecting an *état de langue* as closely as possible. The success of this work will be judged on both counts: its only *prima facie* merit lies in its being the first of its kind.

This is not a " Grammar of Shenoutean Coptic " in the traditional and still conventional sense. Indeed, I contend that writing a " Grammar " is the only unacceptable way of writing about (i.e. reporting on) grammar, unless it be for the purpose of tuition (that is, applied linguistics), a " textbook ". I envisage two radically different conceptions for tackling the syntax of a given text or texts: the first a descending, text-to-word scanning, class-and-member analysis of a linear structure (Hjelmslev's " *deling* "), the second — which I adopt here as being more profitable at the present stage of Coptic grammatical research — a *categorial* (still class-and-member) scanning of sub-systems (Hjelmslev's " *leddeling* "), valid for and verifiable within the said texts: a " pattern grammar ". The sub-system or set of categories I have chosen for description is that of the MODIFIER. A look at the Tables of Contents — which are also a synopsis of patterns — would show the scope of this hyper-category (§0.3). While it may at first impulse appear that an exaggerated edifice is here erected on what is perhaps the narrowest basis possible, namely the expansion-marker morpheme N-, no one with a practical or theoretical acquaintance with the workings of Coptic grammar would deny the keynote standing of modifiers — adnominal, adverbal; verbal, non-verbal; adjunctal, predicative — in the overall picture of Coptic.

0.1 Corpus; authenticity

The statements made on the following pages will be strictly corpus-grammatical, based only on attested facts, with no extra- or interpolation, the " corpus " thus acquiring the additional sense of a " predictive sample of the language " (Harris 1951:§2.33). Whereas all Coptic grammars of general validity are in reality *mixing-grammars* and must be rejected in principle on the objection that they cannot claim to be descriptive of *any* single Coptic *état de langue*, but are, at best, overall, stereoscopic impressions of grammatical phenomena, it is my intention here to present systematically corpus-based facts in verifiable *Spezialgrammatik* statements. This objective constitutes a third facet of the *raison d'être* of the present study. Before proceeding to define my corpus, I feel I should defend, be it briefly, the choice of Shenoute's works as most suitable for the present purpose. While perhaps not many today would care to subscribe explicitly to Vergote's statement (*BiOr* 6:102 1949) that " Sahidic is at its purest in the New Testament " — whatever " pure " may here mean — the fact that this is implicitly accepted, without the least realization of its basic circularity, is reflected everywhere: in teaching policy and practice as well as in grammatical research, where almost all corpus-based monographs concern the Scriptures (e.g. Wilson 1970, Kickasola 1975) and yet claim general validity. I believe that this rooted bias is wrong, not merely from the theory-conscious descriptive linguist's point of view — who would of course reject at the outset any aprioristic evaluating preference for a given corpus — but, more fundamentally, since we badly need a formulation of authentic (in the sense of " untranslated ") grammatical usage for Coptic before we can even begin to argue contrastively about the native-idiomatic *vs.* Greek components of Scripture Coptic, and the degree and quality of artificiality, of adherence to the *Vorlage* and of its influence on the system of the translation. Moreover, the monolithic nature of the Scripture corpus cannot be taken for granted, but must be established through independent description of its constituents. Thus, the precedence of the authentic (though later) source over the translated (albeit earlier, and, by dint of historical prestige, " classical ") ought to be obvious. For a large, homogenous, untranslated literary corpus there is nothing in Coptic to compete with Shenoute's writings. It is, I am convinced, precisely this kind of source that is advisable as a *testo di lingua* for a grammatical treatise meant to depict

grammatical usage as a system [1]. One may thus add a fourth element to the *raison d'être* of the present work, namely the need to find a way of representing the grammar of Coptic literary norm as realistically as possible.

As for the source material itself: the self-evident major problem here lies in the obvious necessity of basing the descriptive statements on a corpus the Shenouteanity of which is at least reasonably certain, by direct or indirect attribution: on the strength of internal extra-linguistic information, unambiguous linguistic (grammatical, phraseological, " stylistic ") data, or — most difficult to formulate — the accumulation of factors of familiarity, the sense of norm and idiosyncrasy, the philologist's *Sprachgefühl* [2]. There is here an evident danger of circularity of applying to doubtful texts criteria of authenticity distilled from a collection including these self-same sources, or taking as Shenoutean and admitting as basis for critical statements material eligible solely on the strength of these doubtful texts. On the face of it, this pitfall may seem easy enough to avoid, yet in the actual process of selecting, sifting and describing the texts, with simultaneous isolation of critical characteristics, such slips are ever imminent. On the other hand, the highly selective approach is at odds with the pressing need for more complete documentation. My decision has been not to compromise in this matter, and accordingly texts of doubtful (yet possible) Shenouteanity, although certainly consulted and occasionally quoted, have been left outside the core of critical corpus: such sources are indicated by queries in the Appendix lists. Needless to say, such selection involves making subjective and in all probability provisional decisions, which may be contested on the basis of different judgement or independent contrary evidence (e.g. an explicitly attributed parallel turning up, a passage identified as non-Shenoutean by scholars more competent than myself in patristic lore, and so on). The actual procedure is in fact not circular but spiral: from a bona-fide core one works out, along ever-increasing radii, to a periphery of doubtful sources, always drawing upon the newly familiar territory for criteria. I have used all major, minor and minimal published editions of Shenoute and most of the unpublished manuscripts: it is especially with regard to the latter that the above reservation is made.

0.1.1 Criteria of Shenouteanity are too many and too various — even pending a systematic working-over of the corpus— to be enumerated here. A few have been suggested by the present writer (1975, 1976a); others (like ⲧⲱ ⲉⲧⲱ, ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲩⲱⲛⲉ, the notorious " Disiunctio Sinuthiana " [3], lexical favourites or monopolies — ⲩⲟⲟⲩ " incense ", (ϩⲱϥⲧ)ϩⲉϥⲧ- " eject ", ⲩⲱⲃϩ " be withered ", ⲩⲱⲕϩ " be/dig deep ", ⲕⲣⲟϥ, ⲁⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ and so on [4]) are well known [5]; numerous others (like ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲉ- " by

[1] An early lone advocate of Shenoute as a basis for a Coptic syntax was Spiegelberg (1909:440). In the Department of Linguistics, the Hebrew University of Jerusalem, first acquainstance with Coptic through Shenoute is characteristic of students approaching Coptic with a purely linguistic motivation: they testify to an entirely different impression of the language and, on the whole, get a better grasp of it, although this may be partly due to their training.

[2] See Lindroth, " Das Sprachgefühl, ein vernachlässigter Begriff ", *IF* 55:1-16 (1937). Kern (1888:139), criticising (wrongly, I believe) H. Paul for using as argument (Paul 1920:§258) the fact that the German *Sprachgefühl* does not distinguish between adverb and adjective in predicative status, says: " Wenn doch die gelehrten Grammatiker nicht so oft auf das Sprachgefühl sich da berufen wollten, wo es lediglich darauf ankommt, sprachliche Erscheinungen zu beurteilen! Gewiss weiss das Sprachgefühl hier von einem Unterschied nicht, weil es überhaupt über wissenschaftliche Dinge unwissend ist: dafür ist es eben Gefühl ". What Kern here opposes to the " linguistic intuition " must be pre-analytic, aprioristic so-called " scientific informedness ", a kind of praeter-factual intelligence which is the cardinal sin in descriptive misinterpretation, while Paul's *Sprachgefühl* is but a misnomer for " listener's model information ".

[3] ⲁ ⲡⲁϩⲛⲧ ⲟⲩⲱⲩⲥ ⲏ ⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱⲩⲥ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲛⲧ (*P* 130[5] 19 pr); see Shisha-Halevy 1976a:37ff.; cf. Fehling 1969:216-8; this is a kind of " linguistic self-criticism " (Jespersen's term, in a 1935 article of that name), or compulsive " legalistic "-precisionist quirk. Other typical Shenoutean turns of phrase, constructions and figures will be pointed out in the course of the present work, without going into such difficult questions as how a " figure " is to be defined (cf. Fehling 1969:7ff.), the degree of awareness in the use of a given construction, its functional charge and cotextual correlation.

[4] Cf. Shisha-Halevy 1976b:364ff.

[5] See Amélineau, *Oeuvres de Schenoudi* I (1907) xiii ff. The serious practical problem of distinguishing Shenoute's works

which I mean to say ", rhetoric-argumentative figures using ϣϫϵ-, a " ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧ- " hyperbatic Nominal Sentence pattern, collocations of the " irreversible binomial " [6] type like ⲣⲁⲛ - ⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ, ⲧⲉϩⲣⲉ - ⲑⲃⲥⲱ, ϫⲱϩⲙ - ϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ, ⲕⲣⲙⲣⲙ - ⲅⲛⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ, are yet to be properly definied and statistically established in special studies; some have to do with peculiarities of dialectal admixture or " substratal " traces (Shisha-Halevy 1976b, cf. Spiegelberg 1909:441), others with a more or less fragmentated stylistic impression, yet others are definable in terms of subsystems of grammatical usage, such as the one under scrutiny here: this adds yet another motivation to this study, since the conclusions arrived at and the " Shenouteanisms " resolved here could carry considerable practical-diacritic weight. We are, of course, in search of the *converging* of the various symptoms, the cumulative evidence. Despite all this, we shall still have to contend with numerous instances of untypical Shenoute, where one cannot improve upon Zoega's " *existimo* ", " *arbitror* ", " *nisi fallor* ", " *conjicio* " and the like. A nice methodological issue is that of the sub-corpus of quotations, mainly biblical, interwoven in the text. There is again the technical difficulty of recognizing a quoted segment of the text where it is not signalled as such (by ⲭⲁϩ ϫⲉ-, ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲁϩ ϫⲉ-, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ/ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ/ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ϫⲉ-, and the like; an instance of unsignalled quotation is *Ch.* 115.23f. = *Mt.* 3:12). More importantly, these quotations (and, significantly, biblical *reminiscences*) give us a glimpse into an extraneous system of grammar, where, for example, ⲩⲁⲧⲛⲁⲩ contrasts with Shenoute's own ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲩⲱⲡⲉ (§2.5.0.2), ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲭⲥⲱⲧⲙ with Shenoute's paradigm of post-imperatival forms (§7.2.1.1.5), in application to which many of the statements made below are simply not valid. Shenoute's own awareness of this contrast of norms is evident, since he puts it to rhetorical use, switching now and again to the Scripture diasystem, ringing diaphasic changes, achieving archaic, pathos-carrying, authoritative effects. As a rule, I have left quotations and reminiscences out of my account, nevertheless referring to them on occasion in contrastive terms; excerpt-quotations, as well as Shenoute's own conscious archaisms, will be duly noted.

Admittedly, in the exposition I have not always drawn uniformly on all sources: unpublished MSS have been called on mainly for scarcely documented phenomena. For some studies (notably Ch. 7, the conjunctive) I have used a core corpus (Leipoldt + Chassinat) with added peripheral evidence, aiming for a higher degree of homogeneity for some central issues.

0.1.2 Shenoute's style. A measure of Shenoute's literary standing (" the greatest of all writers in the Coptic language ", Worrell 1945:22) is the frequency of comments on his style. A brief review of these not always favourable reactions is rewarding, since it illustrates the traditional approach to Coptic idiomatic syntax. Zoega (1805), though not the first to edit fragments of Shenoute's work — this distinction goes to Mingarelli — first noted the extremes which Shenoute's " *dicendi modus* " can attain, a very important piece of information indeed: on the one hand, he observes (588) " sententiarum emphatica inversio... fervidae illae declarationes... epistolae illae parabolis et paradigmis refertae... scripta stylo plano atque fluido digesta "; on the other hand (*ibid.*, 483) " stylus pedestris et humilis... lectu facilis, stylus placidior... quam is quo uti solet ". The first of the two, Shenoute's idiosyncratic, overwrought and often overstating mood is naturally the one most often pointed out; either admiringly: " the fury, eloquence and beauty of the language " (Hyvernat in the introduction to his manuscript catalogue of

from those of other homiletic writers, and especially of his successor, Besa, cannot be solved on a stylistic basis alone (see §0.1.2) but must wait for a comprehensive statement of Shenoute's linguistic usage, a Grammar, Phraseology and Lexicon of Shenoute. The attribution by stylistic impression alone has occasionally misled editors (notoriously Amélineau, even Crum in a few of his " Sh "s in the Dictionary, also in his catalogues). See on this issue Ladeuze, *Étude sur le cénobitisme pakhômien* (1898) 151f.; Kuhn, *Muséon* 66:225f. (1953), 71:376ff. (1958), and in the introduction to his edition of Besa (CSCO 157/copt.21, 1956) p.xiii f. The so-called " Pseudo-Shenoute " texts (ed. Kuhn, CSCO 206-7/copt.29-30, 1960 with an unedited parallel codex, *B.L.Or.* 12689) have a different standing: they seem to be somehow based on, and to contain, genuine Shenoute material (Shisha-Halevy 1975:472f., 477, 1976b:362f.). Regarding Leipoldt's No.76 and non-shenoutean fragments included in Amélineau's edition, see the Appendix.

[6] Malkiel 1959.

1886-7 to the Woide-Clarendon Press collection, now in the Bodleian Library, Oxford); " L'auteur le plus original, le plus passionné, celui dont la langue est la plus riche et le vocabulaire le plus complet " (Amélineau, *Miss.* IV [1895] 497) or with more or less discerning criticism: " La phrase de Schenoudi n'est pas la phrase assez simple, assez analytique, des autres auteurs coptes; c'est une phrase compliquée, aussi synthétique qu'elle peut l'être, tourmentée, coupée d'incises et de propositions subordonnées " (Amélineau, *Œuvres de Schenoudi* I [1907] xiv)[7]. Leipoldt, the great editor of Shenoute, also comments somewhat adversely on his stylistic idiosyncrasies (1903:§§11,13: his characterization, albeit subjective and psychologistic, is at times quite apt): " Ihm fehlt die harmlose Naivetät, fehlt die schlichte Einfalt, fehlt die kindliche Ausdrucksweise... ". Leipoldt distinguishes between " depression " and " exultation " in Shenoute's mood, in his works he distinguishes between, on the one hand, the sermons, which exhibit a style " recht hölzern " and in which " fliessen Worte und Sätze ruhig dahin. Die einzelnen Teile werden breit und äusserlich von einander geschieden, die Gedanken oft und fast ungeschickt wiederholt. Selbst den Ermahnungen... fehlt es an Kraft und Wärme ", and, on the other, the epistles, in which more emotion is in evidence: " sprunghaft... überstürzen sich die Sätze ". Worrell's comment is more restrained (1945:24): " His style is not polished, but it shows some rhetorical skill. He is original and difficult... he had a great command of the language and shaped it ". Obviously, none of the critics make an attempt to glimpse, through the personal style and rhetoric of our author, the true pageant of native, idiomatic (and often colloquial) Coptic: " style " has obliterated syntax, and the *point de repère* is yet again the norm of Scripture Coptic.

0.2 Statement of methodological orientation

In this series of studies I shall view grammatical phenomena from a European-structuralist viewpoint. This is not the place and there is hardly the space to embark here on a detailed account of this school, since even the European brand of structuralist linguistics, far from being a monolithic school with an agreed, easily epitomizable code of procedure, is rather an ensemble of individualistic, frequently eclectic approaches, tenets and codifications[8]; what follows is a concise programmatic exposé of the most consequential principles of analytic policy to which I adhere in this work.

0.2.1.1 Relationships, syntagmatic and paradigmatic. Opposition and neutralization. A language element can be described as having a value (role, function, meaning), as grammatically operative, only in terms of its relationship to other elements[9]: syntagmatic (linear, (co)textual) or paradigmatic (commutative, categorial) relationship. The former is interpretable in terms of dependence, rection (government), conditioning, (in)compatibility, sequence (arrangement, placement); the latter in terms of opposition and of relevance, and its negation, neutralization; of substitution and category.

[7] Observing nevertheless that Shenoute's style could at times be quite different: " Il avait ses moments d'accalmie, où sa phrase était limpide... les lions ne rugissent pas toujours, ils badinent quelquefois et jouent avec leurs lionceaux " (*ibid.*). Note Amélineau's characteristic eloquence. Without rating too highly his grammatical acumen, it is nevertheless amusing to note that Amélineau writes of Shenoute's sentences with subordinate clauses in which one is liable to go astray, unless one holds firmly to the rules of grammar, " règles encore peu connues que d'ailleurs l'auteur viole, et avec la plus magnifique désinvolture " (*ibid.*, and see too pp. xxix ff.).

[8] Some valuable retrospective surveys and guides for further reading: Lepschy 1972 (see p. 152f. for further state-of-the-art reports); Mohrmann *et al.* 1961, esp. pp. 126ff., 196ff., 294ff.; articles by Koerner, Engler, Lepschy, Hymes and Fought in Sebeok, ed. 1975:717-1176; see also Bazell 1954, Coseriu 1969, and numerous works referred to below. I must first deny all intention to convey an impression of a nice-and-tidy code of procedure, and confess my awareness of the inevitable superficialities. The following paragraphs are neither a general linguistics manifesto nor a *profession de foi*, but jotted highlights of orientation for the grammatical studies to follow.

[9] In Saussure's words (Godel 1954:63): " Il n'y a jamais rien qui puisse résider dans *un* terme ", cf. Saussure 1949:150ff.; Benveniste 1963:16; Siertsema 1965:94f., Coseriu 1969:58ff.: this is the meaning of " grammatical system ": there are no elements outside it.

The simplest oppositions [10] are *binary* (including *privative*, with two poles or terms related to each other as *marked* : *unmarked* [11]). Any one member of an opposition may be *zero* [12] or neutral (non-functional). Neutralization (*Aufhebung*, suppression of opposition) is a syntagmatic-and-paradigmatic event just as significant as opposition [13]: the governed or conditioned representative member in a case of neutralization cannot be said to have any meaning, since meaning depends on and presupposes opposition, the possibility of choice [14], the existence of a paradigm. (Incidentally, any change in the number of terms in a paradigm entails a reassignment of the meaning of the individual members.) Neutralization, like opposition, is only definable for a specific environment.

0.2.1.2 Pattern and category. A category is expressed, realized and defined by a substitution-list or *paradigm* (of affixes, syntagms or constructions), which is its *signifiant* [15]. This paradigm is in turn valid (being resolvable) only in a given environment. Accordingly, the category is definable only by its localization, in terms of the sequence/substitution set of coordinates. The category is a constituent part of a *pattern*: the pattern is defined as *an ordered sequence of categories* (*paradigms*); but since commutation is dependent on the extent of environment established as relevant [16], pattern delimitation is a component of decisive importance in the definition. Pattern boundaries, however, are relative (in the sense that they are gradable on a scale of rank of ever-decreasing extent, from text-entirety downwards [17]). Consequently, established classes or categories are correspondingly gradable on a scale of varying analytic delicacy [18].

0.2.1.3 Profile of a grammatical phenomenon; identity; models. As stated above, the identification of a grammatical entity is effected by a positional/commutational localization: the point where the coordinates of compatibility and commutability meet in this identificational matrix is its analytic identity, its name [19]: this, no more, no less, is the analytic information we can give on it. We may add,

[10] Classified by Trubetzkoy (1939:60ff.); see Coseriu 1969:120ff. Oppositions are formal *and* functional, in a formal system and a *système de valeur*, as the two faces of the *signifiant - signifié* linguistic coin. We accordingly adopt as the basic premise in analytic procedure that a *formal* difference must mean a *functional* one.

[11] Trubetzkoy 1939:67, 77, 84; Martinet 1965:180ff.; see below Ch.5, footnote 24.

[12] On the (by definition) structural concept of a " zero element " (significant absence) see Saussure 1949:123f., 163f., Meier 1961, with abundant literature.

[13] See classifications and discussion by Trubetzkoy 1936, 1939:69ff., 206f.; Hjelmslev 1939 (Siertsema 1965:180ff.); Coseriu 1969:125, 132, 234ff.; Robins 1970:41ff.

[14] An example: the circumstantial conversion as an expansion of an indefinite nominal nucleus can only be said to be " adnominal " — no more; whereas each of the two main verbal expansions of a *definite* noun, viz. the relative and circumstantial, has its " meaning ", respectively, attributive and adnexal modification.

[15] " Paradigm " — not in its arbitrarily restricted, traditional, schoolbook sense of " substitution-list in the minimal (morphologic, ' word ') environment ", but also in the sense of commutability in the larger-than-word extent, including paradigms of constructions. See Siertsema 1965:175ff., 262ff., Seiler 1967:517f. (No.1).

[16] An example: the converters: ϵ-circ., ϵ-Sec. Tense, ϵτϵ- (relative), ⲛϵ- (preterite) constitute a single category (paradigm) only in the extent of the minimal environment, namely the converted conjugation form (or predication in general). Their mutual commutability ceases to be true once we extend the pattern boundaries to include, say, the immediately preceding paradigm; this " morphological " category is still further fragmentated if the operative environment is extended even more.

[17] Halliday 1961:251, 261. See §0.2.2.

[18] Halliday 1961-260f.

[19] Cf. Saussure 1949:150ff. This is the policy adopted here regarding the difficult theoretical dilemma of *identity* vs. *homonymy*, which will often arise in the course of the following descriptions. An item will be judged and " named " only by reference to the above criteria, to which one must add allo-forms in order to synthesize a " surname ". For example: the plural definite article and the " nota relationis " are both represented in Coptic by a nasal phoneme; their distinct identities, however, are established on the basis of (a) their paradigms and syntax, (b) their allomorphs in a specific corpus (e.g. in Chassinat's edition of Shenoute: ⲛ-/ⲙ- for the *nota relationis*, ⲛ-/ⲙ-/ⲛ-/ⲛ-/ⲛϵ- for the plural article). Another example: ⲯⲁⲣϵ-/ⲯⲁ- (aorist affirmative base) *vs.* ⲯⲁ-/ⲯⲁⲣⲟ= (preposition).

or occasionally prefer, a synthetic statement: the various (conditioned) alloforms of our entity. This gives us a different facet of its identity, which, together with the analytic one, I consider the complete descriptive statement to be made concerning any grammatical element. It follows that we must not, indeed cannot, " import " any external pre-conceived notion into the grammar of a language as a ' category ". This *caveat* is immediately and eminently applicable to the part-of-speech assignment of a given element, to which we shall have the opportunity to return now and again [20].

I must here briefly refer to a meta-meta-linguistic perplexity, one that is usually ignored in general linguistic discussion, namely, the so-called " hocus-pocus " *vs.* " God's truth " nature of theoretical constructs [21]. While we pretend to depict in our descriptions a *modèle de récepteur* situation, it is often obvious that the presented models are really of our own creation. It might be claimed, and with very good reason, that any synthesizing model, departing from, assuming or preceding [22] the unstructured data is inevitably an artificial (and to a varying extent arbitrary) construct, superimposed on the data material. This may also apply in general to what we call " structure " and " system " [23]. Nonetheless, I consider these models (a) legitimate, valid and viable, provided they be based on sound observation; (b) desirable, in the sense of " constructive ", effectively encoding meta-linguistic information in a conventionally decodable manner [24]. Still, it cannot be claimed that they are exclusively or universally *true*.

0.2.2 Levels, hierarchies, directions of analysis. Among the meta-linguistic models or " fictions " referred to in the preceding paragraph are some which I consider fallacious and which I have tried to avoid in the present exposition. First and foremost among these is the *stratification* of analysis, the " levels ". Even without resorting to the special pleading warranted by the singular typological reasons [25] that make Coptic much less subject to the preliminary theoretical distinction between *word* and *sentence*, *morphology* and *syntax* than Indo-European or Semitic languages, the advisibility as well as the validity and legitimacy of this particular model must be (and often has been) questioned [26]. The analysis must, I believe, be *continuous*, text-to-morpheme, class-and-member; the word would be but a stage in this downward analysis, an intermediate pattern-unit, defined (like other patterns) by inner constituency, sequence, prosodic characterization and boundary signalling, a syntagm [27] like others.

[20] Cf. Barri 1975b:§6; Baum 1976:139-143. Indeed, I accept without reservation Sapir's dictum (*Language* 125) that " No logical scheme of the parts of speech — their number, nature, or necessary confines — is of the slightest interest to the linguist. Each language has its own scheme. Everything depends on the formal demarcation it recognizes ". Written sixty years ago, one cannot, unfortunately, dismiss this warning today as no longer necessary. Similarly, one must sadly concede that Halliday's optimistic belief (*Studies in Linguistic Analysis*, 1957, p. 57) that " transference of grammatical categories is a dead horse no longer to be flogged " cannot have been uttered with Coptic in mind. See also §0.3 and Chapter 1, footnote 1.

[21] Garvin 1954:74f.; Householder 1952; Baum 1976:139-143.

[22] Cf. Saporta, *Word* 12:12 (1956): " It is clear that linguistic patterns are highly patterned. What is not clear is whether this fact is best considered the result of a linguistic analysis or the basis for this analysis "; Schuchardt (Spitzer 1928:411f.): " Nun gibt es Systeme, die schon fertig in den Dingen liegen und von uns nur entdeckt werden, und Systeme, die wir bilden, um sie in die Dinge hineinzulegen... Systeme dieser Art haben nur zeitweilige und bedingte Geltung "; also *ibid.* 299f.

[23] Consider Halliday's definitions (1961:246f., 254ff.).

[24] Cf. Hall's " fictions " (1965).

[25] Cf. Misteli's typologically oriented review of Stern's *Grammatik* (1982:448ff., 454 " no words, only groups — larger or smaller, closer or looser "); Stern xi f., Steinthal–Misteli 1893:272f.; and see the discussion of the Coptic " word " below, §6.0.2.3, with further references.

[26] See Barri 1977:13ff., 21ff., 24ff. for a critical research-historical survey of the question; on the problems involved in defining the word, see Lyons 1968:194-208; Halliday 1961:261. Cf. De Groot " Wort und Wortstruktur ", *Neophilologus* 24/25: 221-233 (1939/40); De Boer, " Morphologie et syntaxe ", *CFS* 6:5-25 (1946/7); and the telling reponses in *Acts of the Sixth Congress of Linguists* (1949), discussion of Question III. For Coptic see already Stern 1880:XI.

[27] In the Saussurean sense (Saussure 1949:170), cf. Frei, *Studia Gratulatoria Groot* (1962) 139: " combinaison de deux ou plusieurs unités également présentes qui se suivent ". This is also Baudouin de Courtenay's use of the term (*A Baudouin de Courtenay Anthology*, tr. and ed. E. Stankiewicz, 1972 p. 267).

Coptic morphology could be conceived of naïvely, as a study, synchronic or diachronic, of *purely formal* inner regularities of structure, with no functional correlates (e.g. for the nominal and infinitive " classes ") [28].

Another synthesizing hierarchy which I reject in synchronic description is that of primary *vs.* secondary functions [29]. This is, I believe, an arbitrary and distorting distinction: there is no hint in the actual, i.e. environment-defined, signalling function of elements, of any scale of precedence or importance. (One encounters terms like " primary " or " main " and " original " — both in the only meaningful, *diachronic* sense, and in a vague uncommitted sense — often confusedly understood as attributes of " use ", " function " and the like.) On the other hand, *rule ordering* or *analytic* (*descriptive*) *order* [30] is acceptable as a descriptive artifice, a necessary heuristic means of interrelating observables, not a dynamic theory of what actually takes place in the system [31]. Another hierarchy which I adopt implicitly is that of *analytic delicacy*, distinguishing between the resolution of primary and secondary classes [32].

0.2.3 Non-attestation. An inevitable embarrassment of a structural corpus-based grammar (perhaps more acute with a dead language, where no informant can extend our corpus at need) is having to puzzle out the *significance of non-attestation*. Even in a corpus as extensive as ours, the non-occurrence of some theoretically possible or expected element or construction must be weighed for possible structural significance, status of *case vide*, as against fortuitousness: we must see our way to distinguishing between systemic and accidental non-occurrence [33]. This perplexity is all the more acute here, since the present study is not an exhaustive inventory-catalogue of all paradigmatic or even syntagmatic possibilities, but an account of grammatical *structure*: the lists in this work should be seen as open-ended, due to the certainty of the corpus being eventually extended and the ever-present possibility of a descriptive oversight. In my opinion, the only theoretically acceptable way out of this predicament is the one, based on an examination of the distribution-structure, suggested by Rosén (1968). If a non-attestation of item (entity, phenomenon) x is dependent upon a specific environment and environmental properties, upon a specific pattern P_1, and it can be shown that a different pattern, P_2 in which x does occur, is in this respect in complementary (suppletive) distribution with P_1, we may consider the non-occurrence of x in P_1 *a fact of grammatical absence* [34] which we should not expect to find refuted (by a chance attestation) in the corpus under observation. If, however, x does not feature in any complementary environment, the non-attestation may be interpreted as mere non-occurrence, possibly to be rectified in the near future (unless yet another pattern, P_3, including x, is eventually found to be in an " allo "-relationship with P_1).

[28] Somewhat in the sense of Martinet's use of the term (1967:§4.6 " l'étude des variantes de signifiant "), or Vergote's in his *Grammaire copte* (Ia, 1973, " morphologie synthématique ").

[29] See (for example) Kuryłowicz 1964; criticism by E. Koschmieder in *Die Welt der Slawen* 7:409-22 (1962).

[30] See Bloomfield 1933:212f.; Rosén 1964:§46, 1970; Barri 1977:21 (" the order of what the linguist does "). I have a similar view also of that other phenomena-relating metalinguistic construct, the *transformation*, except as a presentation device (cf. Schuchardt [Spitzer 1928:296]: " Umkehrung ist zwar statisch vorhanden, aber nicht genetisch ").

[31] " *Structural* " as distinct from *linear* (sequential) order (Bloomfield 1933:210; Tesnière 1965:16f., 19ff.; Rosén 1970) has a different standing altogether, reflecting, in my opinion, linguistic reality and not a model of convenience. Another non-dynamic structuring device employed below is that of *Immediate-Constituents* (IC) analysis.

[32] Halliday 1961:272f.

[33] For instance, the comparison of " adverb " paradigms in the various positions and functions is meaningless unless one can estimate their limits.

[34] Some examples: ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ " thus " is *absent* as predicate in the Bipartite pattern, since it is predicated in the # Predicate - ⲛⲉ# pattern (§1.2.1.2); *ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲕ-/ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲕ- are *absent*, since the imperative fills their slots; the #*Second Tense (negative) → focal interrogative modifier# is *absent* in the # Sec. Tense + interrogative focal modifier# pattern, since a different construction, viz. # interrogative modifier → (negative) First Tense# supplies the " missing " item.

0.2.4 The Saussurean dualities [35]. Corpus-based description makes unnecessary stand-taking on the *synchrony* : *diachrony* model, which is probably no less fictive and conveniently idealizing than others [36]. Structural description and the very concept of system are essentially static, just as they are primarily internal, i.e. non-comparative. The situation as regards the *langue* : *parole* dichotomy is somewhat more complicated. This distinction has often been criticized as inadequate, and additional stratification has been suggested. Hjelmslev's conception fluctuates between three and four main strata of language, adding the " norm ", an essentially social and system(*langue*)-oriented, abstract set of rules, and the " usage ", a *parole*-oriented, also socially determined set of habits [37]. Coseriu [38] introduces the " norm " as an intermediate level, allowed for in the abstract system of the language and its individual adaptation (the *parole* is its concrete realization). The norm allows for individual variation, with the selection and fixation of variants. In the context of these two reconcilable views, what we are attempting to discern in the present study would be Shenoute's *usage* and the Coptic literary *norm* behind it. The textual realization is the *parole*, while the features of the innermost core or deepest layer, the Coptic-Sahidic *langue*, are abstractable from a series of *norm* reports. " Usage " approximates " idiolect " (in Bloch's definition, " an individual's set of linguistic habits "), and it is Shenoute's idiolect, or whatever layer of it is reflected in his written works, that we aim at portraying, with no reference to other idiolects, dialects or other subdivisions of the Coptic language, or to any " general " (i.e. not syncorporal) formulation or synthetic-panoramic conception of grammar.

0.2.5 Macro-syntactic analysis

0.2.5.1 Textual structure (syntagmatics). The realization of (a) the circular nature of pattern delimitation (*paradigm* ⇕ *extent of resolution environment*), (b) the fact that continuous text-to-morpheme analysis is the only way to break this circularity, and (c) the fact that the " context-free " syntactic unit has as little meaning or relevance in the functioning of a language as the illusory isolated morphological one — all this must lead us to recognize the *text* as the prime syntactic unit, the prime pattern, the prime analyzable entity, subdivisible again and again [39]. Just as the " word ", definable in ad-hoc junctural terms, exists (i.e. functions) only with reference to its environment (phrase and clause), so these too cannot claim any automatic, intrinsic prominence, or pre-analytic status of self-evident significance, but are referable to phrase/clause-including subtextual stretch units. The macro-syntactic view of grammatical phenomena has been adopted, on occasion, in traditional (" sentence ") grammar, in offhand, opportunistic forays into the " context ". The context has been constantly, more or less consciously, consulted, " employed " as an aid for determining function [40], but rarely formalized, included in the pattern, except in the consideration of traditional (stylistics- or rhetorics-oriented [41]) cases, like conditional complexes, *consecutio temporum*, etc. In the present work (esp. Chs. 2 and 7) I attempt a formal description of the grammatically relevant context or cotext, i.e. " cotext patterns " [42], " cotext-

[35] See Lepschy 1972:Ch.II, with further reading indicated.

[36] Hall 1965:337.

[37] This is an oversimplified account of Hjelmslev's complicated and mobile terminology (see Siertsema 1965:140ff.).

[38] 1969:151f., 1971:53-72, 1975:39ff.

[39] In Halliday's terminology (1961:251, with n. 30) this descending analysis is gradable on a scale of " *rank* ".

[40] Cf. Polotsky's exemplary application of the context in the *Études* (Polotsky 1944).

[41] Several important syntactic phenomena, originally treated in a para-grammatical frame of reference, such as rhetorical " figures ", will be of interest to us in the following pages; " Anredestil ", " enumerative Redeweise ", " polare Redeweise ", " parataktischer (appositioneller) Nachtragsstil ", " anacolouthon ", " anaphora/cataphora ", " ellipsis ", " pairing ", " parenthesis ", " colon ", " protasis - apodosis ", and others.

[42] I am using " cotext " for the relevant textual (syntagmatic) environment, reserving " context " for both extra-linguistic, situational, background environment of sphere of validity and the not directly relevant textual one.

sensitive rules " (Lyons). An important feature of the textual linear system is the coherence or *cohesion* of its constituent parts; this will occupy us in several junctions. Another, closely related feature, constituting the basis for the discussion in Ch. 2, is the *thematic structure* of the text: the concatenation and development of ' theme + rheme ' patterns, involving the concepts of the information unit and its *focus*.

0.2.5.2 The second, PARADIGMATIC dimension of the textual system may be conveniently called the " paradigm of validity ", i.e. " the textual category for which a given grammatical-systemic statement is valid ". This is approximately the *texteme* in the textological structure or *texture* (cf. the paradigm in the syntagmatic sequence). It is clear, for instance, that the system recoverable in a narrative text (or narrative stretch) is quite different from that resolved, say, in a dialogue, where the grammatical inventory is much richer, perhaps maximal. One text (corpus component) may comprise several textemes or text classes, which should be distinguished and separated, in theory, in the pre-analytic stage. In reality, they are resolved in a circular process, on the strength of analysis results. The value (= function) of an element in one text-class is different, by structural definition, from its value elsewhere [43]. The definition of textual categories, text (sub)species or types, by reference to the grammatical system and structural distinctive features is one of the objectives of such text-based investigations as the present one.

0.2.5.2.1 THE RHETORICAL DIALOGUE is our case in point, the grammatically definable textual type most in evidence in Shenoute's writing. Without a rather involved delving into the particulars and theory of the dialogue [44] and an application of what we know of Shenoute's (and, in general, Byzantine) rhetorical theory and norms [45], it would be difficult to meet the challenge of a full and precise definition of this textual type. This would in any case require separate treatment, and must remain outside the scope of the present discussion. A few brief notes will perhaps give an idea of some of its features. (a) It is a one-way dialogue, an enhanced and distended allocution (with a captive and mute addressee). (b) " Rhetoricity " is a transcurrent (in a different sense, " suprasyntactic ") category, intersecting others; the " rhetorical dialogue " may include real dialogues, real and rhetorical narratives ("*paradeigmata*") [46]. (c) The first- and second-person referential system is pivotal, with several subsystems (e.g. WE [= I + you]: THEY, I : YOU [metaphorically THOU], WE : YOU, etc.). (d) Among grammatical peculiarities, we find constructions (incl. the so-called " figures "), word-order idiosyncrasies, " values " of constructions, e.g. the polemic function of the Cleft Sentence, characteristic particles and modifiers, and lexical preferences.

[43] Some striking Coptic cases in point: ϵⲩⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ (Second Future) is jussive in a preceptive cotext; ⲛϵ- (pret. converter) expresses a *durative past* outside a narrative stretch, but signals (with ⲡϵ) " *Relief* " (Weinrich) or tempo- or dimension-varying in a narrative cotext; ϵⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ (circ. perfect) is *continuative* in a narrative cotext; the conjunctive is a typical non-narrative form (partly corresponding to ⲁⲩ- (ⲁⲩⲱ) ⲁⲩ-, ⲁⲩ- ϵⲧⲣϵⲩ- in narration). For the Second Tense, a cotext-bound, macrosyntactic category *par excellence*, see Ch. 2. Note that both ⲛϵ- and the Second Tense are exponents of specific macrosyntactic status (§2.0.1.1), and can only be described adequately in a " context-sensitive grammar " (LYONS 1968:235ff.).

[44] Perhaps the most significant definitional feature of dialogue in this connection is its complexity: it is analyzable into two sub-structures of *allocution* and *response*, each with a distinct grammatical system of its own. Although not every dialogue is a " Wechselrede ", this may be taken as the ideal form.

[45] See MÜLLER 1956:54 (n. 3), 61ff.

[46] Some constituents of the rich paradigm inventory of the rhetorical dialogue: *rhetorical narrative* (*III* 38, 78); *real narrative* (*III* 208f., *IV* 198f.); *letters* (*III* 21,25); *invective address* (*Ch.* 19ff.); *report of conversation* (*Ch.* 50ff.); *praising address* (*Ch.* 84ff.); *dialogue within dialogue within dialogue* (*Ch.* 93ff., 97); *generic dialogue* (*III* 51), *dialogue within narrative* (*III* 38f.). Note that the system recoverable from the rhetorical narrative is much fuller than that of the non-rhetorical historical one, including such features as the Second Tense, conjunctive (§7.2.4.2), conditional constructions, etc.

0.2.5.3 REFERENCE. It would be out of place here to enlarge upon the current text-linguistic schools, trends, individual variations and controversies. Most theoreticians of this doctrine [47] underline its superior capabilities for dealing with problems of sub-textual grammar which the sentence-grammatical approach cannot satisfactorily solve. Some main concerns and preoccupations of text-linguistic study are: analysis of discourse structure [48], textual typology [49], textual system [50], thematic text structure (" Functional Sentence Perspective ", see §2.0.2.3) [51], and cohesion in the text [52].

0.3 THE MODIFIER: A PRIMARY OR HYPER-CATEGORY

...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲭⲁⲁⲛ ⲛⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲛⲙⲧⲟⲛ... (*IV* 176.3)
ⲉⲩϫⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲭⲓ ⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ (*IV* 96.12f.)
ⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲉⲗⲁϫⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ϩⲙⲡⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲕⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ,
ⲛⲅⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲉⲓ ϩⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ (*IV* 41.9f.)

ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ✝ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲏⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲥⲓϫⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ,
ⲛϥⲧⲙⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲛ✝-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ...
ⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ ϩⲛⲟⲩ; (*A 2* 364).

The present series of studies is concerned with the definition, resolution, compatibilities and commutations which constitute the taxonomic profile of the Coptic modifier. An impression of the range of its distribution can be obtained by studying the excerpts quoted above. This category, including all adnominal, adverbal [53], adnexal, and ad-pattern [54] satellites or expansions, would be considered, according to one's point of view, either *synthetic*, conveniently grouping together and condensing a number of paradigms in a continuous distributional structure [55]; or *analytic*, at a low level of delicacy [56]. This is a *primary* category, subdivisible, at a higher level of resolution (at which level the studies are actually conducted) into secondary classes, and these into yet more fragmentated subclasses. Although I cannot see any real incongruity between the two conceptions, I prefer the first (" polyparadigmatic hyper-cat-

[47] Some general programmatic, introductory, state-of-the-art or bibliographical reports: DRESSLER 1973, 1978; DRESSLER-SCHMIDT 1973; HARTMANN 1971; 1975. See also the introductory chapters in WEINRICH 1977; GRIMES 1975.

[48] See, for instance, HARRIS 1952; DANEŠ 1970; GÜLICH-HEGER-RAIBLE 1974; WEINRICH 1977, etc.

[49] E. G. HAUSENBLAS 1964; GÜLICH-RAIBLE 1972; WERLICH 1975.

[50] See the excellent WEINRICH 1977; a solitary work for (Late) Egyptian, HINTZE 1950-2.

[51] See, for instance, FIRBAS 1966; HALLIDAY 1967; BENEŠ 1968; DANEŠ 1974.

[52] PALEK 1968, HALLIDAY-HASAN 1976.

[53] " Noun " and " verb " have never been explicitly defined for Coptic. Those acquainted with this issue in pre-Coptic Egyptian will agree this is a far from trivial matter. They are definable, like other parts of speech, only in terms of pattern: " noun " — the paradigm expanding determinator pronouns (§§5.1.1.0.1f.), expanding the pre-object allomorph of a verb lexeme, privileged to occupy the actor slot of a verbal predication pattern etc.; " verb " — a conjugation-form (defined by POLOTSKY 1960a:§1). Thus the verb-lexeme (traditionally " infinitive ") is a nominal sub-class privileged to occupy the third position in the Tripartite pattern, not (with some exceptions) expanding ⲟⲩ-, i.e. in a different " determination " category from other noun sub-classes and finally alternating (true of some of the members of this sub-class) in regular proclitic pre-object allomorphs. This *cumulative* definition for Coptic corresponds to the " categorial " one, characterizing a part-of-speech by a cluster of morphological categories (case-gender-number, tense-mode-person) in use in languages of a different type. See SCHUCHARDT, SPITZER 1928:275.

[54] Note that " adnominal " and " adverbal " are telescoped ways of saying " modifying the noun/verb syntagm ". By " ad-pattern " I mean " modifying a *predicative* pattern ", usually used of a Nominal Sentence. " Adnexal " (" *adpredicative* " in SHISHA-HALEVY 1972) means " modifying by attaching or adjoining a (predicative) nexus "; see §7.1.3.

[55] The traditional and conventional conception of the part-of-speech proves on examination to be synthetic on two counts: first, as a *conglomerate* of categories rather than a single one; second, in mingling arbitrarily semasiological, syntactic and morphologic considerations of classification. See BRINKER 1972:63ff., and §0.2.1.3 above.

[56] See HALLIDAY 1961:272f.

egory ") for its " propaganda value ", as conveying more cogently the idea of the distributional continuity of the expansion — more specifically, the obliteration of the major traditional categorial differentiation of ADVERB *vs.* ADJECTIVE as a deep dichotomy (obviously the result of an imported and preconceived " part of speech " metalinguistic model). This is especially striking for the *adverb*. The Coptic " adverb " is by no means a specialized qualifier of verbs. Nor is the attributive satellite marked by N- characterized in any way as adnominal (N-modifiers constitute a crucial intermediate sub-category of postadjunctive modifiers which may profitably be considered the *point d'appui* for the primary category). Under the heading of " MODIFIER ", all sub-categories, all paradigms, are to be judged in their own light, and no other differentiation is necessary or meaningful. By (as it were) reshuffling and respacing them, we arrive at a position where we can consider the grammatical facts free of pre-analytic compartmentalization.

0.3.1 The term MODIFIER has here an exclusively formal, tagmemic reference: " satellite ", " expansion ". The semasiological aspect of the category is extremely variegated and is not, probably cannot be, an operational criterion for grammatical classification.

0.3.2 Four representative realizations or manifestations of this category are treated here: (a) the modifier in unmarked, or position-marked, or morphematic cohesion with its nucleus (modificatum): Chs. 1, 3, 4; (b) the modifier (adnominal/adpronominal) in anaphoric cohesion with its nucleus: the augens (Ch. 6); (c) the conjunctive, a verbal *adnexal* modifier (N-marked, combining the interdependences of nucleus-satellite and [logical] subject-predicate): Ch. 7; (d) the *focal* modifier (presented in a discussion of focalization patterns in general): Ch. 2. For a fuller impression and more details of these four manifestations, it is suggested the reader consult the Table of Contents opening each chapter.

0.4 Retrospect: coptic grammatical research

In view of the aims of the present work, which are fundamentally reoriented in respect to the traditional approach to Coptic grammar, I keep the critical examination of Coptological grammatical tradition to a minimum. It is of course impossible to treat studies of the pre-Polotsky era alongside a consideration of Polotsky's momentous contributions [57]. Several research-historical or state-of-the-art appreciations [58] have commented in more or less strong terms on the methodologically neglectful research history of Coptic grammar — indeed, the sad fact that general linguistic method and interest have to a considerable extent passed Coptic by is as true today as it was a hundred years ago, perhaps more true [59]. Without

[57] Most of the issues discussed in this work have not yet been treated *in extenso* by our Master. Only in one instance (the Second Tenses, Ch. 2) have I presumed to question his findings, but even there our differences are traceable to a basic divergence in methodological *Weltanschauung*. Prof. Polotsky's statements are by no means invalidated, and what I suggest is an alternative (in my opinion advantageous) view of the facts, conceivable only after he had blazed a trail to understanding the system.

[58] Polotsky 1971:55f.; Schenkel 1972, esp. 169ff. (on structuralism. Incidentally, Coptic, the language which played so crucial a role in Champollion's decipherment, is sadly underrepresented in this volume commemorating the 150th anniversary of this event); Callender 1973a:59f. on the rare structuralist approach; 61 ff., on Polotsky (Callender's implied reservation about Polotsky's structural method is unwarranted, although it is true that he has never openly broken with traditional [non-structural] 19th-century principles and models. As a matter of fact, Polotsky has never pledged himself to any one school of general linguistic method.) Junge 1974a is mainly a meta-meta-linguistic discussion, a critique of Schenkel's and Callender's papers. Funk 1978a; Mink 1978.

[59] Polotsky 1970:558. The severance of Coptic grammatical scholarship from general linguistics — a subject worthy of special study — is as old as Stern's *Grammatik*, published at the very time (1880 - the publication year of H. Paul's *Prinzipien der Sprachgeschichte*) that next door, so to speak, the Neogrammarian Doctrine emerged full-fledged from the controversies of the eighteen-sixties and seventies. Today one observes, not without envy, the methodologically careful, even pampering description of the minutest, most exotic " native dialect " (Pacific, Amerindian, Papuan. . .), and the smooth incorporation of living and dead Near and Far Eastern languages among those constituting the object of current general linguistic research — while Coptic, a para-

dwelling on individual descriptive flaws — examples can be found all over the place — one can compile a list of " seven deadly sins ", the more flagrant lapses in method since Stern's *Grammatik*. These are all the more blameworthy in dead-language grammar, where methodology ought to be, if anything, more rigorous, since one has no " native speaker " to check and control one's findings by or to extend one's corpus at wish. They are as follows, in a *diminuendo* order of persistence (not necessarily of consequence): A view of phenomena which is: *not corpus-based*, i.e. unhomogenous; *unstructural*, i.e. atomistic and absolutistic [60]; *uncotextual* (self-restricted to an arbitrarily delimited extent of analysis); *neglectful of the interdependence of signifié and signifiant*, form and function (also the distinction of alternation and variation). This view has been overtly *ethnocentric* [61], in terminology as well as in many " docile " calques of extraneous categories, even in circumstances patently pointing to language-specific phenomena. (As a matter of fact, terminology often precedes and motivates the postulation of categories, as is inevitable when one proceeds unstructurally.) *Synchronic* treatment is often adulterated with *diachronic* reflections [62], the descriptive *listener's model* with *generative*, *speaker's model* formulations.

0.4.1 Perhaps it would not be out of place — if only as a curiosity — to close this section with five typological statements made of Coptic, mostly in the last century. Read today, they convey at worst the overpowering impression of utter detachment from the reality of the language; at best, they capture something — not always the same something, always subjective, always inadequate — of the flavour of Coptic. They have nothing particular to do with details of grammar, but with an accumulated contrastive impression in quest of the *mot juste* [63]. Note the consensus on the austerity, lack of sophistication and of complexity of the language [64] — an unmistakable sign that Shenoute has been left out of consideration:

Mingarelli (1785:82): " ... verum haec lingua, ut libere dicam quod sentio, non modo simplex mihi videtur, sed etiam rudiuscula... insuavis, stridula, compositis vocabulis abundans, inops potius quam copiosa ".

Peyron (1841:159, " monitum "): " Finem Grammaticae impono, quin de Syntaxi dicam. Praeterquam quod enim in lingua geometrica, cuiusmodi Copticam esse vidimus, par est Syntaxis, quae ordinem naturalem sequitur, neque inversionem verborum patitur ".

Steinthal-Misteli (1893 [65]:107f.): " Formsprache... anreihend... nicht wortig... befriedigende Gestaltung des ganzen Satzes ... (268) ... nackte steife Einfachkeit. (272) ... Mumiengeist... (301) ... grammatische Armut und Nüchternheit ".

classical, almost " nostratic " language, a treasure-trove of grammatical notabilia, has yet to be discovered. The truth is, Coptic has been falling between all possible stools, especially those of " pagan " Egyptology and the study of Eastern Christianity (with the magnificent exception of the Erman-Sethe-Polotsky lineage). The current fashionable flurry of interest in Gnosticism, proceeding on the whole as if the grammatical description of pre-Nag Hammadi Coptic is a *fait accompli*, may prove to be yet another milestone in the luckless progress of Coptic linguistics.

[60] Stern, more than any of the pre-Polotsky grammarians, may claim some structuralist sympathy. Consider his predilection for a dichotomic presentation of binary (often privative) categories: *Relation* vs. *Annexion*; *conjugierter* vs. *conjugationsloser Satz*; *Dauerzeit* vs. *Ereigniszeit* (§§369, 494); *Tätigkeit* vs. *Zustand* (p. 172f.); *Umstand* vs. *Handlung* (§440); *mittelbare* vs. *unmittelbare Anknüpfung* (d. Objekts, §489), with some only negative terms, like *unabhängig* (§480), *präfixloser Satz*, *nicht nominales Subject* (§370), etc.

[61] This usually means an Indo-European and/or Semitic prejudicial " squint " (Jespersen's term) in description; see Polotsky 1959:457 (= *CP* 236). This attitude is more subtle in the typologist's essentially contrastive treatment: the prevailing spirit is rather that of Steinthal-Misteli's " Wo fände sich desgleichen im Indogermanischen oder Semitischen? " (1893:50).

[62] Justly reprimanded by Vergote (*BiOr* 6:101f. [1949]) and Funk 1978a:105; see now Schenke, *OLZ* 76:347f. (1981).

[63] I am leaving out here some diachronic-typological observations, like Hintze, *ZPh* 1:96ff. (1947) and the apt criticism by Schenkel 1966 a; briefly, Mink 1978:97f. in traditional Humboldtian terminology (analytic, synthetic, " wurzelflektierend ")

[64] Cf. for Egyptian Daumas (1952:34): " L'égyptien a eu parfois de la peine à reproduire la souplesse de la syntaxe grecque... "; he (and others) probably have in mind mainly *word-order* properties.

[65] The Coptic and Egyptian information is given esp. on pp. 267-301, but various reflections on Coptic may be found *passim*.

Amélineau (1895, *apud* Schmidt, *Pistis Sophia*, 1925, xxiii): " Cette langue ignore les longues phrases... c'est une langue éminemment analytique et non point synthétique... les phrases procèdent toujours par petits membres très clairs, presque indépendants les unes des autres... jamais, au grand jamais, nous ne rencontrons en copte ces périodes à incises compliquées à trois ou quatre membres différents, dont les éléments sont unis les uns aux autres d'une manière synthétique, si bien que l'intelligence de la phrase entière ne peut être obtenue qu'avec le dernier mot ".

Compare Stern's on the whole unexceptionable account of Coptic word-order (*Grammatik* §635): " Die Wortstellung... bewahrt die Regelmäßigkeit und Klarheit... Die längsten Perioden, und die Sprache liebt sie weit auszudehnen, zeigen immer den nämlichen einförmigen Bau, indem die paratactische Gedankenabwicklung nur durch die Participia und Relativa oder durch den Conjunctiv oder durch den Infinitiv unterbrochen wird. Die Klarheit, welche der Sprachgeist vom Gedanken fordert, führt seine genaue Zergliederung herbei, wenn er mehrfach und verwickelt ist. Von allen Redefiguren ist daher keine häufiger im koptischen Satzbau als die Prolepsis. Das Zusammendrängen vieler Begriffe in derselben Construction wird dadurch vermieden und der Rede eine gewisse Ruhe und Anschaulichkeit verliehen ". There can be no doubt of the preeminence of Stern as a grammarian of insight and penetration (see n. 60).

0.5 Technical notification

0.5.1 Patterns. The scheme of treatment for a given pattern consists in general of the following main stages and sections: (a) *general observations*, (b) *paradigm*, or *category constituency*, with token documentation, (c) *special observations* on selected individual members of the paradigm, (d) (for some patterns) *documentation*: representative examples followed by references " in bulk ".

0.5.2 Examples quoted are representative and selected, unless a given phenomenon is less than well attested, when most or all of the examples in my files are given. The number of examples varies according to the strength of documentation [66]. Additional references (not necessarily all) will follow, in a " *Zitatennest* " (following Denniston's maxim, " the reader should be allowed to bathe in examples "). Examples are translated only when they are in any way problematic, or if this is necessary or useful or has any bearing upon the argument.

0.5.3 Special symbols and typographical devices used:

'.....'	symbolizes	a non-autonomous pattern
#.....#		an autonomous pattern
+		syntagmatic compatibility (not necessarily sequence [contiguity])
→		syntagmatic compatibility *and* sequence (contiguity)
*		unattested (hypothetical) form
(*)		rare or unique form
~		fluctuation, variation
{ }		a morpheme, *with its paradigm* (unqualified substitutability; e.g. {ⲛϵ}, {ⲛ-}).
⌣		open juncture
][		juncture boundary
‖		paradigm (substitution group)

The text is followed by an Appendix of Shenoute sources; Bibliographical Reference List; Indices (Index of Terms and Subjects; Index of Coptic Words, Phrases and Constructions; Index Locorum).

[66] Cf. Lagarde's " Zwei Beispiele sind etwas wenig, wenn man ' oft ' sagt " (*Aus dem deutschen Gelehrtenleben*, 1881, 26).

A POLYPARADIGMATIC PATTERNING OF MODIFIERS IN UNMARKED, POSITION-MARKED OR MORPHEMATIC COHESION

1.0.1 Problems of synthesis: preconceived ideas of the "adverb" as a part of speech; the Coptic "adverb"; N-satellites

1.1 Non-predicative modifier status

1.1.1 ADNOMINAL modifier role: '*noun syntagm → modifier*'

1.1.1.1 Modifiers in noun syntagms, expanding a determinator: **ΟΥΨΑΕΝΕ2, ΠΣΩΒ ΝΚΑΤΑCΑΡΞ** etc.

1.1.2.0.1 Predication-modifying role: ADVERBAL modifier. Valency; postadjuncts *vs.* premodifiers

1.1.2.1 The postadjunctive adverbal modifier

1.1.2.2 Premodifiers; adclausal (adpattern) modifiers

1.1.2.3 Modifiers in a Nominal Sentence

1.1.2.4.1 Modifiers as nuclei: modifiers modified

1.1.2.4.2 Modifiers coordinated/disjoined

1.2 The predicative modifier

1.2.1.1 # *noun syntagm/prefixed personal pronoun → modifier* # (Bipartite pattern)

1.2.1.2 # modifier → **ΠΕ** #

1.2.1.3 Miscellaneous: **Ο Ν⁻**; # *modifier* → Ø #; **Ρ** + *modifier*

1.2.2 The modifier focalized: # *Second Tense* → *modifier* #, etc.

1.2.3 The modifier in a predication-presupposing zeugmatic pattern: '*independent pronoun/noun syntagm → modifier*'

1.3 Synthetic information: a selective examination of individual members of the category and their properties

1.3.1.1-3 N-marked modifiers: **ΜΜΑΥ, ΜΜΑΤΕ (ΕΜΑΤΕ), ΜΜΗΝΕ, ΝΤΕΙ2Ε, Ν2ΟΥΟ**

1.3.2 Zero-marked noun syntagms in modifier status

1.3.3 Iteration-marked noun syntagms in modifier status ('**ΚΩΤϤ ϪΛΛΕ ϪΛΛΕ**' etc.)

1.3.4 **ΤΕΝΟΥ**

1.3.5.1-2 **ΝΑΜΕ, 2ΝΟΥΜΕ**

1.3.6 **ΕΝΕ2**

1.3.7 **ΕΠ**-marked modifiers

1.3.8 **2ΙΟΥCΟΠ**

1.3.9 **ΤΩΝΟΥ, ΤΩΝΕ**

1.3.10 **ΑΥΩ** "additionally, furthermore"

1.3.11 Greek loan-modifiers

1.3.11.1 **-ΩC**-characterized modifiers

1.3.11.2 **-ΟΝ**-characterized modifiers

1.3.11.3 **ΠΑΛΙΝ**

1.3.11.4 **ΤΑΧΥ**

1.3.11.5 Prepositions of Greek origin

1.3.11.6 Greek loan-modifiers: miscellaneous

1.0.1 Problems of synthesis: preconceived ideas of the " adverb " as a part of speech; the coptic " adverb "; n-satellites

1.0.1.1 With no other part of speech is it more pertinent to question its definition and demarcation than with the " adverb ": this part of speech refutes the claims for universal validity, conflicts with language-specific realities and is generally arbitrary to the point of being unworkable. This is so unanimously felt today that this statement is almost banal; yet " adverb ", even if now and then joined or replaced by more modern nomenclature, features as commonly as ever in the grammatical register. Trying to deal here with this almost embarassing theme as succintly and as pertinently to the task in hand as possible, I shall limit myself to a few observations of a general and historical nature.

1.0.1.2 The traditional and still conventional approach to defining parts of speech [1] mingles uncontrollably notional, morphematic and syntactic considerations. This alone would appear objectionable, even were one to accept the by itself questionable premise of a grammar " where everything is either this or that " [2], and even were one prepared to tolerate the ethnocentric and/or universalistic bias in tackling what are, first and last, language-specific issues. Such " pre-fabricated " pre-analytic entities — to be identified in (or, in reality, forcibly accommodated to) the structure of every individual language — must be supplanted by structurally conceived categories or category groupings and role relationships: " form-classes " defined by position and commutation.

1.0.1.3 Judged by the traditional lights and pronouncements, the adverb is seen to be a non-category, a negatively defined, " waste-basket " pigeonhole absorbing such elements as are not eligible for classification as other parts of speech, bordering on and merging into others (notably the conjunction [συνδεσμός] and " particles ") [3]. Within this amorphous aggregate, the sole consistently operative, definitional constituent is the adverb as *verb qualifying* or verb-adjunctal, *adverbal* (subsuming, with greater sophistication of classification, a subclass of " sentence modifiers " — see below, §1.1.2.2) [4]. This function, really a mixture of syntagmatic and reference-logical phenomena, has nothing natural or immutable about it, and, far from being self-evident, must be given careful consideration, the more so in cases like that of Coptic, where " verb " and " adverbal " need precise definition, where " adverbal " also applies to the status of a paradigm of verb forms [5]. All this apart, it must be stressed that (a) adverbal status, although central in forming the detached conception of the " adverb " part of speech, is by no means coextensive with its entire functional spectrum [6], (b) there looms in the background of this conception the metalinguistic proportion model [7]: *adverb*(*/adverbal*) ≈ *adjective*(*/adnominal*) — that is to say, the

[1] From the almost inexhaustible critical literature on this aspect of traditional grammar, I shall quote only De Saussure 1949:152f., Tesnière 1965:51f., Paul 1920:§244ff., Matthews 1974:43ff. (" Our traditional parts of speech have not been handed to us on tablets of stone "). See also the Preliminary Chapter, note 20.

[2] Cf. Hockett 1967:936 (with Sapir's famous " all grammars leak ").

[3] On the Stoic Greek συνδεσμός, μεσότης and πανδέκτης see Schmidt 1839:37, 45f., Robins 1966:10ff.; see Pinkster 1972:35ff. for Latin grammatical theory. There are discussions of this approach in Ahlman 1938:19f., Karcevskij 1936:107f., Sechehaye 1950:65, Thesleff 1955, e.g. p. 15 n. 1. It is hard to detect a qualitative difference between the descriptive treatment of " adverbs " in modern Coptic grammars and (say) that of Tuki 1778, who variously refers to adverbials as " *adverbium* ", " *particula* ", " *littera* " (ⲛ-, ⲉ-), simply " *vox* " (ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ); ⲁⲩⲱ is " *adverbium* " (203ff., see §1.3.10 below); so is ⲉⲣⲉ-; ⲥⲁⲑⲏ is " *particula seu praepositio* ", ⲛⲑⲉ " *particula seu adverbium* ". (I fully concur with Tuki's designation of ⲛ- as a " *littera coniunctiva* " [96ff.].) Callender 1970:327ff. (App. IV) does ask some of the relevant questions — in fact, his is the only penetrating examination of this subject — but is, I believe, handicapped by his generative frame of reference. Instead of function and distribution, he is interested in derivation models and transformational (i.e. dynamic) relationships; my own approach is diametrically opposed to his.

[4] A further source of complications is that " adverbal " in " general " application includes modification of the substantive verb (— what about true Nominal Sentences?) and ῥῆμα was after all used also for " clause ", " phrase " or rather " utterance " (Plato, *Cratylus* 399b): cf. Steinthal 1890:137f.

[5] Clause Conjugation forms, the circumstantial conversion, conjunctional sentence-forms, various eventive forms (ⲥⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ-, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥ-).

[6] Cf. Schoemann 1862:160f.

[7] See for instance Sechehaye 1950:64f., Regula 1951:75, Kuryłowicz 1964:19f. Among the classical grammarians, see

affinity of two distinct functions, related in a transformational or hierarchic model and by some corresponding formal (morphological) correlation — regular at least cardinally, and at least in the "inflecting" Indo-European and Semitic languages. On the other hand, a different point of view goes even further, subsuming "adverb" and "adjective" under a single cover-term [8], with various subdivisional properties; here the syntagmatic *satellital* essence of the two categories overrules morphological considerations. It is this latter approach which I adopt, as being of advantage in Coptic, where neither hierarchy nor transformation is (in my opinion) called for to locate "adverb"/"adjective" in a *système de valeur* [9], and where there is no clear-cut morphematic dichotomy between adnominals and adverbals, and hence no *a priori* call for a correlation theory, in brief, where no content can be given to the concepts "adverb" and "adjective" other than the syntagmatic + paradigmatic information that amounts to their respective distributional structures.

1.0.2 In Coptic, then, it is the "adjective-adverb" or MODIFIER which is analytically isolable as a prime category. The N-satellite marker, a typological show-piece and one of Coptic's most cogent messages for general linguistic experience [10], may be taken as the Coptic modifier (satellite, expansion) exponent *par excellence*. The multi-functional nature of N-constructions has been the subject of many discussions. The typological ones are often tainted by preoccupation with the corresponding Indo-European(-Semitic) structure ("Is N- a case morpheme? If so, which case?"), while the Coptological ones [11] show a predilection for (diachronic) speculation rather than (synchronic) description. In this work, I shall be concerned with N- in several different pattern-types: as adverbal, generally and specially, in the present chapter; as adverbal and focalized, in Chapter 2; as adverbal object-expansion, in Chapter 3; in adnominal construction, here and in Chapter 4, and so on. Thus, the only exposition feasible at this point is necessarily a generic and loose one.

The Coptic "adverb" is not usually a lexical (morphematic) entity but a syntagm. That is to say, lexical "adverbs", not grammatically analyzable and marked only by grammatical compatibilities [12], are the exception. The largest group by far among adverbally privileged elements consists of *prepositional phrases* [13], preposition-marked modifiers. Prominent among these are modifiers marked by N-/MMO-, which invite some fundamental questions about their nature, identity and function. The crux, the hub

Scholia Dion. Thrax (Hilgard) 233.25-7; Priscian *Inst.* (Hertz) XV 1 ("hoc enim perficit adverbium verbis additum, quod adiectiva nomina appellativis nominibus adiuncta"), II 16 (of the Stoics) "necnon etiam adverbia nominibus vel verbis connumerabant, et quasi adiectiva verborum ea nominabant"; see SCHOEMANN 1862: Ch. 10 (esp. pp. 136, 157ff.), PINKSTER 1972:37.

[8] Compare the *viśesaka* in Indian grammatical tradition (CARDONA 1973:85 n. 6), possibly also Dion. of Halicarnassus' ἐπίρρημα in the etymological (preterminological?) meaning. See SANDMANN 1939, esp. 91, LYONS 1966:216ff.

[9] I differ here with Polotsky's "transpositional" approach to the Egyptian-Coptic verb (e.g. POLOTSKY 1976 esp. §§1.1-3; see §2.0.0.1 below). Polotsky implicitly assumes the validity of a universal distinction of *adverb* vs. *adjective* vs. *substantive*, on which he bases a categorization of (in Coptic, converted) verb forms, even though neither "adjective" nor "adverb" have been defined for Coptic. On the other hand, taking "adverbial" and "adjectival" as coterminous with "adverbal" and "adnominal" is open to objections (see above).

[10] Ever a pet subject of the typologists, these constructions have been intelligently treated by STEINTHAL 1847, MISTELI 1882: 433ff., STEINTHAL-MISTELI 1893:281, SCHWARZE-STEINTHAL 1850:460.

[11] Some noteworthy if not always unexceptionable accounts: STERN §§183, 236, 333ff., 509, 513, 533f., KICKASOLA 1975:230, BÖHLIG 1977. Crum's struggle to put the morphs in lexicological order (*Dictionary* 215-6) is telling.

[12] Cf. (in a sense) KARCEVSKIJ's "*determinant à marque zéro*" (1936:107f.), although he also has here in mind the negative essence and the frequent non-rectional nature of adverbial links. Coptic modifiers are lexemic, not modulus categories (Whorf); "function-words" (Fries), not a morphosyntactic category as in many Indo-European languages.

[13] Nucleus-satellite IC-analysis of the prepositional phrase is, I believe, impossible in Coptic (*pace* NAGEL 1980:90) — although the preposition does presuppose the noun, and is therefore in a *determination* dependency with it. Unlike Indo-European prepositions, which are often modifiers further expanded, Coptic prepositional phrases are exocentric complexes, and are, judged by this criterion (see KURYŁOWICZ 1936:88) "a single word". In dependency-grammatical terms, the preposition (including N-) "belongs" to the verb syntagm, not to the noun.

of this perplexity lies in the merging in Coptic of the following extra-Coptic (or " universal ") terms of relationship; on the one hand (syntagmatically) *adnominal/adverbal*; on the other hand (paradigmatically), *adverbial/direct-object* marking/*predicative-constituent* marking [14]. Different treatments place the burden of the problem at different nodes of this multiple furcation [15]. An all-important (though rarely mentioned) feature of the ⲛ-modifier is that, more than any other in the prepositional-phrase class, it is essentially *post-adjunctive*: indeed, it is the clearest manifestation in Coptic of the '*nucleus → satellite*' *Grundrichtung* or basic syntagmatic sequence [16]: except for certain fixed combinations (see §1.1.2.2), the major tagmemic polarity feature, viz. the opposition of ante- *vs.* post-location, is neutralized for ⲛ-. ⲛ-modification is the Coptic adjunct expansion *par excellence*, the quintessential satellite. I would therefore agree unreservedly with the old typologists' evaluation of ⲛ- as a *general relator*, satellite signall " *nota relationis* " [17], the reference of the relationship being resolved by the environment.

1.1 Non-predicative modifier status

1.1.1 Adnominal modifier role: 'noun syntagm → modifier'

(A) General observations: (1) The presence here of such members of the adnominal paradigm(s) as are associated (by familiarity) with the *adverbal* status is often explained in transformationalist terms as the result of a " reduction of a relative construction " [18] or as an overall nominalization of a verbal nucleus and its expansion(s) [19]. I consider this aetiology unhelpful and unnecessary, as is also the underlying assumption that there is something derived, secondary or marginal in the adnominal occurrence of an " adverb " [20]: any " explanation " of this order must be held irrelevant and extrinsic to the structura, significance of this ocurrence.

[14] It must be stressed that these functional mergers are not exclusive to Coptic. For some basic illuminating statements, see Becker 1841:597f. ("*prädikativer Genitiv* ", adnominal + predicative), also Schoemann 1862:151f.; von der Gabelentz 1869:383 (adverbal ÷ object, adverbial − predicative); Frobeen 1898:30ff., 38f. (adverbial + adnominal + predicative); cf. also Sandmann 1946 on the French *parler haut, dire vrai* (adverbial ÷ object + predicative).

[15] Böhlig 1977 sees the hub of the problem in the adnominal ("genitive") *vs.* adverbal (" object ") distinction; likewise Schwarze-Steinthal 1850:460f. Misteli 1882 considers the " case " choice; Kickasola 1975:230ff. treats the subdivision within the adverbal expansion construction. Compare Steinthal 1847:49 " (ⲛ) *notiones alias in alias vergentes indicat* ". See now also Layton 1981:240ff.

[16] Significantly, we find in (Nitrian?) Bohairic a neat distinction of # ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ - *vs.* - ⲛⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ #, the former a non-adjunctal, non-satellital, adclausal premodifier, the latter an adverbal adjunctal satellite (cf. also # ⲡⲁⲓⲣⲏ+- *vs.* -ⲙⲡⲁⲓⲣⲏ+ #). Whether or not the fact that some Bohairic (also " Middle Egyptian " and Sahidic?) prepositions are preeminently post-adjunctal and need a modifier nucleus in premodifier status (#ⲛϧⲣⲏ ϧⲉⲛ- *vs.* -ϧⲉⲛ#) is germane here still has to be established.

[17] Steinthal 1847:45 " *merae relationis signum* ", 50 " ⲛ *relativum* ", 46 " *exponens indefinitae relationis cuiusdam* ", " ⲛ *cum linea mathematica, qua duo puncta conjungantur aut inter se referantur apte comparari posse mihi videtur* ". Steinthal-Misteli 1893:281 " *allgemeiner grammatischer Weiser* ".

[18] So Steinitz 1969:114ff., Brinker 1972:138ff. This is in fact Schenkel's (1966) analysis of the ME *b3k jm* construction, which he considers an " *apokoinou* " one of a predicative adverb. Truly adnominal, according to him (57f.) are only adjective-expanding modifiers. Cf. Rudnitzky 1956:130ff.

[19] Steinitz 1969:118ff., Brinker. *ibid.*, Obviously, some (notably rection-type) constructions could be advantageously analyzed in IC-terms as (*article*) + (*verb lexeme* + *modifier*): ⲟⲩⲕⲧⲟ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ (*A 2* 76), ⲡⲱⲛϩ ⲩⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ (*IV* 32.8), ⲡϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ (*Ch.* 106.20f.) ⲡⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ (*Berl.* 1613 2 ⲧⲓⲑ), as could — most cogently of all — regular nominalizations: ⲧⲥⲓⲛⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ (*K* 9298), ⲧⲥⲓⲛⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲑⲓⲅ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*Ch.* 94.31ff.), ⲧⲥⲓⲛϫⲓⲧⲁⲑⲥⲉ ⲛⲥⲱϥ (*P* 130[5] 35 vo), ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲫⲏ (*P* 131[5] 19 ro) and so on. The distinction between adnominal and adverbal (" object ") ⲛ- is in these circumstances unfounded (see below).

[20] " *Extrinsèque* " (Sechehaye 1950:66ff.). Consider Karcevskij's cogent observation on the incidental nature of the adverb's relationship with the verb (1936:110f.).

(2) The uniformity of the adnominal modifier paradigm may be broken by several (partly overlapping) transformational or analytic expedients: distinguishing between (a) modifiers predicatable in the Bipartite Pattern (§1.2.1.1), differently predicatable and unpredicatable ones, (b) syntagms interpretable as (*article*) + (*verb lexeme* + *modifier*) [21] and those analyzable as (*article* + *noun*) + *modifier*, the former with a subgroup of (*article*) + (*nominalization exponent* + (*verb-lexeme* + *modifier*)): ⲡⲣⲉϥⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲡϩⲟⲙⲛⲧ (*K* 934) ⲧⲉⲕⲃⲓⲛϩⲁⲓ ⲱⲗ- (*III* 13.12f.) [22], (c) various dependency types, see §1.1.2.1: rectional *vs.* complementational modification (especially relevant with verb lexemes, but not excluded with noun-lexeme "valency").

(3) The *augens*, a specific ad(pro)nominal modifier is discussed in detail in Chapter 6 [23].

(4) Among the important adnominally occurring *verbal* modifiers, we find the attributive *relative* conversion, the adnexal *circumstantial* [24] and *conjunctive* (§7.1.3 below, also §§7.3-4).

(B) Constituency and paradigms (an open-ended listing) [25]:

		ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ-	see §1.3.1, spec. obs.
		ⲛⲧⲉ-/ⲛⲧⲁ-	spec. obs.
		ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧ-	*III* 180.1
		ⲙⲛ-	spec. obs.
		ϩⲓ-	spec. obs.
		ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-	*Ch.* 135.37, *Wess. 9* 86b 24f., spec. obs.
ⲉ	ϩⲟⲩⲛ	ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-	*III* 87.15
ⲉ	ϩⲣⲁⲓ	ⲉ-, ⲉϫⲛ-	*Ch.* 17.47ff., 94.31ff.
ⲱⲗ	ϩⲣⲁⲓ	ⲉ-	*Ch.* 56-7
		ϩⲛ-/ⲛϩⲏⲧ-	*III* 168.5f., 195.26f.
	ϩⲣⲁⲓ	ϩⲛ-/ⲛϩⲏⲧ-	*IV* 74.13
ⲉ	ⲃⲟⲗ	ϩⲛ-/ⲛϩⲏⲧ-	*III* 194.22
ⲉ	ⲃⲟⲗ	ϩⲓⲧⲛ-	*IV* 29.26f.
		ϩⲓϫⲛ-	*Ch.* 117.34ff.
		ϩⲁⲧⲛ-	*P* 130² 102 ⲕⲃ
		ϩⲁϩⲧⲛ-	*III* 157.11f.
		ⲛⲥⲁ-	*III* 42.4
		ⲛ-/ⲛⲁ-	*III* 206.16
		ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-	*III* 25.10
		ⲱⲗ-, ⲱⲗⲧⲛ-	*IV* 32.8, *III* 72.20
		ⲡⲁⲣⲁ-	*III* 141.27f.
		ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-	*IV* 106.15f.

[21] ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ , after Frei 1966, with ⲡ- the nucleus (§5.1.1).

ⲡ ⲉ-

[22] ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- modifying action-nouns: ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ (*III* 87.15), ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ (*Ch.* 88.53ff., *P*131⁴ 88 ⲣⲁⲇ), ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ (*III* 135.25f.), ⲙⲛⲧⲥⲧⲙⲏⲧ (*Ep.* 66), etc., is specifically adnominal, replacing a simple preposition (mostly ⲛ-) in the adverbal status. The actor here is usually expressed pronominally in a possessive article (ⲡⲉϥ-, ⲡⲉⲕ- etc.), and the whole can be rendered "...which I (you, we...) have for...", following (*III* 172.18) ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲛϥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- (also *III* 118-9).

[23] Borderline cases like ⲛⲁ-, ⲉⲣⲟ-, ϩⲁⲣⲓϩⲁⲣⲟ- as well as kindred non-augential modifiers like ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ, ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ are discussed in the present chapter or in chapter 6.

[24] A distinction neutralized (in favour of the circumstantial) after a non-ⲡ-determinated nucleus (Shisha-Halevy 1972, esp. 75-128; 1976c:n. 3).

[25] Ordered by and large on principles of approximate relative frequency, which are of course subject to change as more or new attestations are taken into consideration. Many slots in the three paradigms may be zero-realized. Properly speaking, the first position in the 'nom. nucleus — modifier' syntagm is occupied by the determinator paradigm (§5.1.1.0.1), which is expanded by the noun lexeme; either may be further expanded by the augens (Ch. 6) and the modifier paradigms here displayed.

ϵ	BOA	OYTϵ-	*P* 130² 5 Πϵ
		NNA2PN-	*P* 130⁵ 100 KH
		Xϵ-	*Ch.* 158.52f., spec. obs.
		XIN-	*Ch.* 76.8ff.

N2OYO (§1.3.1.3), TENOY (§1.3.4), NAMϵ, 2NOYMϵ (§1.3.5), AAHΘWC (§1.3.11.1.2), 2OAWC (§1.3.11.1.1), KAAWC §1.3.11.1.3), 2OMOIWC (§1.3.11.1.4), 2APAWC (§1.3.11.1.7), MONON (§1.3.11.2.1.1) MAAAON, MAAICTA (§1.3. 11.2.1.4), AYW (§1.3.10).

(C) SPECIAL OBSERVATIONS: (1) N-/MMO- [26], HTϵ-/NTA-: (a) It would seem that any account of these elements and their intricate functional structure must start with a statement of position regarding the identity or homonymy of adnominal N- (with ΠϵϤ- a partly suppletive pronominalization [27]) and adverbal N-/MMO-. I believe this approach is methodologically unsound, and that the only alternative to speculation in this case lies in a structural definition (cf. §3.1.2.0.1) [28]. Adnominal N- occurs, as a *nota relationis*, in syntagms with a value which (say) an Indo-European-oriented observer could identify with that of his own attributive or possessive syntagms; still, the significance of this for the Coptic *innere Form* must not, to say the least, be overstated.

(b) N-modification of a nominal nucleus can occur with (usually before) other modifiers. The sequenc*I* of several modifiers may (here as with adverbal modification, §1.1.2.1) be subjected to IC-analysis: (*IIe* 90.2) (AAAY NPWMϵ) 2IBOA / (*ibid.* 217.23) (2A2 NTAMϵION) N2HTϤ / (*Ch.* 17.47ff.) [(ΠINOϬ) NKPIMA] ϵ(2PAI ϵXWN) [29] and so on.

(c) N-, the adjunct-characteristic κατ' ἐξοχήν, is prenominal; instances like (*Ch.* 98.36ff.) OYMNTϵPO NWAϵ-Nϵ2 or (*IV* 159.13 codd.) Π2WB NKATACAPX I take to be a case of N- governing a nominalized ("hypostasized") modifier — or rather *governing a determinator*, expanded by a modifier: see §5.1.1. N- is no less a symptom indicative of the "nominalness" of a syntagm than are the determinators: indeed, N- and the determinators always occur conjointly, in a nuclear syntagm further expanded by a noun lexeme or modifier, see §1.1.1.1.

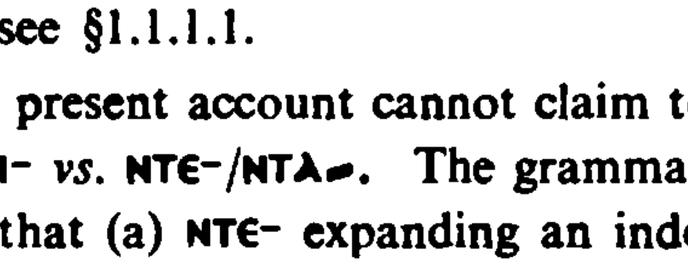
(d) I fear the present account cannot claim to give the last enlightening word on the (allomorphic?) distribution of N- *vs.* NTϵ-/NTA-. The grammar-books' threadbare and lacunary statement for Sahidic [30], to the effect that (a) NTϵ- expanding an indefinite noun, governs a definite one, and (b) HTϵ- expands an already expanded noun — although correct and workable in a general way for Shenoute [31], would

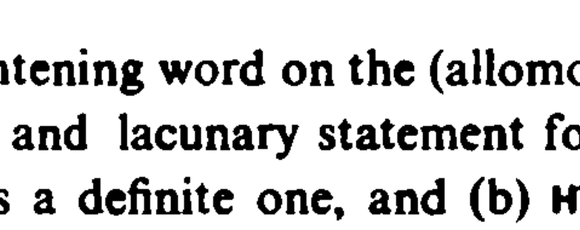
[26] See §1.0.1.2 above, Chs. 3 and 4. QUECKE (1981:260) does not consider this N- prepositional; what matters synchronically is its satellital status.

[27] Note MΠB(O)AN- (*Ch.* 93.44ff.), pronominally MΠϵϤBOA (*ibid.* 100.1), Shenoute follows here Akhmimic usage (*Dictionary* 33-4).

[28] I am of course aware of the diachronic roots and grounds for the distinction made between the "properly adnominal" N (< Eg. *n*) and "adverbal + predicative + prepositional" N (< Eg. *m*), and also that "in the midst of synchrony we are in diachrony". Nonetheless, I firmly believe in the feasibility of a synchronically-termed consistent description of the *status quo* resulting from the historical event of the merging of {*m*} and {*n*}.

[29] In Frei's dependence model (FREI 1966):





[30] For example, STERN §292ff. (not completely separating the Sahidic and Bohairic systems), TILL §111ff. (including an example with a demonstrative-expanding nucleus — *Joh.* 12:34 — which I would rather analyze as ΠϵI(WHPϵ NTϵΠPWMϵ).

[31] Consider (*IV* 26.2) 2OTϵ NTϵΠNOYTϵ / (*III* 214.18) OYAΓΓϵAOC H OYΠ̄NA̅ NTϵΠNOYTϵ / (*Ch.* 101.35ff.) 2ϵNKϵAΓAΘON NTϵΠKA2 / (*A 2* 92) NϵT2HΠ NTAY / (*A 2* 451, not Sh.) TϵZIH ϵTCOYTWN NTϵTAPϵTH / (*P* 130² 48 CKA) TPACOY MMϵ NTϵΠXOϵIC / (*IV* 195.14) 2Pϵ NIM

conflict especially with instances of '∅- + N- (*def.*)', e.g. (*A 1* 133) ⲥⲱⲥ ⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ / (*A 2* 453, not Sh.) ... ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ/ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ, '(*indef.*) + ⲛⲧⲉ- (*indef.*)' e.g. (*A 2* 433, not Sh.) ⲥⲉⲛⲟⲓⲕⲟ-ⲇⲟⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲉⲥⲉⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ and '(*def.*) + ⲛⲧⲉ- (*def.*)'. e.g. (*A 2* 420, not Sh.) ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲛⲁⲱⲕⲥ ⲏⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*ibid.* 452) ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲡⲉⲧⲍⲟⲥⲉ / (*P* 130² 55 ⲧⲓⲥ) ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲉϥⲥⲏⲧ ⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ / (*P* 130⁵ 22 ⲫⲙⲑ) ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉ-ⲡⲍⲟⲓⲥ / even (*P* 130² 62 ⲟⲉ) ⲛⲉⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁϩⲁⲣⲍ ⲛⲧⲁⲩ. Pending the findings of a special study, I suggest that an original opposition of N- *vs.* ⲛⲧⲉ- (essential possession *vs.* incidental possession or appurtenance), usually neutralized in accordance with the above statements, is maintained in isolated cases, perhaps with a limited inventory of noun lexemes in the nucleus [32] where N- is the marked exponent of essential possession, with ⲛⲧⲉ- either an unmarked or non-possessive relator. The whole issue is a component of the multi-faceted theme of determinator syntax (cf. §5.1.1). Observe, however, that like N-, ⲛⲧⲉ is not exclusively adnominal (ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲥⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲍⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ *Ch.* 101.38ff.), although N- is a regular direct-object expansion mark (Ch. 3), while ⲛⲧⲉ- is a non-rectional modifier.

(e) See §6.0.1 for N- introducing a lexicalizing apposition following a pronominal nucleus: (*III* 96.21) ...ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ, (*Ch.* 102.9f.) ...ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ, even (*A 2* 403) (ⲡⲓⲑⲉ) ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲛⲁⲩ. This construction must be kept apart, if only for the reason that a non-determinator pronominal nucleus (predominant in the augential modification patterns, Chapter 6) does not feature in the nucleus paradigm of adnominal N-. (On the affinity between '*noun → modification*' and '*pronoun → apposition*', see §4.3.)

(2) ⲉ-: this is the only common, unmistakably *rectional* modifier in our paradigms. Instances like (*A 2* 396) ⲟⲩⲱⲁϩⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲟϥ or (*IV* 152.2) ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲃ ⲉⲁⲁϥ are a case apart: the modification here is dependent on the environment of the noun syntagm as well as on the formal nucleus. (On ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- see n. 22.)

(3) ⲥⲓ-, ⲙⲛ-: the distinction between the non-coordinating modifier ⲥⲓ- (e.g. in *Ch.* 208.43f. (ⲛ)ⲥⲟ ⲥⲓⲥⲟ) and the coordinating ⲥⲓ- (ⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲥⲓⲙⲉ *III* 34.17) can be stated in terms of the distributional relationship of the latter, which coordinates zero-determinated nouns, with ⲙⲛ-, which serves to coordinate {ⲡ-}/{ⲟⲩ-}-determinated noun syntagms: ⲥⲉⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙⲛⲥⲉⲛⲥⲱ (*P* 130² 37 ro), ⲟⲩⲥⲕⲟ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓⲃⲉ (*ibid.*), ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧ (*Ch.* 116.57f.), ⲛⲥⲟϥ ⲙⲛⲏϩⲁⲧϥⲉ (*P* 130² 59 o); with ∅- ⲛⲓⲙ (§§3.1.1.2.1(3), 5.1.1.0.1) we find ⲁⲩⲱ/-ⲥⲓ-/-ⲙⲛ- (*P* 131⁵ 28 ro) ϭⲱⲛⲧ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲓⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛⲁⲯⲕⲁⲕ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ, also *Ch.* 21.33ff., 48.54ff., etc. The pronominal state of ⲙⲛ- is found only in coordinative instances like (*III* 22.17) ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ or (*BM* 209 ⲁⲑ) ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲛ, see §1.1.2.4.1.

(4) ⲥⲁ(ⲥ)ⲧⲛ- (a) Consider the following instructive example, in which the adnominal modifier is disjoined from the same prepositional phrase in predicative status and adnominal (relative) form: (*III* 157.11ff.) ⲡⲥⲁⲗⲟ ⲥⲁⲥⲧⲏⲛ... ⲑⲗⲗⲱ ⲥⲁⲥⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ... ⲛⲥⲁⲗⲗⲟⲓ ⲉⲧⲥⲁⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ. This does not mean that the adnominal modifier is a "reduced" form of the relative construction, but only that their significations in the given context are sufficiently close. (b) Note the prevalence of *indefinite* nuclei (this is also true for ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧ▬). Does this imply a prosodically conditioned adnominal placement of an *adverbal* (or adclausal) modifier — the indefinite nucleus, as it were — attracting the modifier to its vicinity? Compare ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲉⲥ (§1.3.6 below).

(D) Documentation:

N-: exx. *passim* (esp. in §§1.3. and Ch. 4), and consider (*P* 130⁵ 16 ro) ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲃⲁⲡϩⲟⲉⲓⲥ / (*P* 130⁴ 140 vo) ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲏⲓⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*III* 221.9) ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... / (*IV* 73.11) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲁ

ⲍⲓⲥⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩ / (*BLOr.* 6807(2) f. 7) ⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲁϥ. A strikingly conflicting *locus* is (*P* 130⁵ 22 ⲫⲙⲑ) ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲡϩⲟⲓⲥ *vs.* ⲙⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲛϩⲟⲉⲓⲥ. *NB.* (*P* 130⁴ 127 ⲙⲃ) ⲡⲉⲍⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ.

[32] This is, I think, the situation in Bohairic; here, however, we have wheels within wheels, since the determinators themselves are exponents — perhaps the primary ones — of this distinction. In Sahidic too, an instance like (*P* 130⁵ 21 ro) ⲛⲉⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲩ-ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲥⲁⲣⲍ proves that "possession" and "ⲛⲧⲉ-appurtenance" are compatible, hence distinct categories.

ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / ⲡⲓⲥⲁ ⲙⲙⲟ-, ⲡⲉⲓⲥⲁ ⲙⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*A 1* 106, *IV* 95.17, *III* 204.8) / (*A 1* 276 = *Ch.* 117.19f.) ⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ " this is their way " / -ⲣ-ⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (*A 1* 150, 306).

ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-: ⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉ- (*A 2* 102, the rection of ⲩⲙⲙⲟ being ⲉ-), ⲡⲁⲗⲗⲟⲧⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (*A 2* 32) / (*A 1* 465) (ⲃⲱⲕ) ⲛⲥⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*III* 18.28) ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲉⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 5.5f.) ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲥⲟ. For adnominal ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- — ⲟⲩⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*III* 218.14), ⲧⲅⲓⲛⲩⲗⲗ... ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*IV* 67.24), ⲧⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛ- (*Wess. 9* 155b 3ff.) — see §7.4.

ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ-: see footnote 22, to which add (*A 1* 16) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲥⲱ / (*A 2* 256) ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲩⲩⲧ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲕⲱⲧ.

ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ (ⲉϫⲛ-): (*Wess. 9* 148a 1f.) ⲕⲉⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲕ / (*III* 210.18) ⲡⲉⲥⲡⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ / (*Ch.* 17.47ff.) ⲡⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲛ.

ⲥⲛ-/ⲛⲥⲏⲧ-: (*P* 130² 48 ⲥⲕⲇ) ⲥⲁⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ / (*P* 131⁵ 4 ro) ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*IV* 73.11) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ / (*P* 131⁷ 25 ro) ⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲛⲉϥⲥⲙⲥⲁⲗ ⲛⲉⲧⲣ-ⲥⲱⲃ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ / (*A 2* 120) ⲕⲉⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲕⲥⲱⲙⲁ / (*ibid.* 245) ⲟⲩϭⲁⲗⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉϥⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ / (*K* 9291) ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲙⲡⲥⲟ, ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲙⲡⲥⲏⲧ / (*Ch.* 118.44f.) ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲏⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲥⲛⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ / (*IF* 67 apud *Dictionary* 147b) ⲥⲉⲛⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲛⲧⲟⲡ / (*III* 217.23) ⲥⲁⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲙⲉⲓⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲏⲧϥ / (*ibid.* 168.5ff.) ⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲥⲙⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ, ⲡⲱⲛⲥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲥⲛⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ.

ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲥⲛ-/ⲛⲥⲏⲧ-: (*IV* 74.13) ⲟⲩⲁ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ / (*P* 130² 63 oz) ⲥⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ... ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ, *sim. III* 152.5f.; sim. (ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ) *III* 126.1, (ⲣⲱⲙⲉ) *K* 927, *P* 131⁷ 45 ro, (ⲥⲁⲥ) *A 2* 301.

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲛ-: (*III* 194.22) ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲛⲧⲡⲉ / (*Ch.* 144.46ff.) ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ, ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲡⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲉⲧⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ.

ⲥⲓ-: (*Wess. 9* 132a 28f.) ⲟⲩⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲥⲓⲃⲟⲗ / (*ibid.* 112b 27f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲥⲓⲃⲟⲗ / (*III* 90.2) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲓⲃⲟⲗ.

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲛ-: (*IV* 29.26f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲛⲥⲉⲛⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*A 2* 304) ⲟⲩϭⲱⲏⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*III* 158.7f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ.

ⲯⲁ-: (*III* 142.28f.) ⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲛⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲛ / (*BKU* 180² 11.21, *Wess. 9* 138c-d, *Ench.* 82a) ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ ⲯⲁⲉⲛⲉⲥ.

ⲛ-/ⲛⲁ-: (*P* 131⁸ 84 vo) ⲟⲩⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲁϥ / (*III* 126.5f.) ⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ.

ⲥⲁⲧⲛ-: (*IV* 35.27f.) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ ⲏ ⲥⲁⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ / (*Wess. 9* 150a 14ff., d 22f., *IV* 28.22) ⲥⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲥⲁⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*K* 9291) ⲡϭⲱ ⲥⲁⲧⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲫⲏⲩ.

ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲛ-: (*BM* 253 ⲛⲏ) ⲥⲉⲛⲯⲙⲙⲟ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲁⲩ / (*P* 130⁵ 100 ⲕⲏ) ⲯⲁⲩⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲯⲁⲩ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ.

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-: (*P* 130² 5 ⲡⲉ) ⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲧⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ.

ⲡⲁⲣⲁ-: (*IV* 206.12f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲁⲣⲁ ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ.

ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-: (*Wess. 9* 131a 9f.) ⲧⲉϥⲡⲗⲁⲛⲏ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲟϥ / (*IV* 69.15f.) ⲕⲉⲥⲱⲃ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ / (*Ch.* 167.56ff., *IV* 31.4, 159.13, *III* 74.16) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ / (*P* 130² 107 ro) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ.

ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-: (*P* 130⁴ 50 ⲥⲕ) ⲡⲱⲛⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ.

ϫⲉ-: (*Wess. 9* 129b 30f.) ⲡⲓⲯⲁϫⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲥⲟⲙⲟⲟⲩⲥⲓⲟⲥ / (*A 2* 343) ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲛ... ϫⲉ-ⲥⲟϥ / (*BM* 253 ⲛⲏ) ⲡⲉⲓⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ ϫⲉ- (" which means ") ⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ / (*A 1* 155) ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲡⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲥⲱⲥⲉ / (*III* 59.8) ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ϫⲉ-ⲃⲉⲗⲁⲙⲱⲛ / (*P* 130⁴ 124 ⲁⲥ) ⲣⲁⲛ... ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲏⲏⲃ ⲥⲓⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ.

1.1.1.1 Modifiers in noun syntagms. In the syntagm '*determinator* → *modifier*', the modifier expands the nuclear determinator pronoun. This is not a " hypostase " except by virtue of a pattern [33]. The inventory of modifiers is here shorter than in the post-lexeme paradigm (§1.1.1), and includes many Greek loan-modifiers and in general mostly fixed expressions, clichés and calques. The ensuing noun syntagm is often (for some modifiers, usually) the predicate of a bimembral Nominal Sentence.

(1) Nucleus: {ⲡ-}: (*IV* 53.4) ⲡⲥⲁⲑⲏ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ / (*A 1* 302) ⲡⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲟⲩ / (*Teza* 684) ⲡⲩⲁ ⲉⲛⲉⲥ, appositive after ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (§4.3) / ⲡⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲛ-, ⲛ(ⲉ)ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲛ- ⲛ- (*Ench.* 89a, *P* 130² 109 vo, *III* 114.25, *IV* 126.29, *Ch.* 47.49f., *Wess. 9* 131a 13f., *K* 9294, *P* 130⁴ 122, 130⁵ 22, *A 1* 289, etc.) / (*Ch.* 97.35f.) ⲙⲡⲣⲟⲥⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲩ. No instance of the feminine determinator ⲧ- is known to me. The possessive determinators: (*III* 20-1) ⲛⲁϫⲓⲛⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ / ⲛⲉϥⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ (*IV* 122.24 cod., *A 2* 526 etc.).

[33] In principle and from this point of view on a par with the # *modifier* + ⲡⲉ # pattern (§1.2.1.2).

(2) Nucleus: {ογ-}: ογκαταρωτν (*III* 116.17, 117.5f.) / ογπαρα(τεγ-/τεν-/τεκ)φγcιc (*Ch.* 21.26f., *IV* 112.24, *P* 130[5] 24 рпв) / ογψλενεϩ (*A 2* 236) / (*A 2* 418, not Sh.) ογπροcογοειψ (*vs.* ογψλενεϩ on line 12) / ϩενκατακαρε (*IV* 81.5, 112.7, *P* 130[5] 111 ro) / (*III* 107.17ff.) ογεβολ ϩιτмпноγτε.

(3) Nucleus: ∅-, after the modifier marker ν-: — νψλενεϩ (*IV* 38.15, *A 2* 465) / (*IV* 159.13) — νκατακαρε, *v.l.* κατακαρε, §1.1.1 / (*III* 58.29) — νκατλειωϩαννηc / (*A 2* 100, *IV* 162.5) мпарапψι, parall. παραπψι, line 6.

(4) A (unique?) case of real hypostase [34]: ψλϩιρογϩε " until evening " (*IV* 84.10, 92.2, *v.l.* ψλρογϩε), which however may be explained by metanalytic analogy with ϩιτοογε < ϩτοογε (the latter being etymologically primary). ενεϩ (§1.3.6), historically a prepositional phrase, is unanalyzable in Coptic.

1.1.2.0.1 Predication-modifying role. The adverbal modifier. Valency. Postadjuncts vs. premodifiers. The adverbal [35] modifier is found to occur in either of two patterns, viz. # *verb syntagm* + *modifier* #, where it is postadjunctive, and # *modifier* + *verb syntagm* #, where it is either focal (one construction in a set of focalization patterns, see §§2.4-6) or *adclausal* (in the sense of " in relation to the whole pattern or clause as such "), *premodifying* [36]. In the latter case (§1.1.2.2) we cannot speak of an expansion or adjunction: I take the function of the modifier here rather as *presetting*, orientating in advance, prelocating the clause in a framework of local, temporal, modal relationships [37]; the modifier is preparatory, in a sense *given* and (like conditional or temporal protases) often *topical* (cf. §2.0.2.1). Thus, although the convenient term " premodifier " will be employed in the following discussion, it stands rather for " presetter ", " predeterminer " or the like. No small difficulty here lies in uncovering the syntactic structure of the pattern [38]. Two alternative analyses present themselves: (a) The whole # *modifier* + *clause* # complex precludes nucleus-satellite analysis, that is to say, cannot be binarily analyzed in terms of a centre-and-periphery hierarchy, yet can be stated as a " determination " dependence, the premodifier presupposing the clause and not *vice versa*. (This is not unlike the preposition-noun dependence.) (b) Not in line with the basic Coptic *nucleus* → *satellite* syntagmatic sequence (but in accordance with that of the " mediator " lexeme premodifier construction, §3.4), we analyze the complex as ' *expansion* → *nuclear clause* ' [39].

[34] Cf. Karcevskij 1936:109f.

[35] " Adverbal ": in adjunctal or at any rate non-nexal relationship with a conjugation form (here " verb syntagm " [VS]). It goes without saying that further subcategorization of the verb is still called for—or a precise compatibility determination of certain modifiers with certain conjugation forms.

[36] The generally accepted (if language-specifically elusive and complicated) distinction of *sentence-* vs. *component-*modifier has been extensively treated for various languages; cf. Kern's *Satz-* vs. *Prädikatsbestimmung*, Gabelentz 1869:380,383f., Sechehaye 1950:164f. (" compléments de phrase "), Greenbaum 1969, Mathesius 1975:140f., Allerton and Cruttenden in *Lingua* 34:1-30 (1974).

There is no discussion of this issue for Coptic (but cf. Funk 1978b:96ff., 101ff., esp. §4.1.2, on the " conjugation mediators ", which Funk considers to be sentence modifiers of a kind; see §3.4 below on the " lexeme premodifiers ").

[37] Cf. Weinrich 1977:226ff., 268f., etc. on the " obstinate signals " which premodify sentences and larger subtextual units, up to text extent.

[38] The correlations and interactions of placement (*e.g.* initial, post-verbal, final) function (adverbal, adclausal) and syntagmatic structure are too complex, and involve factors too multifarious (including considerations of prosody, prominence, even style) to be thus summarily dismissed. As in any other issue of word order, a unified theory must be evolved in this case. (Cf. Jacobson 1964 for a painstaking scanning study of English modifier placement.)

[39] Note too the functionally difficult, if formally sharp, difference between premodifiers preceding an uncharacterized clause-form (' καλωc ακχοοc ') and a *focal* (nexus-constituent) modifiers. With the latter, the initial position is a feature of the predicative pattern (' καλωc εγχω ммоc '). Often, the actual difference in function escapes one. (Formally too, there is the possibility of transition from one construction to the other, with ε- and χε- " devalued " to a post-modifier clause form; see below, esp. §1.3.11 passim, and §2.5.0.1.).

1.1.2.1 The postadjunctive adverbal modifier

(A) General observations: (1) Nucleus - expansion. The verb syntagm is expanded by the modifier; more precisely, it is the verb lexeme that is expanded. Some modifiers may be further expanded in their turn (§1.1.2.4). The prepositional phrase, however, can be analyzed only as a *determination* dependence, the preposition being the *determinant* — presupposing the noun, which is the determinate.

(2) Valency structuring (see also §3.0.1.2). Status hierarchy is the foremost question raised in this construction, since we usually have more than one modifier expanding one verb syntagm. This is primarily a matter of IC-analysis, of analytic model, of definition in terms of sequence and commutation, and — most crucial — of finding criteria for distinguishing between *complementation* (which is optional, grammatically unrestricted, non-rectional, hence pertinent and meaningful) and *rection* (conditioned, i.e. non meaningful) of the verbal nucleus [40]. In this regard, Crum's *Dictionary* is notoriously unhelpful (we are lucky, though, to have such a varied and extensive — if unstructured — inventory of attested combinations). A study of verb valency (actantial properties or potential) in Coptic is an urgent grammatical and lexicological *desideratum*. A specimen structured display of combination possibilities follows:

(α_1, β_1): # *VS* + *modifier* #; in matrix terms, positions [41] (Ø) and (1).

(α_1): (*K* 9294) ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ

(β_1): (*K* 913) ⲩⲁϥⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ

(α_1): *rection*, " object " (see §3.0.1) or " case " [42]. The modifier here is a co-constituent of the verb lexeme (" *V* + "), and no other actant is addable: " bivalent verbs ". The modifier, being conditioned, is here a *mot vide*, devoid of own meaning, commutable only with Ø- [43], if that [44]. The rection case *par excellence* is that of the mediate direct object marked by ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ-, discussed in detail below (Ch. 3). Some other bivalent lexemes: ⲥⲱⲧⲡ (ⲛ-), ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ (ⲉ-), ⲩⲱⲡⲉ (ⲛ-), various reflexive verbs (ⲙⲧⲟⲛ, ⲩⲟⲩⲩⲟⲩ).

(β_1): *complementation*. The modifier in position (1) is optional, freely commutable, hence meaningful, semasiologically contributive, distinctive and indeed defining.

(α_2, β_2): # *VS* + *modifier*$_1$ + *modifier*$_2$ #; matrix: (Ø)-(1)-(2).

(α_2): (*III* 130.6) ...ⲉⲧϫⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ / (*IV* 54.16) ⲉⲩⲉⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡϩⲗⲗⲟ [45] / (*III* 204.5f.) ⲩⲁⲣⲉⲧⲥⲓⲟ ⲙⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲙⲛⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ " satiate thee (2nd fem.) with... " / (*IV* 79.14) ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲩⲁⲓⲧⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟϥ — the identity of ⲙⲙⲟ- is here structurally definable (§3.1.2.0.1) / (*ibid.* 82.28) ...ⲉϩⲟⲃⲥⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*III* 166.22) ⲡⲩⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲩⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ

[40] On this famous issue, see Tesnière 1965:127ff. (actants *vs.* circonstants; his two criteria are patently inadequate. The formal one, very ethnocentric, conflicts with our ⲛ-, while the semasiological one cannot be accepted on its own). See also Frei 1964:35f., Helbig 1971:33ff., Brinker 1972:130ff., 154ff. (" In diesem Bereich ist noch fast alles zu tun "). This distinction is all too often vague and elusive (witness the " essentiality " *vs.* " erasability " test). For further references, see §3.0.1.2 below. (In Coptic, cases like ϫⲉⲣⲟ- and ϫⲉⲛⲁ- — see Černý, *ZÄS* 97: 44-6 [1971] — are clearly instances of non-rectional expansion turned rectional.)

[41] " Position " in a structural, not sequential sense, and potentially realizable by zero.

[42] Rosén 1977:168ff.

[43] This, together with absence of complementation (non-pertinent absence), correspond to *Dictionary's* " Intr. ", Cherix's " absolut ".

[44] Consider ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉ-/ⲉⲃⲟⲗ, where ⲉ- cannot be zeroed. (The *rectum* of ⲉ- can be zeroed, by replacement by ⲃⲟⲗ). As a matter of fact, zeroing takes place by definition in this pattern only, not in the complementation construction, where the absence of a modifier does not have a grammatical significance.

[45] " Let the elder be informed about them ". So too (*A 2* 310) ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛϩⲟ ⲉϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ. In (*IV* 198.20) ⲁⲩⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲓ ⲉⲣⲟϥ " I was informed about him ", the role of slots (1) (" direct object ") and (2) is reversed; the essential point here is *the existence of two governed slots*, one of which is ⲉ- marked. (See also Polotsky 1933:418 n. 1 [not in *CP*], on ⲧⲁⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉ-).

ⲛ2ⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*BM* 204 oz) ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲩⲥⲡⲟⲩ / (*III* 106.29) ⲁⲭⲧⲥⲧⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲙⲉ [46] / (*ibid.* 106.18f.) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧⲥⲉⲭ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲙⲉⲭ-ⲟⲉⲓⲕ.

(β_2): (*III* 185.17f.) ⲥⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲡⲥⲁⲗⲟ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲉⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*Ch.* 162.18f.) ⲉⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲃⲟⲗ / (*ibid.* 23.54ff.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲕⲉⲓ ⲛ2ⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲥⲛ2ⲉⲛⲣⲁⲥⲟⲩ, structurally different ⲥⲛ-.

(α_2): *Double rection*: two conditioned expansions of a *trivalent* verb lexeme. Consider also ⲃⲛⲧⲭ ⲉⲭ-, ⲥⲁⲣⲉ2 ⲉⲣⲟⲭ ⲉⲭ- [47].

(β_2): *Double complementation.* We find here very frequent mixed ($\alpha + \beta$) constructions [48]: ($\alpha_1 + \beta_1$): (*III* 98.12) ⲉⲥⲡⲟⲧⲡⲉⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉ- / (*A 2* 234) ⲧⲉⲛⲛⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲉⲧⲁϩⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲭ / (*K* 9294) ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲡⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ϩⲉ- [46]. ($\alpha_1 + \beta_2$): (*A 2* 361) ⲁⲭ2ⲁⲣⲉ2 ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲭ ⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁϩⲡⲓⲟ / (*Ch.* 26.51ff.) ⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲧⲥⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛ2ⲏⲧⲭ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲙⲉ / (*III* 187.8) ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛ2ⲁ2 ⲛⲥⲟⲡ / (*Leyd.* 301) ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲉⲕ-ⲧⲉⲭ-ⲥⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ. ($\alpha_2 + \beta_1$): (*III* 107.12) ⲉⲭⲙⲟⲧⲛ ⲛⲥⲣ-ⲙⲗⲗ2 ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ- / (*IV* 2.3) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡϩⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲛ2ⲏⲧⲟⲩ.

(α_3) (uncommon): (*A 2* 397) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲭⲕⲁⲁⲭ ⲕⲁ2ⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲭ / (*III* 112.10f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲩ2ⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲛ2 ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲉ-ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲛⲉ.

(β_3): (*IV* 106.12) ...ⲉⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡϩⲓⲛϩⲏ / (*A 2* 87) ⲛⲭⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲣⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓ2ⲉ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ2ⲏⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ. ($\alpha_1 + \beta_3$): (*III* 208.17f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲁⲭ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲏⲓ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ / (*Ch.* 116.36ff.) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲣ-ⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲥⲛ2ⲉⲛ2ⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ] ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲕⲱⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ] ⲉⲩⲭⲱⲣⲁ: IC-analysis adds in these complex cases a vital hierarchical resolution (see below).

(β_4): (*IV* 175.10f.) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-ⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ ⲥⲓϩⲱⲭ ⲥⲛⲛⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲉ2ⲓⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ2ⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲁⲣⲁⲧⲭ.

($\alpha_1 + \beta_4$): (*III* 116.25ff.) ⲁⲭⲕⲧⲟ ⲛⲧⲉⲭⲃⲓϩ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛ2ⲏⲧ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁ2 ⲛ2ⲏⲧ ⲉⲛⲁⲩⲱⲭ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲁⲙⲡⲩⲁ ϩⲉ-ⲁⲓⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲙⲧⲟ ⲃⲟⲗ.

(3) IC-ANALYTIC DECISIONS are essential in certain cases: (a) Denominal derived " compound verbs "[49]: 'ⲣ-ⲥⲁⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲭ' may be analyzed as bivalent ($\overset{\emptyset}{\text{ⲣ-ⲥⲁⲗ}} \mid \overset{1}{\text{ⲙⲙⲟⲭ}}$) or trivalent ($\overset{\emptyset}{\text{ⲣ-}}\ \overset{1}{\text{ⲥⲁⲗ}}\ \overset{2}{\text{ⲙⲙⲟ-}}$). (b) Occasionally one hesitates between assigning two successive modifiers to a single or two separate slots: $\overset{\emptyset\ \ 1}{\text{ⲉⲓ ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉ-}}$ (expanded modifier, see §1.1.2.4) or $\overset{\emptyset\ \ 1\ \ 2}{\text{ⲉⲓ ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉ-}}$. We do not have any means of resolving this dilemma, except that of semasiological evaluation (which would not help us out anyway in case (a), and is inconclusive and arbitrary even in case (b)). (c) In instances of (β_2...), IC-analysis is often enlightening (see exx. above).

(4) The manifold TEXT-COHESIVE function of modifiers does not directly concern us here, as the segment under examination is '*VS* + *modifier*' alone; nevertheless, the compatibility of both grammatical (i.e. conjugational) and lexical elements of the verb syntagm with their modifiers [50] must be investigated. This is hardly feasible in a study such as the present one, which aims at a syntactic schematization of the modifier system (see below, §§1.3). It must be undertaken as part of a monographic, systematic treatment of verbal syntax and semantics for individual conjugational environments and semasiological syntagmatics. Other *desiderata* are the investigation of modifier occurrence, collocations and of modifier

[46] With syntagmatic (sequential) and structural (analytic) orders conflicting. As a general rule (with some well-known exceptions, see POLOTSKY 1961) the further away a modifier is from the verb lexeme, the less grammatically involved it is with it; this does not apply, though, to positions (1)-(2) of the matrix.

[47] At least one possible description of the adnexal '*noun+circumstantial*' complex expanding a verb would involve distinguishing between a bivalent lexeme (ⲃⲓⲛⲉ/2ⲉ ⲉ- + *direct object*) and its trivalent homonym ⲃⲛⲧⲭ/2ⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲭ ⲉⲭ-, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲭ ⲉⲭ-, ⲥⲁⲣⲉ2 ⲉⲣⲟⲭ ⲉⲭ-, etc. I have found (SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:77-82) this honomymy also for ϩⲱ, +, ⲧⲱⲱ, ϩⲡⲟ, ⲧⲁ2ⲟ and other verbs.

[48] A striking case of lexemes both rectionally and complementationally expandable is that of + (and ϩⲓ): + $\overset{\text{N-}}{\emptyset}$ | ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ/ⲉ2ⲣⲁⲓ/ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-/ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-/ⲉ-, ϩⲓ $\overset{\text{N-}}{\emptyset}$ | ⲉ-/ⲉϩⲛ-... also ⲛⲓⲭⲉ $\overset{\text{N-}}{\emptyset}$ | ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ/ⲉ(2ⲣⲛ)-/ⲛⲥⲁ-...

[49] See §3.1.2.2.2 for a discussion and an extensive listing of these syntagms.

[50] Cf. WEINRICH 1977 *passim* (e.g. 71), SEILER 1968, KLUM 1961 (esp. 86 ff.), STEINITZ-SCHÄDLICH 1970, etc.

mobility in the utterance (this last is here selectively attempted). Specific pronoun-including modifiers are exponents of a cohesion scheme: the *augens*, discussed in Ch. 6: (*A 1* 122) ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ. So (less regularly) are anaphoric elements included in the expansions: (*IV* 128.11f.) ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲁⲧϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ, ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ resuming ⲡ(ⲛⲟⲃⲉ), ⲩⲁⲁⲧϥ resuming ⲡⲉⲛ(ⲥⲟⲛ) in the preceding cotext / (*P* 130[4] 88 ro) ⲛⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲛⲓⲙ / (*ibid.* 89 vo) ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉⲕⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲇⲉ ⲕⲛⲛⲉ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲛⲉϥⲧⲁⲕⲟⲕ / (*III* 130.7f.) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ. (In a future general study of Coptic text-grammar, and specifically text cohesion [" texture "], this issue of phoric expansions must take a foremost place [see §3.1.1.1.0.1, 5.1.1.1 and 6.0.2.2(8) for some special anaphoric features].) Otherwise, the modifier stands in unmarked (or morphematically marked) cohesion with its nucleus [51].

(5) Specifically ADVERBAL VERB-FORMS (though not, except for the conjunctive, Ch. 7, discussed here) must be considered members of the modifier paradigm: the conjunctive and other Clause Conjugation forms, the adverbal circumstantial forms [52], vested [53] (ⲉⲱⲥ-, ⲉⲟⲧⲁⲛ-, ⲭⲓⲛ- etc. + ⲉ-) and unvested (ⲉ-), conditional forms and constructions, the coeventive (ⲉⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ-), posteventive (ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥ-) and precursive (ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉϥ-) [54], the last being post-adjunctively in marked placement; various conjunctional constructions (including ⲭⲉ-). Although certainly modifiers and syntactically akin to the mixed bag of items specified in the inventory below, they form a class apart in respect of word order, not being accommodated by the ' Ø-(1)-(2)... ' matrix. They are mostly non-rectional (the circumstantial and conjunctive — Ch. 7 — are adnexal).

(B) CONSTITUENCY. The following is an open-ended inventory, a checklist rather than a true paradigmatic presentation. It is a paradigm in the sense that these modifiers do occur in adverbal postadjunctive status and in the compatibilities and order indicated. A few words are called for concerning the exhaustiveness and validity of claims made here. Since we deal here with lexemes (or rather elements in the no man's land common to grammar and lexicon), the lists and combination possibilities cannot be taken as closed (especially as the corpus may yet be extended, and " productivity " in a dead language must be a matter of inference rather than assumption). References are representative (I have no statistics on frequency. More references are given for the rarer items).

(1) *prepositions*

ⲉ-(ⲁ-)/ⲉⲣⲟ=	" to, for, concerning etc. ", *III* 184.13, *Ch.* 127.24, *Mun.* 104.
ⲉⲣⲁⲧ=	" to (chez) ", *Ch.* 155.46f. (*Dictionary* 303).
ⲉⲣⲛ-/ⲉⲣⲱ=, ⲉⲣⲟ=	" to, on (the mouth of...) ", *Ch.* 48.53f., *A 1* 241, *BM* 253 ns, *P* 131[4] 154 ⲁⲉ: *P* 130[4] 127 mb; *Z* 246 pⲁ. Almost only with ⲧⲱⲙ, ⲟⲩⲱⲛ (*Dict.* 289b).
ⲉⲧⲛ-/ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ=	" to (hand of...) " *III* 214.1, *A 1* 113, *A 2* 26 (*Dict.* 427b).
ⲉ2ⲉⲛ-	" πρός ", *Wess. 18* 143a 25ff. *Dict.* 685a (also in Besa; cf. (ⲉ)2ⲛ-, spec. obs. 3).
ⲉ2ⲣⲛ-/ⲉ2ⲣⲁ=	" towards (the face of...) ", rare, usually with ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ *A 1* 465 (*Dict.* 649).
ⲉⲭⲛ-/ⲉⲭⲱ=	" on, upon, over, against ", *III* 40.8, *Ch.* 198.34f. (*Dict.* 757-8).
ⲁⲭⲛ-, ⲉⲭⲛ-/ⲁⲭⲱ=, ⲉⲭⲱ=	" without ", *III* 42.5, *IV* 113.16, *A 2* 519 (*Dict.* 25-6).
ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-/ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ=	" about, because of..., for the sake of... ", *Miss.* 279, *III* 108.19f.

[51] Compare the cohesive zeroing of the non-rectional modifier in a ' ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ → ⲕⲱ ' cotext pattern (see §3.1.1.1.0.1 for exx.); cf. STEINITZ 1969:15ff.

[52] SHISHA-HALEVY 1972, first chapter.

[53] *Ibid.*, Introduction, Chapter 3.

[54] *Ibid.* §§1.4.1-3.

MN-/NMMA-	" with, and- ", *III* 219.24, *Ch.* 136.5.
N-/MMO-	" in relation to, in, with, direct object etc. ", *III* 108.19f., *IV* 7.5 (spec. obs. 1).
N-/NA-	" to, for ", *III* 173.25, *Ch.* 131.23f.
(M)ПB(O)A-, NBAAA-	" outside of, beside " (exx. in *Dict.* 33-4).
NNA2PN-/NNA2PA-	" in the presence of..., before ", *Wess. 9* 119a 19f., *III* 54.19.
NCA-/NCW-	" after, behind, beyond ", *Ch.* 127.45f., *III* 219.12.
MNNCA-/MNNCW-	" after ", *P* 130[4] 104 PKr, *Ch.* 134.37ff., *A 1* 13.
NTN-/NTOOT-	" with, in the hand of... ", *IF* 123 (apud *Dict.* 523b), *III* 145.1 (*Dict.* 427-8).
OYBE-/OYBH-	" against, opposite ", *III* 159.11, *Ch.* 120.42f., 197.23f.
(OYTE-)/OYTW-	" between, among ", *Ch.* 146.33ff.
ЧA-/ЧAPO-	" (up) to, until, towards ", *IV* 33.18, *A 1* 16.
2A-/2APO-	" under, on behalf of, for ", *Wess. 9* 155b 5, *Mun.* 100.
2AEIAT-	" under the observation of ", *P* 130[4] 59 ro.
(2APN-)/2APW-	" under the mouth of..., before ", *Ch.* 157.55ff., *Rossi 2/3* 54, *A 2* 166 (*Dict.* 289-290).
2APAT-	" under foot of... ", *A 2* 299 (*Dict.* 303b).
2A(2)TN-/2A(2)TH-	" under (hand of...), with, among ", *III* 27.16, 150.14, 157 *passim*, *IV* 62 *passim* (*Dict.* 428b).
2I/2IWW-	" on, in, at " *III* 213 *passim*, *Ch.* 174.3f.
2IPN-/2IPW-	" at, upon (mouth/door of...) ", *III* 118.3, *Rossi 2/3* 51, *IF* 307 (apud *Dict.* 290a) (*Dict.* 290a).
2ITN-/(2ITOOT-)	" by, through ", *III* 24.22, 196.20 (*Dict.* 428-9).
2ITOYN-/2ITOYW-	" beside, next ", *A 2* 52, *IV* 120.19 (*Dict.* 444b).
2IXN-/2IXW-	" (up)on ", *Wess. 9* 141a 28, *Ch.* 18.26f. (*Dict.* 758-9).
(E)2HT-	" of " with P-2OTE *IV* 156.19, *K* 9294, *Mun.* 177, *Ch.* 151.20, *Mich. 158* 14a.
2N-/N2HT-	" in, at, with, etc. ", *Ch.* 110.16, *IV* 7.1; " to " — sp. obs. 3 2N-.

(2) *prepositions* (*of Greek origin and/or with no presuffixal allomorph*); *modifiers*

ANTI-	§1.3.11.5
AYW	§1.3.10
ENE2	§1.3.6
ETI	§1.3.11.6
EIC-	" for " (temporally), *III* 89.10, 218-9, *IV* 172.6, *P* 130[5] 79 A: ...EIC2OYO ECE NPOMПE ϯWϢ 2NNEYAГГEAION (*Dict.* 85b).
KAN	§1.3.11.6
XWPIC	§1.3.11.5
KATA(PO-)-	§1.3.11.5
MEXPI-	§1.3.11
NOYEϢ-	" without ", *IV* 91.20 (*Dict.* 502a).
NAME	§1.3.5.1
ПAAIN	§1.3.11.3
ПAPA(PO-)-	§1.3.11.5
ПPOC-	§1.3.11.5
TAXY	§1.3.11.4
TENOY	§1.3.4
TWN	" where/whence? ", see Ch. 2, esp. §2.2 (e.g. *A I* 33).

ⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ, etc.	§1.3.9
ⲯⲁⲑⲏ-	" except ", *P* 130[1] 133 ⲧⲕⲑ (*Dict.* 593).
ⲍⲟⲧⲁⲛ	§1.3.11.6
(ⲥ)ⲟⲧⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲭⲉ-	*A 2* 338.
ⲥⲱⲥ	§1.3.11.5
ⲍⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲛⲍⲟⲥⲟⲛ	§1.3.11.6
ⲭⲉ-	conjunctional, explicative, gerundial (" saying ") etc., *III* 81.24f., *Wess. 9* 126b 3ff., *Ch.* 116.18ff., 143.34f.
ⲭⲓⲛ-	" since ", *III* 218.9, *IV* 39.27f. (*Dict.* 772-3).
noun + *noun* (reiterated noun)	§1.3.3
Ø-noun	§1.3.2

(3) *expandable modifiers* (cf. §1.1.2.4)

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	" out ", *IV* 98.4 (*Dict.* 34).
ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ	" back ", *A 1* 24 (*Dict.* 284b).
ⲉⲡⲉϩⲏⲧ	" down " *Ryl.* 70 ⲥⲛⲃ (*Dict.* 60a).
ⲉⲑⲏ	" to the front, forwards ", *Mun.* 91 (*Dict.* 641a).
ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ	" in(side) ", *III* 115.21 (*Dict.* 685-7).
ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ$_1$	" up ", *A 2* 113, 234 (ⲙⲟⲩϩ " fill ") (*Dict.* 698-9, spec. obs. 2).
ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ$_2$	" down ", *IV* 59.3, *A 1* 404 (the setting sun) (*Dict.* 700, spec. obs. 2).

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-	*BKU* 180 (ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ).
	ⲉⲭⲱ-	*RE 10* 161a 2.
	ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ-	*III* 118.29, *Wess. 9* 108a 16ff.
	ⲛⲧⲛ-	*IF* 123 (apud *Dict.* 523b).
	ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-/ⲟⲩⲧⲱ-	*Ch.* 145.39f., *Mun.* 103, *P* 130[2] 92 ⲡⲥ, 130[4] 120 ⲕⲍ, *A 2* 109.
	ⲍⲁ-	*IV* 101.16.
	ⲍⲁⲣⲱ-	*Ch.* 135.30f.
	ⲍⲏⲧ-	*P* 130[5] 37 vo (ⲃⲱⲩⲧ) (prenom. ⲍⲏⲧϥ ⲛ- 130[2] 44 ⲣⲓⲇ).
	(ⲥⲓ-)ⲍⲓⲱⲱ-	*Wess. 9* 171b 8.
	ⲍⲓⲧⲛ-/ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ-	*IV* 204.13, *Ch.* 111.48f.
	ⲍⲓⲭⲛ-/ⲍⲓⲭⲱ-	*A 1* 452, *A 2* 336 (ⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ), *IV* 49.16, *Ch.* 116.2f.
	ⲍⲛ-/ⲛⲍⲏⲧ-	*III* 162.10, *IV* 19.15.
	ⲙⲙⲁⲩ	*IV* 121.6.
	ⲧⲱⲛ	see §2.6.3
	ⲭⲉ-	*IV* 21.7, *P* 130[4] 100 vo.
(ⲛ)ⲥⲁⲃⲟⲗ		*IV* 152.22
	ⲙⲙⲟ-	*IV* 74.23.
ⲯⲁⲃⲟⲗ		*Z* 246 ⲡⲃ.
ⲍⲓⲃⲟⲗ		*A 2* 26, *Ch.* 162.8f.

ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ	ⲉ-/ⲉⲣⲟ-	*IV* 24.4f., 6.10ff.
	ⲉⲍⲣⲛ-/ⲉⲍⲣⲁ-	*Ch.* 13.45f., *K* 9345, *IV* 116.19f.
	ⲛ-	*IV* 63.2.

	ⲟⲩⲧⲱ-	*Ch.* 90.5f.
	ϩⲛ-	*A 2* 304 (ⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ), *P* 130⁴ 103 ⲡⲕⲃ, *Mun.* 177 ("hit") (sp. obs. 3).
	ⲱⲁ-	*Ch.* 23.25.
ⲛϩⲟⲩⲛ	ϩⲁ-	*P* 130¹ 141 ⲧⲙⲑ ("hit").
		IV 98.6f.
	ϩⲛ-/ⲛϩⲏⲧ-	*III* 142.25f.
	ⲛ-	*IV* 98.6f.
ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩⲛ		*A 1* 381.
ⲱⲁϩⲟⲩⲛ	ⲉ-	*A 2* 380, *IV* 41.24.
ϩⲓϩⲟⲩⲛ		*A 2* 26.
	ⲙⲙⲟ-	*IV* 155.3.

ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ	ⲉ-/ⲓⲉⲣⲟ-	*IV* 24.13f., *Wess. 9* 154a 14f.
"up",	ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧ-	*IV* 20.22.
"down"	ⲉϫⲛ-/ⲉϫⲱ-	*IV* 67.18, 200.6.
("up +	ⲛⲙⲙⲁ-	*IV* 11.15f., *P* 131⁵ 58 ⲓⲍ (ⲱⲱⲱ).
down"?)	ϩⲁ-	*Z* 247 ⲡⲕⲍ, *P* 130⁵ 128 ⲧⲙⲑ (ⲥⲙⲙⲉ).
	ϩⲁϩⲧⲛ-	*III* 27.15f.
	ϩⲓ-	*IV* 98.2.
	ϩⲛ-	*Ryl.* 67 ⲧϥⲥ, *P* 130⁴ 93 ⲡⲙⲇ.
	ⲧⲱⲛ	*A 2* 513.
	ⲟⲩⲧⲱ-	*IF* 163 (apud *Dict.* 495a).
(ⲛ)ϩⲣⲁⲓ	ϩⲓ-	*P* 130⁴ 126 ⲁⲑ.
	ϩⲛ-/ⲛϩⲏⲧ-	*III* 156 *passim*, *IV* 204.16, *III* 193.18.
ⲥⲁⲛϩⲣⲉ		"above", *Ench.* 57b (*Dict.* 700).
ϩⲓϩⲣⲉ		"up", *A 1* 150 (*Dict.* 700a).
ⲱⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ	ⲉ-	*III* 142.8.

ⲉⲑⲏ	ⲙⲙⲟ-	*IV* 95.16.
ⲛⲥⲁⲑⲏ		*IV* 113.1.
ϩⲁⲑⲏ		*IV* 48.10.
ϩⲓⲑⲏ		*IV* 40.13.
ϩⲓϩⲏ	ⲙⲙⲟ-	*IV* 95.20.

(C) Special observations: (1) ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ- (see §§1.0.1, 1.1.1, 1.3.1 and *passim*). I consider the question of material identity subordinate to that of structural (i.e. functional) identity, which is determined by the slot occupied in the valency matrix and by commutability. Occasional analytic perplexities may arise (gen. obs. 3): $\text{ⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ}^{0}\ \text{ⲛ-}^{1}$ or $\text{ⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ}^{0}\ \text{ⲛ-}^{1}$ (adnominal ⲛ-; ⲣ-ⲡⲉⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ corroborates the second alternative.)

(2) ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ in a well-known syncretism; a phonological merger has caused two distinct Egyptian "prepositional adverbs" [55] ("up", *r-ḥry* and "down", *r-ḫry*) to merge in Sahidic Coptic into a single

[55] Edel 1959:18.

entity " up or down ", " incliningly, slopingly ". This at least is the *communis opinio* [56]. It remains to be seen whether the " up/down " distinctive feature — the functional burden — is situated in the verbal nucleus (or perhaps in its context), or whether this opposition is neutralized, for any given combination of ' lexeme + ϵ2PAI + preposition ', in favour of one or the other sense: KW ϵ2PAI meaning " lay *down* ", ϵI ϵ2PAI ϵ- " descend " only, AAϵ ϵ2PAI (*III* 99.1, [TAAO] *IV* 156.3) " ascend, go up ", and so on: consider (*III* 107.1, 111.2, *Miss.* 283) ϵI ϵ2PAI ϵ- " fall down into ", (*A 2* 192) ϵI ϵ2PAI 2N- " sprout up from ", (*A 1* 97) -TAAϤ ϵ2PAI ϵNϵϤOYWϢ MПONHPON " deliver (down) to ", (*IV* 24.16) 2WM ϵ2PAI ϵXN- " trample, tread down ", (*ibid.* 13f.) -NOXOY ϵ2PAI ϵПKW2T " down to ", (*Ch.* 60) (of the sun) ϵI/NHY ϵ2-PAI " rise ", BWK/NA ϵ2PAI " set ", and so on. It may well be that one of the two senses — ϵ2PAI " down "? — is unmarked environmentally, while the other is so marked; this must be settled by corpus-based investigation. May cases of " doubt " (*Dictionary* 698b) really be cases of indifference? Consider (*III* 210.18) ПϵCKWTϵ ϵ2PAI 2APIZAPOC, (*IV* 64.6) MOK2 ϵ2PAI ϵXH-, (*ibid.* 55.20f.) OYWTB ϵ2PAI ϵ- etc., where the direction is immaterial.

(3) (ϵ2OYN) 2N- " into ", pron. ϵ2OYN ϵ2PA- (*Dictionary* 684b, Polotsky 1939:113 = *CP* 377, Layton 1981:244f.): (*A 1* 202) NCϵ+ ϵ2OYN 2MПϵN2O/ (*P* 131[1] 139 TMS) +-AAC ϵ2OYN 2MП2O/ϵ2OYN ϵ2PAY; also ϤI-IATK ϵ2PAI 2N- (*Z* 247 PIB), BWK ϵBOA/2N- (*P* 130[2] 24 ΦNϵ; of viper's venom: " into body "), ϢAYϢIBϵ MПΔIKAION 2MПXINϬONC AYW ПTBBO 2MПXW2M (*P* 130[4] 104 PKΓ). BWK ϵ2OYN N2HT- (*P* 130[5] 16 vo) seems to indicate a complete merging of this compound preposition with 2N-/N2HT- " in " (Akhm. 2ϵN- vs. 2ϵN-). ϵ2N- (e.g. in Besa ed. Kuhn 79 NϵTNHY ϵ2MПϵY2HT, also common in " Middle Egyptian " Coptic) is ϵ + the same.

1.1.2.2 Premodifiers. Adclausal (adpattern) modifiers

(A) General observations: (1) Above (§1.1.2.0.1) the point was made that the modifier preceding the predicative pattern [57] or opening the clause is not adjunctal, but presets or predetermines the circumstances or attitude in/under which the predication is to be understood as valid. It thus realizes an option for a specific staging or structuring of the information given in the clause, related to the option of topic-comment arrangement. Postadjunctive modification has a broader potential of paradigmatic/syntagmatic extent (embodying as it does the valency matrix, rection and complementation) than premodification. Particularly significant is the absence in the case of pre- or adclausal modification of the opposition between rection and complementation, so crucial in postadjunctive modification. Paradigmatically speaking, the premodifier (insofar as it is opposed to a corresponding postadjunctive homonym) realizes a *marked* option in a binary category of placement. Syntagmatically, it is different in that it is free of matricial structuring. There seems to be a restriction on the number of premodifiers to any single clause, these being much fewer than the number of possible postadjunctive modifiers, and usually not exceeding three or four premodifiers to a clause.

(2) Premodifiers relate to the content of the entire clause. The degree of their integration with it may vary, it is also related to their macro-syntactic standing [58]. It is difficult to estimate this degree (in all probability, on a gradient scale). Prosodically, premodifiers are more autonomous syntactically

[56] Černý 1976:291f.

[57] See §3.3 for the lexeme/stative modifiers.

[58] See §7.3.1 for #*modifier* + *conjunctive*# syntagms; §§1.3.11 *passim* for the *premodifier*-Xϵ-clause integration type. It is interesting to note that the variant -OC of -WC Greek-origin modifiers is much more prevalent in postadjunctive position, which is apparently sufficiently characterizing, than in premodifier status. Note too the Nitrian Bohairic distinction of # KAAWC- vs. -NKA-AWC#. For N- with Greek-origin modifiers, see Crum 1926, I 251f. (n. 8), Kahle 1954:104.

than postadjuncts, since they usually constitute independent cola and may be disjoined by enclitics from the body of the clause [59].

(3) Criteria for identifying adclausal elements proposed for a modern language [60], such as their eligibility as foci of negation, of interrogation, of information, are only in part applicable to Coptic, a dead language. The focalizability test, for instance, shows that there is a subdivision of unfocalizable premodifiers, but most share a potential focal status with the postadjuncts (see §§2.4-6). Indeed, I find more essential the distinction between the non-focal — in relation to the rest of the clause, topical — preposed modifier on the one hand and the focalized one on the other.

(4) Here too, one must consider verb forms sharing in the modifier paradigm: the circumstantial (e.g. *Ch.* 110.26ff., *IV* 187.6ff.), coeventive (ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ-, e.g. *III* 58.21f., *IV* 128.4ff.), posteventive (ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-ⲧⲣⲉϥ-, e.g. *III* 133.24 ff.), precursive (ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉϥ-, in unmarked placement; e.g. *III* 24.7f., *IV* 206.1ff.) [61], conditional forms and syntagms ((ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ/ⲕⲁⲛ) ⲉϥϣⲁⲛ-, ⲉϣⲱⲡⲉ, ⲉϣⲭⲉ-, ⲉⲛⲉ-). The augential modifiers (Chapter 6) are absent in this paradigm.

(B) Constituency: Only the most common premodifiers are here presented (premodification being an open option, exhaustivity is precluded in this case, in which more and more members are added as one comes across them). Those premodifiers for which placement opposition is rare or absent are marked with an asterisk.

ⲛ-	ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ §1.3.1.2, ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛ- *III* 112.16, ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ §1.3.1.3, ⲛϣⲟⲣⲡ *III* 55.15, ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲛⲓⲙ *IV* 99.16, ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ *Teza* 683.
ϣⲁ-	ϣⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉ- *A 1* 171.
ϩⲛ-	*III* 73.10ff., ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲉ (§1.3.5.2).
ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-	*Wess. 9* 141a 25ff., ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲭⲉ- *A 2* 334.
ⲁⲭⲛ-	" without ", *A 2* 245f., *Wess. 18* 97b 9ff.
ϩⲓⲧⲛ-	*III* 113.12.
*ⲉⲡϩⲁⲉ	§1.3.7, ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲏ- *Young* passim, ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉ- *III* 88.8, ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ §1.3.7.3.
ⲭⲓⲛ-	ⲭⲓⲛⲧⲉϩⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧⲉ *P* 130[4] 139 ro, ⲭⲓⲛⲉⲛⲉϩ §1.3.6.
ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ-	*III* 73.9f., *IV* 99.16.
ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ-	*P* 130[4] 129 ⲙⲉ, *IV* 36.21.
ⲉⲓⲥ-	*Ch.* 173.56ff.
ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-	*P* 130[4] 111 ⲫⲛⲅ-ⲇ.
ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ-	*P* 130[2] 37 ro ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲏⲧⲛ ϣϣⲉ...
ⲛⲁⲙⲉ	§1.3.5.1
ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ	§1.3.4
*ⲁⲩⲱ	§1.3.10
Ø-noun	§1.3.2; esp. ⲥⲟⲛ in ϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ, ⲥⲟⲛ — ⲥⲟⲛ —, etc.

Greek-origin premodifiers (§§1.3.11 passim): ⲁⲛⲧⲓ- (esp. in ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉϥ-, ⲁϥ-, a favourite Shenoutean figure, e.g. *A 2* 7-8, ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ-, ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-, ϩⲱⲥ-, *ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ, *ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, *ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ, *ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ, ⲉⲕⲙⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥ, *ⲕⲁⲛ, *ⲙⲟⲅⲓⲥ, ⲉⲧⲓ, *ⲡⲗⲏⲛ, ⲥⲭⲉⲇⲟⲛ, *ⲧⲁⲭⲁ.

[59] See Ch. 6, esp. §6.0.3. This is also borne out by punctuation (e.g. *Ch.* 53.13, 56.28, 163.12; 21.2, 36.22, 113.50; 115.38; 120.10; 141.21 etc.). Compare too Shisha-Halevy 1975:483 b.4, c.3.4.

[60] Greenbaum 1969, esp. 24f., 119f., 230f.

[61] For extensive documentation and a discussion, see Shisha-Halevy 1972 §§1.1.1, 1.4.1.1.2, 1.4.1.2.2., 1.4.2.1.

(C) Special observations: (1) ⲉⲛ: 'ⲉⲛ-ⲟⲩ + *infinitive*', only in Shenoute's infrequent (Biblicizing) use of the so-called tautological infinitive, the syntagm used in certain languages to focalize (by topicalizing + focalizing) a verb lexeme: see Goldenberg 1971 (a penetrating and detailed, language-specific as well as typological-comparative study of these constructions). I consider the Coptic construction borrowed; for the authentic, stylistically neutral Coptic means of verb focalization (the autofocal Second Tense) see §2.1. Some exx. for the Shenoutean tautological infinitive: (*P* 130² 42 ⲣⲏ) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲣⲁⲯⲉ ⲛⲥⲉ-ⲛⲁⲣⲁⲯⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*P* 130⁴ 110 ⲫⲛⲃ) ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲏⲩ / (*A 2* 49) ...ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲁⲣⲉⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛ-ⲛⲁⲉⲁⲣⲉⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲉⲏⲧ / (*ibid.* 380) ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲕⲛⲏⲩ. Also *III* 183.4, 188.6, *IV* 121.4f. (and cf. — post-adjunctively — *A 1* 274, *Wess. 9* 90b 1ff., 156c 7ff.). Outside certain stereotyped expressions, ⲉⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛ- seems to be the premodifier alternant of ⲉⲛ-.

(2) Premodifiers of Greek origin are here statistically more weighty than in the post-adjunctive constituency — many are exclusively premodifiers, with no placement opposition. It would seem that Greek supplies here real conjuncts and disjuncts (in the terminology of Greenbaum 1969), in which the Egyptian stock of Coptic is very meagre. (The similarity to the particle situation is striking, if indeed particles too are not to be taken as premodifiers.)

1.1.2.3 Modifiers in a nominal sentence[62]

(A) General observation: Since here too one encounters a placement distinction, the question must be asked whether the same functional differentiation in evidence with verbal predications is valid in nominal-predication patterns which have their own specific, relatively rigid prosodic structure (cf. §6.0.3.3; 6 note 36). This structure must be considered a possible factor motivating the placement of modifiers. Initially, we note here three placements:

(a) *post-predicate* (adjunctal, adlexemic?): ⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ (*A 2* 485);

(b) *pattern-final* (adclausal?)[63]: ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲣⲏⲛⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲉⲣⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*III* 75.10);

(c) *prepattern* (adclausal?) — premodifier: ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲭⲏⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ (*A 2* 332).

These possibilities, observable for example in the bimembral # *predicate*-{ⲡⲉ} # pattern[64], must yet be empirically evaluated by reference to syntactic and prosodic motivating factors (for instance, extensive adlexemic modification is usually pattern-final; contrast (*Wess. 9* 117a 10 ff.) ⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ or (*Ench.* 87a) ⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲉⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ with (*Leyd.* 347) ⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲭⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ. This leaves us, at least in theory, with the simplified binary opposition of post-predicate + pattern-final *vs.* prepattern. See also §6.0.3.4 for the polar placement conditioning of certain modifiers; some (ⲛⲁ-, ⲛⲁⲙⲉ, augentia) occur only as colon-second, i.e. in post-predicate placement. In one pattern, post-predicate and pattern-final placements coalesce: (*IV* 102.16) ...ⲉⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲉⲛⲣⲙⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲙⲉⲁⲗ ⲛⲑⲩⲗⲏ / (*Leyd.* 348) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄. More precisely, we note six different cases:

(1) # *predicate* + {ⲡⲉ} (*nominal subject*) #[64]: "non-extensive" modification: (a), (b), (c)
"extensive" modification: (b), (c)

[62] Callender (1970:98-110) discusses, with ample illustration, the subcategorization and semasiological compatibility of "adverbials" with Nominal-Sentence patterns. He does not enter placement issues (see also *ibid.* 134-143 and Callender 1973b:196).

[63] The modifier following the pronominal subject or the apposite lexical (or demonstrative) one. I do not include here cases of the modification of a verb syntagm in position (a): (*IV* 21.16f.) ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲩⲙⲏⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲉ.

[64] Sethe 1916:§§95-99, 107-9, cf. also 131-3; Polotsky 1962:426f. (= *CP* 431f.); Callender 1970 Ch. III *passim*.

(2) # *pronominal subject* → *nom. predicate* # [65]: (b), (c)

(3) # *subject* + ⲡⲉ + *nom. predicate* # [66] (see spec. obs. below): (a) (pattern-second, here post-subject), (b), (c)

(4) *Focal* modifiers, marked or unmarked as such in their construction: (*Wess. 9* 142d 22ff.) ϩⲉⲛⲭⲣⲉⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ϩⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ: these are left out of the present discussion (see §2.7.3.3).

(5) Basically different is the nominal-focus Cleft Sentence, where a premodifier may precede the verbal *glose* (theme) constituent: (*III* 55.15f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱϥ.

(6) A distinct *Wechselsatz* Nominal Sentence pattern (" balanced construction "), where the two (pro)-nominal terms — lexically identical or related — are symmetrically reversible and (as regards thematic structure) of equal rank, i.e. subject/predicate alternatingly. On this pattern, more syntactic and prosodic information is still needed (see Ch. 6, n. 37 below). Consider (*A 2* 2) ⲛⲉϥⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲛ-ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲕⲙⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥ / (*Ch.* 59.31ff.) ⲡⲱⲓ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲱⲓ ⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ, cf. (*Miss.* 281) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲉϥⲡⲁϩⲧ ⲉϩⲙⲡⲉϥϩⲟ ⲉϥⲕⲗⲁ-ⲡⲁⲧ ⲉϥϩⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲉ-ⲉϥⲱⲗⲛⲁ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ...

(B) Constituencies: the most common or notable modifiers are here included, all of category (1) above. An asterisk marks those modifiers for which placement opposition is neutralized or reduced.

Position (a):

*ⲛⲁ- [67]	(*A 1* 102) ⲟⲩⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ.
*ⲙⲙⲟ-	(*Ch.* 117.19f.) ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ; cf. the difficult common formula in the Bruce Codex ' ⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ '.
*ⲛ-	(*A 2* 21-2) ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲥⲁϥ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ ⲡⲉ; compare with *Ch.* 63-4, which finishes with ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ, i.e. pos. (b).
*ⲉⲣⲟ-	(*Wess. 9* 117a 10f., 147d 28f.) ⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟ- ⲡⲉ / (*A 2* 464) ⲧⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲧⲉ
* ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲁ-	(*III* 203.8) ϩⲉⲛⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*P* 130[4] 141 vo) ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲁϥ ⲡⲉ (sim. ϩⲉⲛⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ *A 2* 512).
ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ	(§1.3.1.3) (*III* 19.2) ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ.
ⲛⲁⲙⲉ, ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ	(§§1.3.5.1, 1.3.11.1.2) (*RE 11* 16a 17) ϩⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 144c 4f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 402) ⲟⲩϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲡⲉ / (*Ryl. 67* ⲧⲛⲥ) ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲕⲟ-ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ.
ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ	(*A 2* 485) ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ.
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-	(*Ryl. 67* ⲧⲛⲥ) ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲓⲕⲱⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ.
ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ	(§1.3.4) (*IV* 20.10) ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲭⲣⲓⲁ...

Position (b):

ⲛ- [68]	(*Ch.* 64.1ff.) ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ.
* ⲛ- " for "	(*IV* 92.22f.) ϩⲉⲛⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ.
ϩⲛ-	(*III* 222.8) ϩⲉⲛⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲛⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*P* 130[4] 58 ⲓⲇ) ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲩϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ.
* ϩⲓⲭⲛ-	(*III* 190.18) ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲡⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ.

[65] Polotsky *ibid.*, Callender 1970 Ch. III *passim*, (Sethe 1916:§§60-62, 64-66).
[66] Polotsky 1962:426f. (= *CP* 431f.), Callender 1970 Chs. I, II *passim*, (Sethe 1916:§§135, 143-4).
[67] Cf. Polotsky 1961:313 (= *CP* 417).
[68] Here belongs ⲛⲑⲉ in (*III* 118.5f.) ⲟⲩⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ.

* ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛ-	(*Ch.* 117.49ff.) ⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛ- / (*P* 130[4] 139 ro) ⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲱⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲙⲛⲧⲁ-ⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ...
ⲯⲁ-	(*IV* 21.17) ⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁⲍ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲯⲁⲧⲥⲩⲛⲧⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ.
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-	(*III* 22.12f. 16) ⲡⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲁⲝⲓⲥ, ⲡⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ / (*ibid.* 59.22f.) ⲟⲩⲟⲟⲍⲉ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (also *ibid. ibid.* 26f., 28f.).
*ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	(*IV* 29.26) ⲙⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (also *ibid.* 178.13f., 187.9f.; see §7.4).
*ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ	(§1.3.7.2) (*III* 68.11) ⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ.
*ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ-, *ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛ-	(*A 2* 32) ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲁⲡ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲛ / (*III* 89.6) ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛ-ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩ.
*ⲭⲉ-	(*III* 107.23f.) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲯⲓ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲛ.
ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ	(§1.3.4; see spec. obs.) (*A 1* 293) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲯⲁⲉⲛⲉⲍ.
ⲛⲁⲙⲉ	(§1.3.5.1) (*III* 95.23f.) ⲟⲩⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*A 1* 305) ⲟⲩⲏⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲍⲓⲧⲱⲃⲉ ⲍⲓⲱⲛⲉ.
ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ	(*P* 130[4] 125 ⲁⲍ) ⲍⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ.

Position (c):

*ⲁⲩⲱ	(§1.3.10)
*ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ	(§1.3.11.1.6, e.g. *III* 40.9f.).
*ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ	(§1.3.11.1.5, e.g. *Ch.* 59.31ff.).
*ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ	(§1.2.11.1.4, e.g. *Ch.* 80.15ff.).
*ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ	(§1.3.11.1.4, e.g. *A 2* 464).
*ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ	(§1.3.11.2.1.4, e.g. *A 2* 510-511).
*ⲉⲧⲓ	(§1.3.11.6, e.g. *III* 89.6).
ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ	(*III* 74.14) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ...
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-	(*Cat.* 42.21f.) ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲟⲩⲟⲓⲕⲟⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲙⲉⲏ ⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲉ, ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲙⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲧ-ⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲧⲉϥⲍⲙⲍⲁⲗ ⲧⲉ.
*ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲃⲉ-	(§1.3.4, e.g. *III* 77.4).
ⲛⲁⲙⲉ, ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ	(§§1.3.5.1, 1.3.11.2) (*A 2* 332) ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ / (*ibid.* 371) ⲡⲉⲕ-ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ " your god, who is not truly a god " / (*III* 114.12) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ.

(C) Special observations: (1) Appraising the data by reference to opposition/function/modifier, we arrive at the following statements:
Position (a) neutralizes *adnominal* and *adclausal* modification [69].
Position (b) is *adclausal*. Insofar as it is pertinent, it is relatively rare.
Position (c) is the placement of a *premodifier*.

(2) The " trimembral " pattern # *subject* + *copula* (ⲡⲉ) + *nom. predicate* # is prosodically different from the bimembral # *predicate* + {ⲡⲉ} + (*lex. subject*) #: Ch. 6 footn. 37. The modifier-placement situation is quite different in this case, and in the post-subject position we find a paradigmatically and syntagmatically more extensive constituency: (*A 2* 76) ⲡⲩⲱϥ ⲛⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩ-ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ- / (*ibid.* 364) ⲁⲣⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲛⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲍⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 51.6f.) ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ ⲉⲣ-ⲍⲱⲃ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲕⲟⲟⲩ. Rarely, one finds similarly

[69] On the functional yield of the placement of circumstantial forms adnominal to a predicate in the bimembral pattern (placement that may be prosodically conditioned or neutralized), see Shisha-Halevy 1972:100-105 (§2.1.2.3) and 1976a:34.

" loose " junctural conditions even in the bimembral pattern, in circumstances as yet obscure: (*A 2* 304) ϩⲉⲛⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲧⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ. However, this may be an instance of the distinct " *Wechselsatz* " pattern, the junctural contour of which is similar to that of the trimembral Nominal Sentence, see (a) (6) above.

(3) The placement of ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ- (also of ϩⲓⲭⲛ-, and other prep. phrases?) may also be regulated by prosodic weight: presuffixally, these occur in pos. (a); prenominally — esp. before a further expanded noun — in pos. (b). We need more exx. to establish this mechanism beyond doubt.

(4) ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ in position (b) (§1.3.4) may represent the *intercolary*, conditioned placement of this modifier/particle (ⲧⲁⲓ-ⲧⲉ-ⲑⲉ " thus " being taken as a single colon).

1.1.2.4.1 Modifiers as nuclei: modifiers modified[70]. Prominent here are the three cardinal directional-motional modifier syntagms (ⲉ)ⲃⲟⲗ, (ⲉ)ϩⲟⲩⲛ, (ⲉ)ϩⲣⲁⲓ, which are expansible by an impressive list of prepositions (see the inventory and spec. observations in §1.1.2.1), thereby constituting the intricate, subtle system of spatial-relational orientation so typical of Coptic. These systematized complexes apart, I have noted the following modifiers expanding others:
ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ " rather, even (more) ": (*III* 222.4) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ / premodifying in (*III* 126.23f.) ϩⲛⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ, ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲛϩⲁⲉ / (*A 1* 11) ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 39) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲉ... ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ.
ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ " only ": (*IV* 24.6f.) ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ.
ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ " very ": (*P* 130[4] 139 ro) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ.
ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ " especially ": (*III* 77.19) ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ... ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ / (*IV* 78.7f.) ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ ⲙⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁⲩⲱⲛⲉ.
ϩⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ " simply ": (*A 1* 204, *IV* 196.3, *Ch.* 162.4f. etc.).
Add also the following cases, in my opinion of modification rather than rection: ϫⲱⲣⲓⲥ (+ *circumstantial*) (*IV* 108.8), ⲕⲁⲛ (+ *conditional/circumstantial*) (*passim*, e.g. *III* 19.28, 22.9, 40.16, 19ff.), ⲉⲧⲓ (+ *circumstantial*) (*III* 210.23, *IV* 191.12). ϩⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ (§1.3.11.1.4) and ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ (§1.3.11.2.1) are likely candidates for the modifier-premodifier role.

1.1.2.4.2 Modifiers coordinated/disjoined. Coordination and disjunction in Coptic, even for the simpler, more obvious word classes, are far from clear and matter-of-fact constructions. The most acute issue here is the exact status of ⲁⲩⲱ (§1.3.10) and ⲏ and their relation to -Ø- and other elements like ⲟⲩⲇⲉ and ⲉⲓⲧⲉ. ⲁⲩⲱ (ⲟⲛ) and ⲏ (ⲛⲧⲟϥ) are used to coordinate/disjoin modifiers: (*III* 181.4) ϩⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲛϩⲁⲉ / (*P* 130[2] 59 o) ⲉⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲱⲛϩ / (*Ch.* 32.19ff.) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲉ-ⲥⲧⲣⲁⲧⲓⲁ... / (*IF* 88 apud *Dictionary* 236b) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥⲓⲭⲱⲟⲩ / (*III* 130.3f.) ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲧⲩⲣⲁⲛⲛⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ / (*P* 130[2] 63 oz) ϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲏ ϩⲁϩⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ. So are ⲟⲩⲇⲉ and ⲉⲓⲧⲉ -ⲉⲓⲧⲉ: (*A 2* 519) ⲉⲭⲱⲓ (" without me ") ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲕ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ / (*III* 116.16f.) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲗⲏ / (*P* 130[2]

[70] Although in a general sense — with reference to the semantics of the interrelationship between ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ- and ϩⲛ-, ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- and ⲉ- (etc.) — the nuclear modifier may be taken as " precising " or even " reinforcing " the preposition (so *Dictionary*, passim; cf. Stern §516, p. 340) — this being a case of the " semasiological nucleus " (see §4.2), the preposition does not coincide with the grammatical nucleus, the modifier. I have no doubt that the modifier here *is* nuclear, in a syntactic sense. Some prepositions (e.g. ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-, ⲉϩⲣⲛ-) are rare in Shenoute and are analytically " renewed ", replaced by expanded modifiers (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ-, ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲛ-). In certain references, too, prepositions are replaced by ' modifier–preposition ' syntagms: ϩⲛ- " from " (see n. 96) by ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ-, ϩⲓ- " from " by ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓ-, ⲉ- " against " by ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ-, ϩⲛ- " into " by ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲛ-, ⲉⲭⲛ- " onto " by ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛ- and so on. Needless to say, this system deserves a thorough structural monographic treatment, isolating semasiological ranges as well as grammatical distribution. For the theoretical background, cf. Karcevskij 1936:110, Tesnière 1965:127ff., Jacobson 1964:36, Pinkster 1972:108ff.

62 ⲟⲉ) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉⲥⲣⲉ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲑⲃⲥⲱ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲯⲱⲛⲉ. Modifier coordination by means of ⲙⲛ- is extremely rare in Shenoutean Sahidic: (*IV* 120.12f.) ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲥⲛⲛⲉⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ... ⲙⲛ-ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲥⲙⲡⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ is a special case, with ⲡⲙⲁ appositive to the modifiers. *Iteration* of the same modifier may be interpreted as an expressive case of zero-marked coordination, favoured by Shenoutean style: ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ (*III* 138.23, *IV* 75.25), ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ (*A 2* 87, 301), ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ (often ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ, *III* 77.19f., *IV* 66.15, 69.1f., 205.18, *A 1* 285, *Ench.* 85a): this is an "insistence" emphasizing procedure [71], used only with a small subgroup of modifiers. Another idiomatic and typical construction employs the copulative (ⲙⲛ-) ⲛⲙⲙⲁ-, mainly to add another pronominal *rectum* to a usually '*prep.* + *pronoun*' prepositional phrase [72]: (*Ch.* 27.24) ⲥⲁⲣⲱⲕ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*III* 184.21f., *BM* 209 ⲁⲑ) ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲛⲙⲙⲏⲧⲛ / (*ibid.* 211.11) ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲙⲙⲁϥ / (*Leyd.* 302) ⲟⲩⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*Wess.* 9 112a 4f.) ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 147.14f.) ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲥ, but also with an additional *nominal rectum* to a '*prep.* + *pronoun*' phrase: (*III* 191.31) ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲛⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (ⲙⲛ- in two different identities) / (*Wess. 18* 97b 9ff.) ⲁⲭⲏⲧⲕ ⲙⲛⲡⲉⲕⲡⲛⲁ / (*Wess. 9* 146a 1 ff., 10ff.) ⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲙⲛⲡⲉⲕⲯⲏⲣⲉ.

1.2 The predicative modifier

In the following paragraphs, we consider a set of patterns in which the modifier is not adjunctal, but is in a *nexal* relationship with a pronoun/noun-syntagm constituent. These patterns do not all form a paradigm [73]: the two major ones are selected by the predicated modifier, that is to say, are in complementary distribution, constituting together one "arch-pattern" of modifier predication.

1.2.1.1 The bipartite pattern: noun syntagm/prefixed pers. pronoun → modifier [74]

(A) General observation: In this pattern we must distinguish two sub-patterns:

(1) *subject* (*theme*): {ⲡ-} determinator pronoun (+ noun lexeme)/prefixed pers. pronoun/demonstrative pronoun; *predicate* (*rheme*): modifier (of the inventory, below), and

(2) *subject* (*theme*): {ⲟⲩ-} or ∅-determinator pronoun (+ noun lexeme)/indefinite pronoun/indeterminable; *predicate* (discontinuous): (affirm.) ⲟⲩⲛ — modifier, (neg.) ⲙⲛ — modifier [75]. Basic and converted forms of the pattern are considered.

(B) Constituency:

ⲛ- ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ (*A 1* 379), ⲛⲧⲡⲉ (*A 1* 245), ⲛⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲥⲛ- (*III* 201.18), ⲛⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧ- (*A 1* 119), ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲛ (*III* 24.19f.), ⲙⲡⲃⲟⲗ (*Ench.* 88b), ⲙⲡⲉϥⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*III* 27.10), ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ (*Ch* 162.44), ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲥⲓⲧ etc. (*IV* 120.15f.), ⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ (*Ch.* 197.39f.), ⲙⲡⲉ(ⲕ)ⲕⲱⲧⲉ (*Ch.* 30.12f.), ⲛⲑⲉ (*A 1* 246) etc. (open-ended list).

[71] Cf. Hoffmann 1936:104ff.

[72] Stern:559. Compare (*Ch.* 63.6) ⲛⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲁϥ "ours and his".

[73] Cf. Callender 1973b and 1970, Ch. VI. Certain members of his "paradigm" are not considered in the present discussion, namely, the *verbal* predicated ⲟ (ⲛ-), ⲯⲱⲡⲉ (ⲛ-), ⲯⲟⲟⲡ (ⲛ-). In addition to their being verbal, their selection is differently motivated than the lexically suppletive or complementary members of the set considered here: Callender's "mixed paradigm" is one of a single type — the *basic unmarked predication* of a modifier (see however in §1.2.1.3.1 below).

[74] Polotsky 1960a:§§5-6, 8-9, 12, 19-15; Nagel 1980:83. See now Quecke, *Or* 52:298ff. (1983).

[75] Polotsky 1960a:§§19ff., 35; Nagel 1980:77ff. I treat both subpatterns conjointly and do not attribute primacy to either. In superscriptions like (*III* 26.25, *IV* 22.1) ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲛ- we do not have a Bipartite construction at all (the modifier belongs to the '*noun* + *modifier*' predicate group, while the heralded text itself — a ⲡⲉ-substitute — is the subject). On the other hand, # ⲉⲓⲥ + *noun syntagm* + *modifier* # is a deictic presentative alternant (affirmative only) of both Bipartite subpatterns: (*IV* 91.11) ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲥⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*ibid.* 161.2f.) ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲥⲙⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ (see Nagel 1980:80ff.).

NTOOT=	(*III* 211.4).
MMO=	(*Ch.* 148.37f., 42f., *IV* 96.24; see spec. obs.).
MMAY	" there " (*Ch.* 11.9f.).
N-/NA=	ΠEOOY NA= (*IV* 197.7, *RE 10* 160b 20 etc.), OYOEI NA= (*Wess. 9* 129a 1, 8f.) (see spec. obs.).
(MN-)/NMMA=	(*III* 101.6f., *IV* 160.13, *Ch.* 53.13, 193.53f.).
EPO=	(*Ch.* 98.51f., 102.19, *Rossi 2/3* 58, *IV* 43.28, *P* 130² 32 AB: NXEIPOГPAΦON ETEPOЧ, (see spec. obs.).
E2PAI EXN-/EXW=	very common: ΠEYKPIMA E2PAI EXWI (*Miss.* 280), ΠECNOЧ NNEIPWME E2PAI EXMΠAI (*A 1* 98), ΠEYCWЧ E2PAI EXWOY Ч2IXWOY ГAP (*P* 130² 113 PH); also *P* 130⁵ 69 vo, 131⁵ 80 ro (adaptation of *Act.* 18:6?).
EXN-	(*A 2* 304, 346; see spec. obs.).
2A-/2APO=	(*IV* 74.12, *Ch.* 15.33f., *P* 131⁵ 20 PΠZ).
2APAT=	(*III* 38.10).
2APW=	(*Ch.* 119.1, *P* 131⁶ 81 vo).
2A(2)TN-/2A(2)TH=	(*III* 157 passim, *Ch.* 106.9f., *Cat.* 42.39).
2I/-2IWW=	(*IV* 74.7f., *Wess. 9* 138a 29f., *III* 156.13), 2I2OYN, 2IBOA (*III* 31.19, 52.20, *A 1* 15), 2IOYNAM, 2I2BOYP (*III* 14.5f.).
2IXN-/2IXW=	(*Ch.* 46.35ff., *A 1* 13, *K* 924) .
2N-/N2HT=	(*IV* 86.2, *III* 14.4, *Ch.* 90.42ff., *P* 130⁴ 49 ro).
(OYTE-)/OYTW=	(*Miss.* 234).
OYBE-/OYBH=	(*Ch.* 70.12, *Mun.* 102).
(NA2PN-)/NA2PA=	(*Ch.* 108.49f.).
CA-ΠECHT	(*Cairo* 8007, *Berl. Sitz.* 430).
MNNCA-	(*BM* 253 NZ).
NCW=	(*IV* 24.8).
2PAI 2N-	(*A 2* 175), 2PAI 2IXN-/2IXW= (*A 1* 99, *III* 189.15), 2PAI OYTE-/OYTW= (*Ch.* 156.12f., 163 apud *Dictionary* 495a), 2PAI EXN- (*P* 130¹ 37 PNZ, *A 1* 799), 2PAI N- (*P* 130¹ 126 PKS), cf. N2PAI 2N-/N2HT= (*A 1* 191 etc.).

(C) Special observations: (1) MMO= is used to predicate so-called "*inalienable*" possession (Lévy-Bruhl's term, see Isačenko 1954:141ff.), and is selected by a special sub-paradigm of noun lexemes: (E)KIBE (*Ch.* 148.37ff.), TN2 (*IV* 96.24, *P* 130² 39 PA), ANE (*A 1* 251), CA " beauty " (*K* 9320), 6IX, OYEPHTE (*Ch.* 87.9f. 27ff.), ΠAT (*III* 143.28), BAA (*P* 131⁵ 80 ro) and of course 6OM (*IV* 51.14f.), and possibly many more. This is a field which must be further investigated also in other contexts, notably that of the combinatorics of ' determinator + noun + possessive expansion (N-/NTE-) '[76]. We may here have a gradient parameter on a scale of syntactic features converging on a given lexeme (a striking case — valency being another — of " lexemic syntax ").

(2) Predicative N-/NA= features in a historically interesting, if synchronically problematic pattern[77]. OYOEI (N-) occurs in most conversions (ETEOYOEI N- *Rossi 2/3* 37, *P* 130⁴ 139 vo; NEOYOEI N- *IV* 94.24, *Wess. 9* 142d 9; EOYOEI N- [circ.] *IV* 4.12f.), yet cannot properly speaking be taken as an (indeterminable)

[76] Cf. Havers 1931:§92; Steinthal–Misteli 1893:292, 299. In Coptic, a "*be*-language" as regards predication of possession, the opposition OYN (NTA= - : MMO=) is one of unmarked *vs.* inalienable possession. On inalienable possession see also Rosén, *Lingua* 8:264-293 (1959).

[77] Gardiner 1957:§114.1, Satzinger 1976:198f.

noun, but rather as part of a composite predicate. ⲡⲉϩⲟⲩ ⲛ- is neither convertible nor negativable (moreover, the ⲡ- determination is here not really pertinent).

(3) ⲉⲣⲟ-: predicative only in the sense " to one's debit, one's duty/responsibility " (cf. *Dictionary* 51), prenominally ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛ-, not ⲉ-.

(4) ⲉϫⲛ-: in three instances where the absence of ⲟⲩⲛ- with an indefinite noun may be due to special modulation of the utterance (idiomatic exclamation, rhetorical question)[78]: (*A 2* 304) ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲛⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ... / (*ibid.* 346) ⲙⲟⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲉϫⲛⲙⲟⲉⲓⲥⲉ, but cf. (*Cat.* 43.29) ⲥⲉⲛ[ⲙⲟⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲉϫⲛⲙⲟⲉⲓⲥⲉ] ⲛⲉ / (*A 1* 188) ⲟⲩⲗⲩⲡⲏ ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩⲗⲩⲡⲏ, ⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ ...

1.2.1.2 # MODIFIER → ⲡⲉ

(A) General observations: (1) The modifier predicated by this pattern — known as a " Nominal Sentence ", after the word class more " typically " constituting its predicate — is not unknown, but has never really been treated separately and in detail[79]. This predicate position is in fact only one of the positions in which the modifier vies with the noun syntagm: another is in the satellital slot following the determinators (§1.1.1.1)[80]. In fact, the Nominal Sentence predicates a *determinator pronoun* followed by its lexeme[81]. In our pattern, however, the modifier is invariably non-determinated.

(2) The modifier predicate precedes the pronominal subject ⲡⲉ. The pattern may be negated, and is (rarely) converted, only in the relative conversion.

(3) *Suppletivity*: A modifier in this pattern does not occur as predicative in the Bipartite (§1.2.1.1). That is to say, it is complementary with the Bipartite, and no opposition obtains between the two predicative patterns (two " allo-syntagms " of a single " syntagmeme " predicating a modifier). See §0.2.3.

(4) It may not be going too far to suggest that in the ever accumulating instances of '*present/perfect circumstantial* + ⲡⲉ' (see Quecke 1977b:302, Browne 1978a:7 = 53, 1979b:200, to whose exx. add *Judith* 14:14, and many [Nitrian] Bohairic examples, e.g. in Hyvernat's 1886 *Actes des Martyrs*), the circumstantial is predicated in the very pattern examined here. It is a predication especially on a higher level of analysis — the macrosyntactic level — signalling a " backgrounding " of the evolving action. 'ⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲡⲉ' might accordingly be taken to contain (beside the actor and verb lexeme) *two* distinct relational signals: ⲛⲉ- for the narrative framework characterization, -ⲡⲉ for the macrosyntactic backgrounding (cf. Callender's " situational " subject, 1970:205ff.; also ⲡⲉ as *apodosis marker*, with fut. [*III* 158.7f., *P* 130[1] 135 ⲧⲁⲣ]; Polotsky 1939:110 = *CP* 374).

(B) Constituency:

ⲛ-	ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ	*IV* 84.14, see spec. obs.
	ⲛⲑⲉ	*III* 75.16f., see spec. obs.; ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ (*IV* 159.11f.).

[78] See Nagel 1970:80.

[79] See among Stern's exx. on pp. 300 (*Marc.* 13:33), 302 (*I Cor.* 9:18), 305 (*Ps.* 8:1); Till §248; Callender 1970:37ff.114f. Sethe 1916:§109 treats our construction together with # (det. + adv.) ⲡⲉ #, apparently considering it a case of " article omitted ".

[80] Yet another is the " *glose* " — or verbal topic — constituent in the focus-initial focalization constructions (§§2.4-6 below). Indeed, I believe that the sharp noun : " adverb " dichotomy which forms the matrix of Polotsky's conception of Egyptian grammatical structure, is considerably blurred in Coptic (cf. also Shisha-Halevy 1978).

[81] The not infrequent instances of # *bare noun* (or *zero-determinated noun*?) -ⲡⲉ # merit a special discussion (this is nowhere treated as a distinct case, and is not included in the constituency lists in Callender 1970). We may have here a pattern with apparently limited predicate and subject constituencies, possibly also special environmental properties. Some Shenoutean exx.: (*Ch.* 183.23) ..ⲉⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*A 2* 34, 114) ...ⲉⲙⲟⲓⲥⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ... / (*A 1* 210) ⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 395) ⲏ ⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲥ / (*Or.* 159.34ff.) ...ⲉⲥⲓⲩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲑⲉ... ⲉⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲑⲉ...

ⲠⲀⲢⲀ-	ⲠⲀⲢⲀⲔⲈⲔⲞⲨⲒ ⲠⲈ + *conjunctive* (*A 2* 390, §7.3.1), ⲠⲀⲢⲀⲠⲈⲬⲞⲨⲰⲰ ⲄⲀⲢ ⲠⲈ Ⲉ- (*RE 10* 161a 16f.), ⲠⲀⲢⲀⲦⲢⲈⲬ- ⲠⲈ (*A 2* 75).
ⲔⲀⲦⲀ-	ⲔⲀⲦⲀⲠⲈⲬⲈⲒⲚⲈ ⲠⲈ ⲠⲈⲒⲚⲈ ⲚⲚⲈⲤⲂⲎⲨⲈ (*Wess. 9* 110a 14ff., *IV* 65.12f., neg.)
ⲱⲀ- [82]	ⲱⲀⲠⲈⲒⲘⲀ ⲦⲈ ⲦⲈⲦⲚⲘⲚⲦ-ⲤⲎⲦ ⲚⲞⲨⲰⲦ ⲚⲘⲘⲀⲚ (*P* 130[1] 135 ⲦⲀⲄ-Ⲇ), *Ch.* 59-60, 60.7ff. (adaptation of *Mark* 13:27).
ϪⲒⲚ-	*Ch.* 59.55ff., 60.4ff. (adapt. of *Mark* 13:27).
ⲈⲠϪⲒⲚϪⲎ	ⲈⲠϪⲒⲚϪⲎ ⲚⲀⲨ ⲦⲈ ⲦⲈⲨⲤⲨⲠⲞⲘⲞⲠⲎ (*IV* 46.18, see §1.3.7.3.1; also, in a quotation, *III* 45.17f.).
ⲤⲀⲐⲎ	ⲈⲚⲈⲤⲀⲐⲎ ⲄⲀⲢ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲘⲠⲀⲦⲈⲠⲞⲨⲞⲈⲒⲚ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲠⲰⲚⲤ ⲈⲒ ⲈⲠⲔⲞⲤⲘⲞⲤ (*A 2* 247).
ⲤⲒⲦⲞⲨⲰ-	ⲠⲈⲦⲤⲘⲠⲠⲒⲢⲈ Ⲏ ⲠⲞⲨⲰⲚⲤ ⲈⲂⲞⲀ ⲘⲠⲞⲨⲞⲈⲒⲚ... ⲤⲒⲦⲞⲨⲰⲤ ⲘⲠⲤⲞⲂⲦ ⲀⲈ ⲈⲦⲤⲒⲂⲞⲀ ⲠⲈ (*III* 52.18ff.).
ⲈⲂⲞⲀ ⲤⲚ-	ⲠⲈⲬϪⲠⲞ ⲀⲈ ⲈⲂⲞⲀ [ⲠⲈ] ⲤⲘⲠⲒⲰⲦ... (*Wess. 9* 147b 10ff.).
ⲦⲰⲚ	ⲈⲂⲞⲀ ⲦⲰⲚ ⲠⲈ ⲚⲒⲤⲂⲎⲨⲈ ⲈⲦⲄⲞⲞⲘⲈ (*A 2* 333, *A 1* 8, *Ench.* 93a; cf. §2.6.3.2).

(C) SPECIAL OBSERVATIONS: (1) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ is by far the most common modifier in this construction. We find the following varieties of this pattern:

(a) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ(ⲞⲚ) {ⲠⲈ} + *noun syntagm* (*III* 103.4, *IV* 80.21, *III* 74.17f. codd., *Ch.* 75.44ff., 194.9ff., 24ff., 65.6f., 156.56ff., *A 2* 537, *A 2* 337, *Wess. 9* 86a 28ff. etc.).

(b) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲦⲈ ⲚⲀ + *noun syntagm* (sgl./plur.) (*IV* 163.25, 164.2, 111.4, *Ch.* 193.25f., *Wess. 9* 86b 1ff.).

(b′) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲦⲈ + *noun syntagm* (plur.) (*IV* 106.2).

(b″) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲦⲈ + *clause*: ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲦⲈ ⲚⲀⲰ ⲚⲤⲈ ⲠⲈⲦⲈⲞⲨⲚⲦⲀϤ ⲘⲘⲀⲨ ⲘⲠⲤⲞⲞⲨⲚ... ⲈⲚϤⲚⲀⲚⲀⲨ ⲀⲚ ⲈⲠⲀⲄⲄⲈⲖⲞⲤ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚϤⲤⲞⲨⲰⲚϤ... ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲦⲈ ⲚⲒⲘ ⲠⲈⲦⲚⲀⲞⲨⲰⲰ... (*P* 130[2] 47-8 ⲤⲔⲄ-Ⲇ).

(c) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲤⲰⲰ- Ⲛ + *noun syntagm* (*III* 48.24f.).

This pattern (like other ⲑⲈ-constructions: ⲚⲑⲈ Ⲛ-, ⲦⲀⲒ ⲦⲈ ⲑⲈ Ⲛ-, ⲦⲀⲒ ⲦⲈ ⲦⲈ(Ϥ)ⲤⲈ...) is expandable by a subnexal constituent: *noun* + *adnexal circumstantial* (SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:82ff. and see footnote 99 below): (*III* 48.24f.) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲤⲰⲞⲨ ⲚⲚⲤⲈⲖⲖⲎⲚ ⲘⲚⲤⲀⲒⲢⲈⲦⲒⲔⲞⲤ ⲚⲒⲘ ⲈⲨⲘⲈⲈⲨⲈ ⲚⲚⲀⲤⲢⲀⲨ ϪⲈ- / (*A 1* 267) ⲚⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲞⲚ ⲠⲈ ⲠⲈϤ-ⲤⲘⲤⲀⲖ ⲈⲖⲒⲤⲤⲀⲒⲞⲤ ⲈⲀϤⲦⲞⲨⲚⲈⲤ-ⲚⲈⲦⲘⲞⲞⲨⲦ, also *IV* 163-4, *Ch.* 193.25-39. Here the subnexal unit forms part of the overall nexus in the pattern. Pattern (2) may be regarded as anacoluthic. ⲞⲚ is clearly an essential (if not indispensable) component of this pattern in its different forms.

(2) In (*III* 47.19) ⲚⲈⲨⲘⲈⲢⲒⲤ ⲚⲈ ⲚⲑⲈ ⲈⲦⲤⲎⲤ ϪⲈ- we have properly speaking a different pattern, the copular # *subject* - *copula* - *predicate* # Nominal Sentence predicating the modifier ⲚⲑⲈ.

1.2.1.3 MISCELLANEOUS PATTERNS

1.2.1.3.1 The stative of ⲈⲒⲢⲈ, ⲟ, supplies a convenient *outil grammatical* for predicating the important group of ⲛ-modifiers in a durative framework [83], which relates paradigmatically to the Nominal Sentence as an incidental *vs.* inherent predication: ⲠⲢⲰⲘⲈ ⲈⲦⲞ ⲚⲀϤ ⲚⲀⲠⲈ (*A 1* 251). Whereas the " copular " (i.e. incomplete-predication) -ⲟ is empty of verbal-lexical content, other statives, forming a paradigm with this -ⲟ (ⲛ-) and expandable by ⲛ- as well as by other modifiers, supply various *Aktionsart* characterizations of the basic nexus: -ⲱⲟⲟⲡ, -ⲟⲩϩ, -ϫⲙ, -ⲥⲙⲟⲟⲥ... (consider *III* 98.19, 134.12f., *IV* 44.25, 50.23, *Ch.* 57.45ff., 59.46ff., 50.43ff., *Ench.* 93a, etc.) [84]. ⲛ-modifiers can occur, of course, as predicative (" *adnexal* ") complements of many other verbs (of which only ⲈⲒⲢⲈ — and ⲱⲱⲡⲈ? — are in regular trans-

[82] See WIESMANN 1927:67 and JERNSTEDT 1929:128, on *III* 97.14f. (quoting *Prov.* 6:26).
[83] CALLENDER 1970:248-279 (cf. our Chapter 3, note 4).
[84] CALLENDER 1970:279ff., 1973b.

formative relationship with their statives): ⲁⲩϥⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓⲭⲙⲁⲗⲱⲧⲟⲥ (*A 2* 252), ϥⲛⲁⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲙⲡⲛⲉⲩ ⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲛ (*ibid.* 401), ⲁⲕⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲃⲟⲧⲉ (*Wess. 9* 118a 24ff.) [85].

1.2.1.3.2 The prenominal allomorph of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ is used to predicate certain prepositions *in the Tripartite Conjugation* [86]: ⲣ-ⲉⲣⲟ- (*IV* 12.21, perf., *A 1* 162, conj., *Wess. 18* 127a 30, conj., ⲁⲣⲟ-); ⲣ-ϩⲓⲭⲱ- (*Wess. 9* 171b 25f., perf.); ⲣ-ⲡⲁⲣⲁ- (*IV* 3.20, *P* 130[4] 105 ⲣⲕⲉ: ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲁϥⲣ-ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉϥⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ); ⲣ-ϩⲓⲧⲡⲉ (*A 2* 192, fut. III, *ibid.* 441, not Sh., conj.).

1.2.1.3.3 A marginal yet I believe well established pattern predicates a modifier with a *zeroed subject* (*theme*) [87]: ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, in *irrealis* protases: (*A 2* 113-4) ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ (i.e. ⲛⲉⲡⲗⲏⲅⲏ) ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲩⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲣ-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲥⲗⲁⲁⲧⲉ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲱⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 398) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ (i.e. it was done). Negatively (" were it not for... "), with ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲏⲗ: (*A 2* 514) (" people say secretly about me) ϫⲉ-ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲏⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ϫⲉⲛⲉⲛⲟ ⲙⲡⲉⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ, ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲁϭⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ / (*P* 131[5] 56 ro) ⲕⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲏⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲥⲟⲡⲥ ⲙⲙⲓϫⲁⲏⲗ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲥⲟⲃⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ... ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲧⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲑⲏⲣⲥ, but also with ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉ... ⲁⲛ: (*A 1* 158) ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛⲩϭⲟⲙ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲟⲩ, compare (*IV* 156.26) ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ...

ϩⲛ- also in an unfulfillable protasis: (*IV* 94.23) ⲉⲛⲉϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧϩⲁϩ ⲛⲩⲁϫⲉ, ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲩϭⲙ-ϭⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ...

ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ-: (*III* 107.6) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲛⲟⲩⲏϩ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲥⲁ / (*Ch.* 135.50ff.) ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲁⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ϥⲙⲟⲕϩ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ / (*IV* 159.11f.) ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲛ-ⲧⲁϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ — in this case ϩⲱⲥ (ⲉⲩϫⲉ-) may be the theme.

ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ: see §1.2.1.2, spec. obs. (1), sub-pattern (c).

ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ: (*III* 222.4) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲛⲩⲁⲛⲥⲁϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ — here the conditional may well be the theme / (*IV* 109.8) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ " it is well " / (*P* 130[2] 105 ⲧⲙⲅ) ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲓⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲛⲧϭⲓⲛⲩⲁϫⲉ... ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ... ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲛϩⲏⲧ.

ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ: (*IV* 80.2f.) ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲁⲁⲟⲥ ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ [88].

1.2.2 The modifier focalized: # second tense → modifier # and other patterns. See Chapter 2.

1.2.3 The modifier in a predication-presupposing zeugmatic pattern: 'pronoun/noun syntagm → modifier'

(A) General observations: (1) This is a well-attested, typical Shenoutean construction which I believe has not had the attention it deserves: a syntagm of *noun/independent pronoun* + *modifier* is included in a larger syntagmatic complex, in which it expands a nuclear unit comprising some or most of the following components: *subject* (*pro*)*noun*, *object* (*pro*)*noun*, *verb lexeme*, *adjunctal* or *predicative modifier*, and in one of several cohesion possibilities with the constituents of this unit — often in antithetic configuration:

[85] {ⲟⲩ-} is not excluded from the predicative post-ⲛ-position (ⲡⲁⲁⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ, ⲣ-ⲕⲁϩ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ *Cat.* 42.16f., 43.6, ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ *Ench.* 93a, and so on) while {ⲡ} is. This is another syntagmatic factor subdividing the determinator category into Ø-, {ⲟⲩ-} *vs.* {ⲡ-} (another is the alternation of the two Bipartite subpatterns, see §1.2.1.1).

[86] Polotsky 1959:459 (+ n. 3) (= *CP* 237.), cf. Stern p. 315.

[87] Cf. §§7.1.3, 7.3... for # (*modifier* - Ø) + *adnexal conjunctive* #, a pattern much more common than the minimal # *mod.* - Ø # one (for which cf. Tesnière 1965: 186ff.). For Egyptian # mod. – Ø # cf. Junge 1978:§7.1.2.

[88] Perhaps also (exclamatory, *III* 146.20) ⲡⲁⲏⲛ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲕϭⲱⲛⲧ ⲁⲛ (cf. *Ps.* 6:2, 37:2).

(*Ch.* 102.19ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ / (*Ch.* 46.12ff.) ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ, ⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲍⲁⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲓⲙⲏ / (*Ch.* 28.18ff.) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ (sic) ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*III* 211.10f.) ⲉϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (i.e. ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ) ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ.

(2) I consider this " zeugmatic " pattern [89] a representation of the nuclear pattern structure, projected into the textual sequence — a representation with a higher degree of cohesion with the nuclear unit than would be effected by its simple repetition. This is an *outline* construction, a suspended or (to borrow from architectural terminology) a *corbel* or *cantilever* " overhanging " construction. In preference to this somewhat over-graphic descriptive nomenclature, one may adopt the negative or detractive *incompleteness* and *omission*, with the rhetoric-stylistic " *elleipsis* " [90] or the generative " gapping ". " *Apokoinou* ", another traditional term, is more descriptive than the others but also insufficiently specific.

(3) As regards the informational or thematic-functional structure of this construction, I think one can validly regard the ' *noun syntagm* + *modifier* ' complex as relatively predicative (rhematic), with its subject (theme) — a cohesive-anaphoric one — zeroed within it. Alternatively, the modifier alone can be considered predicative, and the noun *prominently topical* (§2.0.2.1) there being a nexal relationship between the two.

(B) Constituency (open-ended list):

ⲛ- (*Ch.* 47.1ff.) ⲯⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲯⲁⲧⲟⲩ, ⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲍⲛⲟ ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ... ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲭⲟⲩⲧⲏ ⲙⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ, ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲧⲁⲃ / (*ibid.* 168.3ff.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 153) ⲛⲁⲯⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲧⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲍⲓⲟⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲍⲓⲟⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲍⲁⲓ.

ⲉ- (*A 2* 60) ⲥⲉⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲁⲩ, ⲡⲉϥⲙⲁⲛⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲉⲧⲃⲃⲟϥ, ⲡⲛⲁ ⲉⲁⲁϥ... ⲡⲍⲁⲡ ⲉⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲭⲛⲭⲓ-ⲍⲟ, ⲛⲛⲏ-ⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ⲉⲍⲁⲣⲉⲍ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 54.19ff.) ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲍⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩⲯⲉ, ⲛⲅⲓⲭ ⲉⲡⲉⲩ-ⲍⲱⲃ, ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲅⲣⲁⲍⲧ.

ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- (*P* 131[4] 88 ⲣⲁⲇ) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲛⲍ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲉϥⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣϩⲩ.

ⲉⲭⲡ- (? *A 1* 188, 9× — in line 6 a lacuna where the nodal verb would have been) ⲟⲩⲁⲩⲡⲏ ⲉⲭⲛⲟⲩⲁⲩⲡⲏ, ⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ ⲉⲭⲛⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ, ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ ⲉⲭⲛⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ...

ⲍⲛ-/ⲛⲍⲏⲧ= (*IV* 60.19f.) (ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲩⲣⲯⲟⲙⲧ), ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲧⲣ-ⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲁ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲓ ⲙⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ... / (*Ch.* 118.26ff.) ⲁⲛⲕⲁ-ⲧⲉⲛⲅⲓⲭ ⲍⲓⲭⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲛ.

ⲍⲁ- (*Ch.* 89.33ff.) ⲛⲉⲓⲛⲁ+ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲙⲛⲧⲯⲣⲡⲙⲙⲓⲥⲉ ⲍⲁⲧⲁⲙⲛⲧⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉ... ⲡⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲍⲁⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ.

(ⲙⲛ-)/ⲛⲙⲙⲁ= (*A 2* 20) ⲥⲉⲡⲱⲣⲯ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲡⲣⲏⲯ ⲍⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ (i.e. the Devil and his followers) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ.

ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛ- (*III* 221.4ff.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲍⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲙⲡⲍⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ, ⲟⲩⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲛⲟⲩⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ... ⲯⲁⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲟⲩⲁⲏⲥⲧⲏⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ ⲛⲛⲁⲍ-ⲣⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ.

ⲕⲁⲧⲁ- (*III* 220.20)... ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲛⲧⲁⲍⲓⲥ / (*ibid.* 110.8f., *P* 131[4] 90 ⲣⲁⲏ) ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲕⲁⲧⲁ-ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲓⲛⲉ...

ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ= (*III* 211.10, quoted above).

ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- (*Ch.* 102.19ff., quoted above; 24ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲣ-ⲍⲁⲡ / (*A 2* 473-4) ⲙⲛⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲁⲙⲯⲉ ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲛ-ⲃⲁⲯⲟⲩⲣ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲯⲱⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲡⲗⲉⲛⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓⲥⲉ.

ⲭⲉ- (*Wess. 9* 149b) ⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲓ̅ⲥ̅, ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲓⲟⲟⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲓ̅ⲥ̅, ⲛⲉⲧⲡⲏⲧ ⲍⲁⲡⲍⲟ ⲛⲛⲃⲁⲣ-

[89] See Stern:306f., Till 1954:387 n. 8 (for Egyptian, cf. Gilula, *JNES* 35:27 [1976]).
[90] Cf. Gerber 1885:457-476.

ⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲓⲥ, and so on (7×): the basic unit (a 23ff.) is *Sec. Present* + ⲭⲉ-ⲓⲥ / (*III* 39. 19ff.) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲟⲩⲁ ⲭⲉ-, ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-.

1.3 Synthetic information: a selective examination of individual members of the category and their properties

The following is a generally catalogic study of the *marking* of certain modifiers for modifier status and their distribution, with consideration of their functioning inside various *nucleus* + *modifier* constructions.

Coptic modifiers are either analyzable, i.e. syntagmatic (§§1.3.1-3, 1.3.5, 1.3.7-8) or unanalyzable — morphematic or lexemic (§1.3.4-6, 1.3.9-10). The nature of the modifiers of Greek origin (§1.3.11) is not clear. Even those with a recognizable original morphological factor (-ⲱⲥ, -ⲟⲛ) cannot be taken as fully analyzable in Coptic, where there is nothing to prove, for instance, that -ⲱⲥ is a suffixed morpheme (it is evidently not productive, i.e. in a motivation relationship, even in the Greek-origin sub-system of Coptic). Nevertheless, modifiers of this type do have a mark, a recurring formal characteristic — albeit with a degree of uniqueness[91] — and are thus more "grammaticalized" than, say, ⲧⲁⲝⲩ or the native ⲧⲁⲓ and ⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ.

1.3.1 N-marked modifiers. The distribution and external syntagmatics of this, the most characteristic of "adverbial" markers, are treated elsewhere. Here I wish to dwell on some specific, well-defined ⲛ-syntagms. ⲛ- precedes noun syntagms (including the infinitives) in various environmentally determined adnominal and adverbal functions. There is, however, a mixed bag of recurring ⲛ-phrases that are more or less fixed as complements of *modality* (time/space/manner) for the nuclear verb. This is ⲛ- as a "relational" preposition[92], occurring in regular, lexicalized, predictable collocations, which correspond to modal (often de-adjectival) "adverbs" in inflecting languages.

(a) *Localization in space*[93]: ⲙⲡⲃ(ⲟ)ⲗ ⲛ- "outside" (*III* 71.16, *P* 130⁴ 99 vo), ⲙⲡⲕⲱⲧⲉ "around" (*Ch.* 33.17f.), ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲁ (*IV* 91.14), ⲛⲏⲓ ⲉⲏⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ "from[93] house to house and from this place to that" (*IV* 92.20).

(b) *Localization in time*: expressions of occasion, event and duration: ⲙⲡⲓⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ (*IV* 185.12), ⲛⲟⲩⲟ-ⲉⲓϣ ⲛⲓⲙ (*IV* 1.12), ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ "once (upon a time)" (*IV* 185.1), ⲛⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ (*IV* 54.19), ⲛϩⲙⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 105.52), ⲙⲡⲥⲟⲛ (*IV* 67.23), ⲛⲕⲉⲥⲟⲛ (*IV* 83.20), ⲛⲩⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ (*IV* 74.6), ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ (*IV* 67.10), ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲥⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲛⲉⲛ-ⲕⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ (*A 2* 82), ⲙⲡⲛⲁⲩ (*IV* 67.25), ⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ (*IV* 175.8f.), ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ "of old" (*III* 19.14, see §4.2.2.1), ⲛⲥⲁⲩ "yesterday" (*A 1* 50), ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ "daily", see below, ⲛϣⲟⲣⲡ "at first" (*IV* 73.12), ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ "today" (*III* 95.22f.) ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲓϩⲟⲟⲩ (*III* 114.11), ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ "at once" (*III* 99.11), ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ "at any given hour" (*III* 87.8), ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲁⲡⲣⲏⲧⲉ "for a short instance" (*IV* 67.19), ⲛϣⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ "for ever" (*IV* 6.12, see §1.1.1.1), ⲛⲧⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ "this year" (*P* 130⁴ 140 ro) and many more.

[91] Compare the status of some semi-analyzable imported derivational suffixes in English: *-tain*, *-sist*, *-ceive*... Morphematic "uniqueness" (and analyzability or "transparency") seems to be a gradient property. Almost all research remains to be done with regard to the Shenoutean *Graecitas Coptica*. We have no way of measuring the difference in grammatical transparency between such variants as ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ and ⲕⲁⲗⲟⲥ; of some relevance here may be the Bohairic alternation of # ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ - and - ⲛⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ= (but also #ⲡⲁⲓⲣⲏ+ - and - ⲙⲡⲁⲓⲣⲏ+#).

[92] ⲙⲙⲟ- enters this issue only as a resumptive representative of ⲛ-: (*A 2* 489) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲟⲛⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 397) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲉⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 65) ⲡⲥⲟϭⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲛⲉϩ ⲉϣⲁⲣⲉⲧⲁϩⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ.

[93] Cf. (on the fluctuation Boh. ⲛ-~ϩⲉⲛ-) Piehl 1902, Andersson 1904:11ff.; see ⲙⲙⲁⲩ (and n. 96 below) on the syncretism of locative ("in") and ablative ("from") semantics in ⲧⲱⲛ etc.

(c) *Determination of manner/degree*: ⲛⲥⲟ-ⲥⲓⲥⲟ " face to face " (*III* 153.12, *Ch.* 208.43f., *P* 130² 48 ⲣⲕⲇ), ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ (*A 1* 150), ⲛⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ (*III* 99.12), ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ " rather ", " even (more) ", see below; ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ " anew " (*A 2* 314), ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ " thus ", see below; ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ " how? " (*Wess. 9* 148a 18ff.), ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛ-/ⲉⲧ- " in the manner of / that " (*III* 51.19, 104.26), ⲛⲭⲛⲁⲥ " violently " (*A 1* 44), ⲛⲛⲟⲩⲭ " falsely " (*P* 130² 39 vo); with infinitives [94]: ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙ " again " (*A 1* 74), ⲛⲥⲱⲙ " in hiding " (*A 1* 465), ⲛⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ " by stealth " (*A 2* 495), etc.

1.3.1.1 Certain ⲛ-syntagms deserve more leisurely attention. First, the cases of " unique " or " near-unique " morphemes, in which the isolation of ⲛ- (in its allomorph ⲙ-) leaves us with a non-recurring, or almost non-recurring — hence, morphologically undefinable — morph as the residue of the syntagm [95].

(a) The deictic " pro-modifier " ⲙⲙⲁⲩ is a case in point. -ⲙⲁⲩ does recur in ⲉⲙⲁⲩ " thither " (*IV* 62.3), but nowhere else. ⲙⲙⲁⲩ is a pro-modifier (a more grammaticalized, anaphoric modifier, representing ⲥⲛ-/ⲛ- prepositional phrases) meaning " there " (often predicative, *III* 211.9, *Ch.* 116.13) or " thence " (*III* 99.2, *IV* 121.6f. [96]).

(b) Another instance is the excluding, focusing adjunct ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ " only ", which is again in paradigm with ⲉ-ⲙⲁⲧⲉ as a sole companion, on which paradigm its analyzability is to be based. Both are post-adjunctive only, and neither is ever predicative. ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ " very " [97] is far removed semasiologically: usually adverbal (ⲛⲁⲩⲉ-ⲡⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ: *A 2* 29, *A 1* 247 written ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ, *III* 13.22, *IV* 70.5, etc.), it is often adnominal: (*A 2* 296) ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ / (*ibid.* 499) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ / (*ibid.* 317) ⲛⲥⲁⲥ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ, sim. *III* 21.20, 169.13 / (*Ch.* 146.15f.) ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲃⲱ ⲛⲉⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ, etc. ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ is occasionally reiterated (§1.1.2.4.2). ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ, which has a special affinity with the augens ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (§6.1.4.1) is preeminently adnominal, and occurs most typically, stylistically speaking, in (or in conjunction with) a clause including a local (" *Satzglied* ") negation: " not only..., but (also)... " (*e.g. III* 173.12f., 184.17f.; see in more detail, and with more exx., §2.9.1.2.2, also §6.2) — also in syntagm with ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ " but for ", which precedes ' (*pro*)*noun* ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ' (*IV* 62.20) or, less usually [98], governs ϵ-: ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ϵ- (*IV* 91.12). ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ may modify another modifier: (*IV* 24.6f.) ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ / (*III* 50.4ff.) ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲡⲗⲏⲅⲏ ⲛⲭⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲃⲣⲃⲣ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ. I know of no clear instance of adverbal ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ.

(c) ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ " daily " is another instance of the " unique morpheme ". Exclusively postadjunctive, it occurs *adverbally* (*III* 145.23, *IV* 69.23, *Ch.* 201.44ff.), *adclausally* (*A 2* 21-2 ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲏⲏⲛⲉ ⲡⲉ) and (rarely) *adnominally* (ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ *IV* 153.22).

[94] ⲛ + *infinitive* occurs *rectionally* after certain verbs: ⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ (*III* 44.12), ϭⲙ-ϭⲟⲙ (*III* 109.19), ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ (*III* 105.18), ⲉⲓ (*Ch.* 201. 45ff.).

[95] Cf. Bloomfield's famous " *cranberry* " (1935:160f.), on which see also R. Harris, *Synonymy and Linguistic Analysis* Oxford: Blackwell, 1973, p. 66ff.

[96] The syncretism of " locative " and " ab/delative " is evident with many other modifiers (notably ⲧⲱⲛ " whence ", *Wess. 9* 127 b 8ff., 14ff., 128 a 1ff.) and prepositions, esp. ⲉⲓ- (ⲉⲓⲭⲱϥ *Ming.* 89b, and ⲉⲓⲃⲟⲗ *III* 150.5), ⲉⲛ-, ⲉⲗ- (resolved in ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛ-, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲗ-) — see the entries in *Dictionary*. Incidentally, this may add an improvement to my interpretation of the Shenoutean ⲧⲱ ⲉⲧⲱ — *WZKM* 69:33-9 (1977) — to be understood as " whence — whither? ". This suggestion, communicated to me by W.-P. Funk, is corroborated by an unpublished example (*P* 130⁴ 105 ⲣⲕⲉ) ⲧⲱ ⲉⲧⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲭⲓⲛⲛⲭⲉ-ⲙⲉ ⲉⲭⲓ-ϭⲟⲗ, ⲭⲓⲛⲙⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲭⲓⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ, ⲭⲓⲛⲡⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲉⲭⲱⲥⲙ, where ⲭⲓⲛ- ϵ- would agree well with a " whence - whither " frame of reference.

[97] Rare instances of ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ used for ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ, " very " (the reverse does not occur, to my knowledge): *A 1* 53, 247, 244.

[98] Usually ' ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ϵ-(*pro*)*noun* ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- ' (*III* 90.3, 124.6, 136.20 etc.), or with no modification (*III* 45-6, *IV* 91.17f.); ' ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ + *noun* ': (*III* 52.10f., *IV* 62.5, etc.). In Shenoute, the paradigm following ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ includes: (ϵ)-(*pro*)*noun* ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ/ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-, ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ, ⲭⲉ-*perfect/present/Nominal Sentence*, *conjunctive* and *modifiers* (*III* 138.11f., incl. the circumstantial, *IV* 60.25f., 61.2). See §7.3.1.1.

1.3.1.2 ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ "thus" occurs: (a) *Postadjunctively, adverbally*: (*III* 222.12) ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ, typically expanding the verbs ϫⲱ and ⲉⲓⲣⲉ (*III* 18.3, 28.3, 37.7, 49.16, etc.); *adnominally*: (*A 1* 65) ⲛⲉⲓⲥⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ.

(b) *Initially*, as an *adclausal premodifier*, in a verb clause: (*III* 141.20) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲁϥⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲥⲟⲣ / (*ibid.* 148.4f.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲛⲉϥϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲉϥⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ.

(c) *Initially*, in the constructions: (1) # ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ (ⲥⲱⲱ-) ⲟⲛ (ⲛ-) *noun syntagm* (+ *circumstantial*) #: (*III* 48.24f.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲍⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ... ⲉⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲣⲣⲁⲩ ϫⲉ-ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲥⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ / (*IV* 104.7f.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲥⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲥⲱⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ — the circumstantial here is adnominal and adnexal [99].

(2) # ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ + [*noun syntagm* + *modifier*] # : (*III* 221.4f., 11f.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲍⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲛⲁⲣ-ⲣⲙⲡⲍⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ, ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲉϥϫⲁⲙ ⲛⲛⲁⲣⲡⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ. The modifier appears to be predicative here within its information unit — the bracketed constituent being articulated as *topic* + *comment* (or *theme* + *rheme*); ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ itself is topical in relation to the whole: *topic* + (*topic* + *comment*).

(3) # ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ (ⲟⲛ) + [*noun syntagm* + *clause*] #: (*III* 98.11ff.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲯⲱⲱⲧ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲛⲁϫⲟⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 109-110) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ ⲯⲁϥⲍⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ — the noun is extraposed and later resumed.

(4a) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ (ⲟⲛ) ⲡⲉ (ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ predicative: §1.2.1.2): (*IV* 84.14) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲣ-ⲁⲧⲅⲟⲙ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲯⲱⲛⲉ.

(4b) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ focalized by a verbal topicalization-form (see Ch. 2, esp. §2.4): (*III* 76.8) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩ-ϫⲟⲟⲥ...

1.3.1.3 ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ occurs: (a) *Postadjunctively, adverbally* ("rather", "greatly", "[even] more", "on the contrary"): (*IV* 5.8) ⲩⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*ibid.* 18.12) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Ch.* 23.19ff.) ⲏ ⲉⲕⲩⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲍⲁⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲍⲛⲟⲩ... ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲉⲯ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*III* 38.24) ⲧⲛⲁⲙⲓⲯⲉ ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲕ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*A 2* 341) (they asked whether) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-ⲡⲉⲓⲍⲱⲃ, (I answered:) ⲩⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ, also *III* 115.17f., 146.16, 163.22, *IV* 18.12, 82.10f., *Ch.* 85.13ff. In a typical figure, ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ combines the sense of "rather, on the contrary" with a Second-Tense *autofocal* construction (see §2.1.7), e.g. (*III* 212.8f.) ⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲓ̄ⲥ̄... ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲏⲧⲁⲛⲣ-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Ch.* 171.2f.) (ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲍⲙⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ... ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲛⲁ ⲡⲉ...) ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ.

(b) *Adclausally*, in a Nominal-Sentence pattern (§1.1.2.3, "on the contrary"): (*III* 113.20) ⲟⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲉⲩϫⲁⲙ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲗⲁⲥ ⲛⲏⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ / (*ibid.* 115.28) ⲉⲯϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲟⲣⲟⲥ (sic) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ (sic) ⲡⲉ... ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲕⲁ-ⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ... / (*IV* 3.4) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲧⲱⲍ ⲍⲱⲱⲩ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ, also *III* 19.2, *IV* 60.23, 108.27 etc.

(c) *Adnominally* ("too much", "even, especially, in particular"): (*III* 221.18) ⲕⲉⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*IV* 77.2) ⲛⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲙⲁⲓⲧⲟ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*IV* 9.20f.) ⲡⲕⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Ch.* 30.45ff.) ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲍⲱⲱⲕ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ. It is, in this status, usually a *premodifier*, semasiologically close to ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ (§1.3.11.2.1.4), in the sense of "especially", "so much more" — a focusing adjunct: usually '**ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ** + *noun*' (prosodically a colon by itself): *III* 37.17f., 106.12f., 108.19f., 112.13, *IV* 23.7, *Ch.* 74.18f., etc.

(d) ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ expanding or premodifying another modifier [100]: (*III* 222.4) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*III* 181.19f.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ+-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Ch.* 18.28f.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ (*A 1* 11) ⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲛⲛⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ.

[99] Cf. Shisha-Halevy 1972:75ff., 81ff.: consider ⲛⲑⲉ/ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛ-[*noun* + *circ.*] (*IV* 82.1f.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲕⲉⲁⲣⲅⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲁⲧ ⲛⲥⲃⲱ / (*Wess. 9* 91b 6ff.) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲓⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲩϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ / (*A 1* 162-3) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲍⲉ ⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲥϫⲏⲙⲁ ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ / (*A 2* 138) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲣⲭⲏⲅⲟⲥ ⲛⲛⲍⲉⲑⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲁⲍⲧⲉ ϫⲓⲛⲛⲯⲟⲣⲡ ⲉⲁⲩⲥⲱⲍⲡ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲍⲙⲡⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲕⲁⲕⲉ. Note in the last example the opposition between the two adnominal expansion forms: ⲉⲧ- *attributive*, and ⲉ- *adnexal*.

[100] ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ itself is expanded, in the sense of "more than...", by ⲉ + *noun* (incl. *infinitive*: III 77.2, *A 1* 56, *III* 131.10).

Note here especially ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ + *circumstantial*, in the sense of "especially when": (*Wess. 9* 138c 19f.) ...ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲡⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲁⲉ ⲉⲛⲏⲓ ⲙⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲙⲛⲧⲟⲩ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ.

(e) Initially, ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ is rare: (*III* 147.14) ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲟⲭⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲭⲉⲛⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲕⲁⲛⲇⲁⲗⲟⲛ... ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲁⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲗⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ.

1.3.2 Zero-marked noun syntagms in modifier status[101] are restricted to certain temporal or spatial localizing expressions and the modal pronominal ⲗⲁⲁⲩ "at all", "anyhow". Related to this lack of marking is the syntagmatic zero — the absence of resumption of initial nouns: contrast (*IV* 58. 19f.) ⲡⲉϩⲙⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲱⲕⲁⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲥ, with (*ibid.* 54.29) ⲡⲉϩⲙⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲱⲡⲓⲥⲉ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲥ. This cohesional distinction is indicative, since it determines the noun as *modifying* the subsequent clause, not serving as its topic (§6.0.1).

(1) ⲉⲛⲉϩ: see §1.3.6.

(2) ⲧⲉⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ, ⲧⲣⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ "yearly", "— a year"[102], distributive. *Postadjunctive*, *adnominal* (to ⲥⲟⲛ only): ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (*P* 131[5] 13 ro), ⲛⲥⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ ⲧⲣⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ (*IV* 74.6f.), also *ibid.* 58.1, 91.8.

(3) ⲥⲟⲛ: *initially*, as *adclausal premodifier*: ϩⲗϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ "often" (*III* 146.28, 147.9,18, etc.) — contrast with the postadjunctive — ⲛϩⲗϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ (*III* 107.14, 139.11). *Postadjunctive*: ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ (*A 2* 397), ⲱⲟⲙⲧ ⲛⲥⲟⲛ (*Ch.* 106.52ff.). The disjunctive ⲥⲟⲛ — ⲥⲟⲛ, ⲟⲩ/ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲛ — ⲟⲩ/ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲛ "now... now...", "at times... at times..." (*III* 19.20ff., 70 *passim*, 77-8, 110.9f. etc.) is usually a premodifier.

(4) ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲙⲉⲛ- "first of all", "at first" is initial and adclausal: *III* 164.5, *IV* 128.6, *Ch.* 204.19f., *P* 130[2] 54 πr, 130[5] 39 vo.

(5) ϩⲟⲟⲩ in ⲡⲉϩⲙⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ (*IV* 58.19).

(6) ⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ, ϩⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ "at evening", "at dawn" (*IV* 65.26). This is a peculiar case, in which the only synchronic indication of nominal status is the occurrence of these words after prepositions, notably ϩⲓ-, ⲱⲁ-, ⲉ-, ⲭⲓⲛ-, ⲏ- (*IV* 60.14, 61.1, 92.13f., *Ch.* 51.22, 145.26f., *P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ: ⲛⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ). ⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ ⲡⲉ (*IV* 60.21) is inconclusive, in view of the # modifier - ⲡⲉ# pattern (§1.2.1.2). There is however some basis for considering ϩⲓ- in ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ (and even in ϩⲓⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ, *IV* 92.2 cod. C ⲱⲁϩⲓⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ *v.l.* ⲱⲁⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ) metanalytically fused with the lexeme and somehow connected with the (radical) ϩ in ϩⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ[103] — I know of no attestation for * ϩⲓ-ϩⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ (see *Dictionary* 728a; consider also *Miss.* 282, *IV* 104.4f. ϩⲓⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ). Consequently, these expressions may not properly belong here, but are — at least to some extent — modifiers by lexical right, like ⲧⲁⲝⲩ or ⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ. (ϩⲓⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ also occurs as an *adnominal* modifier: *P* 131[5] 133 ro ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲝⲓⲥ ϩⲓⲣⲟⲩϩⲉ.)

(7) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ "at all", "anyhow", "in anything" is *postadjunctive only*: (*III* 137.23) ...ⲉⲙⲡⲓⲭⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ ⲗⲁⲁⲩ / (*IV* 18.18f.) ⲛⲥⲁⲅⲁⲛⲁⲕⲧⲉⲓ ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ / (*Thompson* D nθ) ⲙⲡⲏⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲏ ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ- (v.l. *A 2* 246 ⲛⲗⲁⲁⲩ).

[101] Cf. Schenkel 1966:58 ("absolute substantives" — they are in fact neither absolute nor "asyntactic", but lack an overt marking of the "adverbial" syntactic function). Junge 1978:73-84, esp. 76, 81ff, arrives, through equating "prepositional phrase" (*qua* "*adverb*") with "noun" (in "adverbial status" yet *qua* "*noun*") at the far-reaching and to me unacceptable — since procedurally exceptionable — identification (in Middle Egyptian) of nominal and "adverbial" nexus, at least in "deep structure". This error is due, I believe, to misapplication (and misjudgement of the significance) of commutability. To judge by the occasional *variae lectiones*, the characteristic zeroed in Coptic is in all probability the ⲛ- + ϩⲛ- syncretism (see footnote 93).

[102] von Lemm 1972b:377f., Daumas 1952:119f. (*Dictionary* 297a).

[103] Černý 1976:302f. suggests for ϩⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ a hybrid etymology: *ḥḏ–t3* + *dw3w*: Crum gives in *Dictionary* 727b-728a ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲩⲉ and ϩⲓⲧⲁⲁⲩⲉ as specifically Shenoutean and Akhmimoid (A, A[2]) forms, but does not consider the possibility that these are syntagms, analyzable to a degree.

(8) ⲡⲃⲟⲗ "out(side)", *postadjunctive*: (*III* 103.18f.) ⲁⲩⲛⲟϫⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲃⲟⲗ / (*IV* 110.9f.) ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲁⲩ... ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲑⲓϫ ⲛⲱⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ... (v.l. ⲙⲡⲃⲟⲗ), also *IV* 33.27, 113.24f., *A 1* 70. *Adnominally*: (*IV* 112.17f.) ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲧⲁⲇⲁⲝⲓⲥ (sic).

1.3.3 Iteration-marked noun syntagms in modifier status

1.3.3.1 The syntagm '*Ø-noun lexeme* → *Ø-noun lexeme*' is a member of the *postadjunctive* modifier paradigm and occupies a slot in the valency matrix with no further marking: (a) as a *distributive-distensive-particularizing* complement in the second (or following) post-verbal slot: (*Ch.* 183.52f.) ⲁⲩⲱⲁⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ sim. *III* 106.2 / (*IV* 19.19f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲟⲧⲡⲧ ⲉⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲁϭ ⲧⲁϭ / (*ibid.* 199.2) ...ⲉϥⲕⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϭⲟⲡⲉ ϭⲟⲡⲉ / (*P* 130⁵ 19 ⲣⲇ) ⲛⲉϥϫⲱⲗⲕ ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲱⲱϥ ⲏ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ· ⲙⲁ· ⲙⲁ· / (*A 1* 77) ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ [104] / (*ibid.* 108) ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲟⲥϩⲟⲩ ⲡⲟϭⲉ ⲡⲟϭⲉ ⲏ ⲗⲁⲕⲙ ⲗⲁⲕⲙ, or (b) as a *rectional* expansion [105] — an "object", in the first post-verbal position (see §3.0.1): (*HT H* 1 ro) ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩϫⲱⲱⲗⲉ ⲥⲙⲁϩ ⲥⲙⲁϩ ...ⲕⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲕⲱⲧϥ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϫⲗⲗⲉ, parall. (ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲏ) *P* 131⁴ 161 vo — expansion focalized by Second Perfect / (*ibid.* 2 vo) ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲃⲁ ⲧⲃⲁ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲉⲉⲣⲉ — note the *open juncture* of the *verb* + *iteration-marked rectional modifier* syntagm / (*III* 29.28) ⲉⲓⲕⲱⲧϥ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϫⲗⲗⲉ — the iteration-marked object-expansion focalized by the Second Present / (*A 2* 26) ⲛϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ... ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥⲱⲃϩ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲁⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲁⲡⲉ ϩⲓⲱⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 108) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲁⲥ ⲏ ⲡⲗⲃⲉ ⲡⲗⲃⲉ. The iteration of cardinal numbers [106] — ⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲁ, ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ, ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ... — occurs either in complement or rection status: (*A 1* 12, in part parall. *BM* 992 vo) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ϫⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ / (*IV* 60.28) ⲉⲧⲙⲕⲁ-ⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ / (*P* 130⁵ 64 ⲡⲟⲥ) ⲥϩⲁⲓ (the heart's secrets) ⲟⲩⲁ ⲟⲩⲁ / (*IV* 84.8) ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ / (*ibid.* 103.6f.) ⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲱⲟⲙⲛⲧ ⲱⲟⲙⲛⲧ.

1.3.3.2 '*Ø-noun* → *Ø-noun*' is bracketed and marked by ⲛ- as the *predicative complement* of forms of ⲉⲓⲣⲉ: (*Miss.* 279f., parall. *P* 130⁵ 69 ro) ⲧⲍⲱⲛⲏ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲙⲡⲗⲃⲉ ⲡⲗⲃⲉ / (*A 1* 240) ⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲱⲁⲩ ⲱⲁⲩ / (*III* 110.17) -ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲛⲥⲓⲱϥ ⲥⲓⲱϥ / (*IF* 85, apud *Dictionary* 378a) -ⲁⲁϥ ⲙⲡⲗⲃⲉ ⲡⲗⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲥⲓⲱⲃ ⲥⲓⲱⲃ (*IV* 172.10, *Mun.* 160, *P* 130² 99 ⲣϥⲉ, *IF* 188 apud *Dictionary* 422b) ...ⲉϥⲟ ⲛⲃⲱⲧϩ ⲃⲱⲧϩ.

1.3.3.3 *Adnominally*, we find '*Ø-noun* → *Ø-noun*' (with restricted constituency) in -ⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲓⲛⲉ (ϩⲓⲁⲩⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲁⲛ) (*Ch.* 183.43f., *Wess. 9* 127b 8f., *A 2* 116, *P* 130⁴ 91 ⲣⲙ) with the sense of "each and every...".

1.3.3.4 In this sense ("each and every...", complexive/comprehensive universal plurality [107]) the iterated '*determinator* + *noun*' syntagm occurs in various syntactic statuses even with a definite determinator: (*A 1* 395) -ϩⲱⲙ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲝⲛⲑⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ ⲑⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ / (*ibid.* 155) -ϩⲙⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ / (*III* 126.16) ⲃⲓⲛⲉ... ⲙⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲡϩⲱⲃ / (*ibid.* 204.6f) ⲱⲁⲣⲉⲧⲥⲓⲟ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*A 2* 21) ⲛⲭⲣ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲥⲟⲛ ⲡⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ... / (*III* 110.8f.) ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲭⲙⲓⲛⲉ / (*IV* 73.19f.) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧϩⲙⲡⲏⲓ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ... ⲉⲩⲉϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ...

1.3.3.4.1 The iterated lexeme is rarely found expanding (and bracketed by) a single determinator, meaning "assorted..." (plural only): (*A 1* 108) ϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲟⲟⲥ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉ ⲥⲁⲡⲉ / (*A 2* 26) ϩⲉⲛⲟⲩⲁ

[104] Also ⲱⲏⲙ ⲱⲏⲙ (*A 1* 101) ⲁⲭⲱⲝⲛ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲱⲏⲙ, cf. ⲟⲩⲱⲏⲙ ⲟⲩⲱⲏⲙ (*A 1* 150), coordinated with ⲕⲁⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲟⲟⲩ.

[105] Cf. (for Turkish and Modern Armenian) Godel 1945:10f.: *acı acı gülüyordu* ("adverbe"), *yumurta çiğ çiğ yemek* ("prédicat indirect du sujet ou de l'objet").

[106] Godel 1945:11f., Hofmann 1936:20ff.

[107] Daumas 1952:27f. (cf. Stern §273).

ⲟⲩⲁ " τινες, *aliqui* " / (*Ch.* 156.48f.) ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ " those various hours " / (*A 1* 108) ⲡⲁϭⲉ ⲡⲁϭⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ " a collection of assorted rags " (ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ is the augens, §6.1.3).

1.3.4 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (once ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ, *A 1* 262, collated) occurs in several formal/functional manifestations, ranging from the fully temporal " now " through the " nynegocentric " [108] *hic-et-nunc*, through various contextual values of actuality to particle-like interclausal relator role accompanied by prosodic symptoms.

1.3.4.1 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ *adverbal*, *postadjunctive*, often clause-final: " now ", frequently in collocation with other time-indications: (*A 2* 53) ⲉⲣⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 159) ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲩⲃⲏⲣ ⲛⲛⲁ ⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*III* 203.15f.) ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 219.4) (ⲡⲉⲓⲩⲁⲭⲉ) ⲁⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲓⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ — note the tense / (*IV* 1.23f.) ⲉⲛⲩⲁⲛⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲣⲱⲕϩ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲓⲙⲁ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 98.25f.) ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲣ-ⲟⲩ ⲭⲓⲛⲛⲩⲟⲣⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*P* 130² 40 ⲣⲇ) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓ... ϩⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ — again, note the compatibility of the perfect with ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ; also in (*P* 130⁴ 126 ⲙ) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲩⲣⲡⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ " even now ". Additional exx.: *III* 182.19, 188.17f., 206.22, 208.17, 131.5f., 150.7, *IV* 6.17f., 1.24, *Ch.* 82.12ff., etc. etc.

1.3.4.1.1 Postadjunctively, we often find ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ in idiomatic collocation (coordinated or disjoined) with other temporal modifiers: (*A 1* 287) ϩⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*IV* 36.2, 98.26, *A 2* 107 etc.) ⲭⲓⲛⲛⲩⲟⲣⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ / (*IV* 197.9) ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*ibid.* 206.22) ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ —- note the inverse order on line 28 / (*A 1* 293) ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲩⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ / (*III* 194.19f.) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲭⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ / (*P* 130⁴ 118 ⲕⲅ) ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ.

1.3.4.2 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ *colon-enclitic* [109] (— ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ —, -ϭⲉ/ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ —): " now then ", " in our time and place ", " in the case under discussion, in this instance ", " at this point in the argument ", " following/in view of what has been said ". Here the shift from clause-segment modification through adclausal reference to *contextual interclausal linkage* [110] is most evident: ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ approaches here the role of a *superordinating particle*, with a corresponding difference in prosodic status, inferable from the placement: (*A 1* 57) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲛ / (*A 2* 65) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲉ... ⲩⲗⲏⲁ (vs. the bride in Song of Songs) / (*ibid.* 298) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲓⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ / (*A 1* 335) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲩ-ⲩⲙⲩⲉ ⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 297) ⲛⲑⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲛⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*III* 144.26) ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ- / (*Ch.* 171.30ff.) ⲟⲩ ϭⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ- / (*IV* 183.7) ⲉⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲟⲩ ϭⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ. Striking here is the frequent occurrence after ⲛⲑⲉ-/ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ- (also *A 2* 191, *Ench.* 85a, 87b, 92-3, *III* 18.27f., *Wess. 9* 148c 9f. etc.) and, in intercolary placement (§6.0.3), after ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ [111] (*III* 142.16, 167.13,21); also after the antecedent in a relative construction [112] (*III* 205.22f. ⲡⲉⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲛϩⲏⲧϥ, also *IV* 121.26 / *III* 206.7 ⲡⲓⲧⲱⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲛⲧⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ / *IV* 111.14 ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲙⲡⲙⲁ ⲙⲡⲣⲟ), after the predicate in a Nominal Sentence [113] (*A 2* 306 ⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ- / *IV* 20.10 ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ / *III* 170.9 ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲩⲱⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ), and following the focus in focalization patterns (" Cleft Sentences ", see Ch. 2): (*A 2* 451, not Sh.) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧϥⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Wess.* 9 121b 16ff.) ⲛⲁⲩ ϭⲉ ⲛϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲕⲱⲗⲩⲉ. In all these cases it is the prosodic contour of the clause that motivates the placement of ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ, and a full temporal value is not rarely found here.

[108] *Vs.* " allocentric ": Klum 1961:86ff., 223ff.
[109] See §6.0.3.
[110] See Klum 1961:248 n. 1 and 248ff.; Greenbaum 1969:55f. (" *transitional* " vs. temporal conjuncts).
[111] Cf. Polotsky 1961:§12.
[112] Polotsky 1961:§§12, 20.
[113] Polotsky 1961:§§8 (p. 308 = *CP* 412), 18.

1.3.4.3 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ *initial*, an *adclausal premodifier*: ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ —, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ — is temporal, often opposed to another foregoing temporal modifier: *Ch.* 31.27ff. (*vs.* ⲛ(ⲟⲩ)ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ), sim. *IV* 185.2f., 13f., *Ch.* 143.13ff. (*vs.* ⲥⲁⲑⲏ ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ, so too in 150.37ff., *A 2* 86, *P* 130² 104 vo), *Ch.* 204.19ff. (*vs.* ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲙⲉⲛ-), *IV* 105.9 (*vs.* ⲥⲁⲑⲏ ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲛ-). ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲅⲉ- is relatively rare: " now then ", " at this stage of the argument ": *III* 77.4 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲅⲉ ⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ, also *A 2* 159, 248. Note ⲉⲧⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 91.20f.) a calque of ἔτι καὶ νῦν?

1.3.4.4 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ *adnominal* to situational nouns: ⲡ(ⲉ)ⲓⲙⲁ (*Ch.* 57.45ff., *A 2* 240, 314, 461, 462, *IV* 1.24), ⲡ(ⲉ)ⲓⲥⲏⲩ, ⲛⲓⲥⲟⲟⲩ (*A 1* 463, *A 2* 87, *III* 145-6, *P* 130¹ 126 ⲣⲙⲇ, 130⁴ 49 ro), ⲡⲉⲓ-/ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ (*III* 106.8f., 126.17,23, 180.19f.,24f., *A 2* 427), ⲡⲉⲭⲱⲛⲥ (*Rossi 2/3* 16), ⲧⲉⲛⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (*IV* 113.2).

1.3.4.5 ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ is occasionally found in noun-syntagm status (cf. §1.1.1.1) — in origin, of course, it goes back to ⲧⲉ-determinated ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ, when it was a case of the " zero-marked noun as modifier " (§1.3.2): ⲭⲓⲛⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*P* 130⁴ 50 ⲥⲕ), ⲱⲁⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*P* 130⁵ 105 ⲫⲡⲍ).

1.3.5.1.1 ⲛⲁⲙⲉ " truly ", " really " (cf. ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ, §1.3.11.1.2), occurs *postadjunctively*, *adverbally*: (*A 2* 501) ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲛⲉⲭⲡⲱⲱⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*A 1* 171) ⲁⲩⲥⲱⲟⲩⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ / (*A 1* 213) ⲛⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩⲟⲛⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲥⲉⲛⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ / (*IV* 159.8) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲭⲥⲁⲥⲧⲭ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 68.6ff.) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ — ⲧⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*Ench.* 80a and often in " Vita Monachorum " passages) — ⲉⲧⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ. More exx.: *III* 165.20, 170.21, *IV* 57.17f., 156.24, *Ch.* 62.11ff., etc.

1.3.5.1.2 As adclausal/adverbal, ⲛⲁⲙⲉ may occupy the colon-second position (or share it); this may be due to the prosodic contour of the construction: (*A 2* 371) ⲡⲉⲕⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ / (*RE 11* 16a 17) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ cf. *RE 10* 162b 16 ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ (sic) ⲛⲉ and §1.1.2.3 / (*IV* 32.2f.) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲱⲱⲡⲉ (Sec. Perfect) ⲛⲥⲓⲟⲩⲣ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*III* 173.26) ⲥⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁ+-ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*Wess. 9* 156c 7 ff.) ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲍⲛⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ. More exx.: *Ench.* 82a, *Wess. 9* 144c 4f., *Ch.* 142.49f., 155.33ff., *Or.* 157.3, 165.42f., *A 2* 27, etc.

1.3.5.1.3 ⲛⲁⲙⲉ *initial*, a *premodifier*: (*A 1* 72) ⲛⲁⲙⲉ +ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-. Here I include cases of ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ —: (*A 2* 332) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲩⲏⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ / (*III* 71.17f.) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲍⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱⲱⲧ... / (*ibid.* 191.22) ⲧⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 77.23ff.) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉⲡⲉ — or ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ —: (*III* 217.2f.) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲩⲛⲁⲣⲍⲟⲩⲉⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ... / (*III* 131.15f. Cod. B, parall. *A 2* 196) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ, see §6.0.3.3 for the " foreshadowed " ⲡⲉ; also ⲁⲣⲏⲩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ- (*III* 140.30f.), ⲕⲁⲓⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ- (*III* 146.23), ⲛⲁⲙⲉ before a conditional complex (*III* 70.17f.) [114].

1.3.5.1.4 ⲛⲁⲙⲉ *postadjunctive*, *adnominal* — very common, occurring with most determinators: " true ", " real ", " veritable ", " genuine ": ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ (*III* 15.16, 137.14, *IV* 21.5, *A 1* 14, etc. etc.) / (*A 2* 96) ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*ibid.* 55, *Ch.* 34.53ff.) ⲛⲣⲙⲛⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*III* 223.16) ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*A 2* 402, 407, etc.) ⲛⲉⲭⲣⲉⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*A 2* 60) ⲡⲁⲱⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*IV* 80.23) ⲍⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 168.44ff.) ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ — ⲛⲁⲙⲉ expands here the whole '*noun* + *modifier*' group / (*IV* 129.11) ⲡⲉⲛ-ⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 140.20) ⲛⲍⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ / (*III* 39.26) ⲛⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ — note the position

[114] Consider (*Or.* 159-160) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲧⲉ " she really is one " (i.e. an adulteress), varying with ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲧⲉ. Both are clear cases of the modifier ⲁⲩⲱ, translatable here as " and what is more ", " and moreover " (§1.3.10).

of NAME / (*Ch.* 93.19ff.) NЄЧШВЄЄР NAME ƵMПЄX̄C̄ — note placement. Examples of '*noun* - NAME - *relative*' are often ambiguous, but occasionally adnominal beyond doubt, with the relative adding further characterization: (*Ch.* 9.30f.) TCHЧЄ NAME ЄTGOXGX / (*ibid.* 191.28ff.) ПРЄЧР-NOBЄ NAME ЄTPOOYT, ПАСЄВНС NAME NTAYЄIA-TOOTOY NCШЧ (contrast with the ambiguous *Or.* 160.34ff. NAθHT NAME ЄTP-GPШ2 MПOЄIK). Very occasionally, the second-position placement in the group is motivated, HAME modifying the whole complex: (*IV* 115.15) NAI NAME NTЄIMINЄ. Note AZЄ NAME " yes, indeed ": (*A 2* 106) ƵШC AZЄ NAME APHY NTOЧ " yes, indeed, perhaps even... " / (*ibid.* 308) KAN AZЄ NAME ЄYШAN-.

1.3.5.2 ƵNOYME is rather less common [115]:

1.3.5.2.1 *Postadjunctive, adverbal*: (*Ryl.* 67 TЧθ) OYNPШME ЄPЄTЄKME NƵHTOY ƵNOYME / (*A 2* 109) NЄTPOЄIC ЄPШTN ƵNOYME / (*IV* 3.26) CЄ+-ЄOOY NAY ƵNOYME / (*Ch.* 26.50ff.) ПЄCOYШШ ЄTCME MMOOY NƵHTЧ ƵNOYME / (*III* 108.13f.) ЄNЄNTANP-ПЄKOYШШ ƵNOYME / (*III* 28.6) ЄYPANAЧ MПNOYTЄ ƵNOYME. Additional exx.: *Ch.* 21.6ff., 112.21ff., *III* 185.12f., *IV* 108.12f., *A 2* 416, 472, etc. More unusually, we find the expression postadjunctively modifying a Nominal Sentence: (*III* 171.9f.) ƵЄNПICTOC AN NЄ OYTЄ ƵЄNPЄЧ+-CBШ AN NЄ ƵNOYME. In (*A 1* 250) AYXШK ЄBOA ƵNOYME AXNTШAM we may have ƵNOYME modifying a modifier: " truly without ", and its placement secondary (conditioned).

1.3.5.2.2 Initially, as a premodifier, ƵNOYME is extremely rare, if to be found at all. The one possible instance I have noted (*III* 120.24f., 27ff.) is a nice case of the focalized modifier, preceding a complex topic made up of its own *topic* (*theme*) + *comment* (*rheme*) — see Ch. 2: NETXШ MMOC XЄ-NTAYXOOY THPOY ЄPON, ЄBOA XЄ-ƵNOYME NTAYXOOY ЄTBЄNЄTMMAY.

1.3.5.2.3 The lower incidence of ƵNOYME compared with NAME is especially striking in the adnominal status, in which relatively few examples have come to light (almost all from *Ch.*): (*Ch.* 53.54f., 70.38f.) XPЄICTIANOC (NIM) ƵNOYME / (*ibid.* 25.27f.) ПAПЄX̄C̄ ƵNOYME / (*ibid.* 79.40f.) NЧHPЄ MПNOYTЄ ƵNOYME / (*Wess. 9* 147c 1 ff.) HCOΦOC AYШ MПICTOC ƵNOYME — all in commendatory collocations.

1.3.6 ЄNЄ2 " ever " is synchronically [116] unanalyzable, sharing the syntactic privileges of a noun:

1.3.6.1 *Adverbally-postadjunctively* (compatible with the perfect and future, less usually aorist — " the two faces of eternity ") it rarely occurs marked by N-: (*A 1* 295) MH AGЄAAAY MПPOΦHTHC TШOYN NЄNЄ2 ƵMПIH̄A̅, but usually without any marking for modifier status (§1.3.2.): (*Ch.* 32.36ff.) MПKA-ƵЄPATK ƵMME ЄNЄ2, MПЄTAIO ON ЧШПЄ NAK ЄNЄ2 / (*Gol. Jelanskaja* 1b) MH ЧAPЄППOYTЄ ЧШПЄ MNПONHPOC N-PШME ЄNЄ2 H OYNGOM ЄNЄ2 NOYPШME NOYШT MПONHPOC ЄXI-OYNOG MMHHЧЄ NGONC / (*P* 130[5] 17 PZ) MH KNAЧ-XOOC PШ ЄNЄ2 XЄ- / (*P* 130[2] 24 ΦNΔ-Є) APЄXЄPЄ-ƵHBC ΔЄ ON ЄNЄ2... APЄTCABЄ-PШME ΔЄ ON ЄNЄ2 ЄПƵOЧ... / (*P* 130[4] 105 PKЄ) NTAПPH MNПOO2 GШ NAЧ NƵOOY ЄNЄ2 NOYЄЧNЄI ЄƵPAI / (*Wess. 9* 120b 3ff.) MПЄПCATANAC BШK ЄƵOYN ЄPШME ЄNЄ2 / (*III* 153.10f.) MПKNAY ЄPOЧ ЄNЄ2 / (*IV* 17.11f.) NCЄNAXI-ЧIПЄ AN ЄNЄ2. As in other languages (notably old and modern Indo-European ones), ЄNЄ2, which frequently features in interrogative sentences predicating NIM " who? ", fluctuates here between the post-verbal and post-pronominal (or adpronominal: NIM ЄNЄ2 " whoever? ") placements. From (*A 2* 518) NTANIM ЄIME ЄNЄ2 NNЄIPOMПЄ THPOY... XЄ- / (*ibid.* 153) NTANIM NPШME P-ΔIKAIOC ЄNЄ2, through (*A 2* 463) NTANCШTM ƵITNNIM ЄNЄ2 XЄ- / (*A 1* 77) NTAIXOOC ЄNIM ЄNЄ2 XЄ-, to (*A 2* 151) NTANIM ЄNЄ2... CƵAI / (*A 2* 18) NTANIM NЧШC ЄNЄ2 KANЄCOOY ƵMПOƵЄ / (*RE 10* 162a 5) NIM ЄNЄ2 ПЄNTAЧЄIPЄ NAK NЧOPП... / (*Young* IГ) NIM GЄ ƵШШЧ ЄNЄ2 ПЄTNAЧTPП-ΛΛΛY...

[115] Postadjunctive, adverbal ƵNOYMNTME is a near-synonym (*III* 158.28, *Ench.* 80b).
[116] See Černý 1976:36.

1.3.6.2 *Initially*, we find only ⲁⲓⲛⲉⲛⲉⲥ, premodifying the *negative perfect* (*A 2* 241, 341, *III* 216) [117].

1.3.7 ⲉⲡ-*marked modifiers* are mostly analyzable as ⲉ + *def. article* + *noun*, yet with a remarkably high degree of semasiological fusion:

1.3.7.1 ⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉ "finally", initial (premodifier) only, usually ⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉ ⲇⲉ — (contextually marked): (*III* 103.20) ...ⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 260) (on children's playful constructions) ...ⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲯⲁⲩⲧⲁ-ⲕⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*IV* 8.12) ⲉⲡⲥⲁⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲩⲥⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲣⲣⲟ ⲙⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ. Also *A 2* 166, *P* 131[4] 151 ⲙ.

1.3.7.2 ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ is the native equivalent (showing also formal similarity) of ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ (§1.3.11.1.1):

1.3.7.2.1 Postadjunctively, *adverbally* (ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ is only postadjunctive): "at all", "in any way": (*IV* 70.23) ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲥⲓⲛⲁⲓ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ / (*ibid.* 72.15) ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ ⲱⲯ ⲥⲓⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*Ch.* 187-8) ⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲛⲁ+-ⲥⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*III* 132.3f.) ...ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲉⲡ-ⲧⲏⲣϥ (scil. ⲉⲡⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲉⲣⲏⲧ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲁⲩ) / (*P* 130[5] 36 vo) ⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲁϥⲁⲛⲁⲭⲱⲣⲉⲓ ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ. In two instances, we may have ⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ for ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ (zeroing ⲉ-?: *A 2* 310, 311, uncollated).

1.3.7.2.2 *Adnominally*: "What(so)ever", expanding only ⲗⲗⲁⲩ, usually ϭⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ — note the placement: (*A 2* 313-314) ϭⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲛⲟ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ... ϭⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲭⲣⲉⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 258-9) ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*IV* 59.13) ϭⲉ ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*P* 130[1] 15 ro) ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ... ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲛⲕⲁ ⲉⲡⲧⲡⲣϥ... ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ. Also *III* 90.1, *IV* 58.14f., 112.1f., *A 2* 316.

1.3.7.3.1 ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ "in vain, uselessly, with no effect, for no reason, without provocation" [118]. Postadjunctive, *adverbal*: (*III* 124.12) ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲛⲧⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲓⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲥⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲓ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (sim. *ibid.* 131.4, 139.15,27) / (*ibid.* 123.8) ⲛⲁⲯ ϭⲉ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲓ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲑⲙⲕⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*Ch.* 96.5ff.) ...ⲉⲥⲟⲣⲙⲉⲥ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*P* 131[6] 30 ⲣⲙⲉ) ⲛⲍⲓⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ... ⲡⲉⲧⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ. Also *III* 30.22f., 123.8, *IV* 81.11f., 94.15f., 106.12, 116.22f., *P* 131[5] 19 ro, 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲥ (+-ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ "without provocation"). ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ is often focalized by a Second Tense: (*A 1* 446) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲍⲓⲥⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲱⲟⲩ ⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*A 2* 415) ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲯⲡ-ⲍⲓⲥⲉ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲕⲁ-ⲍⲧⲏⲓ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲭⲓ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲍⲁⲧⲉⲓⲁⲩⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲕⲍⲥ ⲉⲡ-ⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*Berl.* 1613 1 ⲕⲑ) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ. *Adnominally*, ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ is less usual: (*IV* 94.15f.) ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲓⲥⲉ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*A 1* 298) ⲍⲉⲛⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ. *Premodifier*: ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (ⲁⲛ) ⲁϥ- *A 2* 131, *Ch.* 139.19f., *III* 55.14f. For predicative ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ see §1.2.1.2.

1.3.7.3.2 ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ "without remuneration, gratis", (rarely) "for no reason" is mostly opposed to ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ: (*Ch.* 92.25ff.) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣ-ⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ, sim. (ⲣ-ⲍⲱⲃ) *Berl.* 1611 5 ⲁⲥ, *P* 130[3] 113 vo / (*P* 131[7] 25 ro) ϥⲁⲍⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲛϭⲓⲡⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲍⲓⲣⲙⲡⲣⲟ ⲉϥⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁ+ⲛⲁⲍⲣⲉ ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ / (*IV* 160.17f.) ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ *vs.* ⲍⲁ-ⲡⲉⲩⲃⲉⲕⲉ / (*III* 83.7f.) ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ opposed to ⲍⲁⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲓⲙⲏ. Rarely, ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (neutral? consider *Ch.* 106.62ff.) seems synonymous with ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (*A 1* 276) ⲛⲣⲉϥϭⲛ-ⲁⲣⲉⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ. Both are apparently disjoined in (*Ench.* 89b) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲛ[ⲧⲁⲛⲁⲁⲥ] ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ [ⲁⲛⲟⲛ] ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲏ [ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛ]ⲭⲏ.

1.3.7.4 ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲟⲩⲟ "too much, in excess", postadjunctive: (*P* 130[4] 131 vo) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲡⲉⲧⲍⲉⲣ-ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲉ ⲉϥ-ⲛⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲟⲩⲟ... / (*III* 133.20) ϥⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*IV* 155.8) ⲛϥⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Wess. 9* 140c

[117] ⲯⲁⲉⲛⲉⲍ occurs adnominally (§1.1.1), in this status, also marked by ⲛ- (§1.1.1.1).

[118] Cf. Gk. εἰκῇ; Cherix 1979:100, *Dictionary* 747b (Crum does not indicate a difference between ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ and ⲛⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ, except for the preponderance of δωρεάν as the equivalent of the latter). For the predicative ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (ⲡⲉ) see §1.2.1.2.

9ff.) ...ⲡⲁⲏⲛ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲕⲁⲣⲱⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲟ. Adnominally, we find (*III* 200.22f.) ⲙⲙⲁⲓⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲟ and perhaps (130[5] 40 ⲙⲅ) ⲥⲉⲛⲭⲣⲓⲥⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲟ — unless the last example is adclausal.

1.3.7.5 For ⲉⲡⲙⲁ, see §7.4.

1.3.7.6 ⲉⲡ + *infinitive*: ⲉⲡⲱⲛⲥ (*III* 218.5ff.), ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*Ch.* 114.53f.) ⲉⲡⲉⲯⲉⲡ-(sic)ⲥⲉⲛⲱⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (*Wess. 9* 117a 24ff.). Whether or not this is a free procedure — an open-ended (productive) paradigm — remains to be established by more evidence [119].

1.3.8 ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ "(all) together" reveals a remarkable distribution:

1.3.8.1 *Final*, modifying a coordination: '*X* ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲙⲛ-*Y* ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ': (*IV* 108.5f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲛ ⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣϩⲩ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ / (*III* 13.13) (ⲧⲉⲕϭⲓⲛⲥⲁⲓ) ⲯⲁⲡⲁⲉⲃⲓϩⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓϩⲛ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 63.9f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲙⲛ ⲥⲉⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲙⲛⲥⲉⲛⲕⲉⲛⲧⲏϭ ⲉⲩⲟⲯ / (*P* 131[4] 157 vo) ⲥⲉⲛⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲥⲉ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲥⲉⲛⲥⲓⲉⲓⲧ ⲛⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ.

1.3.8.2 *Ad(pro)nominal* (in fact *augential* — see Ch. 6, esp. §6.1), modifying a (usually plural) pronoun, often with (and following) ⲧⲏⲣ-: (*P* 131[4] 87 ⲣⲗⲗ) ⲁⲩⲱⲯ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ / (*IV* 191.7f.) ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲥⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲙⲡⲉϫⲥ / (*A 2* 299) ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲥ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ (addressed to the congregation), adverbal? Cf. (ⲥⲱⲟⲩⲥ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ) *IV* 158.16, *A 2* 298 / (*A 2* 292) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ / (*IV* 89.2f.) ...ⲛⲥⲉ+ ⲙ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ / (*P* 131[6] 23 [ⲟⲑ]) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲡⲛ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲛⲥⲉⲡⲥ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*P* 130[5] 37 vo) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲁⲛⲥⲟⲩⲧⲟⲩ. Also *IV* 67.8, *A 1* 68, *P* 131[4] 86 ⲣⲁ.

1.3.9 ⲧⲱⲛⲉ, (rarely) ⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ "very (much)", "greatly" is always postadjunctively adverbal, and expands only the present tense: (*A 1* 58) ⲧⲛⲯⲁⲁⲧ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲟϥ, ⲧⲉⲗⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ / (*ibid.* 68) ⲧⲉⲧⲙⲁⲓϩⲩ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 319) ϯⲣ-ⲩⲡⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ / (*III* 25.6) ⲧⲛ ⲩⲡ-ϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ / (*ibid.* 117.17) ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ / (*IV* 193.9) ⲁⲕϯ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲕⲥⲱⲙⲁ.

1.3.10 ⲁⲩⲱ "also", "too", "moreover", "and indeed", "furthermore" (cf. *adeo*) — a focusing additive conjunct. This I believe is its true nature, even as a coordinator, which is misrepresented when we take it "simply" as a coordinative conjunction [120]. The modifier status of ⲁⲩⲱ is made conspicuous by the grammatical asymetry of its flanking constructions (especially — a typical figure — *basic tense* + ⲁⲩⲱ + *circumstantial*, mostly Nom. Sentence and perfect) [121]: this is a significant normal phenomenon rather than a violation of coordination restrictions — indeed, this is not conjunctional coordination in its usual accepted sense [122]: (*A 1* 171) ϯⲛⲁⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲁⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲯⲟⲟⲡ / (*Ch.* 79.51ff.) ⲛⲁⲯ ⲛϩⲉ ⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲯ / (*IV* 24.2f.) ⲁⲩⲣ-ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲃⲗⲗⲉ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲟⲩⲃⲗⲗⲉ ⲣⲱ ⲡⲉ / (*ibid.* 75.20ff.) ...ⲧⲡⲟⲣⲛⲓⲁ ⲙⲛⲡϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲅⲟⲗ ⲙⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉϥ-ϩⲟⲟⲩ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲓⲡϫⲁϫⲉ (*III* 125.7f.) ϩⲉⲛⲃⲁⲗⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲣⲙ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲧⲟⲅⲉ

[119] Cf. the grammaticalized Bohairic ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛ(ⲧⲉ)- (Stern §§470-2, Mallon–Malinine §§271, 273). In Sahidic, we may have a calque of the Greek εἰς/πρός + *infinitive* (Blass–Debrunner §402.2.5).

[120] Shisha-Halevy 1972:183f., 1975:474, 1976a:33; cf. Layton 1979:174(II).

[121] Cf. §7.1.2.2 for the conjunctive as another "pseudo-coordinative" verb form. Cf. in Bohairic *Acta Martyrum* (CSCO) II 205.12, 268.2, and compare the Late Egyptian *ḥr* (esp. *ḥr jw-*, with no circumstantial preceding: see Wente, *Late Ramesside Letters*, 1967, 58 n. *b*; *Chronique d'Égypte* 44:272f.; Satzinger 1976:231f.). Compare Jacobsson 1977:49f., for English *and*.

[122] See Dik 1972:25ff.; Greenbaum 1969:52ff.; Pinkster 1972:111ff., 116ff. Note that ⲁⲩⲱ does enter Tesnière's broad "*jonctif*" category (Baum 1976:89ff.). Other instructive constructions are ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲛ- (*Wess. 9* 174d 7f., 175a 23; *Dictionary* 170 — cf. the Boh. ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲉⲙ), pre-apodotic ⲁⲩⲱ: #ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉϥ-, ⲁⲩⲱ — # (*III* 110.19f.) — see Layton 1979:173. For comparable Greek "adverbial" functions see Goodwyn §859f., Kühner-Gerth II 253ff., Mayser 2/1 343f., 2/3 143ff., Blass–Debrunner §422.2.

ⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧⲟϭⲟⲩ / (*RE 10* 162a 13ff.) ...ⲁⲕⲧⲟⲟⲃⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲕⲧⲣⲉⲩⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲱⲛϩ ⲩⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ / (*P* 130[1] 137 ⲧⲁⲏ) ⲛⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*Berl.* 1613 6 vo) ⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲉⲧⲏⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲱⲱⲡ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲛⲧⲉϥⲙⲛⲧⲭⲣⲏⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧϭⲱⲃ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ. / (*A 2* 177) ⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲛⲑⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁϥ+-ⲕⲉϩⲟⲩⲉⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲛⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ / (*ibid.* 265) ⲕⲁⲱⲙⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲕ+ ⲛⲧⲉⲕϭⲟⲙ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ / (*B.L.Or.* 3581 *A* 131ⲥⲛⲃ-ⲅ) ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲃⲃⲟ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲁϥⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ... Also *A 2* 26, 299, *Or.* 159-160 (note 114). This is a characteristic (and diagnostically useful) construction. Even more distinctive is ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲟⲣⲓⲥ " and hardly, and barely " [123]. Compare the remarkably similar role of ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ and ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ before the circumstantial (see below).

1.3.11 The question of GREEK LOAN-MODIFIERS is naturally tied up with that of the status of non-Egyptian words in Coptic generally, and, more specifically, with the nature and degree of their assimilation into the Coptic grammatical system — one aspect of the typological issue of the Greek-induced element on Coptic grammar. This difficult subject is outside the scope of the present study [124]. My view, however, is that we are here up against a gradient, not dichotomic (" loan-words " *vs.* " foreign words ") phenomenon of assimilation. The assimilation scale can be established in terms of productivity, of integration in the Coptic semasiological system, and (sometimes) in terms of phonological structure and properties — all three criteria presupposing in-depth monographic investigation, in addition to the procedure in vogue, viz. the collection of Greek-origin items.

1.3.11.1 -ⲱⲥ-*characterized modifiers* are but partly analyzable (see above, §1.3.0.1) and their listing is apparently limited (or at best half-open-ended, meaning that more and more members may turn up, yet without a substantiatable claim to free productivity in Coptic). Although this phonemic configuration is certainly indicative (or rather co-indicative) of modifier status, their transparency and analyzability are not absolute. The most common instances are discussed in the following paragraphs:

1.3.11.1.1 ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ (ϩⲟⲗⲟⲥ, ϩⲱⲗⲱⲥ) " at all ", " wholly " (similar in function and distribution to ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ, §1.3.7.2) occurs

(a) *Adverbally, postadjunctively* — note the significant variation in spelling (exclusive to this position!): Usually we find here a negatived or negative-implication verb (" at all "): (*A 2* 548) ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲱⲗⲱⲥ / (*IV* 69.19f.) ⲛⲛⲉⲩ+-ϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ / (*ibid.* 99.20f.) ⲛⲧⲛⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ / (*ibid.* 93.6) ⲛⲥⲉⲙⲟⲕϩ ⲁⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*P* 130[4] 156 ⲧⲍⲉ) ⲛ+ⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ / (*A 1* 105-6) ⲛⲉⲓⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ... ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲩⲱⲡⲉ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ϩⲙⲡⲁⲥⲱⲙⲁ / (*III* 43.5f.). (It is blasphemy to say:) ⲟⲩⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲉϫⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ. More exx.: *III* 38.16, 135.25ff., *IV* 62.25f., 94.1, 124.9, 200.2,25, *Ch.* 44.35ff., *A 1* 47, 97, etc. Less frequently, we see ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ modifying an affirmative verb, with the meaning " completely, wholly, totally, altogether ": (*A 1* 251) ⲥⲉⲥⲏϩ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲣⲱ (-ⲣⲱ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ in *P* 130[1] 138 ⲧⲙ, 131[4] 89 ⲣⲁⲥ) / (*IV* 124.7f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲉⲩϩⲏⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ. In this position, ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ (in contradistinction to ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ) may be intensified by reiteration: §1.1.2.4.3.

(b) ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ (ϩⲟⲗⲟⲥ) ⲣⲱ- " actually ", " on the whole ", is a (relatively rare) *premodifier*: (*K* 928) ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲣⲱ ⲛⲁⲩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲁⲡⲉ / (*P* 131[4] 142 K) ϩⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲕⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲛⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲁϥⲟⲩⲁϩϥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ / (*III* 36.15) ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ⲣⲱ ⲛϥⲛⲁⲩⲧⲁⲗⲃⲉ-ⲡⲱϥ ⲁⲛ — also *A 1* 47.

[123] Shisha-Halevy 1976a:33, §1.3.11.6 below and §7.3.1.

[124] See Weiss 1968, and (for statement of the problem, with suggestions towards its solution and relevant literature) Mink 1978:95ff. See now also Vergote in Young (ed.) 1981: 339ff.; Anba Gregorius 1981 is the most recent study in a series unfortunately wanting in theoretical considerations: p. 205ff. on " adverbs ".

(c) *Adnominally*, ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ, ⲥⲟⲗⲟⲥ modifies postadjunctively the indefinites ⲗⲁⲁⲩ, ⲣⲱⲙⲉ, ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ in the sense of " what(so)ever ": (*A 1* 14) ⲅⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ, sim. *IV* 87.19f., *III* 92.9, *K* 921 / ⲅⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ (*IV* 44.24, 45.4, 87.8f., 206.18, 81.5, etc.) / (*P* 130[1] 15 ro) ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ... ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲛⲕⲁ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*IV* 107.29) ⲧⲉϥⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲥⲟⲗⲱⲥ.

1.3.11.1.2 ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ " truly " (cf. ⲛⲁⲙⲉ, ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲙⲉ, §1.3.5) occurs

(a) *Postadjunctively, adverbally* (" truly ", " really "): (*A 2* 464), parenthetically, ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ϯⲙⲉⲥ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲁⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ-ϯⲙⲉⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ-... / (*A 2* 174, *Ryl.* 67 ⲧϥⲑ) ⲁⲛⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲓⲁ-ⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ, also *IV* 25.8.

(b) In a Nominal Sentence (§1.1.2.3) it is adnominal/adclausal (status neutralized), with a variation ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ/ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ: (*A 2* 402) ⲟⲩⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ... / (*RE 10* 162b 16) ⲍⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ / (*III* 115.26ff.) ⲟⲩⲧⲁⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ... ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ... Also *Ch.* 195.3ff., *A 2* 395, *Cat.* 43.28.

(c) *Initially* — always -ⲱⲥ — the premodifier ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ means " indeed ", " really ": (*A 2* 191) ⲁⲗⲏ-ⲑⲱⲥ ⲕⲟ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ / (*ibid.* 473) ⲕⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ / (*IV* 25.2f.) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲱⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ / (*III* 107.6) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-, see §1.2.1.3.3 / (*P* 130[5] 71 ⲥⲭⲇ) ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲭⲛⲟⲩⲛ ⲍⲁⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ. Also *III* 114.21, 161.29f., 212.17. *Wess. 9* 145b 29ff. ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲭⲉ- (*Ch.* 129.21ff.) with the *varia lectio* ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ (*III* 35.2) could also be interpreted as ⲁⲗⲏ-ⲑⲱⲥ expanding ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ (§1.3.11.2.5).

(d) *Adnominally*, ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ/ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ is rather rare compared with ⲛⲁⲙⲉ: (*A 2* 18) ⲡⲥⲟⲩ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ / (*RE 10* 164a 4) ⲍⲉⲛⲩⲱⲃⲉ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲟⲥ / (*Cat.* 42.29) ⲡⲉⲩⲃⲏⲣ ⲍⲱⲱϥ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ ⲛⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ.

1.3.11.1.3 ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ " well ", " rightly ", " beneficially " [125] and ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ " badly ", " harmfully, with evil intent ", " ill " occur

(a) *Postadjunctively* — very often clause-finally, thus probably adclausal rather than adverbal: (*III* 80.17) ϯⲟ ⲍⲱⲱⲧ ⲛⲍⲙⲍⲁⲗ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ, sim. *ibid.* 111.23f. / (*ibid.* 220.23) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲇⲓⲁⲕⲟⲛⲓⲁ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ, sim. (ⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ) *IV* 4.5 / (*P* 130[4] 139 ro) ⲉⲁⲩⲕⲱⲧϥ ⲅⲉ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ / (*IV* 157.2f.) ⲛⲟⲓ ⲛⲛⲉ-ⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ / (*A 2* 498) ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲭⲟⲟϥ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ, ⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ / (*ibid.* 333) ϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ ⲛⲅⲓ-ⲡⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϥⲛⲁⲩ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ ⲛⲅⲓⲡⲃⲁⲗ / (*IV* 95.10) ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲉⲕ-ⲧⲉϥⲍⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ, with many more exx., e.g. *III* 93.2, 110.1, 119.10f., 153.8, 217.13f., *IV* 73.22, 118.27, 162.21, *A 1* 302 etc.

(b) Less usually, ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ occurs *initially* as a *premodifier* (with the perfect): (*III* 222.3) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲡⲉⲩ-ⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲛ / (*IV* 8.4) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁϥⲭⲟⲟⲥ / (*Ch.* 104.37f.) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲕⲭⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ / (*P* 130[2] 109 ro) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲧⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲯⲁⲭⲉ — more often, both ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ and ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ tend to predicative status [126]: either focalized by a Second Tense/circumstantial topicalization form (§2.6.1): (*A 2* 338) ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ / (*P* 130[4] 122 ⲁⲃ) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲱⲯ... in the # *modifier* -Ø # predication pattern (§1.3.1 3.3) or before a conditional topicalization form: (*III* 222.4f.) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲛⲯⲁⲛⲥⲁⲍⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ.

(c) *Adnominally*, we find ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ modifying only a verb-nominalization: (*A 2* 547) ⲧⲉⲩⲅⲓⲛⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ.

[125] See Abel 1876-7:549ff. for a conceptual study of χαλῶς (cf. Blass–Debrunner §102.3).
[126] Cf. Paul 1920:§200.

1.3.11.1.4 ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ " nevertheless ", " at all events ", " however that may be, for all that, even so " (*licet, quoadminus*) [127] and ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ (often spelled ⲍⲟⲙ(ⲁ)ⲓⲟ/ⲱⲥ) " likewise, similarly ", are to an extent functionally conflated in our corpus, with ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ encroaching on the semasiological range of ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ [128].

(a) Questionably, *postadjunctively-adverbally*: ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ only (not ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ): (*III* 99.14) ⲁ[ⲩⲙ]ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣ[ⲟⲟⲩ] ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ / (*A 2* 262) ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲁϥ ⲍⲟⲙⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉϥⲙⲡⲱⲁ / (*ibid.* 378-9) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲁⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲣ-ⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ, ⲏ ⲭⲉⲡⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲣ-ⲅⲣⲱⲍ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ — in all cases I would prefer an *ad-(pro)nominal* interpretation (" to him too ", " the believer likewise "...) — compare the adnominal pre-modifier [129] in (*III* 220.21) ⲛⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ, ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ ⲙⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲉⲣⲟⲥ.

(b) *Initially* we find both as additive or concessive conjuncts: ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ " nevertheless ": (*A 1* 382) ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ ⲥⲉⲟ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲁⲍⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲅⲓⲛⲍⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ / (*III* 13.9) ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ ⲛ†ⲅⲛ-ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲏ ⲭⲉⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 125.10ff.) ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲩⲉⲧ-ⲡⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*ibid.* 128.33ff.) (even though I do not wish to say it) ⲍⲟⲙⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲱⲫⲉⲗⲉⲓⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲧ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ †ⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟϥ, sim. *ibid.* 57.51 ff., 80.15ff.. ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ " nevertheless ": (*IV* 195.8f.) (Even if there are people who are pained to hear that " the Kingdom of God is not eating and drinking ") ⲍⲱⲙⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲙⲛ- (sic) ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙⲛⲡⲥⲱ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ,... / (*A 2* 464) ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-†ⲙⲉⲍ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲱⲓⲡⲉ... ⲍⲟⲙⲓⲱⲥ ⲧⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ. ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ " likewise ": (*III* 66.12f.) ⲍⲟⲙⲓⲱⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲇⲓⲁⲑⲏⲕⲏ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ ⲉⲥ† ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ (*v.l.* ⲍⲟⲙⲁⲓⲟⲥ); also *ibid.* 31.23f., 67.2. In titles, superscriptions (with date or theme of the homily; not part of the corpus): *III* 102.9, *IV* 11.1f. (ⲍⲟⲙⲁⲓⲟⲥ/ⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ).

1.3.11.1.5 ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ (ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲟⲥ a common spelling), " no doubt ", " necessarily ", " without fail ", " eventually ", " as a matter of course ", " naturally ", " assuredly ", " possibly ", " perhaps ".

(a) *Clause-finally*, as *adclausal* postadjunctive modifier, usually with an *apodotic future* tense (the protases being ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛ-, ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- or the protasis-equivalent ⲡⲉⲧ(ⲛⲁ)-, ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁ-): (*A 2* 535) ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲉⲧⲍⲣ-ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲉ ⲉϥ-ⲛⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲍⲟⲩⲟ, ⲡⲉⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ / (*ibid.* 360) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲱϥ ⲉⲍⲛⲁϥ, ϥⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲍⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 165) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲍⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲉⲭ-ⲧⲁⲃⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲧⲃⲧ ⲉⲧⲍⲟⲟⲩ, ϥⲛⲁ†ⲟⲥⲉ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 249-250) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ... ϥⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲙⲛⲡⲛⲟⲅⲛⲉⲅ / (*III* 213.19) ⲛⲉⲧⲁⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁϥⲓ-ⲧⲉⲩⲁⲩⲡⲏ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ / (*ibid.* 214.10f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ, ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲍⲱⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲭⲉ ⲛⲅⲉⲛⲉⲁ ⲛⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ / (*Ch.* 182.15ff.) ⲧⲉⲧⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲍ ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ, ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ. More exx.: *III* 24.14, *IV* 3.17f., *Ch.* 134.48ff., 161.28ff., *A 2* 14, 165 etc. Rarely, adclausal ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ is found outside this configuration (" no doubt "): (*IV* 6.23f.) ⲅⲁⲡⲥ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲭⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ / (*A 2* 455) (explication of " ⲉϥⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ") ⲡⲉⲧⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱϥ.

(b) *Initially*, ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ occurs before the present (or present-equivalent) tense, less usually before the perfect, with the sense " no doubt ", " as is well known ", but also with nuances of " possibly ", even " perhaps " [130]: (*Ch.* 55.1ff.) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲡⲉⲕⲍⲧⲟ ⲅⲙ-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲍⲁⲍ / (*ibid.* 59.31ff.) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲡⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲩⲓ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲍ / (*III* 196.16) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲣⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ — also *IV* 2.6, *Ch.* 56.29ff., 120. 21ff., *A 2* 454.

(c) The imported (unanalyzable?) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ [131] " not indeed ", " certainly not ", in a rhetorical question: (*IV* 2.20ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲟⲩ... ⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ... / (*ibid.* 10.4ff.) ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-... ⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲍⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲭⲉ-... ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-...

[127] Blass–Debrunner §450.2.
[128] As early as classical Greek: cf. Kühner-Gerth II 280, 4; Schwyzer II 554, 582f.
[129] See Mayser 2/2:184, 170 on the placement of adnominal ὁμοίως.
[130] Cf. Lee, *Mus* 83:137f. (1970).
[131] Blass–Debrunner §433.2.

1.3.11.1.6 ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ, ⲟⲛⲧⲟⲥ " indeed ", " in fact, actually ", " truly " occurs only in initial position, and often (typically) introduces an apodotic present or future after ⲉⲩϫⲉ-/ⲉϥϣⲁⲛ- protases, as a kind of superordinator (" then indeed... "): (*III* 37.2, parall. *Ch.* 132-3) ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲧⲛⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲃⲟ, ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ϥⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲧⲃⲃⲟⲛ / (*III* 25.24f.) ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲏⲡ ⲉⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲡϣⲁ ⲙⲡⲥⲁⲥⲟⲩ... / (*Ch.* 26.40ff.) ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲛⲧ-ⲧⲉⲃⲇⲉⲗⲗⲏ ϫⲉ-ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲧⲛⲧⲱⲛⲅ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲕⲟⲩⲱⲧⲃ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲣ-ⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 100.52ff.) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛϣⲁⲛⲧⲙⲣ-ⲥⲱⲃ ⲥⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲣ-ⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ, ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲥⲧⲏⲧⲛ, ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲗⲩⲡⲉⲓ / (*ibid.* 79.19ff.) ⲉⲩϫⲉⲡⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲡⲉⲧ+-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲙⲡⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱϥ, ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ. Also *III* 40.9f. (with the apod. preceding the protasis), 67.22, 22.20ff., *IV* 21.14, *Ch.* 116. 53ff. (before the whole cond. complex). Elsewhere, too, ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ occurs mostly before the present tense or Nominal Sentence: (*III* 75.16) ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲯⲁϥⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ / (215.2f.) ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲛ+ⲧⲁⲉⲓⲏⲩ ⲣⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲣⲁⲓ, also *III* 13.5, 114.27 (fut.), 212.9f., *Ch.* 169.22ff. It is unusual with the perfect: (*IV* 7.11f.) ⲡⲉϫⲁⲩ ϫⲉ-... ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲯⲏⲯ ⲙⲛⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ...

1.3.11.1.7 Varia: (a) (ⲥⲁⲡⲁϫ) ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ [132], usually adnominally to ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ, (but also adclausally), typically recapitulating and summing up (as an " attitudinal conjunct ") the idea or category underlying a preceding detailed list or account: (*A 2* 416) (following a list of useless items) ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲁⲡⲁϫ ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲙⲛⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ ⲥⲓⲱⲱϥ / (*IV* 54.6ff.) (following a list of toilsome tasks) ⲥⲁⲡⲁϫ ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲥⲓⲥⲉ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉⲩⲅⲟⲙ / (*A 1* 16) (following a description of a dog's physical actions) ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲁϥ ⲯⲁⲕⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲅ ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲓⲗⲏ, also *A 2* 260, *P* 131[6] 13 vo. With the meaning " simply ": (*A 2* 228) ⲡⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲩⲁϥⲃⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲣ-ⲡⲁⲥⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (hardly even to wealthy patients) — note ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ " simply thus " (§1.1.2.4, *IV* 196.3, *Ch.* 162.5, *A 1* 204).

(b) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ, ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ, before the First Perfect: (*IV* 9.22f.) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲁϥⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲑⲓⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ / (*P* 130[4] 54 ϥⲇ) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲁⲡⲉⲑⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲟⲩ, also *III* 109.13. Focalized by the Second Present/ circumstantial (§2.6.1): (*III* 47.3f.) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲥ ⲉϫⲛⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ / (*P* 130[4] 122 ⲁⲃ) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲩ-. Postadjunctive (rare): (*Ryl.* 69 ⲛⲅ) ϥⲏⲁϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ϫⲉ-...

(c) ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲱⲥ (terminological), postadjunctive: (*Ch.* 208.25ff., Sh.?). ... ⲉϥϣⲙϣⲉ ⲛⲁϥ ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲱⲥ.

(d) ⲧⲉⲱⲥ " so long ", postadjunctive (*A 2* 254).

(e) ⲥⲱⲥⲁⲩⲧⲱⲥ " just so ", premodifier (*A 1* 258).

1.3.11.2 -ⲟⲛ-CHARACTERIZED MODIFIERS may — at least as one possibility — be interpreted as *position-marked nouns* [133].

1.3.11.2.1.1 The attitudinal ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ " but, yet ", " only ", " however ", " besides ", " at all events " occurs initially, adclausally: (*IV* 110.19) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲉⲛ (sic) ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲛⲓⲙ ϫⲟⲟⲥ... / (*ibid.* 173.4) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲥⲛⲟ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ..., also *III* 18.18f., *IV* 53.15f., 56.11f., 60.23f., 66.12, *P* 131[7] 45 vo — all in a typical construction with a *negative jussive* form; in text- or paragraph-beginning: (*III* 86.16) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲏ +ⲧⲁⲩⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏⲥ ⲥⲉⲙⲡⲉⲓ+ⲙⲉ (sic) ...ϫⲉ-... / (*ibid.* 182.1) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ ϣⲁⲉⲛⲉⲥ ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲥ..., also *IV* 114.16 / (*IV* 109.9f.) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ+-ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲥⲁⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ " only they " / (*A 2* 380-1) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲥⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ... ⲛⲁϣⲅⲙ-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲉⲡⲟⲣϫⲛ ⲉⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ " only so long as... ". Premodifying a noun-equivalent: (*IV* 4.9f.) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲥⲉⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ, or a modifier: (*IV* 54.23f.) ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ ⲛⲁⲩ..., ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲥⲡⲟⲩⲇⲁⲍⲉ ⲁⲛ, so too (changing Leipoldt's division and punctuation) *ibid.* 162.21.

[132] Preisigke 1.155 (= suppl. 27).

[133] It will be remembered here that the ex-adjectival morphs -ⲟⲥ/-ⲟⲛ have an allomorphic distribution in modifier status in Coptic: see §4.

1.3.11.2.1.2 ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ..., "not only... but (also/even)...", the well-known Greek configuration [134], occurs in Shenoute in an interesting array of constructions. Generally speaking, ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ is followed (as in the Greek original) by a noun or noun-equivalent (ⲡⲁⲓ, ⲡⲉⲧ-, also ϫⲉ- with noun/modifier), but after ⲁⲗⲗⲁ the framework terms are looser, and quite a few possibilities present themselves:

(1) 'ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ (ϫⲉ-) [135] *noun*, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ- *noun*' may be the stereotype: (*III* 47.24f.) ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲕⲉⲧⲃⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ..., *ibid.* 68.18f. (ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲯⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉ-), *IV* 159.13f.

(2) ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ... (ⲟⲛ) gives the impression of being actually superimposed on various textual segments: ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- [*protasis*], ⲁⲗⲗⲁ [*protasis* + *apodosis*] (*III* 16.19ff.), [*extraposition*] ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ... ⲟⲛ (*IV* 15.10ff.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- [*premodifier* + *verb syntagm*], ⲁⲗⲗⲁ- *verb syntagm* (*III* 36.3ff. *IV* 156.12ff.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- [*adnominal circumstantial*], ⲁⲗⲗⲁ- [*adnominal circumstantial*] (*III* 76.11f.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- [*infinitive*], ⲁⲗⲗⲁ- [*conjunctive*] (*IV* 4.10ff.). Simpler cases: ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲉⲩ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲯⲁϥ-ⲟⲛ (*III* 31.8f.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲩ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲁϥ- (*III* 29.10ff.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲛ- ⲁⲛ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ (ⲉ)ⲛⲣⲡⲕⲉ- (*III* 108.8f.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲯⲁⲩ-, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ (ⲟⲛ) ⲥⲉⲛⲁ- (*III* 48.9), and so on (more exx.: *III* 90-1, 93.24f., 104.1ff., *IV* 21.2ff., 30.19ff., 95.19ff., *Ch.* 93.35ff., etc.).

(3) Mixed construction: ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲓϫⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲁⲓⲣ-ⲁⲛⲁⲯ ⲟⲛ (*III* 139.10f.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲁϩⲁϩ ϫⲓ-ⲥⲙⲟⲩ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*IV* 22.18ff.), ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ϩⲁⲡⲉⲩⲃⲉⲕⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ [136] ⲟⲛ ⲛϫⲓⲛϫⲏ (*IV* 160.17f.).

(4) ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ + *verb syntagm*, without ϫⲉ-, is rare: (*III* 114-5) ⲧⲛⲁϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲯⲉ-ⲛⲉⲧⲣϩⲱⲃ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲑⲓ-ⲛⲁⲣⲅⲟⲥ.

(5) "Solitary" ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ: (*III* 40-1) ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲧⲟ ⲛϫⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 115.2f.) ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉⲛⲥⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲧⲉϫⲣⲓⲁ ⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ.

1.3.11.2.2 ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ "manifestly" is postadjunctive: adnominal (verb nominalization): (*Ench.* 78b) ⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ; adnominal/adclausal: (*A 2* 485, *P* 130[4] 125 ⲁⲍ) ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲉ / (*III* 208.17f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲁϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲏⲉⲓ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ. Expanding a modifier: (*A 1* 204) ϩⲛⲛⲉⲩⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ.

1.3.11.2.3 ⲥϫⲉⲇⲟⲛ "almost", premodifying ⲛⲑⲉ "almost like": (*Ch.* 119.47ff.) ⲉϥⲧⲁⲕϩⲩ ⲉϥⲃϩⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥϫⲉⲇⲟⲛ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲓϩⲗⲗⲟⲩⲥ / (*P* 130[4] 105 ⲣⲕⲍ) ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲥⲃⲟⲕ ...ⲥϫⲉⲇⲱⲛ (sic) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲟϩ, ⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ ⲟⲛ (i.e. the benefactor's property).

1.3.11.2.4 (?) ⲗⲟⲓⲡⲟⲛ "well then", "thus", "consequently", *initial* (attitudinal, dis/conjunct) premodifier: (*P* 131[5] 43 ⲣ, not Sh.?) ⲗⲟⲓⲡⲟⲛ ⲙⲛⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 63 vo) ⲗⲟⲓⲡⲟⲛ ⲯⲁⲩⲕⲟⲗⲗⲁ-ⲍⲉ..., also 131[6] 42 ro (Sh.?), 131[7] 25 ro — no instance in texts of certain Shenoutean authorship.

1.3.11.2.5 ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ

1.3.11.2.5.1 ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ (ⲇⲉ) "rather", "even more, so much more", "especially", attitudinal dis-/conjunct. (a) ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ [137] + *predication* (*III* 24.21f., 68.9f.); (b) ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ + *modifier*: (*Ch.* 93.46ff.) ...ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲯⲁⲗⲙⲟⲥ / (*III* 77.19) ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ, ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ / (*A 2* 510-511) ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ

[134] See Kühner-Gerth II 257, Mayser 2/3:118; cf. Daumas 1952:128f.

[135] ϫⲉ- before a noun, predication form or modifier, appears to be part of the 'ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- ⲁⲗⲗⲁ-' framework rather than sharing in the paradigm after ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ.

[136] Kühner-Gerth II 257.

[137] Mayser 2/3:127.

ΔΕ ЄΖЄΝΠΟΝΗΡΟС ΝЄ ΝЄΤЄΙΡЄ ΜΜΟΟΥ " especially since ", also *P* 131⁴ 92 ΡΜΒ; (c) ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΔЄ + *noun* (*-equivalent*) " in particular " (*III* 222.9f., *P* 130⁴ 122 ΛΒ); ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΔЄ ⲭЄ- [*neg. protasis* + *apodosis*] " especially since ": (*IV* 19.19) ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΔЄ ⲭЄ-ЄΝЄΟΥΡΜΡΑϢ ΑΝ ΠЄ... ΝЄЧΝΑΖШ ΑΝ ΠЄ / (*ibid.* 99.21f.) ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΔЄ ⲭЄ-ЄΚϢΑΝΤΜ+ ΝΑΥ... ЄΚΝΑΡ-ΒΟΛ ΑΝ. In ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΔЄ ΑΛΗΘШС ⲭЄ- (*III* 35.2, ⲭЄ-less variant in *Ch.* 129.21ff.), ⲭЄ- may alternatively be understood as the formal marking of the inter-dependence of the clause and the premodifier ΑΛΗΘШС, the conjunct ΜΑΛΛΟΝ or both: cf. ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ⲭЄ- (below). (d) ΠΟСШ/ΠΟСΟ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ " how much more...? " is a rhetorical question, *in apodosi* after ЄϢⲭЄ-, usually with a Second Tense/circumstantial topicalization form (§2.6.1; ΠΟСШ was originally — and is synchronically [138]? — focal): *III* 97.24f., *Ch.* 74.54ff., 119.30ff., *A 2* 396 (+ First Future). Occasionally, ΠΟСШ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ occurs in the predication-presupposing pattern (§1.2.3): (*III* 42.3f.) ЄϢⲭЄ-ΝЧΟΒϢ ΑΝ ЄΟΥΑ ΝΝⲭΑⲭ, ΠΟСΟ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΝΡШΜЄ / (*Ch.* 59.17ff.) ЄϢⲭЄ-ΝЄΖΒΗΥЄ ϬЄ ΗΝΡШΜЄ ϢΟΟΠ ΝΤЄΙΖЄ, ΠΟСШ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ ΠΝΟΥΤЄ...; also *III* 29.23.

1.3.11.2.5.2 ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ (often similar in meaning to ΜΑΛΛΟΝ) " certainly " [139], " not to mention, let alone ", " so much more ", " even ", " most of all, above all ", " on the contrary " [140], " especially since, considering that... ", " what's more ".

(a) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ + *predication form*: (*III* 94.3f.) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΤΝΑⲭΟΟС ⲭЄ- " certainly " / (*P* 130⁵ 39 ro) Η ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΔЄ ΑΠΜΟΥ ϬШΡϬ ЄΡΟЧ / (*III* 22.16) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΠΟΥСΟΝ ΠЄ ΚΑΤΑСΑΡⲌ " even " / (*III* 96.2) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΝЄΤΠΟΡΝЄΥЄ... ΝΑΙ ΝΑΜЄ ΝЄ ΝϢΟΥЧЄΤ-ΠЄΥΡ-ΠΜЄЄΥЄ ЄΒΟΛ " on the contrary " / (*IV* 178.12) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΠΟΥΟЄΙϢ ΠЄ ΑΥШ ΤЄΥΝΟΥ ΝΤШΟΥΝ ϩΑΠϩΙΝΗΒ " so much more ", etc.: more exx.: *III* 110.16, 183.24f., 203.2f., *IV* 86.1f., 153.10, *Ch.* 100.8ff., etc.

(b) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ + *modifier* (" even ", " especially "): (*IV* 78.8) ...ΝϩⲀϩ ΝСΟΠ, ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΜΠΝΑΥ ЄΤΝΝΑϢШΝЄ / (*ibid.* 155.22) ...ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ϩΝΝΤΟ ΝΝЄΤϩΙΤΟΥШΟΥ. Very frequently with a circumstantial (" especially since ", " considering that .. ", " actually "): (*III* 87.10) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄΝΝΑ ЄΜΑΥ / (*RE 10* 161a 31ff.) ЄΝЄΟΥ-ΜЄΡΟС ΝΟΥШΤ... ΠЄΝΤΑΚΤΑΜΙΟЧ, ΝΤΚ-ΟΥΜΟΙΖЄ, ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄΑΚΤΑΜΙЄ-ΠΤΗΡЧ " how much more, considering that... " / (*Wess. 18* 128b 1ff.) ...ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄΡЄΤЄΓΡΑΦΗ Ρ-ΜΝΤΡЄ ΜΝΝЄЧϢⲀⲭЄ / (*Ch.* 53.7ff.) ...ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄΠ-ⲬΟЄΙС ΠЄΤⲬШ ΜΜΟС / (*BMCat.* 80, No. 195) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄΝΤΚ-ΟΥΟΥ ϩШШЧ ΝΝⲀϩΡΜΠϬШΝΤ ΝΤΟΡΓΗ...; also *III* 96.12f., 124.5f., 142.23, 200.18f., *IV* 33.5f., 100.8f.

(c) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ + *noun* (" even ", " especially ", " not to mention, let alone ", " namely "): *IV* 1.8f., 4.8, 30.16, 110.3f., 112.2, *III* 82.8f., 91.7f., 106.11f., 112.1 — " especially "; *III* 36.16, 43.7f., *IV* 161.19f., 172.8f. — " certainly not "; *III* 74.16, 213.3f. — " even "; *IV* 100.18, *Ch.* 26.8ff., *P* 130⁴ 139 ro — " not to mention "; *Ch.* 67.21ff., 71.39f., 78.51ff. — " namely ".

(d) Most striking of all, ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ⲭЄ-: (1) a distinctive, well-attested construction of consecutive " prospective " subordination, ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΔЄ ⲭЄ- + *Future III* or ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ⲭЄ- + *Second Future*: *III* 150.25f. (" especially so as to... "); 159.29f. (" certainly [not] so as to... "), also *IV* 115.13, 52.18; *III* 166.28f., 17.19f. (" let alone that... "); *III* 181.17f. (" so much more/certainly that... ").

(2) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ (ΔЄ) ⲭЄ- + *conditional complex*, " especially since ": (*III* 51.2f.) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ⲭЄ-ЄΤЄΤΝϢΑΝΤΜ-ϹⲀΖШΤΝ ЄΒΟΛ... ΝⲀϢ ΝΖЄ ЄΤЄΤΝⲀΡ-ΒΟΛ... / (*IV* 42.1ff.) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ΔЄ ⲭЄ ЄΝЄΝΤΑΥΟΒϢΟΥ Η ЄΥϢΑΝΟΒϢΟΥ... ΝЄΡЄΤЄΙΜΙΝЄ ΝΡШΜЄ ΝΑШΜС. Compare *Ch.* 65.22ff. (ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ЄϢⲭЄ-... + *apodosis*, without ⲭЄ-).
(3) " Especially since ": (*III* 86.20) ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ ⲭЄ-ΠΚΑΙΡΟС ΖΟСЄ, perhaps also *ibid.* 103.13, unless here ⲭЄ- is conditioned by a preceding verb. The nature of the dependence between ΜΑΛΙСΤΑ and the ⲭЄ-clause is far from clear. ⲭЄ- may be pertinent, (co-)characterizing (α) a consecutive construction premodified

[138] Although the sequence introduced by ΠΟСШ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ is focal in relation to the topicalizing ЄϢⲭЄ-protasis, I believe ΠΟСШ ΜΑΛΛΟΝ itself is focal in the apodosis.
[139] See Greenbaum 1969:132ff. on the English *certainly*.
[140] Cf. Mayser 2/1-53 (" adversativ-korrektiv ").

by ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ (cf. ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϯⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲛⲁ-, §2.6.3.2) or (β) causality. On the other hand, ⲭⲉ- may be an exponent of an explicit syntactic connection between the premodifier and its sequence [141], characteristic in Coptic of pre-elements of Greek extraction. A third alternative, that ⲭⲉ- is in these cases a mark of the predicative status of the premodifier [142], cannot be entirely dismissed, even though the usual cotextual tests for topic/focus isolation cannot be applied here.

1.3.11.3 ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ (ⲇⲉ) ⲟⲛ " (and/but) again ", " but then ", " alternatively " — additive/replacive/item-presenting conjunct [143]: a premodifier, introducing (often in a series of predications, quotations or in reporting) an additional predication: (*III* 54.19) ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲭⲁϥ / (*ibid.* 58-9) ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲥ ⲧⲉ... ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲟⲟϩⲉ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉ... ⲟⲩⲣⲉϥⲭⲓ-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲧⲉ ...ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲣⲉϥⲧ-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 24.27f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ... ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲥⲉⲧⲁϩⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ... / (*III* 110.18) ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲱⲁⲩⲧ-ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ. ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ- is common in quotation series (*A 2* 340, *IV* 33.3f. etc.); ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ may add a whole premodified complex: (*III* 71.14f.) ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲓⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲱⲉ ⲛⲁⲓⲭⲙⲁⲗⲱⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲁϩⲥⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ / (*IV* 45.22) ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲏⲛⲥⲁⲛⲉⲓϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉϭⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... Additional exx.: *III* 110.11f., 59.22, 90.7ff., 127.20f., *IV* 1.17f., 127.4, 168.9, *Ch.* 68.15f., *A 1* 261-2, *P* 131[4] 157 vo, etc. ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ (ⲟⲛ) + *circumstantial* — " moreover " — is used much in the same way as ⲁⲩⲱ premodifying a circumstantial form (§1.3.10): (*III* 212.22) (" the roads are different from one another ") ...ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲟⲩϩⲓⲏ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉ-ⲛⲕⲟⲧⲥ ⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲥⲱⲣⲙ / (*A 1* 75) (" The sins he says you have been forgiven ") ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲉⲁⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲏϩ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ... ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲉⲁⲣⲉⲡⲱϩⲧ ⲙⲡⲥⲓⲱⲉ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲉ-ϩⲗⲟϭ...

1.3.11.4 ⲧⲁⲭⲩ, ⲧⲁⲭⲏ " quickly ". Here (differently from the -ⲟⲛ-group) there is no morphologically related " masculine " or " animate " counterpart [144]. This is a fairly common modifier, invariably *postadjunctive* but for rare cases of secondary (prosodically motivated) intercolary placement [145]: (*III* 40.6) ⲛⲉⲧⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ ⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*Ch.* 114.62f.) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲩⲟⲙⲟⲩ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ / (*ibid.* 132.31f.) ⲁϥⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ / (*A 2* 5) ⲁⲗⲱⲧⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ / (*ibid.* 121) ⲕⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲉⲉⲱⲙ-ⲟⲩⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ / (*P* 130[4] 123 ⲁⲅ) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲁⲭⲏ / (130[4] 127 ⲙⲃ) ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲡⲉⲛⲉⲧϥⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲉϥ ⲧⲁⲭⲏ / (*Wess. 9* 140a 13ff.) ⲉϥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ. Also *III* 35.4ff., 87.12f,. 198.10f., *IV* 85.4, 155.7f., *Ch.* 130.23f., *A 2* 47, 390, *Miss.* 279, *K* 9040, etc. Aberrant conditioned placement: (*A 2* 53-4) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲧⲁⲭⲩ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲱⲧⲃ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ.

1.3.11.5 Prepositions of Greek origin

(a) ⲕⲁⲧⲁ " according to... ", " by " (distributive), and ⲡⲁⲣⲁ " beside " [146], " in comparison with ", " beyond " are certainly more common in all-Greek, more or less terminological, phrases or clichés: ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉⲛⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (*III* 224.19, *IV* 112.24f., *P* 130[4] 104 ⲣⲕⲇ, *A 2* 459), ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (compound noun?) (*III* 77.24,

[141] Cf. Tobler 1886:51ff., Tesnière 1965:188ff.

[142] Cf. Rosén 1979:461ff.

[143] Greenbaum 1969:47ff., 59f. Compare the famous humorous application of adjunct-conjunct homonymy in Mark Twain's " Buck Fanshaw's Funeral " — " he's dead again ".

[144] §4.2.2.1.

[145] The diachronic question (here acute, but arising in each individual instance of non-native Coptic word) of why a given Greek lexeme was chosen to replace an Egyptian one (or, to put it the other way round, why this or that Egyptian element was destined to be replaced) is not pointless, even if almost hopelessly difficult to answer. (It but paraphrases H. Schuchardt's basic dictum that the history of linguistic forms is written — and must be studied — in terms of *individual case histories*, and not of wholesale change). Of course, one cannot approach problems of this order without a satisfactory structural-synchronic account of Egyptian and Coptic lexical systems.

[146] See von Lemm 1972a:239f., Nagel 1973a:113ff., Anba Gregorius 1981:211ff., 217ff. I have found no instance of KATA in the sense " against " or " as for " (Godron, *BIFAO* 63:135-7 [1965]).

208.20, 216.4f.), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲉⲩⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (*III* 219.20, *IV* 113.2), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ (*III* 22.16, *IV* 31.1, etc.), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲧⲁⲝⲓⲥ (*III* 22.13, 220.20), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲃⲓⲟⲥ (*III* 74.16, *IV* 59.16f.), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ (*IV* 21.18, *P* 130⁴ 118 кг, *Ch.* 66.41f., *A 2* 379), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲃⲃⲁⲧⲟⲛ (*IV* 54.14, *Ch.* 51.23, *A 1* 14, *P* 130⁵ 28 vo), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲟⲓⲕⲟⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ (*III* 219.6, *RE 10* 162b 23), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ (*III* 214.6f.), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ (*III* 160.28, *IV* 34.22f.), etc. Both occur freely in collocation with Egyptian nouns (also in recurring clichés — yet not zero-determinated?) — statistically (by number of occurrences) predominantly so; ⲕⲁⲧⲁ is by far the better attested (with almost 400 occurrences in Leipoldt, vs. less than 40 for ⲡⲁⲣⲁ; ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ and distributive instances are numerically perhaps more important): ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲩⲙⲡⲱⲁ (*IV* 2.9) ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲟⲩⲉⲍⲥⲁⲍⲛⲉ (*ibid.* 12.18f.), ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲱ (*ibid.* 11.8), ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉⲛⲅⲟⲙ (*III* 134.19), ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲉⲛⲙⲡⲱⲁ (*P* 130⁵ 65 vo), ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ (*III* 143.1), etc. Of all Greek-origin prepositions, only ⲕⲁⲧⲁ and ⲡⲁⲣⲁ have pre-pronominal allomorphs (ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲟ- ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲣⲟ-: *III* 116.17, 117.5f., 11, *RE 10* 162b 8, *P* 130⁵ 37 vo).

(b) ⲁⲛⲧⲓ "instead of" occurs typically before ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (less usually before the non-causative infinitive) in a common, indeed distinctively Shenoutean figure "instead of (doing this or that), we (etc.) did/do...": *III* 51.10f., 115.5ff., *IV* 82.10f.,24f., 107.18, *A 2* 53, 54, 48, 466, *Wess. 9* 94a 3ff., 118b 11ff., 127b 26ff., etc. (see §1.1.2.2). With infinitives: *IV* 92.11f., *Wess. 9* 117a 20f. With non-verbal nouns: *III* 213.14, 214.14.

(c) ⲍⲱⲥ "as", "as if" [147] occurs as a *premodifier*, "vesting" [148] a circumstantial form, with or without ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- (*Ch.* 207.18f., *Leyd.* 366, *Wess. 9* 143a 17ff., *IV* 92.6, etc.), rarely with an unconverted predication (Nominal Sentence, Cleft Sentence: *Ch.* 30.36f., *Wess. 9* 87b 21ff.). ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ preceding the autofocal Second Tense (§2.1.5): *III* 96.25, etc. Prepositionally, ⲍⲱⲥ is well attested with native and Greek nouns: ⲍⲱⲥⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*III* 88.24), ⲍⲱⲥⲩⲙⲙⲟ (*ibid.* 135.5) ⲍⲱⲥⲧⲩⲣⲁⲛⲛⲟⲥ (*ibid.* 40.14), ⲍⲱⲥⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲥ (*ibid.* 63.8), etc.

(d) ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ "without", "but for" precedes ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (*Wess. 9* 108b 21f.), the non-causative infinitive (*III* 25.4f.) and noun lexemes, usually in recurring expressions, such as ⲩⲱⲛⲉ and ⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ (*IV* 51.4, 98.7f., *P* 130⁵ 69 vo); with other nouns: *P* 130⁵ 15 vo (ⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ), *ibid.* 23 ⲣⲟⲏ (ⲛⲉϥⲕⲉⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ), *III* 70.2,11 (ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲟⲧⲉ, ⲛⲉⲩⲕⲉⲧⲃⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ), *IV* 95.23 (ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ), 125.3 (ⲛⲁⲓ), 157.24 (ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ), etc. ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ is expandable by another modifier — a circumstantial: (*IV* 108.8) ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ ⲉⲩⲙⲙⲁⲩ.

(e) ⲡⲣⲟⲥ [149], relatively rare, seems to occur in fixed expressions: ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ, ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ "for a (short) while" (*III* 35.4f., 131.17, *RE 11* 15b 2, 16a 7f., *RE 10* 164a 25f., *P* 130² 7), ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲧⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ "for a while" (*A 2* 105, *P* 130⁴ 114 чє, 130⁵ 93 vo), ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩ (*P* 130⁴ 38 vo, opp. ⲩⲁⲉⲛⲉⲍ), ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲑⲉ (*P* 131⁸ 84 ro).

1.3.11.6 Greek loan-modifiers: miscellaneous

(1) ⲍⲱⲥⲧⲉ "consequently", "and so", expanded by the conjunctive (§ 7.3.1.1), with ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- (*ibid.*), premodifying the circumstantial (*IV* 87.4), Nom. Sentence (*ibid.* 183.2).

(2) ⲕⲁⲛ "at least" [150], "even". Before the jussive or imperative (*III* 66.6f., *IV* 37.22, *Ch.* 82.7f., 87.46f., 116.30f., *A 1* 256, *A 2* 369-370, *P* 131⁷ 71 ro (ⲉⲩⲭⲉⲛⲅⲛⲁⲣ-ⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ... ⲕⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲣⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲩⲉ) etc.); before ⲟⲩⲛ (*Ch.* 157.55f.), the present (*ibid.* 31.5ff.) and perfect (*ibid.* 138.5ff.); adnominally ("even", *III* 222.15); ⲕⲁⲛ... ⲕⲁⲛ... is a disjunctive framework ("either... or...", "be it..., or be it..."), usually for circumstantial forms (*III* 222.8f., *IV* 11.9, 109.20f., 111.8f., 154.12, etc.). As a concessive premodifier [151], with the conditional, ⲉⲩⲭⲉ or (rarely) ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ, also with the circumstantial ("even if", "even

[147] Stern §§607, 617, 622; Jelanskaja 1966:197ff.; Shisha-Halevy 1972:175f. Cf. Haardt, *WZKM* 57:78 (1961).
[148] Shisha-Halevy 1972:168 and §0.3.2.
[149] Anba Gregorius 1981:221f.
[150] Blass–Debrunner §374b (with Tabachowitz 41).
[151] Stern §628, Jelanskaja 1966:159f., Shisha-Halevy 1972:171ff.

though ": *III* 19.28f., 28.11, 22.9f., 40.16,19ff., 91.18, *IV* 3.27f., 114.8, *Ch.* 139.12ff., *Wess. 9* 140b 19ff., 179a 22, *Ep.* 56, etc.); less usually, precedes a basic tense in this role (*III* 93.20f., 23).

(3) (ⲉⲛ)ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲫⲟⲥⲟⲛ [152], " so long (as...) ", " insofar (as...) ", " as soon (as...) ", usually with the circumstantial (ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ is the more common): circ. present (*III* 27.27, *Ch.* 70.9, *Wess. 9* 152a 20ff., etc.), circ. perfect (*III* 31.23f., *RE 11* 17b 42f.), circ. Nominal Sentence (*IV* 74.15, 75.1,12); rarely, with a Basic Tense (perfect or present, *IV* 20.2, 104.21, *Ch.* 112.16ff.). ⲉⲫⲟⲥⲟⲛ is rare: (*RE 11* 16a 27f.) ⲉⲫⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ (ⲉ)ⲛⲧⲏϭ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ (ⲉ)ⲛϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲍⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ, ϥⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲯϥ ⲙⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ ϩⲁⲛⲉⲛⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ. ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ occurs (only in *Ch.*?) with Basic Tenses (" insofar as "): *Ch.* 16.43ff., 125.19ff.; note the disjunctive ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ... ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ... (" a little... a little... ", *IV* 162.2f.).

(4) ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ [153], with the circumstantial future (rare: " whenever ", *Ch.* 72.41ff., in parallel to ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ-, *ibid.* 73.34ff.), usually with the conditional, in the same sense (*III* 63.22, *IV* 63.6, 10.22f. — *v.l.* conditional without ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ — *Ch.* 68.3, etc.).

(5) ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ [154], " hardly ", also a rhetorical negation: see §7.3.1 — with the conjunctive, focalized by the Second Perfect (*III* 24.23), also converted with its clause as ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ, in this case often premodified by ⲁⲩⲱ (§1.3.10; see references in §7.3.1).

(6) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ " but, however ", *passim*; opening apodosis " nonetheless " (*A 2* 333); before modifiers (*IV* 56.6, *Wess. 9* 173c 19ff.), with conjunctive.

(7) ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ " otherwise ", see §7.3.1.1.

(8) ⲧⲁⲭⲁ (ⲭⲉ-) [155] " possibly ", " by chance ", " perhaps ", " apparently ", with conjunctive (*A 2* 369), Second Tenses — present (*A 2* 434, not Sh.), future (*ibid.* 440, not Sh.), Basic Tense (*ibid.* 434, not Sh., *P* 131[7] 39 ro ⲧⲁⲭⲁ ⲟⲩⲛϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ...). Also for (rhetorical) interrogation? [156]

(9) ⲡⲟⲗⲗⲁⲕⲓⲥ " often " (*A 2* 415, not Sh., before a conditional complex).

(10) ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲝⲓⲁ (εὐταξία, " in good order "): (*A 2* 257) ⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲝⲓⲁ " precisely " [157].

(11) ⲉⲕⲙⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥ (*A 2* 2) ⲛⲉϥⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲕⲙⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥ " in part "/" alternatingly " [158].

(12) ⲧⲟⲧⲉ " then " (*P* 130[5] 83 ⲣⲓⲁ) ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲯⲟⲣⲡ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲕⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲅⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲁⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ.

(13) ⲉⲧⲓ " still ": ⲉⲧⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (cf. ἔτι καὶ νῦν *Ch.* 91.20f.); premodifying: a Nominal Sentence (*III* 89.6f.), a circumstantial form (" when still... ", *III* 210.23, *IV* 191.12), ⲟⲩⲏ (*P* 130[5] 66 ⲟⲅ) ⲉ+ ⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲁⲓⲥⲧⲁⲍⲉ; adnominal (*Young* ⲅ).

(14) ⲟⲩⲕⲉⲧⲓ " not any more ", with a negative clause: (*Ch.* 80.31ff.) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲕⲉⲧⲓ ⲛϥⲛⲁⲯⲟⲙ-ⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (for this ⲟⲉ cf. §6.0.3.2).

(15) ⲡⲗⲏⲛ " yet ", " however " — paragraph opener, subtextual initial-boundary marker (*III* 117.20, 183.22, 84.8, 200.4f., *IV* 64.25, etc. [159]).

[152] Stern §622, Jelanskaja 1966:197ff., Shisha-Halevy 1972:174ff.

[153] Stern §622, Jelanskaja 1966:197ff., Shisha-Halevy 1972:173f.

[154] Cf. Crönert 1903:98 n. 2; Preisigke 2.113 (+ suppl. 183); Mayser 1/3 120, 2/2 184 (ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ is usually predicative: §§7.1.3, 7.3.1 — cf. Brugmann *IF* 27:262f. [1910]). For (ⲁⲩⲱ) ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ see Shisha-Halevy 1976a:33 (cf. Browne 1979b:202, on *Luc.* 23:53).

[155] Blass-Debrunner §360.2, Anh. §456.3, Drescher 1969:96f.

[156] Jannaris §1749. See also Lee, *Mus* 83:137-8 (1970).

[157] Lampe 577, Liddell-Scott 734. Cf. εὐτάκτως (Mayser 1/3 124, 2/2 177, 183, Preisigke 1.623). Compare ⲡⲁⲣⲣⲏⲥⲓⲁ Drescher 1970:149ff.).

[158] Here reminiscent of *I Cor.* 12:27. Cf. Mayser 2/2 38, 390; Preisigke 1.75.

[159] In (*III* 17.27) ⲡⲁⲏⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲕⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ- appears to be explicative: "but since you have said...", with a second clause (18.3) ⲉⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲭⲉ- "and I said to you..." and the main clause (18.6f.) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲁⲓⲧⲁⲙⲟⲕ ⲭⲉ...

CHAPTER 2

THE ADVERBAL MODIFIER FOCALIZED: THE SECOND TENSE IN MICRO-/MACROSYNTACTIC AND CATEGORIAL PERSPECTIVE

2.0.0.1 Research-historical: Polotsky's treatment of the Second Tense

2.0.1 Morphosyntax

2.0.1.1 On conversion in general

2.0.1.1.1 Morphology

2.0.1.1.2 Second-power conversion

2.0.1.2 A question of identity: *Second Tense* vs. *circumstantial* vs. *relative*

2.0.2 The theoretical background

2.0.2.0.1 Theoretical and terminological systems: topic - comment - focus / given - new; cotext-sensitive grammar

2.0.2.1 Topicalization, thematization: means and paradigm

2.0.2.2.1-3 Focalization and focality: means, paradigm, values

2.0.2.2.4 The " Cleft Sentence " and the Second Tense

2.0.2.3 The organization of information

2.0.2.4 The syntagmatics of nexus: a note

2.0.2.5 The Second Tense: an integrated view of information structuring and function

2.1-3 Theme/topic-initial patterns

2.1 AUTOFOCAL Second Tense construction: # *Second Tense Conj.-Form* # — *focalization pattern* (1)

2.1.1 # ϵϥ + modifier #

2.1.2 Topical (" rhetorical ") questions

2.1.3 Jussive/precative/preceptive/promissive ϵϥⲚⲀϢⲰⲦⲘ

2.1.4 " Quotation-form ", glossing and lemmatic roles

2.1.5 ϵⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ϫϵ- (" not because "), ϩⲱⲥ ϵⲯϫϵ- (" as if- ") + Second Tense

2.1.6 The parenthetic Second Tense

2.1.7 Contrastive disjunction, antithesis, varia

2.2 HETEROFOCAL Second-Tense construction: # *Sec. Tense Conj.-form → modifier* # — *focalization pattern* (2)

2.2.1-3 Constituency; general and special observations; documentation

2.3 HETEROFOCAL Second-Tense construction: # *Second-Tense Conj.-form + pronoun/noun syntagm* # — *focalization pattern* (3)

2.3.1-2 Focalized object-expansion, actor expression; documentation

2.4-6 Focus-initial patterns

2.4 Heterofocal Second-Tense construction: # *modifier* → *Sec. Tense Conj.-form* # — *focalization pattern* (4)
2.4.0.1 On focus-initial patterns, generally
2.4.1 Constituency; illustration
2.5 The circumstantial topicalization: # *modifier/(pro)noun* → *circumstantial conjugation-form* # — *focalization pattern* (5)
2.5.0.1 Circumstantial topicalization, generally
2.5.0.2 The focus: ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ, time expressions
2.5.1-3 Constituency; observations; documentation
2.6 Heterofocal Second-Tense/circumstantial construction: # *modifier/(pro)noun* → ϵ + *conjugation-form* # — *focalization pattern* (6)
2.6.1 Constituency; documentation
2.6.2 An unmarked member of the focalization paradigm: # modifier → basic tense #
2.6.3 A selective examination of foci: ⲛⲁⲯ ⲛ2ϵ, ϵⲧⲃϵⲟⲩ, ϵⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ
2.6.4 Focus-initial patterns: structural assignment and evaluation
2.7 Stylistic syntax: cotext patterns, " figures "
2.7.1 Rhetorical focalization figures
2.7.2 Rhetorical topicalization figures
2.7.3 Basic and Second Tenses: compatibility, opposition and neutralization
2.8 Second-Tense constructions: notes on prosody and syntagmatics
2.8.1 Prosody
2.8.2 Nexus arrangement; location of the theme-topic || focus seam; focus isolation
2.8.3 The Second Tense as a " that "-form
2.8.4 The complex theme/topic
2.9 Negation patterns: negatived focalization patterns, negated nexus, negatived adjuncts and pattern components
2.10 A concluding note: on the functional essence of the Second Tense

2.0.0.1 Research-historical: Polotsky's treatment of the second tense

In retrospect, there is no denying that the story of the redemption of the Second Tense, the Sleeping Beauty among Coptic grammatical categories, is, in more than one way, the story of modern Coptic linguistics. The unveiling of the nature of this category initiated a renaissance of grammatical scholarship, which is thus precisely datable to 1944, the publication year of Polotsky's momentous *Études de syntaxe copte*, where it is treated on pp. 24-97 (with earlier tentative statements in Polotsky 1934:60, 63f. = *CP* 368f. and 1937 for Coptic, and 1940 for Late Egyptian and Coptic. Subsequent restatements of the pan-Egyptian category may be found in Polotsky 1960a:§§11ff., 30ff., 1965:§§16ff., 22ff., 1970:566f., 1973: 136ff., 1976:§§2.3-7, 3.9). A brief resumé: according to Polotsky, the Second-Tense conjugation form is to be conceived of as a *verbal nominalization*, with the privilege of actor (nominal grammatical subject) status in the Bipartite (# *nom. actor* + " *adverbial* " *predicate* #) pattern. The " adverb " (our modifier) following the Second Tense is thus its predicate; the ensuing construction is typologically (formally and functionally) comparable to " Cleft Sentence " patterns in other languages (§2.0.2.2.4 below), where a nominalized verb construction (" that... ", " que... ") serves as logical subject (" *glose* ", topic) for a non-verbal (" adverbial ") logical predicate (" *vedette* ", focus: see below for my terminology). In

Polotsky's more recent transformational formulation (1976), the nominalization of the verb by means of the Second-Tense converter is correlated to its demotion to subject status and the promotion of an " adverbial " adjunct to predicate status.

In setting out from, and taking issue with, Polotsky's conception and systematization (which, if the truth be told, have not yet been properly digested and applied by the Copto-Egyptological community at large, even today [1]), despite its truly awe-inspiring elegance and simplicity, shaping order out of chaos, and its law-like standing [2], I wish once more to state my conviction that his statements are not invalidated by the following observations; they are as cogent as ever — in their own procedural frame of reference. What I offer here is an alternative assignment of the facts, motivated by a different set of methodological principles. One may recall here VON DER GABELENTZ's typically Neogrammarian proviso (1875:159): " Es dürfte hier... streng zu scheiden sein zwischen dem Gesetze und den Einschränkungen " (in our case, *extensions*, rather) " welche dieses durch den Sprachgebrauch erlitten hat ". I mean to portray in this chapter Shenoute's *Sprachgebrauch*, no more, no less, and let the rule look after itself. My alternative to the Master's neat scheme [3] is less elegant, amorphous, and non-modular though not unstructured, but perhaps less reproachable for what I regard as a methodological flaw insofar as strictly synchronic description is concerned: the postulation of an " orthodox " or normal-and-original functional core [4] with a periphery of secondary, extended sub-functions [5], with no integration of all roles in the framework of a unified (even if complex and fragmentated) functional theory, or its paradigmatic association with other relatable forms or patterns. I can hardly conceive of any synchronic meaning for " extension " or " divergence ". Within the terms of reference of his own orientation, Polotsky's description is of course impeccable. If you reject it, you are faced with the realization that the syntax of the Second Tenses is so complex as to rule out any simple one-rule statement to define its workings.

My reservations concerning Polotsky's view of the Second Tenses may be condensed into the following comments:

(a) I confess myself agnostic about the alleged *substantival* nature of the form. This claim (in Potsky's argumentation for Coptic [6]) is unmistakably traceable to the model (Bipartite or Bipartite-like), to which the form is assigned, and not to argument from independent or cross-evidence from other, intersecting patterns [7] which would pin down the form as nominal (cf. the corresponding Middle Egyptian *mrr.f* form, which features in subject/predicate status in Nominal Sentence patterns, governed by pre-

[1] See HORN's apt remarks (1980:64 n. 6).

[2] See for instance HORN 1980:63f.

[3] A neatness more warranted in Old and Middle Egyptian (though rare exx. such as *Coffin Texts* III 202 *n jśśt jr.f tm.k swr wśśt* " But why wilt thou not drink urine? " still remain unintegrated in the main theory unless the topic here is " adverbial ").

[4] Possibly representing this core as the norm derives less from a conviction of a synchronic state than from a subtle, perhaps not conscious historical bias induced by the successive juxtaposition of all phases of Egyptian in the second Étude (which is as much a study of a diachronic category as a series of synchronic accounts). Obviously, a possible statistical preponderance of this core pattern (a preponderance never really established) is irrelevant as a synchronic argument. (Incidentally, the " Middle Egyptian " [" Oxyrhynchite "] dialect of Coptic which is generally not innovative, goes even much further than Sahidic in favouring these so-called " extensions ".)

[5] POLOTSKY 1944:51-3 (= *CP* 155-7), 1960a:§32 Obs. " Such ' exceptions ', which are relatively not at all numerous, can be brought under a limited number of heads and understood as extensions of the basic function... Inasmuch as they deviate from the structure of the ' Second Tenses ' they are secondary (' emplois abusifs '), but it is not in the least suggested that they should ' be dismissed as improper uses '. They can be ' dismissed ' only in the sense that they do not invalidate the definition of the basic function ". Is there not more than a suggestion of circularity in this definition?

[6] POLOTSKY 1944:66ff. (= *CP* 170ff.), 1960a:§11 and 32 Obs.

[7] The " actual Coptic usage " which is argued as amply demonstrating this nominal nature (POLOTSKY 1960a:408 = *CP* 254) is not specified, unless this refers again to the Bipartite pattern (subject) assignment of the form; see (b) below. Negation by means of N- AN, adduced as proof, is hardly conclusive, as this is the general negator of non-verbal nexus, adjunct and component, rather than an index of the nominal character of a term.

positions, object-expansion of transitive verbs, and so on [8]). This statement (of the nom. nature of the form) is therefore circular. It is also (at least in implication, but explicitly in 1976) dependent on a transformational approach to syntactic analysis, and also on some " diachronic inertia " or extrapolation from established historical facts. This question acquires a special edge when the *circumstantial* (modifier-paradigm) topicalization form (§2.5) is considered, and when the whole question is approached from the " signalling ", i.e. listener's, angle: of what function is the Second-Tense converter an exponent? What does it signal, in the unfolding of the discourse? More on this subject in §2.8.3.

(b) The association of the Second Tense with the Bipartite pattern [9], while historically well-founded, s synchronically " leaky " and aprioristic. At issue here are the very rudiments of the definition of at pattern: the substitution and prosodic features do not match in the Second-Tense and Bipartite patterns (for the latter, see §1.2.1.1); the nominal status of the Second Tense — a *sine qua non* for the Bipartite assignment — is actually *dependent* on this assignment; finally, the *Second-Tense modifier* construction is only one in a set of at least five major patterns featuring this and related forms. There is hardly any synchronic justification for considering this particular one *primary*, even if all the indications suggest it is *original*, historically speaking.

(c) Clauses, like other grammatical unities, should be classified in terms of inner structure *and* in terms of their function in the larger units of which they are part. This, the macrosyntactic aspect (in my view a key factor in the description of our form) has been under-treated in Polotsky's analysis, which does point out the value of contextual configurations favouring the occurrence of the Second Tense, but nowhere formalizes the context (or rather the COTEXT, i.e. the syntactically and not merely situationally relevant segment of the text) as part of an ultra-clausal pattern, which may not only lead to greater predictability of a Second-Tense " event " but is inevitable and indispensable at some stage of a descending analysis and in the treatment of the question as one of *category exponence* and *signalling*.

2.0.1 MORPHOSYNTAX

2.0.1.1 ON CONVERSION IN GENERAL. I retain here this term of dynamic implication (POLOTSKY 1960a:§10; later understood as exponence of " transpositions "), which I use to mean the mark or signal of a specific definable syntactic standing, not a transformationally conceived *shifting* of status, either within or outside a preconceived set of part-of-speech compartments [10]. I can see no reason for tagging the converters as " syntactic " or " non-syntactic " [11]. The circumstantial and relative converters have internal (micro-)syntactic function, marking a conjugation-form as adjunctal/adnexal modifier, with part

[8] See POLOTSKY 1944:82f. (= *CP* 186f.), 1964:276f., 1976:§§2.1, 2.3-7; FRANDSEN 1975. The affinity of the " emphatic " with the relative forms, so cogently put by Polotsky, is problematic in the case of some allomorphs of the Coptic converter, and for others, out of the question.

[9] POLOTSKY 1944:66f. (= *CP* 170f.), 1960a:§§11, 30. In his forthcoming work, Polotsky comments for the first time on the differences (in prosody and constituency) between the Bipartite and the Second-Tense constructions, yet retains the old affiliation as a kind of sub-pattern of the Bipartite (this is indeed inevitable in the " transpositional " verbal system, where the Second Tense constitutes the substantival term).

[10] POLOTSKY 1976. For the theoretical background of word-class shifting, cf. Vachek, *Dictionnaire de linguistique de l'École de Prague* (1960) 23f. (" conversion "), Dokulil, *TCLP* 3:215-239 (1968), BAUM 1976:34f., 110ff. (" translation ", " transference ").

[11] Cf. the distinctions made by POLOTSKY 1960a:§§10-11 (the Sec. Tense kept apart from all other converters). Although he does not here specify or define how " conversion " is to be understood, his current transposition theory of the converters as exponents of *adverbial* (circumstantial), *adjectival* (relative) and *substantival* (Sec. Tense) transformation of the verb could be referred to. However, this would leave the *preterite* converter a case apart, outside this system.

neutralization: after a non-ⲛ-determinated nucleus, the circumstantial represents the opposition terms, as it does after a verbal nucleus. Elsewhere an opposition obtains: the circumstantial expressing *adnexal*, the relative *attributive* modification [12]. The Second Tense and preterite converters, on the other hand, have a higher-level or macro-syntactic signalling function. The preterite converter [13] marks a transition, " gear shift ", change of tempo (into " slow motion "), perspective (" low relief ", in Weinrich's term) or dimension (into " setting ") in the narrative structure. The Second Tense highlights and delimits a stage — and thus resolves the structure — in the thematic or informational development of the dialogic or expository discourse [14]. Neither are satellites, but prime filaments in the texture of discourse — the " imperfect " in the narrative, eventual — the Second Tense in the thematic non-eventual texture. Both realize a *staging* option (see below) exercised by the speaker/narrator.

2.0.1.1.1 Morphology. The Second Tense converter is an exponent of a category different from and intersecting that of tense [15]. Its incompatibility with Clause Conjugation forms is as much correlatable with their extra-temporal standing as with their non-autonomous syntaxic one (indeed both aspects must be but different faces of the same coin). Its incompatibility with Nominal Sentence patterns (which however do have their own topicalization forms, §2.5) may also be due to the special para-temporal type of predication but may also have historical roots.

The following allomorphs of the converter are found in Shenoute [16]:

(a) (1) ϵ-, prenominally ϵρϵ-, before the Bipartite conjugation forms, in focalization patterns (1) to (6). Note the following: ϵρⲁ- Second Future, sec. person sgl. fem. [17] (*A 1* 50, 445, *A 2* 8, 11, etc.); the Akhmimoid ϵ- prenominally, rare [18] (*Wess. 9* 146c 6ff. ϵⲡⲓⲯⲁⲭϵ ⲭϵ-ⲥⲟⲙⲟⲟⲩⲥⲓⲟⲥ ⲥⲏⲥ ⲧⲱⲛ, *v.l.* ϵρϵ- 129b 30ff.).

(2) ϵ-ⲟⲩⲛ-/ⲙⲛ- [19], patterns (1) and (6): *Ch.* 186.41ff., *A 2* 45, *A 1* 415. Note (α) ϵⲙⲛ- as a "that"-form? *K* 9316 ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣϵⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ϵⲙⲛⲕϵⲛⲟⲩⲧϵ ⲛⲥⲁⲓ̄ⲥ̄; (β) ⲟⲩⲛ-/ⲙⲛ — the existence predication, not the indefinite-actor allo-form for the Bipartite syntagmeme; the Sec. Tense form in this case is without ⲟⲩⲛ-/ⲙⲛ- [20].

(3) ϵ-ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁ-/ⲙⲛⲧⲁ- [19], patts. (1)-(3): *III* 71.23 (cod. C), 85.14, *Cat.* 43.16, *BMCat.* 94 (213 ⲁⲏ), *P* 131[6] 19 ⲙⲅ.

[12] Shisha-Halevy 1972:§2.1.1, 1976c:134 n. 3; see §§7.1.3, 7.3, 7.4 below.

[13] An adequate functional account of preterite conversion — for once without reference to the Greek imperfect — is long overdue. For the mysterious ⲡϵ with this, otherwise converted or basic forms, see §1.2.1.2, gen. obs. 4.

[14] In fact, Weinrich's " *relief* " (1977:91ff., etc.) would, in a somewhat different sense, apply to both roles; this is " subordination " or " inclusion " (*pace* Funk 1981:196) on a higher, macrosyntactic, level of analysis.

[15] The question of whether or not this is a " mood "-type category (Černý-Groll Ch. 26, §10.6: " polemic mood ") is one of terminological taste rather than of essential policy. Our category is tense-intersecting, functionally definable by intra- and inter-clausal relationships as an option of " staging ". (Incidentally, the " mood "-definition would have to apply to the [equally polemic] Cleft Sentence with nominal *vedette*, which however is not treated as a 'mood' by Prof. Groll.)

[16] NB. This inventory gives an overall picture of the distribution of the allomorphs; the actual constituency, drastically curtailed in many patterns, will be added under the relevant headings. Moreover, *circumstantial* (§2.5) and Basic tense themes (§2.6.2) in the distributional picture, should, properly speaking, be included in the morphological muster.

[17] Polotsky 1960a:§59.

[18] Shisha-Halevy 1976b:360f.

[19] Polotsky 1944:49f. (= *CP* 153f.), 1957a:232f. (= *CP* 232f.), 1960a:§§33ff.

[20] Polotsky 1960a:§§21, 35.

(4) ϵ + " adjective-verbs " [21], patts. (1) and (2): ϵNAA(A)= (*Ch.* 135.44f., *Wess. 9* 130b 23f. = 147a 2ff.), ϵNAIAT= (*A 2* 51, *Cl. Pr.* 33 1), ϵNANOY= (*Leid.* 302 = *IV* 96.3).

(5) ϵϢϢϵ, patt. (2): ϵϢϢϵ... NOYHP (*A 2* 464).

(6) ϵOYOI (AN) N-, circumstantial? patt. (6): NAϢ Nϩϵ ϵOYOI AN... (*A 2* 155).

(7) ϵϩNA= (?) [22] *III* 161.30: patt. (2) or (6).

(b) ϵϢAϤ- [23], pattern (2): *IV* 18.2; pattern (1): *A 2* 479 ΠHPΠ ϵϢAϤTPϵNBAA NNϵTWCK ϩNϩϵNHPΠ ... ϵP-ϵAHAKHMϵ.

(c) NT-(AϤ-) fluctuates with ϵNT(AϤ-) (§2.0.1.1.2); patts. (1) to (4) [24].

I have found no evidence in Shenoute for this converter before Tripartite negative bases or N-AN negatived patterns. Indeed, a drastic reductive change seems to have taken place here, compared with the system depicted in the *Études* and " Coptic Conjugation System ": negative conjugation forms are either unmarked as themes or (much more rarely) so marked by the circumstantial (in focus-initial patterns, see §§2.5-6 below) [25].

In the Second Present (converted Bipartite) we find as predicate, beside the durative infinitive, also the *stative* and the *predicative modifier*: (*Ch.* 76.46f.) ϵϤCHϩ ΓAP NTEIϩϵ Ⲭϵ- (*A 2* 114) ϵCϢOOΠ TWN / (*Ch.* 102. 19f.) ϵPϵΠBAA MMAY ϵTBϵNAY / (*P* 130[5] 119 ro) ϵPϵ ϩMΠAϩHT ϩWC MAAY NOYMHHϢϵ NϢHPϵ / (*Ch.* 159.33f.) ϵϤϩNTϵYMHTϵ NOYHP.

2.0.1.1.2 Second-power conversion. Polotsky (1957a:232 = *CP* 232, 1960a:§§11 Obs., 18) points out the compatibility of the circumstantial and Second Perfect converters [26], in a second-power conversion ϵNTAϤ- (analyzable, in IC terms, as ϵ[NT(AϤ-...)] (pattern 2). This has a practical implication in a corpus where ϵN- (rel. perf.) is neatly opposed to N- (Sec. Perf.). This is not the case in our corpus, where ϵN- and N- (and generally ϵ + nasal/syllabic nasal) fluctuate. The situation seems even more hopeless for the circumstantial converter before the ϵ-allomorph of the Sec. Tense (see below for a solitary instance of ϵϵPϵ-). Here, zero is clearly the norm. Nevertheless, in cases where an " asyndetic parataxis " is improbable (that is, outside the narrative perfect [27], or in " list-/catalogic style " [28] and other suitable contextual configurations), absence of coordination or disjunction may imply a (zeroed) circumstantial converter. Some especially striking, recurring or typical instances follow:

[21] Polotsky 1944:51 (= *CP* 155), 1960a:§37.

[22] Cf. Polotsky 1957a:231f. (= *CP* 232).

[23] See Quecke 1979:440, Polotsky 1944:95f. (= *CP* 199f.).

[24] In *Chassinat*, NTAϤ- seems to be the norm (with rare exceptions) for both converters, Sec. Tense and relative, except for line-final N- which is often written ϵN- (e.g. 42.34, 67.53, 84.12, 102.14 *vs.* 55, etc.). Elsewhere in *Ch.* ϵNTAϤ- may be construed as circumstantial + Sec. perfect (e.g. in 150.24ff. NΘϵ MΠAI ϵ(NTAϤΠШ2 NNϵϤOϵITϵ ϵTBϵ-); not however in 158.1ff., where ϵNT- (rel.) and NT- (Sec.) are neatly opposed.

[25] Polotsky 1960a:§18.

[26] See too Funk 1981:184f. (circ. of Sec. Fut. in " Middle Egyptian "). The relative and Second Tense converters appear to be incompatible (cf. Funk, *TU* 119, 1976, p. 58 n. 2, but see Polotsky 1960:405 n. 3 = *CP* 251). Examples which could be taken as *preterite conversion* of the Second Present (cf. in Boh. NϵAϤΘШN *I Cor.* 12:17,19): *A 1* 241 (collated, Borg. 189 PϮH) ϵNϵ·ϵPϵΠNOYTϵ ϵNϵPΓϵI AN MΠAIKAION ϩNNϵTϵNOYϤ Nϵ NOYOϵIϢ NIM, NϵPϵΠϮI NϬONC NAP-ΠKOCMOC NKAKϵ Πϵ (not to be confused with the *interrogative* ϵNϵ before the Sec. Present: *Ch.* 95.25ff., *P* 130[5] 66 or, *BMCat.* 79, 194 f. 4).

[27] E.g. *Ch.* 84-5, 132.28ff., *III* 47.11, *IV* 198.1ff.; see Layton 1979:184ff., and compare Havers " *veni-vidi-vici*-style " (1931:153).

[28] E.g. *Ch.* 32.36ff., 57.40ff., 66 *passim*, *III* 191.21f., *IV* 22.5ff. etc.; cf. the so-called " rhetorical asyndeton " and Havers' " enumerative Redeweise " (1931:114, 154).

(1) ϵ/Ø-ϵϥ- [29]: the unique ϵϵρϵ-: (*IV* 107.5f.) ⲁϩⲣⲟϥ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ, ϵϵⲣⲉⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟ ⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ " What has a man to do with a woman, while in what capacity is a woman to be with a man among us? "; *circ.* + *negatived Sec. Present*: (*IV* 38.22ff.) ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲥⲃⲧⲱⲧ ⲛⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ, ⲉⲛⲉⲥⲥⲃⲧⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲉϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ... " ... it being for the women that it is not ready... ".

(2) the recurring and formulaic ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ- " by which I mean to say... ", a Shenoutean expression, marking and introducing the " hermeneia " after an allegory: (*Ch.* 102.19ff.) ⲕⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲣ-ϩⲁⲡ / (*P* 130[4] 103 ⲣⲕⲃ) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡϭⲉⲣⲱⲃ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲛϭⲓϫ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲥⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛⲩ ⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ... ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲛⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲛϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲧⲛⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲛⲭⲓ ⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ. Also *P* 131[4] 155 ⲁⲏ, 156 ⲗⲑ, 130[2] ⲣⲟⲏ, 70 ⲣⲡⲇ, 74 ⲣⲧⲃ, *K* 9316, etc., etc.

(3) ϵ/Ø ⲛⲧⲁ-: (*Ch.* 146.52ff.) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉϫⲥ ⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲓⲏⲛ̄ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ- ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ / (*Ming.* 318) ⲧⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲡⲛ- (say, know or sim.) ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲥⲥⲩⲛϩⲓⲥⲧⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲓⲟⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ / (*A 2* 312) ⲁⲩ ⲛⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϯⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲱⲣⲭ ⲛⲧⲉⲛϩⲉ (see §2.5.1.2) / (*P* 131[4] 87 ⲣⲁⲃ) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛ̄ⲧⲁⲩⲭⲓⲧϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲧⲁⲕⲟϥ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲅⲣⲓⲟⲥ ... ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁϯ-ⲥⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ — a clear instance, with the circumstantial focalization-pattern preceding a main-clause interrogative one. Note that the syllabicity of the ⲛ in ⲛⲧⲁ- is maintained after the converter. / (*Ch.* 41.42ff.) ⲛⲁⲡⲉⲭⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲁⲡⲟⲗⲁⲩⲥⲓⲥ / (*III* 95.20ff.) ⲡⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲣ-ϩⲛⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲛⲕⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲣϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ " the true rich one, who became poor for our sake, being the Lord of all things, it being for man's sake that he became a slave... "; *III* 71.18f. quoted below in §2.1.7.2.

(4) Two special cases where the postulation of the zero-variant of the circ. converter is called for by the syntactic structure: adnexal complementation to ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ/ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡ-, ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ [30], or in the ⲡⲁⲓ ϵ- appositive relative clause with a focalized modifier (ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧ- for unfocal predication) [31]: (*Ch.* 64-5) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲛⲯⲟⲣⲡ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲡⲁⲣⲁⲇⲉⲓⲥⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁϥ+-ϫⲣⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϭⲓⲡϫⲁϫⲉ ϩⲛϩⲉⲛⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ ⲛⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲁϫⲛϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲱⲯ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ " ... while it is crying out voicelessly that the Enemy made them stumble by iniquitous counsels " / (*Ch.* 194.24ff.) ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲡⲁⲧⲣⲓⲁⲣⲭⲏⲥ ⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲓ ⲛⲛⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲉϥ-ⲙⲛⲧⲙⲁⲓⲯⲙⲙⲟ " ... it being because of his love of strangers that he received these great blessings " / (*III* 142.16ff.) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲱⲯ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ " ... it being at the time when they (the Fathers) were still with them that they disdained them " / (*III* 31.22f.) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩⲧⲁⲗⲟ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ " Those whose healing is *from God alone* " / (*III* 224.21f.) ⲛⲉⲓⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲛⲃⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲁⲛⲁⲓ. Also *III* 206.10ff., *Ch.* 84.29ff., 130 37ff. One must bear in mind that our hesitation in several of the exx. above between the 'circumstantial + adjunct' and 'circumstantial + (Sec. Tense + modifier nexus)' stems from the inability to predict with any confidence the occurrence of a Sec.-Tense construction — to place the boundary-line between the formal *mise en relief* and the *construction plane*. This selection may however be taken as fairly representative of those cotextual constellations where a regular Sec.-Tense " event " might be expected.

Incidentally, no certain example of the Sec. Tense of ⲛϵ- is attested in Shenoute (Polotsky 1960a: §18[f.]); a possible instance is *III* 203.15f. (" Had you kept all your good deeds,) ϯⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲙⲛϩⲁϩ...

[29] A probable case is *Ch.*89.12ff. ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲡⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲉϥⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ (of the same type — circ. + neg. nexus — are *IV* 64.1ff., 65.11ff.). This interpretation is not however the only one possible: the negation may well be of an *adjunct to a circumstantial verb*, not of the nexus between a Second Tense and a modifier. The absence of any punctuation between ⲉϥⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ and ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ in the *Ch.* example may be of significance.

[30] Shisha-Halevy 1972:§2.1.1.2; see our §1.2.1.2.

[31] *ibid.* §2.1.3.2.2.

2.0.1.2 ON A QUESTION OF IDENTITY AND HOMONYMY: SEC. TENSE VS. CIRCUMSTANTIAL, SEC. TENSE VS. RELATIVE. On a strictly Sahidic-internal and synchronic basis [32], there is, on the one hand, no a priori distributional reason to reject the morphological identity of Second Perf. (ϵ)NTA- with the rel. perfect or of Second Aorist ϵϣA- with the relative *or* circumstantial aorist, or of Second Tense ϵ- in all other cases, with the circumstantial converter [33], all featuring here in a set of patterns with remarkable functional affinity (and to this extent too belonging together). On the other hand, if we apply a strict structural-analytic definition of identity, every single pattern occurrence of the morph, i.e. its syntagmatic/paradigmatic localization, must be considered its " name ", leaving us with a fragmentation of at least *five* possible entities, some homonymous [34]. Let us take a closer look at the distributional structure of ϵ- and (ϵ)NT- (again as if we are innocent of all historic and extra-Sahidic knowledge, and not taking (ϵ)NT-, ϵTϵ- matter-of-factly as allomorphs of ϵ-). We must bear in mind that this structure is (a) somewhat distorted, since it is incomplete without the suprasegmental distinctive feature of each pattern, and (b) arbitrary to a degree, since the definition of the critical extent is variable (§§0.2.1.2, 0.2.5.1). Moreover, not all environments considered are commensurate.

	ϵ-	ϵA-	ϵMϵ-	ϵϣA-	(ϵ)NT-
adnominal (*adnexal:attributive*)	+	+	+	+	+
adverbal	+	+	+	(—) [35]	—
initial, non-thematic	+	+	—	—	—
initial, thematic (patts. 2-3)	+	—	(?)	+	+
final, non-thematic	+	+	+	+	+
final, thematic (patts. 4-6)	+	+	(?)	+	+
autofocal (patt. 1)	+	—	(?)	+	+
final, focal	+	+	—	—	—
initial, focal	+	+	—	—	—

One notes the maximal distribution of ϵ- [36], and the similar distribution of (ϵ)NTA- and ϵϣA-, ϵMϵ- (for the latter, the evidence is inconclusive), but most instructive are the patterns in which all are opposed as one paradigm, namely, (4) to (6); we cannot therefore interrelate them as allomorphs of the same archimorpheme. Moreover, the circumstantial and Second Tense converters are compatible (§2.0.1.1.2) and

[32] Diachronic information, at least from pre-Demotic Egyptian, points to the identity of the " emphatic " forms and relative forms (POLOTSKY 1976: esp. §§2.1, 2.3), with the absence of gender-number concord — i.e. a tagmemic feature — the sole distinctive feature of the former: *mrr.f* and *sḏm.n.(tw).f*, *j.jr.f sḏm* are relative forms, with further bifurcation purely functional, i.e. their formal *Merkmal* as " emphatic " or " relative " is their very construction, not a mere *correlation with* this construction. The inference from dialects in which the two are distinct (e.g. FUNK 1981:194, from " Middle Egyptian ") is, I believe, unwarranted: the merger in Sahidic, a diachronic event, has synchronic systemic consequences: it is these we must report on.

[33] So already EDGERTON (1935:261ff.): " (separating the forms) seems to lack empirical reality ".

[34] Consider exx. of the type (*A 2* 463-4) ϩШВ NIM NTAϤAAY, NTAϤAAY THPOY ETBEПENOYXAI, neatly showing the pattern way to defining identity.

[35] No certain examples of adverbal circumstantial for ϣAϤ- are known to me (candidates are *Wess. 9* 91b 1, 140a 12, 145b 20). For ϵMϵϤ- we do have some unambiguous exx. (*III* 94.20, *IV* 38.4f., *Mun.* 107). The circ. present appears to supply the circumstantial for the affirmative aorist (consider *Ch.* 130.46f., *III* 94.19, *IV* 15.24 etc.). (A possible " Middle Egyptian " example is *Mt.* 11:19: ϩAϤI NϬHПϣHPϵ MПPOMϵ ϵϣAϤOYOM ϵϣAϤCШ).

[36] Historically speaking this is hardly surprising, as this is a merger of the functional ranges of both *jw-* and *j.jr-*.

thus prove their categorial disparity (unlike the relative and Second Tense converters). The negation test — ⲛ(ⲉϥ-) ⲁⲛ for the Sec. Tense, ⲉ(ⲛϥ- ⲁⲛ) for the circumstantial — used by Polotsky (1960:§28 Obs.) to establish their distinctness, does not seem to me conclusive, since it might be argued that it is this arrangement (or, from a different angle, juncture) *differentia specifica* which characterizes the ⲉϥ-form as a thematic pre-focal component of a nexus — N.B.: no ⲛⲉϥ- ⲁⲛ in patts. (1), (3), (4)-(6); thematic ⲉⲛϥ- ⲁⲛ in (5) —, *vs.* non-thematic (rhematic or a nexus in itself, adnexal); the negation arrangement here assumes the functional burden. To sum up my view on this subject [37]: On the analytic plane, I accept the homonymy of the Sec. Tense and circumstantial, Sec. Tense and relative, perhaps even with a greater fragmentation: ⲉ-, ⲛⲧ- are signals of different purport in different environments. On a more synthetic plane of description, I would prefer to regard the circumstantial as a component in a pattern set, the Sec. Tense a component in another, due consideration being given to their paradigmatic and syntagmatic encounters. This policy is adopted in the present discussion.

An altogether different matter is the *practical* question of distinguishing the circ./relative from the Second-Tense converters. Since we are not here concerned with " forms " but with patterns, this is rarely of consequence. Consider, for instance, the final-consecutive ⲭⲉ-/ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ ⲉϥⲛⲁ-. Is the converter circumstantial or Second Tense? Did the question have any meaning for the Coptic decoder of this syntagm?

2.0.2 The theoretical background. Even a superficial attempt at an IC and functional analysis of Second Tense constructions brings home two points: (a) The components are not of necessity reflected in the clause structure, but must be referred both to information in the preceding stretches of the text (" cotext ") and to this cotext as *syntactically* relevant to and in cohesion with the Second-Tense construction. The resolvable units, "predication", "subject", "predicate", "predicative component" etc., constitute a whole structure which, quite apart from (and beyond) the pattern-specific syntactic realization and articulations, is meaningful in an ultra-clausal "logical" or rather *informational* system of reference [38]. (b) We realize there are, even in this sense of structure, predicates and predicates, subjects and subjects; we feel the difference between a " non-emphatic " or paradigmatically unmarked subject/predicate and an "emphatic" one (to use provisionally one of a host of semi-opaque and cryptic synonyms for " strengthening "). This is a real opposition with formal correlates, a paradigm of grades or types of predication, of *thematicity* and of *focality* — see below.

2.0.2.0.1 Theoretical-terminological systems: topic - comment - focus / given - new; co-text-sensitive grammar. Without pretending to span within these limits the considerable questions involved, I shall give below a brief review of some important theoretical systems. (a) A preliminary step, very important for our purpose, is to recognize the *optional, subjective* nature of the informational

[37] On the theory of this difficult issue, see Harris 1951, esp. §§13.31, 13.41, 15.2-3; Householder 1971:196ff., 220f. (on the limitations of the complementary-distribution test).

[38] Polotsky 1944 (e.g. 30f. = *CP* 134f., 57ff. = *CP* 161ff.), 1962:414ff. (= *CP* 419ff.). Polotsky was the first to replace (for Coptic) " grammatical subject " by *actor* (1960a:§3) and thus restore " subject " — and " predicate " — to their original " logical " frame of reference, brilliantly demonstrating the analytic advantage of this essential reinstatement: in Coptic, " grammatical predicate " — a contradiction in terms — has no analytic meaning. An early statement (the earliest in modern linguistics?) on the distinction of logical and grammatical structures, may be found in Becker 1836:15ff., and later 1841:579ff. (In what is in fact the early edition of [1836], namely the *Deutsche Grammatik* of 1829, the " grammatical predicate " still reigns supreme. See Haselbach 1966:198ff., 209f.) Next we find the " psychological " subject/predicate in von der Gabelentz 1869:378; Weil 1879 (see pp. 14f., 20f.); Tobler 1886:5ff., 88ff., and on in the typologistic-psychologistic trend of 19th-century " *Sprachwissenschaft* ", parallel and antagonistic to the Neogrammarian mainstream. (The fact that the " psychological " terms are preeminent in Paul 1920 shows how over-simplifying it is to regard him as the " spokesman of ths Neogrammarians " in all respects.)

organization of the discourse [39], like numerous other phenomena of grammar (some cases of word-order regulation, selection of " particles " and other inter-clausal relators, some tenses, etc.). This is not the grammaticality of dependence and conditioning. This realization is vital, lest we look in vain for a single simple " responsible factor " for the occurrence of a Second Tense, and lest we lose sight of our main task, which is to clarify the *signifié* of the Second-Tense *signifiant* or mark; it is not to attempt to account for its presence. (b) Within clause boundaries, we have a ' *theme* + *rheme* ' structure. THEME — in HALLIDAY's definition (1967:212) [40] a " point of departure [41], what is being talked about, what I am talking about now "; RHEME — " what is being said about the theme ". This is the *thematic* structure, grammatical in the sense that it is " purely syntactic " (*ibid.* 199f., 211f.), i.e. on clause level, intra-clausal. (c) Halliday rightly stresses the presence of another independent yet related structure: the *informational* one, in the *information block* or *unit*, which may, or may not, coincide with clause extent. The weak point — " bridge ", overlap or liaison factor between the two structures where it is all too easy to slip from one to another and confuse them, is the identity or disparity of the " given " (" what you were/I was talking about ", in Halliday's definition) with the theme. They *can* be identical, but this is not always the case. " Givenness " is a cotextual factor [42]: the " given " segment — the (co)text-bound one [43] — I would here name TOPIC. It is the cotextual component or representative in the clause, ideally coinciding with the theme but often distinct from it, with the theme in cohesion with it in one way or another — always in a different structure and to a different extent (the subtextual segment of the information unit, which may even include the paragraph and larger textual subdivisions). Halliday's " theme proper " (1967:200) is my " theme " and " topic " combined. The theme is Janus-faced, with relations of one grammatical kind inside its clause, and of a different kind backwards with its cotext. The Second Tense can be treated properly only in terms of reference of a cotext-sensitive grammar, since it involves the speaker's option of " staging " the information. It is a cotext-form *par excellence*, in evaluating which the degree of cotext boundness is crucial; it must be examined both in terms of ' theme - rheme ' and ' topic - focus ' structures. (d) In parallel with the rheme, predicated (" installed ") on the theme inside the clause, the topic — in

[39] HALLIDAY 1967:220: " [The concept of theme] is based on the notion of choice — it represents an option on the part of the speaker "; GRIMES 1975:323ff.: " ...choice of one of a number of possible ways of ' staging ' the information ".

[40] Also 1967:464. I generally adopt and apply here Halliday's main ideas and terminology. For a good summary of his own scheme, see HALLIDAY 1967:241ff., 1972:162ff.; also JONES 1977:81ff. However, I use the term " topic " and extend the application of " information unit " up to and beyond the paragraph.

[41] This linear-axis conception of the theme can be traced from WEIL's " point du départ, notion initiale " (1879:20f.), corresponding to VON DER GABELENTZ's " psychological subject " (1869:378: " das, woran, worüber ich den Angeredeten denken lassen will " — while the psych. predicate is " das, was er sich darüber denken soll ", that is, the predicate in a subject-dependent definition; see too *idem* 1901:365ff., 369f.). Similarly, BLÜMEL's *A(usgangspunkt)* → *Z(iel)* (1914); BALLY's (1950: e.g. §32) and GOSSEN (1951) *thème* → *propos*, MÜLLER-HAUSER (1943) *thème* → *énoncé* Theme → rheme is used by AMMANN (1920), and, following him, LÖPFE 1940), yet he occasionally mixes or approximates the logical and grammatical structures, e.g. on p. 22, talking of word-order — " vom Thema zur Aussage, vom Handelnden zur Handlung "; see HASELBACH 1966:211 — a *rapprochement* of unfortunate and far-reaching consequences, traceable to the belief in " the natural ' vocation ' [of certain word-classes] to symbolize subject and predicate " (SANDMANN 1954:101). Compare here the equally formalistic classical ῥῆμα (ROBINS 1966:7ff.: Aristotle's ῥῆμα, " set of words functioning in their capacity as the second component of a two-part sentence "; for the Stoic definition see SCHMIDT 1839:61). In the Prague School we find an evolution: from Mathesius' two-faced definition of the theme, covering both our " theme " and " topic " — " that which is known or at least obvious in the given context, and from which the speaker proceeds " (*apud* FIRBAS 1964) to DANEŠ and FIRBAS' improved version, separating utterance-level (theme → rheme) from text-level (given → new): DANEŠ 1974, JONES 1977:60ff.

[42] The " original sin " of many a terminological stumble in this context is carelessness in distinguishing between " known " (" assumed as known "), " accepted ", " given ", anaphora nucleus and " basis of the *énoncé* ". See CHAFE 1976, ALLERTON 1978.

[43] SGALL 1974:28: " [Elements the speaker reminds of as elements] known from the context, from the situation or from general conditions of the given utterance "; this is too comprehensive, and again mixes clause- and cotext-levels.

its information unit — prepares us for the FOCUS, the hub and kernel of this structure. (HALLIDAY 1967: 200ff., 207, defines it in prosodic terms which are not much help for Coptic, although they do not conflict with what we know of the tonicity of focal segments.) The focus is *new* in relation to the topic — a matter of relative, not absolute value [44]; it is usually coincident with the rheme. The focus is the message nucleus.

The Second-Tense form may, in correlation with and as a component of certain cotextual patternings (§2.0.2.4), be the *theme* (often ≠ topic) [45], focalizing its rheme (patts. 2-3). It may be self-focalizing, with topic and focus, theme and rheme, all in one (pattern 1). It may be a *topic* (= theme), following its focus (rheme) (patts. 4-6).

2.0.2.1 TOPICALIZATION, THEMATIZATION: MEANS AND PARADIGM [46]. In the first place, one notes measures applied to the *nominal* theme: its "isolation" by various means, especially its extrapositive detachment from the main structure — so-called *segmentation* [47], with or without additional marking [48], with or without resumption. The *verbal* thematic component may be nominalized and treated as a nominal theme; it may be de-finitized, with its lexemic and grammatical constituents separated [49]. However, the theme may also be unmarked in any way except by its slot in the clause (compare the actor noun/pronoun in the Coptic conjugation form [50]). It may then receive an additional, "over-" characterization, usually by prosodic and/or placement-shift (such as segmentation) highlighting, thus realizing what amounts to a *distinct member in a binary paradigm of thematicity*, the PROMINENT THEME [51], which ought to be explicity related to the unmarked member and not impressionistically subsumed under "emphasis" or "*Hervorhebung*".

2.0.2.2.1 FOCALIZATION AND FOCALITY: MEANS, PARADIGM, VALUES. Focalization — the marking as focus [52] — and thematization are two faces of the same coin, since theme or topic-marking constructions achieve by the same token the effect of focus-marking. Still, there are patterns in which only the focus is marked (e.g. prosodically or by a particle) and others where both focus and theme/topic are marked (notably the Cleft Sentence, §2.0.2.2.4). Here too we must distinguish between a focus indicated by virtue of basic syntactic properties — an unmarked member in the focality paradigm (**ⲙⲙⲁⲩ** in **ⲩⲙⲙⲁⲩ**),

[44] Consider the distinction between "structurally new", i.e. "anaphorically new" (also "inherently new" in the case of closed systems, such as prepositional sets) and non-anaphoric, situational "newness" (HALLIDAY 1967:204ff.). See too DANEŠ 1974:109ff. This corresponds to the "*Hauptbegriff*" (not subject-dependent) definition of logical predicate (from BECKER 1836: 18ff. onwards).

[45] See §2.7.2 for specific # *topic* → (theme + rheme/focus)# schemes.

[46] For some general (also typological) material, see HALLIDAY 1967:211f.; JONES 1977:91ff., 174ff.; DAHL 1974:18; GRIMES 1975:343f.

[47] MÜLLER-HAUSER 1943:152ff., GOSSEN 1951:164ff., following BALLY (1950:§§79-99).

[48] Such as pre-Demotic *jr-* (cf. MÜLLER-HAUSER 1943:226ff.). On the affinity of topicalization and protasis cf. JUNGE 1978: 66ff.

[49] Cf. EBELING 1905:113-128 ("Dispiacere non mi dispiacete"); GOLDENBERG 1971; also the use of English "do" outside the interrogative/negative allomorphic role ("do go", "he did say so" — functionally very close to our pattern (1), '**ⲉⲕⲁⲟⲃⲉ**'). In the case of the Greek "Second Tenses" (ROSÉN 1957, esp. pp. 135f., 150f.), the whole εἰμί + *participle* syntagm is, in its external relationships, thematic; internally, however, it constitutes a nexus.

[50] Cf. "procédés de position", MÜLLER-HAUSER 1943:92ff.

[51] HALLIDAY 1967:213f., 216; DAHL 1974:18 ("emphatic topic"); JONES 1977:169ff. (see also 3ff., 6ff.). Compare REGULA's "mise en relief thématique" (1966). In a somewhat different, currently used sense of "prominent", Coptic is a *topic-prominent* language, a language that marks its topics rather than its "subjects" or directly marking the focus. CALLENDER's "focusing" (1970:186ff.) seems to include the prominent topic.

[52] Not to be confused with focus or rheme *isolation* (e.g. by the "question test"). See JONES 1977:68f., 76f., 87f. The two issues are of course related, since it is with the marking of a focus (or the focalization value of a mark) that we are concerned.

and one in the framework of a marked topicalization " truss " or a special focalization pattern (єчммау), the marked member [53]. The Second-Tense converter is either a prominent-thematization (often also topicalization) signal *or* (pattern 1) a mark of self-focality. The pattern-initial focus (§§2.4-6) appears to be yet another member of this paradigm, half-way between the unmarked and high-focality extremes.

2.0.2.2.2 Although focality is an *absolute* grammatical category, it has relative functional values, resolved by the macrosyntactic structure: (a) *Polemicity* determined and varied by the cotext (it is, for instance, different in text-initial position, different in the response-substructure of dialogue, yet again in reference to a contrast); (b) a high " Communicative Dynamism " level (see definition of *CD* in §2.0.2.3), i.e. a high degree of contribution to the development of the informational progression (high " acceleration "); (c) the " emphasis " value. This is an elusive, vague notion, evading grammatical frames of reference, subjectively envisaged on a variety of levels, from synonymity with " focality " to being celegated to extra-grammatical territories [54]. I adopt a broad definition, close to Weinrich's " *Relief* ": any divergence or variance from the textual environment level, with appropriate sub-categorization. We may, for instance, have an emphasis of contrast [55], of specification (vs. characterization) [56], distinctive or isolating emphasis (cf. POLOTSKY 1944:33f. = *CP* 137f.).

2.0.2.2.3 Focality may be (language-specifically) non-pertinent — conditioned or inherent (in these cases, not subject to cotextual macrosyntactic analysis, and not in opposition to a non-focal occurrence outside the scheme of values referred to above). This is the important case of the *interrogative* modifiers and pronouns, cogently applied by POLOTSKY in his study of the Second Tense [57]. This is of consequence, not only for the informational patterning of these cases, but also for the very placement of the foci (see §2.8.1 below).

2,0.2.2.4 THE CLEFT SENTENCE AND THE SECOND TENSE. Probably the most familiar set of focalization patterns, well known in a certain European *Sprachbund* and (thanks to Polotsky) in Egyptian-Coptic, is the so-called CLEFT SENTENCE (" *phrase coupée* ") [58]. In general terms, these are patterns

[53] See HALLIDAY's definition (1967:207f.: " The unmarked focus does not imply any preceding information ").

[54] Cf. THESLEFF 1955:12ff. (semantic-psychologistic, with sub-categorization into " emphasis ", " intensification ", " amplification ", " strengthening "); WEIL 1879:9 (types: rhetorical, logical, affective, grammatical; an instance of " rhetorical emphasis ", and a logical freak, is the case of *two simultaneous foci* in a single information unit: see §2.7.1.3.1. below, and cf. LÖPFE 1940:24); MOORHOUSE 1959:73ff.; HALLIDAY 1967:203f., 207; DRESSLER 1968:77ff.

[55] Cf. CHAFE 1976:33ff., and (for the stylistic aspect) FEHLING 1969:36-47, 271-9, 295-307.

[56] Cf. the attempt at structuring emphasis in LÖPFE 1940:27f.

[57] 1944:29ff. (= *CP* 133ff.), 87 (= *CP* 191); CALLENDER 1971 (esp. p. 21. Callender discusses the relations between topicalization, Cleft-Sentence focalization and the inherently focal interrogatives, in a generative framework). We still need an investigation of *non-interrogative* modifiers of inherent focality (like мотс -, §1.3.11.6, or ϧⲁⲗⲱⲥ -, §1.3.11.1.3; cf. §2.5.0.1). See PAUL 1920:§200; KARCEVSKI 1936:109. Strikingly comparable are the Irish " adverbs " which occur usually or exclusively in Cleft Sentence patterns: *amhlaidh* " thus ", *minic* " often ", *ar éigean* " hardly ", Welsh *braidd* (*y*-), cf. our мотс in foc. patt. (4).

[58] For Cleft Sentence analysis and terminology, see POLOTSKY 1937:2f. (= *CP* 100f.), 1944:57ff. (= *CP* 161ff.), 1962a:413 n. 1 (= *CP* 418), 1976:§2.5; CALLENDER 1970:Ch. IV, 1971. For the French construction, see DAMOURETTE-PICHON §§1554-66 (coining " *vedette* " and " *glose* " for the focus and theme-topic); MÜLLER-HAUSER 1943:205-215. For some early discussion, see BECKER 1841:542, 600; TOBLER 1886:121, 196 n. 2 f. For English, see JESPERSEN 1937:83-9, 1954:147ff. For Latin, LÖFSTEDT 1966. For some general or typologic-comparative studies, see BECKMAN 1934:29ff.; DRESSLER 1973:54, 57ff.; GRIMES 1975:341f.; COYAUD 1979:119. The Celtic Cleft Sentence constructions are most interesting. To the best of my knowledge, they have not yet been structurally studied. See H. Lewis, *Celtica* 3:295f. (1956), for the so-called " mixed sentence " in Welsh; H. Wagner, *Das Verbum in den Sprachen der britischen Inseln* (Tübingen 1959) 81f., 173f.; H. Lewis' famous " The Sentence in Welsh " (*Proc. Brit. Academy* 1942); MACCANA 1973; most of Pokorny's rather superficial *substratum* articles, and many dialect-specific sketches (e.g. by Fink, Bergström, O'Nolan, Strachan, Dottin).

focalizing a (pro)noun or modifier by means of a nominalizing (less frequently, " adverbializing ", see §2.5) thematization of the verb. The focus and its theme are in a nexal relationship, realized in Indo-European by the verb " be " as copula, with an additional arrangement (word-order) focalization procedure, *viz.* preposing the focus to the theme, with (in most cases) the entailed syntactic feature of a formal cataphoric pronominal subject, to which the theme is appositive: " *It is... who/which/that...* ", " *C'est... qui/que...* ". Polotsky's identification of the Egyptian and Coptic Second-Tense verb form with the *glose* (Cleft Sentence theme) presents the following difficulties: (a) Formally the comparability is imperfect, since there is no " clefting " [59] in Egyptian and Coptic — the order of the terms which Polotsky has in mind is *theme → rheme* or *topic → focus*, and (b) the nominalness of the theme is not incontestably established. I suggest that it would be preferable to regard the Second Tense as a form which plays a role in several patterns, some of which — our patts. (4-6) — are formally closer to the particular Indo-European Cleft Sentence than others. The Second-Tense converter, an exponent of thematicity or focality — in short, a signal of specific *Functional Sentence Perspective / Communicative Dynamism* (§2.0.2.3) properties — should not, I believe, be confined in a descriptive Procrustean bed. Like other focalization patterns, the Cleft Sentence is still in need of more precise statements of value. It is (for instance) cataphoric, i.e. non-polemic, " presentative ", in certain textual slots (e.g. in text-initial position, at the opening to a parable or " *paradeigma* ", in the answer to a question, and in a description) [60]. Needless to say, subsuming all these as allo-patterns under one heading *a priori* is largely unwarranted, since we lack those suprasegmental features which would distinguish them formally. Also, the paradigmatic standing of the Cleft Sentence, i.e. its relation to unmarked-focality members of its paradigm, varies considerably from one language to another. (On a selective [impresssionistic] scale ranging from advanced devaluation [Welsh], through ever higher pertinacy roles in Irish, French, British literary English, to full focality status in other Germanic languages, I would grade Coptic somewhere between Irish and French, rather in the proximity of the latter.)

2.0.2.3 THE ORGANIZATION OF INFORMATION. This organization, static and dynamic, is what one has to look out for when attempting to formalize the relations of the thematic/topical component with its environment. We must apply some gradient notion like COMMUNICATIVE DYNAMISM (" CD "), in FIRBAS' definition [61]: " The extent to which the element contributes towards the development of the communication ", higher cotextual interdependence meaning a lower grading of CD; always considering, however, that there is always some noticeable development and some factor of cotextual boundness (absolute idling [*Leerlauf*] is as much a myth as is absolute cotextual independence), and that constructing a scale of CD is difficult because of the continuous spectrum-like nature of such a scale, with countless subjectively postulated intergradations between the extremes of very low and very high grading. The arbitrariness and subjective quality of the following schematization are therefore to be expected. The following points must be borne in mind: (a) Attention must focus on the skeleton — the extremes and major intermediate points of reference — in this gradation, rather than the minor ones, which are not always formally correlatable. (Note that CD is essentially a *junctural* — cohesional — concept, hence by nature a continuum; see §6.0.2.) (b) We cannot *predict* the degree or contour of CD. This is decided, i.e. made clear, only after the pattern in question, with all its constituent signals, is completed. (c) Often one must distinguish between the CD-grading of the Second-Tense *form* and that of its *construction*, in which case we have rather a CD-*contour* in the given extent. (d) The CD gradation cuts across other formal typo-

[59] In transformational jargon, " clefting " is synonymous with " focalization ".
[60] Cf. ROTHENBERG 1971, MACCANA 1973 (esp. 104ff.); see SHISHA-HALEVY 1975:477.
[61] *Apud* DANEŠ 1974:19; see FIRBAS 1964, BENEŠ 1968, JONES 1977:64ff.

logies of the focus (interrogative/non-interrogative, word-class, rhetorical/non-rhetorical). (e) The two scales below, I and II, must be superimposed symmetrically onto each other. The higher and lower CD in these scales (like topicalization and focalization) are but the two faces of one and the same coin (we are after all concerned here with *links*, i.e. formal indications of cohesion, various grammatical and semantic anaphoric signals referring back to *prius dicta* or *prius nota*, and with *delimitations*, i.e. indications of the absence or negation of a link; see §6.0.2). (f) Note the high incidence of grades 3-4 on both scales·

Scale I:	(Lower CD) ——————→ (Higher CD)
grade Ø	ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲡⲣⲁⲝⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (*A 1* 163).
grade 1-2 (a)	ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲓⲟⲩ ⲛⲩⲏⲧⲥ (i.e. in the night; not even the nexus is new) (*A 2* 248).
grade 1-2 (b)	ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲩⲟⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲉⲓⲩⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ (*III* 26.8ff.; only the nexus is new; all terms are anaphoric).
grade 2	ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ (*Ch.* 88.2f.; ⲡⲁⲓ focal).
grade 3	ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲭⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲓⲥⲟⲟⲩⲏ ⲭⲉ- (*A 2* 73).
grade 3-4 (a)	ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲧⲱⲛ (*III* 87.12f., context implied).
grade 3-4 (b)	ⲩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲩⲁⲩ ⲣ-ⲱⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ, ⲙⲏ ⲩⲓⲧⲛ- ⲁⲛ (*A 1* 89, *prius notum* rhetorically assumed).
grade 3-4 (c)	ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲱⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (*A 2* 238-9), ⲉⲩⲭⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ (*IV* 51.17).
grade 4-5	ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲩⲓⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲉⲩ ⲭⲉ- (*A 2* 463).

Scale II:	(Lower CD) ←—————— Higher CD)
grade Ø	"ⲉⲩⲥⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ" (*Ch.* 81.7; *lemmatic* role).
grade 1	"ⲉⲛⲱⲱⲛⲉ" (*A 1* 56), "ⲉⲓⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ" (*III* 123.1f.): §2.1.4. ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲉⲓ (*IV* 61.29, jussive), ⲉⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ (*IV* 80.2) — all patt. (1).
grade 1-2	ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 105.17f.).
grade 2	ⲉⲓⲟ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ, ⲉⲓⲟ ⲛⲥⲏⲅⲉⲙⲱⲛ (*A 1* 43), ⲉⲓⲟ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ (*A 1* 104).
grade 2-3 (a)	ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲭⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ, ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲁⲧⲛⲁ (*III* 76.19f.).
grade 2-3 (b)	ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲩ ⲁⲛ... ⲭⲉ-..., ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲩ... ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛ (*Cl. Pr.* 33, 1; the whole configuration has high CD, inequally divided between the constituents).
grade 3-4	ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲙⲛⲧ-ⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ (*Ming.* 288), ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲕⲟ ⲛⲕⲣⲟⲩ (*A 2* 146).
grade 3	ⲉⲣⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*A 2* 53), ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ... ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲟⲩⲁⲍⲧ ⲛⲥⲁ-, ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛ†ⲛⲁⲟⲩⲁⲍⲧ ⲁⲛ. ⲛⲥⲁ- (*Ch.* 72.1ff.).
grade 4-5	ⲩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲍⲁⲍ ⲣ-ⲱⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ, ⲙⲏ ⲩⲓⲧⲛⲛⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ (*A 1* 89).
grade 5	ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲩ (*Ch.* 102.19ff.; all terms and nexal relationship - *prius nota*)

2.0.2.4 The syntagmatics of nexus: a note (see §2.8). In considering the # theme + rheme # limited unit we set out (as did Polotsky) from a pattern arranged 'theme → rheme'. The association of the theme with the initial position is often pointed out and considered a basic or normal placement [62],

[62] Cf. Becker 1841:§122 (586ff.; see Haselbach 1966:210); von der Gabelentz 1869:379f.; Weil 1879:20f.; Halliday in Daneš (ed.) 1974:52.

this order reflecting the logical " *marche des idées* " [63], as well as the macrosyntactic " thematic progression " [64], the progression from *given* to *new* [65], low to high CD, the rhetorical φυσικὴ τάξις. (Indeed, thematic/rhematic role is a matter of position rather than of pattern slot.) However, this ideal arrangement is in opposition [66] to certain *focus-initial* patterns which, while mostly understated [67] in pan-Coptic or diachronic exposition, are nevertheless fully constitutional, even decisive features of the synchronic picture: they realize yet another type, constitute yet another member in the paradigm of focality.

Although *nucleus - satellite* dependence analysis does not necessarily suit or match the *theme - rheme* analysis (Barri 1978), the latter can be mapped onto the former, the two being compatible (witness the adnexal modification of the circumstantial and conjunctive; see §7.1.3).

2.0.2.5 The second tense: an integrated view of information structuring and function. With the reminder that any syntaxization we may carry out must be incomplete without suprasegmental data, we arrive at the following correlational picture (note in particular the characteristics of pattern (1), accounting for its being our point of departure in the present description, at variance with Polotsky's):

(a)

pattern	*function*	*Sec.-Tense/circumstantial*	*clause*
(1)	autofocal	theme + rheme, ≠ topic; formal topic, focalization signal	= information unit
(2)-(3)	heterofocal	topic-constituent or topic-resumptive; theme: given information	less than information unit
(4)-(6)	heterofocal	theme = topic: given information	less than information unit

(b)

pattern	*nexus structure* [68]	*inform. structure contour*	*inform. unit*
(1)	irrelevant	no information resumption	Sec. Tense form
(2)-(3)	Sec. Tense → focus	direct inform. resumption [69]	Sec. Tense + focus
(4)-(6)	focus → Sec. Tense	indirect inform. resumption	Sec. Tense + focus

pattern	*clause CD contour (inform. development)*	*converted-form CD grading*
(1)	high ungraduated rise	very high
(2)-(3)	moderate graduated rise	very low
(4)-(6)	high ungraduated rise + dip	moderately high

[63] Weil 1879:12f.

[64] Firbas 1966, 1967; Daneš 1970.

[65] Halliday 1967:205, 211.

[66] " Tension " is Firbas' expression (Jones 1977:65ff.). In Coptic there is quite possibly some " tension " between the Egyptian topic-initial patterns and the typically Coptic, " Indo-European " fronting of the focus.

[67] Mentioned by Polotsky 1944:48ff. (= *CP* 152ff.); cf. Stern §521.

[68] Only for pertinent, i.e. not inherent, focality; only for pertinent, i.e. unconditioned, order (§2.6.3.1.2).

[69] Often clarified as " given information " *after* the focus, i.e. the focus resolves the informational structure.

2.1-3 Theme/topic-initial patterns

2.1 The autofocal second tense construction: second-tense conjugation form — focalization pattern (1)

2.1.1 # ϵϥ + modifier #. Differing with Polotsky, I begin my exposition with the autonomous Second Tense, a self-contained unit, thus simpler in the macro-syntactic view (even if historically problematic): the self-focalizing " ϵϥcωtm " (etc., see next paragraphs) and " ϵϥmmay ", with which we shall deal here[70]: a high-CD, low-cotext-boundness information unit: ϵypaψϵ " what they are doing is rejoicing ", " they are doing nothing but rejoicing " (cf. Anglo-Irish " It's rejoicing they are"); ϵϥ2namntϵ " he is in Hell, and nowhere else ". The verb lexeme or modifier is focal, but in a different or higher degree of focality than in the basic conjugation-form[71]. This applies where the opposition obtains, and not in the case of ϵϥtwn (+ nom. actor): ϵctwn tmntma2omnt, ϵϵtwn tanomia... ϵytwn ∆ϵ ncapϫ... (*A 2* 336-7), ϵpϵnϵnkϵϵc twn (*A 1* 212), sim. *A 2* 393, *Ch.* 166.28f., *III* 67.17ff. etc. In this focus of inherent focality we have an instance of neutralization of focality grading (§2.0.2.2.3). The modifiers of *pertinent* focality occurring here (needless to say, in the Sec. Present only; an open-ended focus paradigm, yet incomparably more restricted than and not overlapping the §1.2.1.1 inventory): 2n-/n2ht=, 2i-, ntoot=, ncw= (not in the Bipartite pred. list); the anaphoric mmay; the expanded modifier 2pai (2n-). The internal nexus is usually affirmative, sometimes negatived by (n) — an (§2.9.1.1): " Where is Judas now? " — ϵϥ2namntϵ (*A 2* 53) / noya mϵn (of the animals) ϵϥ2nn2aaatϵ ϵt2hmmooy, ayw nkϵoya ϵϥ2nnxatϥϵ ϵt2ixmnka2 (*Wess. 9* 91a 26ff., parall. Sh. quoted in *BLOr.* 8811 cm) / ϵcncwn ϵp-nobϵ ayw ϵtmϵipϵ (*Ch.* 65.13f.) / nma ∆ϵ on ϵtϵpϵpϵnn̄a mnxoϵic n2htϥ, ϵcmmay ngitmntpm2ϵ (*P* 130[5] 50 ck, cf. *Ch.* 138.27ff.) / ϵpϵnpwmϵ ntootc, ϵc2ntootϥ an mnpwmϵ (*IV* 12.14) / ϵpϵnnobϵ 2nnnax2ϵ an, aλλa 2nnϵn2ht (*A 2* 340); sim. *A 2* 248, *Ch.* 93.55ff., etc.

We encounter an analogous construction with *verb* lexemes[72], in durative *and non-durative* conjugation patterns. In the following paragraphs, I shall present certain cotext-functional categories typifying this verbal marked focus and more or less stereotyped, i.e. predictable.

2.1.2 Topical (" rhetorical ") questions[73]. Second Future, rarely Sec. Aorist, ϵyn(ta=). (*Ch.* 70.49ff.) mh ϵϥnaϥi-oyϭϵpwb ϵ2pai ϵpoi h ϵϥnaaat n2hkϵ, mh ϥnaψϵinϵ noyca2oy ϵxwi, mh ϥnaψ+ nai noymntpmmao h ϵϥnamϵ2-πahi naγaθon h ϵϥnataaϭoi 2nnaψwnϵ (the two Basic Future[74] variants predicate -ψ-) / (*BMCat.* 94, No. 213 ah) mh ϵyntan-ψaxϵ mmay ϵxw / (*A 1* 108 coll.) mh ϵψarϵπa2oy an (i.e. the rags) h ψarϵoc2oy / (*Ch.* 186.41ff.) apa ϵoyn2ϵntn2 mπnoytϵ ππantokratwp / (*Miss.* 279)

[70] Polotsky 1960a:§30.

[71] Cf. Polotsky 1944:52f.(=*CP* 156f.).

[72] Thesleff's (1955:14f.) " We do not think of degrees of walking " is simply not true (cf. Dressler 1968). It is not, however, with " degrees (of a verbal concept) " that we are concerned, but with the phenomenon, common in Indo-European as well as outside it, of a verb-form privileged to occur in marked focalization patterns. (Curiously, the " imperfective " or enhanced *Aktionsart* postulated for the " emphatic " form in the pre-Polotskyan grammar of Middle Egyptian comes here to mind.)

[73] Polotsky 1944:31ff. (= *CP* 135ff.). Cf. Rosén 1957:149(f.) for this role of the Greek ' εἰμί + participle ' " Second Tenses ".

[74] I have no exx. of Basic Tenses *on their own* as rhetorical questions. xϵ-apa + Future I (*Ch.* 84.17ff.) is not a question, but an instance of the sceptical or half-hopeful nuance of ἄρα (esp. clear in εἰ, ἐὰν ἄρα see Denniston 37f.; Blass–Debrunner §375; Kühner–Gerth II 324ff.). In Coptic, xϵ- indicates that apa here is not a second-position particle, but a clause-initial one (for the merging of ἄρα and ἆρα see, i.a. Jannaris §1748c; Kühner–Gerth II 318 Anm.; Denniston 44.Our xϵ-apa- may simply be: ὅτι ἄρα- (Denniston 38f.).

ⲏ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲛⲉⲥⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 70) ⲙⲏ ⲁⲣⲧⲁϩⲟⲥ ⲣⲱ ⲉⲥⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ... ⲏ ⲉⲓⲧⲙⲁⲓⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲥϫⲱ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲥⲱ... ⲏ ⲛⲧⲱⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲱ... ϫⲉ-ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲉ (note that here, as elsewhere often — §§2.6.3, 2.7.3 — a Second Bipartite variates with a Basic Tripartite or negative Bipartite). Other exx.: *III* 90.15, 91.13f., *Ch.* 43.48ff., 195.47ff., *Wess. 9* 138a, *A 1* 125 etc. This case may be conceived of in two ways (beyond the general contextual circumstance of "emphatic-discourse" manner). On the one hand, as a *topicalization* form on a high level of textual analysis [75]: the question is — in macro-syntactic analysis — the topic of the answer, here zeroed [76]. The rhetorical question — stylistically an argumentational flourish or gambit — is grammatically an independent, self-contained dialogue unit, with the zeroing of the response component signalled by the form of the question-allocution. On the other hand, these questions have an affinity with *declarative* forms or syntagms (the rhetorical ἐκφώνησις vs. ἐρώτησις; cf. "Did he run!" [77]). One is given the impression that rhetoricity is a kind of *suprasyntactic* category, with overt syntactic signalling.

2.1.3 Jussive/precative/preceptive/promissive ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ. Affirmative, rarely negatived; 3rd person, 1st person, rarely 2nd person.

(*III* 210.13) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲉⲓ / (*Ch.* 192.24ff.) ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲱⲙⲛⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲥⲧⲱⲙⲧ ⲉⲣⲟϥ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲥⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙⲧ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ("... and let it!") / (*III* 20.17f.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲧⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ (apodotic imprecation, opp. to ⲛⲛⲉⲓ- negative pledge, ⲉⲓⲉ- hopeful solicitation or self-promise) / (*III* 218.5ff.) ⲉⲕⲉⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ, ⲉⲕⲉ-ⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ... ⲉⲕⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲣϩⲟⲩⲉ-ⲙⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ; / (*III* 19.6, promise) ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ / (*IV* 72-3, hortative) ⲉⲛⲁⲥⲙⲛ-(sic)ⲡⲉⲩⲃⲉⲕⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ, ⲏ ⲉⲛⲁ† (sic) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲁ-ⲥⲟⲩ... ⲏ ⲛⲛⲁⲛⲁⲩ (sic) ϫⲉ-ⲉⲛⲛⲁ†-ⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲯⲃⲉⲓⲱ / (*A 2* 505-6, neg. hortative) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲑⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲁⲧ-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲏ ⲅⲟⲧⲡⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*IV* 61.27f., neg. jussive) ⲉⲩⲛⲁϫⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ. Additional exx.: *IV* 103 *passim* (ⲉⲩⲛⲁ-, negative ⲛⲛⲉ-); 61-2; *Ch.* 187.2f.; *A 2* 144; preceptive, *IV* 53.24, 54.3, 63.19, 71.2, 81 *passim*, etc.

This Akhmimoid isogloss [78] is intriguing both from the syntactic point of view (does it have a "that"-clause role? cf. the OE-ME prospective *sḏm.f* in this function [79]) and that of its formal and functional relations with the conjunctional future syntagms ϫⲉ-/ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉϥⲛⲁ-, which are still in need of thorough investigation. The co-existence of the ⲉϥⲛⲁ- jussive with the classical Sahidic ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ- [80] is noteworthy: the latter is marked as rhetorical, with the former preceptive and unmarked (ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉ- is common to both terms) [81].

2.1.4 "Quotation-form", glossing and lemmatic roles [82]

2.1.4.1 The Second Tense used in quoting or attributing a subjective [83] claim, thought or statement that is thereby more or less strongly *discredited* ("... so they say" would approximately convey this meaning); Second Present (very rarely, Sec. Perfect); all persons; affirmative only?

[75] Jones 1977:179ff. ("high/mid-level themes, to define or open a subject area", 184).

[76] von der Gabelentz 1975:136f., 156.

[77] Cf. Tobler 1899:18ff., Ebeling 1905:137-142 ("Che hai paura?", esp. 140), von der Gabelentz 1901:183. Note also the unmistakable functional affinity with the English tag-construction: "He ran, didn't he?".

[78] Shisha-Halevy 1976b:363.

[79] Cf. Polotsky 1964:271f. (= *CP* 56f.), 1976:§2.7 (for ME, cf. Junge 1978:§8.4.2).

[80] Polotsky 1950:80ff. (= *CP* 215ff.); cf. Quecke 1979:443f.

[81] See §7.2.1.1.2. In the "Vita Monachorum" passages we also come upon the special jussive ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉϥ-, very common in the non-Shenoutean Leipoldt's No. 76 (*IV* 129-153, see note in the Appendix) but also found in *IV* 171.17; jussive ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- *IV* 71.14, neg. ⲉⲧⲙ- 66.12 (see Ch. 7, note 63).

[82] Cf. Rosén 1957:149 (the Greek "Second Tense" in this function).

[83] Cf. Polotsky 1944:39ff. (= *CP* 143ff.): here at least Stern (§§601, 372) is vindicated.

(*A 1* 56) ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲩⲱⲛⲉ, ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ... (sim. ⲉⲩⲩⲱⲛⲉ *IV* 85.26, 154.26) / (*K* 9028 ro) ⲉⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲟⲛⲥ, ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ; ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲥⲏⲛ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲏ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*III* 92.21) ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲩⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲙⲉⲩⲣ-ⲥⲱⲃ[84] / (*RE 10* 159 b 30ff.) ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲁⲥⲏⲧ ⲉⲛⲉⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓ+-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲏ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓ-ⲭⲡⲓⲟ... / (*P* 130[5] 70 ⲡⲍ) ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ (ⲉ)ⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ (sim. *Ch.* 179.41ff.) / (*III* 123.2, 150.29) ("saying") ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲟⲛⲥ, ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (sim. 139.17, 124.17f., 143.21, 133.20, 123.1f.)[85] / (*III* 117.27f.) ⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲥⲙⲡⲁⲩⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲙⲛⲧⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲓⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲉ-... / (*IV* 200.20) ⲁⲛⲉⲧⲙⲡⲉⲩⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲱⲩⲥ. Additional exx.: *III* 124.18, 141.24, *IV* 102.20f., *Ryl. Cat.* 32 (No. 68 ⲥⲍ). Rare instances of undiscredited (yet equally subjective) quotation: (*A 1* 248, of a wine) ⲩⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲭⲁⲭⲱ / (*A 1* 258) ⲟⲩⲛⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲍⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (i.e. of the fruits) ⲭⲉⲩⲍⲟⲗⲃ (i.e. ⲭⲉ- ⲉⲩ-?) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲕⲓⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ.

2.1.4.2 Lemmatic ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ: rare (cf. §2.7.2.4). (*Ch.* 81.6f.) ⲕⲁⲓⲧⲟⲓⲅⲉ ⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ ⲉⲩⲍⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ (Esau; this may however be the circumstantial of *Gen.* 25:29) / (*IV* 181.11) ⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲉ "ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ" (the source text, 181.10f., has ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ. The answer here reveals a different, somewhat surprising possibility[86]: "ⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ" ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-).

2.1.5 ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲏ ⲭⲉ- ("not because"), ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- ("as if") + Second Tense. These are two cotextual constellations apparently calling (as an option) for a higher focality of the included verb:

(a) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-/ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲭⲉ- (less common) + Second Present/Perfect; affirmative only; usually in strongly antithetic environment (focus of contrast)[87]; the Sec. Tense in the first or both terms of the antithesis, occasionally varying with a Basic Tense. (*A 2* 299-300) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲁϥⲍⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϥⲣⲓⲙⲉ / (*A 1* 44) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁϥⲣ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲅⲱⲛⲧ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲁϥⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁ ⲛⲉⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲱⲛⲍ ⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*K* 9315) ("the arrogant man cannot accept the moral principle") ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲛⲏⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ / (*A 1* 131-2) ("he violated his oath") ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲣ-ⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲉϥⲩⲓⲡⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲛⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲧϥ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲩⲥⲁⲍⲟⲩ / (*P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ)... ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ⲙⲛⲧⲉⲧⲏⲙⲉⲗⲏⲧⲏ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲭⲏⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲉⲍ-ⲉⲓⲁⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ. Also *A 1* 53, *III* 66.2f., 116.18f., *Wess. 9* 86b 30ff.

(b) (ⲍⲱⲥ) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ + Second Perfect. Affirmative only; perhaps in complementary distribution with ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ + circumstantial for the Bipartite[88] (cf. the Second Perfect allomorph after the irrealis ⲉⲛⲉ-): (*A 2* 33) (ⲍⲁⲍ ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲥⲩⲛⲉ) ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲟⲩⲍⲁⲧⲏⲩ ⲩⲉϥ-ⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*III* 208.5) ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲍⲉ-ⲟⲩⲍⲟϥ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲇⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ[89] / (*III* 215.23f.) ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲏⲓ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲍⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲕⲓⲙ ⲛⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ / (*A 2* 362) ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲱⲙ ⲛⲛⲃⲁⲗ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ — ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲟⲙⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ, cf. *III* 96.25, parall. *Or.* 161.37ff.; see next paragraph.

[84] In (*III* 45.5) ("raise their hands") ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲩⲗⲏⲗ we may have a circumstantial after ⲭⲉ- "as if..." (sim. to ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- + circ., Shisha-Halevy 1972:§3.2.4.5).

[85] When the person indicated is different from the speaker, we may have here instances of indirect-speech shifting (*III* 91.15f. ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲥⲉⲩⲍ-ⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ, 133.20 ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ) or, much more frequently, unshifted person (*III* 124.17f. ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲕⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ) or, also very common, quoted reference in terms of "real person" (*III* 123.2 ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ). These phenomena, which belong in the sphere of "*Erlebte Rede*" ("*style indirecte libre*") and the formalities of inclusion and cohesion, need yet to be thoroughly investigated.

[86] Cf. *RE 10* 159a 13ff. (parall. BM 253 ⲛⲏ) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲧⲱⲱⲙⲉ (referring to the preceding ⲛⲉⲧⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ) / (*A 2* 492) (ⲁⲩⲥⲟⲕⲕ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ) ⲥⲟⲕϥ ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ... / (*A 2* 245) (ⲁϥⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ) ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ ⲧⲱⲛ. See §2.7.2.4.

[87] Cf. Polotsky 1944:39 (= *CP* 143), 53 f. (= *CP* 156f.).

[88] Shisha-Halevy 1972:§§3.2.4.3-4. Consider ⲍⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ + circ. future (*Ch.* 22.34ff.), rarely, + circ. perfect (*IV* 92.6), + neg. circ. pres. (*IV* 115.25). Note the zero alternant before a Nominal Sentence (*Ch.* 30.36f., *Wess. 9* 87b 21f., *IV* 182.7f. etc). I admit the evidence for the circumstantial (as against Sec. Present) allomorph is not strong; however, the evidence for (ⲛⲑⲉ) ⲍⲱⲥ - with ⲉⲁϥ- and circ. Nominal Sentence (*ibid.* §§3.2.4.1.2) is corroborating.

[89] Cf. Shisha-Halevy 1972:§3.2.4.4 for the syntax of "reporting a vision".

2.1.6 The rare PARENTHETIC SECOND TENSE occurs in interruptions of a narrative stretch, by which the narrator intercalates (or often "postcalates") his opinion or personal attitude ("narrator's aside"), but also meets the need to clarify or justify a particular choice of words. Note the unmistakable role which particles play here[90]. We find the Sec. Perfect, affirmative and negatived: (*Or.* 161.37ff., parall. *III* 96.25) ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲱⲩⲥ ⲛϩⲏⲧ — ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲱⲩⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ (sim. *A 2* 369, quoted in the prec. paragraph) / (*A 2* 246) ...ⲉⲁⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ — ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ — ⲉⲁϥⲕⲁ-ⲛⲉϥⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ.

2.1.7 Less schematizable, but still to some extent predictable, are miscellaneous circumstances in which the autofocal Second Tense occurs:

2.1.7.1 In *disjunctive configurations* (ⲥⲟⲛ — ⲥⲟⲛ —, ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ — ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ —, etc.), varying with Basic Tenses; affirmative only; Second Aorist, Second Present.

(*A 1* 249, coll.) ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ: ⲥⲟⲛ ⲙⲉⲏ ⲉⲩⲁⲩϫⲓ-ⲙⲉ, ⲥⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲁⲩϫⲓ-ϫⲟⲗ; ⲥⲟⲛ ⲩⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ, ⲥⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲩⲁⲩ-ⲣ-ⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ; ϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲩⲁⲩⲧⲃⲃⲟⲟⲩ, ϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲁⲩϫⲁϩⲙⲟⲩ; ϩⲉⲛⲥⲏⲩ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲣ-ϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲉϫⲛ ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ, ϩⲉⲛⲥⲏⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲕⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ; ϩⲉⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲣⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ, ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲣⲁⲱⲉ... ϩⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲣ-ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ, ϩⲉⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲣ-ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*III* 42.19f.) (ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲓ-ⲕⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲧⲉϩⲛⲁϥ), ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲱⲥⲕ ϩⲙⲡⲓⲙⲁ, ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲩⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲁϫⲏ. Also *III* 110.9ff., *IV* 8.11f., perhaps *Berl. Sitz.* ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-... ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ϫⲉ-... ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ϫⲉ-... ϩⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-... ⲙⲙⲁⲛⲓϫⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-..., unless here the ϫⲉ-clauses are focalized; *Ench.* 78a.

2.1.7.2 In the second or both terms of antithetic configurations[91]; affirmative, negative; Second Present, Aorist, Perfect.

(*Ch.* 207.19ff., Sh.? adaptation of the famous *Mark* 5:39) ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ / (*III* 71.18f., possibly a case of circumstantial + Sec. Perfect) ϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲩⲱⲱⲧ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ / (*III* 33.9f.) ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲩ ⲉⲩⲁϫⲉ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲣ-ϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲉϫⲛⲛⲉⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*III* 108.9) ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲛϫⲉ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ (ⲉ)ⲛⲣⲡⲕⲉⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ; for ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ see §1.3.11.2.1.1; for -ⲣⲡⲕⲉ-, §3.3.1 (a similar example: *Ch.* 157.20ff.) / (*III* 212.7ff.) ⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲓ̅ⲥ̅, ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲣ-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ / (*IV* 157.21ff.) (Instead of plucking the plant) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲱⲅⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ. Similar exx.: *III* 40.11ff., 76.19ff. (parall. *Ch.* 171.7ff.), *A 2* 241.

2.1.7.3 VARIA. (a) The Second Tense *in apodosi* (cf. SHISHA-HALEVY 1973): (*K* 926) ⲉⲓⲩⲁⲛⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ... ⲉⲓⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ, ⲉⲕⲩⲁⲛⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ ...ⲉⲕⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ; (*Wess. 9* 110a 11f.) ⲉⲓⲩⲁⲛϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲓⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*IV* 79-80) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲏ ⲛϥⲥⲱⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ... ⲉⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ. These examples may, however, all be cases of focalized *object* (§2.3.1; cf. "ⲉⲕϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ", and (c) below).

(b) "Dramatic" Second Present ("Koinzidenzfall")[92]: (*III* 29.27f.) ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲓⲕⲱⲧϥ-ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲓⲛⲟⲩϫ ⲉⲧⲧⲱⲙⲉ, perhaps (*IV* 64.26f.) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϫⲉ-.

[90] Cf. SHISHA-HALEVY 1976a:37 n. 18. Basic (durative) tense (opistho-)parentheses: ...ⲛϥⲡⲱϩ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ—ϥⲡⲏϩ ⲣⲱ (*III* 113.13f.) ⲧⲅⲁⲉⲓⲟⲓ ⲅⲉ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ... ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϫⲉ-ϯⲅⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲣⲱ ϩⲛⲛⲁϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ (*A 1* 70) / "ⲛⲉⲛⲛⲁϩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ" — ⲙⲡⲟⲩ ⲣⲱ (*IV* 96-7; Leipoldt: "*locus corruptus*") / ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲉⲭ̅ⲥ̅ ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟϥ — ⲏ ⲥⲉⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲣⲱ (*A 2* 24. Cf. *A 1* 135 ϥⲛⲁⲥⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲏ ⲁϥⲥⲓ ⲣⲱ / (*A 1* 132) ...ϫⲉ-ⲉⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲣⲱ ⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 150) ⲁ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲥⲁⲓ ⲏ ϥⲛⲁⲁⲥⲁⲓ ⲣⲱ — instances of the *figura Sinuthiana*) / ⲡⲉⲓⲏⲓ ⲉϥⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲡⲩⲱϥ ⲏ ⲛϫⲁⲉⲓⲉ — ⲥⲉⲟ ⲣⲱ ⲛϫⲁⲉⲓⲉ (*A 2* 8) / ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ϯⲙⲉⲥ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ... — ϯⲙⲉⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ — ϩⲟⲙⲓⲱⲥ (sic)... (*A 2* 464).

[91] POLOTSKY 1944:39f. (= *CP* 156f.).

[92] This may be related to the "synchronous present", "Koinzidenzfall" or, as it is usually known today, "performative discourse" role of the Second Present, which I find well attested outside Shenoute (esp. in documentary or epistolary formulae): "hereby...", an act meant to be considered as carried out at the very time of — and *by* — being announced. Consider the formulary ⲉⲓⲥⲧⲟⲓⲭⲉⲓ ("I concur with"), ⲉⲓϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ ("I admit, agree"), ⲉⲓⲟ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ("I testify"), ⲉⲓⲱⲣⲕ ("I swear"), ⲉⲓⲕⲓⲛⲇⲩ-ⲛⲉⲩⲉ ("I vouch for"), ⲉⲓⲱⲡ-ⲧⲱⲣⲉ ("I promise"), as well as the less formulary or non-formulary ⲉⲓϯ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ("I sell", Till, *Rechts-*

(c) Occasional instances of Second Perfect predicating ⲣ- (cf. (a) above; is the object of ⲣ-, or the whole 'ⲣ + object' syntagm focalized?): (*IV* 67.2f.) ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲙ / (*IV* 199.7f.) ⲁϩⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ (sic) ⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲓ... ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲧⲃⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ, ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ϩⲓⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ.

2.2 The heterofocal second-tense construction: # sec. tense conj.-form → modifier # — focalization pattern (2)

In Polotsky's analysis, this is the original, core model: a master structure, which he identifies with, or approximates to, the Bipartite pattern, and from which he deduces the nominal (substantival) nature of the Second Tense, its " transposed " status and the transformative shift of the modifier, from adjunctal to predicative status. The ' theme → rheme ' arrangement of the nexus terms is here the " classic " one which (when pertinent, i.e. not conditioned by internal — focus — or external factors) is integrated in a *thematic progression*, or gradual, concatenated evolvement of the communication [93].

2.2.1 The focus constituency is here the largest of all focal paradigms, and is impressively close to that of the adverbal adjunctal modifier (§1.1.2.1). Both lists being open-ended, it is difficult to estimate to what degree they overlap.

ⲉ- (*Ch.* 16.47ff.), ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ (§1.3.7.3), ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*Ch.* 129.2ff.), ⲉ + inf. (*III* 191.26f.).
ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ- (*Ch.* 34.18ff.)/ϩⲓⲧⲛ- (*Ch.* 9.5ff.) / ⲧⲱⲛ (*A 1* 281, §2.6.3.2)
ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- (*Ch.* 20.31f.).
ⲉⲭⲛ- (*Ch.* 152.30ff.).
ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- (*III* 122.24f.), ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲭⲉ- (*III* 100.16f.).
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ- (*IV* 16.2f.).
ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ- (dir. obj., *IV* 51.16f.; introd. predicative, *III* 67.12; " in, at, by ", *Wess. 9* 87a 11ff.).
ⲛ-/ⲛⲁ- (*III* 165.16ff.).
ⲙⲛ- (*III* 98.3,7,10).
ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ- (*III* 134.15).
ⲛⲥⲁ- (*Ch.* 55.8ff.).
ⲡⲣⲟⲥ- (*P* 130² 80 ro).
ⲟⲩⲃⲉ- (*III* 65.14).
ⲯⲁ- (*Ch.* 28.38f.).
ϩⲁ- (*Ch.* 17.24ff.).
ϩⲁϩⲧⲛ- (*Miss.* 283).
ϩⲓ- (*Ch.* 25.14ff.).
ϩⲓⲧⲛ- (*III* 28.25f.).
ϩⲓⲭⲛ- (*III* 80.25f.).
ϩⲛ- (*Ch.* 14.32ff.).
ϩⲱⲥ- (*Ch.* 97.21ff.).
ⲭⲉ- (var. roles; *III* 137.23ff., *Ch.* 62.1f., *Wess. 9* 149a-b).
ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ (*III* 120-7ff.).
ⲭⲓⲛ- (*Ch.* 65.15ff.).
Clause Conjugations (ⲉϥⲯⲁⲛ-, ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉ-, ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉ- (?) *A 2* 51, 87; *not* conjunctive)

urk. 27.12; Crum, *Coptic Ostraca* 139.4), ⲉⲓⲙⲓⲥⲑⲟⲩ (" I lease ", Krall, *Rainer* 127.9), ⲉⲓⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ (" I beg, appeal ", Till, *Ostraca* 243), ⲉⲓⲯⲓⲛⲉ (" I greet ", Stefanski-Lichtheim, *Ostraca* 158), ⲉⲓⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ (" I bless you ", Crum, *Coptic Ostraca* 282), ⲉⲓⲙⲟⲩ (" I am dying ", *ibid.* 267). For this functional category in general and comparative view, see Koschmieder 1965:26-34, 46f.; R. Harris 1972; Grimes 1975:71ff.; Weinrich 1977:57.

[93] See §2.0.2.3-4. Compare the macro-syntactically marked role of the #subject-*copula*-predicate# Nominal Sentence pattern (Shisha-Halevy 1976a:48f.).

Circumstantial (*III* 66.5f.).
Iteration-marked noun syntagms (§1.3.3).

The THEME/TOPIC CONSTITUENCY: ϵ-/ϵρϵ- converted Bipartite, aorist (affirmative), adjective-verbs, ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁ-, ⲩⲱϵ, (ϵ)ⲛⲧ-converted perfect. The NEXUS is here affirmative or negated: §2.9.1.2.

2.2.2 GENERAL OBSERVATIONS. (1) For relatively few — even if, in absolute numbers, common — members of the above list, notably ϵⲧⲃϵ-, (ϵⲃⲟⲗ) ⲥⲓⲧⲛ-, (ⲥⲣⲁⲓ, ϵⲃⲟⲗ) ⲥⲛ-, ⲥⲓ-, ϵⲭⲛ-, ⲛ- (ⲛⲧϵⲓⲥϵ, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ-), there is an opposition or a compexly conditioned alternation with the focus-initial patterns: see §§2.4-6 below, esp. 2.6.4; those patterns have their own focus constituency paradigms, which feature some foci here absent (notably -ⲱⲥ-modifiers).

(2) For various *focalization figures* employing this pattern (the COMPLEX FOCUS: ϵⲩⲛⲁⲭⲓⲧⲕ ϵⲣⲁⲧⲩ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ *Wess. 9* 117a 5f.; DOUBLE FOCALIZATION: ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲩ ϵⲛⲓⲙ *Wess. 9* 110a 9f.; the MULTIPLE DISJOINED FOCUS: ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲥⲁⲥⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲏⲓ *Miss.* 283) see §2.7.1; for details concerning the syntagmatics of this pattern, for the coordination/disjunction of several themes, and for the isolation of the focus among several modifiers, see §2.8.4.

(3) For BASIC TENSE themes with several of these foci (notably ⲧⲱⲛ, ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ-) see §2.7.3.

(4) For the focusing modifiers ⲙⲙⲁⲧϵ, ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- and other augentia, co-marking the focus, see §§1.3.1.1, 2.9.1.2 *passim* and §6.2.1. ϵⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ (*IV* 96.13) / ϵⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲥⲙⲡϵⲩⲁⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲧϵ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲙ-ⲡϵⲩⲥⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ (*IV* 24.6f.).

SPECIAL OBSERVATIONS. (1) For ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ- and the problems involved, see §§1.0.1, 1.1.2.1, etc. It is evident that not all of its functional spectrum shares the same focalization properties: while ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥϵ "how?" features in both focus- and topic-initial patterns, ⲛ- as object-expansion always follows its theme, as do most of the more "lexical" syntagms of ⲛ- (for ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ and ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥϵ focalized, see *III* 131.10, *Wess. 9* 174d 29ff., *III* 76.8ff., *IV* 195.4).

(2) ϵ-: in ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ϵⲧⲣϵⲛⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲧϵⲥⲓⲏ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ϵⲥⲟⲩⲛ- (*III* 191.25ff.) we have a remarkable instance of the focus being heralded by a cataphoric element in the theme (§5.2.2.1), indicating yet again the compatibility of the 'nucleus - satellite' and the 'theme - rheme' dependences (the latter is "mapped on" the former).

(3) ⲧⲱⲛ "where?", focalizable also in pattern (1), with an immediate explication of the actor-pronoun by a noun syntagm, §6.0.1; ϵⲥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧϵⲥⲓⲏ ϵⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ (*A 2* 114) / ϵⲣϵⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲥ ⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*A 2* 53) / ϵⲥⲛⲁⲍϵ ϵⲣⲟⲕ ⲧⲱⲏ (*A 2* 336; sim. with ⲍϵ or ⲅⲓⲛϵ, *A 1* 62, 306, *III* 72.9f. etc.). "Whence?" (see Ch. 1, footnote 96): ϵⲣϵⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲭϵ- (*A 1* 67; sim., with ϵⲓⲙϵ or ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, *A 1* 72, 122, *Wess. 9* 143d 1ff. etc.) / ⲏⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲛⲉⲍ ⲑⲏⲣⲕ ⲉⲓ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ϵ- (*III* 72.24f., sim. *ibid.* 17f., 87.12) / ϵⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲛⲧ ⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡϵ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ϵⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲏⲓⲙ (*A 2* 412). For ⲧⲱⲛ following a Basic Tense, see §2.7.3.2.3.

(4) The CIRCUMSTANTIAL focus features in some typical focalization figures, such as the "*Wechselsatz*"-like # ϵⲕ— ϵⲕ— # construction and the "No sooner... than..." combination: see (with further reff.) §2.7.1.1. Some non-rhetorical examples: ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇϵ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲟⲩϵⲩ-ⲧⲛⲟⲟⲕⲣϵ (sic) ϵⲛϵⲛⲣϵⲕⲭⲓ-ⲍⲁⲡ (*P* 130[5] 40 мг) / ⲛⲁⲓ ϵⲣⲉⲉⲓⲣϵ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϵⲣϵⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ (*III* 206.13) / ϵⲧϵⲧⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛϵ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲓⲍⲁⲧⲏⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ (*III* 25.17f.) / ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲕⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ϵⲩⲃⲙ-ⲃⲟⲙ ϵⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϵⲣϵⲡⲣⲱⲙϵ ⲃⲙ-ⲃⲟⲙ ϵⲣⲟϥ (*Ch.* 16-17): these last examples call our attention to the fact that the circumstantial, even when not focal, is an *adnexal* modification form, i.e. it adjoins a nexus or predicative dependence to a verb or noun (§7.1.3). In the focalized circumstantial we have a "promoted" or marked degree of adnexation. Some figure-type instances of this kind may belong rather to the focus-initial pattern (6): ϵⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧϵ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ϵⲩⲭⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ (*Wess. 9* 158a 30ff.) / ϵⲓⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ϵⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ (*Mun.* 96).

(5) ϵⲁϥ- occurs theme-like in a few instances[94], always in *contrastive context*: ⲁⲥ†-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲩ; ⲛⲟⲩ-ⲧⲏⲏⲃϵ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲕⲉⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϵⲁⲥ†-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲛⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (*Ch.* 183.2ff.) " ... but it is the fruits of righteousness it sprouted " / ϵⲣϵⲧⲡϵ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲥⲧⲉⲣⲉⲱⲙⲁ ⲕⲏ ⲁⲛ ϵⲍⲣⲁⲓ ϵⲭⲛⲍⲉⲛⲙⲁ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲕⲁⲍ ⲛⲑϵ ⲛⲧⲙⲉⲗⲱⲧ ϵⲧⲕⲏ ϵⲭⲙⲡⲏⲓ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϵⲁϥⲟϥⲧϥ ⲍⲛⲧⲉϥⲃⲟⲙ (*Ch.* 59.46ff.) " ... but it is with His power that He fastened it ". As appears from two other examples (*Ch.* 171.10ff. = *III* 76.20ff. and *III* 163.19ff.), these are perhaps better interpreted as cases of the non-thematic circumstantial premodified by the constrastive conjunct rather than focalization patterns.

2.2.3 Some assorted examples. *Affirmative nexus*: (*P* 130[5] 79 ⲁ, not Sh.?) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁⲭϵ ⲃⲱⲗⲡ ϵⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲓⲉⲓⲙϵ ϵⲣⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲍⲛⲧⲉⲓⲣⲟⲙⲡϵ ⲧⲁⲓ / (*ibid.* 61 ⲗϵ) ϵⲣⲯⲁⲛⲡⲉⲍⲙⲟⲩ ⲇϵ ⲃⲁⲗⲃϵ ϵⲩⲛⲁⲙⲟⲗⲍϥ ⲛⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 104) ⲏⲧⲟⲕ ⲅⲁⲣ ϵⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲟ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ (" ... how I am (physically) "; sim.[95] *A 2* 516 " ... how they stand ", *Or.* 154.39f.) / (*Ch.* 54.19ff.) ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲍⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 86a 16ff.) ⲛⲧⲁ-ⲡⲉⲓⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲏ†ⲁⲉⲓⲏⲥ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲩⲱⲍ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲕⲗⲩⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲅⲥ ⲛⲟⲩⲁ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ / (*III* 45.22ff.) ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲯⲱⲣⲡ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ; ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲯⲙⲯⲉ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ; ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁ†-ⲍⲏⲩ ⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ†-ⲛⲯⲟⲧ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲍⲏⲧ; / (*A 1* 80) ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲯⲩⲓ ⲛⲛⲁⲃⲁⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ / (*Ch.* 55.24ff.) ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲍⲟⲩⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲓⲱⲍⲁⲛⲛⲏⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲭϵ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ. For the last two exx. see §2.6.3.

Negated nexus (§2.9.1.2): (*III* 21.10) ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ / (*A 2* 403) ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲯⲁⲭϵ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲍⲁ-ⲣⲟϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲩⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉϥ / (*IV* 51.16f.) ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ / (*III* 74.4ff.) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲕⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲏⲓ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲙⲟⲯⲧϥ ⲭⲉⲛⲉϥⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲭⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲥⲱϥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲟⲯⲧⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲍⲏⲧϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲟ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ / (*A 2* 51) ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ-ⲟⲩⲣⲁⲛ ⲍⲓⲭⲱⲛ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲛ ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲡⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲁⲍⲙⲉⲛ.

2.3 The heterofocal second-tense construction: # second-tense conjugation-form + pronoun/noun syntagm # — focalization pattern (3)

Here we witness the focalization of the actants: (pro)nominal actor as well as the object-expansion. According to Polotsky[96], this is again a secondary use, even in synchronic view. In broader structura-delineation, our pattern will have to be confronted with the Cleft Sentence with (pro)nominal *vedette* (Polotsky 1962a), and arrive at a statement of opposition and neutralization[97], of macro-syntactic circumstances favouring the one construction or the other. The concurrence of the two patterns is especially striking with the *interrogative*, i.e. inherently focal, members of the focus paradigm. Here I believe we are dealing with a stylistically variant construction, rather than a functionally opposed one. Note the unmistakably colloquial flavour of idiomatic expressions like ⲉⲕⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ " What do you say? ", ⲉⲕⲣ-ⲟⲩ " How are you doing? ". Here, however, I shall simply present the classified evidence for the Second-Tense pattern in Shenoute.

2.3.1 Focalized object-expansion. The focus constituency: *interrogative pronouns* (inherently focal): ⲟⲩ " what? ", ⲛⲓⲙ " who? ", ⲁⲯ (ⲛ-) " what...? which...? ", ⲟⲩⲏⲣ " how much? ". *Non-interrogative*: noun syntagms - determinators (ⲡ- ⲟⲩ- Ø-, §5.1.1.0.1) expanded by noun lexemes; ⲡ- ex-

[94] Cf. Polotsky 1944:48f. (= *CP* 152f.). See below, §2.5, for ϵⲁϥ- as post-focal theme-topic.

[95] Polotsky 1940:245 (= *CP* 37).

[96] See Polotsky 1944:31 (= *CP* 135), 51f. (= *CP* 155f.). This is, in a way, tantamount to describing as " secondary " the use of the English " that... " as *glose*-form in Cleft Sentences with a (pro)nominal *vedette* (" It was my father that gave me the tie as a present "), cf. Polotsky 1944:§21. This is worth considering diachronically, but is synchronically unhelpful. See Rosén's (1957) non-hierarchic presentation (esp. p. 141ff.) of the foci for the Greek " Second Tenses ".

[97] Cf. Polotsky 1944:§§20, 22; see §2.7.1.2 below for Cleft Sentence + Sec. Tense configurations.

panded by a relative form (indeterminable substantivized relative [98]); the possessive pronoun ⲡⲁ- expanded by a noun syntagm; indefinite pronouns: ⲟⲩ " something ", ⲟⲩⲏⲣ " so much "; perhaps also personal pronoun + augens (*A 2* 238, quoted below). Noteworthy is the focalization of ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ "(saying) what?", where ϫⲉ- forms part of the valency of ϫⲱ " say ", and is cataphorically represented in the verbal nucleus (the theme; again, nexal dependence is mapped on a ' nucleus - satellite ' phrase). The THEME constituency: Second Present and Future, Second Perfect (noticeably less common), ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁ-, Second Aorist. The NEXUS is affirmative only for interrogative foci, otherwise both affirmative and negated (by ⲁⲛ), §2.9.1.3.

DOCUMENTATION: *affirmative nexus*: (*A 2* 509) ⲉⲓⲛⲁϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ; / (*A 2* 512) ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲧⲥⲁⲓⲉ-ⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲁ-ⲁⲩ, ⲏ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲣ-ⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲍⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*A 2* 17) ⲉⲕⲣ-ⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ; (sim. ⲉϥ(ⲛⲁ)ⲣⲟⲩ "What does/will do...?", "How is...?", *A 1* 201 / *P* 130² 75 ro ⲉⲩⲣ-ⲟⲩ ⲛⲑⲩⲇⲣⲓⲁ ϫⲓⲛⲙⲡⲉⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲁⲥⲟⲩⲱⲃⲡ / *A 2* 86, 481, 341, *Ch.* 117.6f., 166.48f., *III* 49.19, *IV* 98.25f., etc.).
ⲉⲓϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ (*A 2* 366, *P* 130⁴ 99 vo etc.) but more usually ⲉ(ϥ)ϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ (*A 2* 58, *Ch.* 143.36ff.), also Sec. Future, Perfect (*A 2* 56, 397, 387, *IV* 186.13 answered by ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ ϫⲉ-, pointing to suppletion between ϫⲱ and ⲡⲉϫⲁ-).

ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩ expands other verbs in the Second Tense, without cataphoric reference: ⲟⲩⲱⲩⲃ (*Ch.* 132.26ff., Sec. Perf.); ⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ (*III* 105.29f., Sec. Pres.); ⲧ-ϩⲁⲡ (*P* 131⁴ 86 ⲣⲁ); (*P* 131⁶ 19 ⲙⲅ) ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ; ⲉⲙⲛ-ⲧⲁⲛ-ⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*Ch.* 28.46f.) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲁϩⲉ-ⲛⲓⲙ / (*Wess. 9* 171c 2 ff.) ⲛⲧⲁⲓϫⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*A 2* 509) ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*Wess. 9* 171d 1ff.) ⲛⲉⲧⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲛⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲥⲟⲩⲏ-ⲛⲁⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ (ⲉϥϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ) is focal only (*III* 187.18f., *IV* 51.17, 64.26f., *Ch.* 185.34f., etc. — it can of course be circumstantial, i.e. non-initial: *Ch.* 185.45f., 187.51) / (*Mun.* 102) ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲕⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲓⲉ ⲉⲩ-ⲛⲁⲕⲁ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ;

Negated nexus (rare): (*A 2* 238-9) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*Wess. 9* 171c 6f.) ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲉⲓϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ / (*Ch.* 96.9f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲓϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ("I have not said a single superfluous thing") / (*IV* 94.3ff.) ⲉⲩⲁⲩ-ⲱⲱⲱⲅⲉ-ⲡⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲥⲉⲡⲟⲗϩϥ ⲛⲅⲓⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁϫⲱⲣⲡ ⲉⲣⲟϥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲱⲱⲱⲅⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ (" It is not the stone which is wounded or cut by those who stumble against it; it is rather they who are wounded by it " — the first part of the translation is not literal).

2.3.2 FOCALIZED ACTOR EXPRESSION is much less usual. FOCUS constituency: interrogative pronouns: ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲁⲩ, ⲟⲩⲏⲣ (*Thompson* E vo); non-interrogative foci are rare and mostly found in ambiguous examples: personal pronoun + augens; ⲡⲁⲓ; the expanded determinators ⲡ-, ⲟⲩ. THEME constituency (in order of frequency): Second Perfect (the only form with interrogative foci), Second Future, Present. NEXUS: affirmative only.

DOCUMENTATION: (*A 2* 18) ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲩⲱⲥ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲕⲁ-ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲟϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲩⲁⲓⲣⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲙⲟⲩ... (sim. ⲏⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲉϩ...[99]: *A 2* 151, 153, 518, *Berl.* 1613 ⲧⲓⲑ) / (*P* 131⁵ 4 vo) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲛ / (*Ch.* 203.51f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ / (*Ch.* 24.53ff.) ⲧⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲟⲩⲏϩ ⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ- (or is ⲛⲥⲱⲥ/ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ- focalized?) / (*A 2* 299-230) (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲁϥϩⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϥⲣⲓⲙⲉ) ⲛⲧⲁⲣⲉⲡⲱⲩⲥ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲉⲣⲉⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱϥ " ... it is *you* rather who have cried yourself into a stupor "; similarly *IV* 94.3ff. (ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲱⲱⲱⲅⲉ-ⲡⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ)... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲱⲱⲱⲅⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ " ... it is they rather who are wounded by it ".

[98] See §3.1.1.2.1.
[99] See §1.3.6 for the syntax of ⲉⲛⲉϩ.

2.4-6 Focus-initial patterns

2.4 Heterofocal second-tense construction: # modifier → sec.-tense conjugation-form # — focalization pattern (4)

2.4.0.1 In the following paragraphs, we consider a set of patterns (which are reminiscent of Western-type Cleft Sentences, §2.0.2.2.4) in which the focus precedes the topicalization form, and the focalization is (co-)signalled by a tagmemic feature of arrangement — the initial placement of the focus [100]. I shall consider the following complexities involved: (a) Pattern selection — patts. (2) vs. (4-5) —, rule-ordered, determined by the macro-syntactic relationships of the patterns. (b) The distinct focality type or grade of the initial focus, wherever an opposition obtains between it and the post-theme focus. (c) In the focus-initial patterns, the determination of the topic form by morphosyntactic factors: Tripartite/Bipartite, affirmative/negative topic and nexus. (Among topic forms here we must consider the morphologically unmarked Basic Tenses [§2.6.2].) (d) Idiosyncratic properties of focus classes or individual foci (interrogative/non-interrogative; ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ, ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ). (e) The existence of a pattern for which the topic form — ⲉϥ(ⲛⲁ)-, ⲉⲩⲁϥ- — cannot be disambiguized: a syncretism neutralization of Second Tense and circumstantial: pattern (6). In §2.6.4. below, I shall attempt to sketch the structural picture emerging from the data of §§2.4.1-2.6.3.

2.4.1 Focalization pattern (4). Focus constituency. Of the interrogative foci so typical of patts. (5) and (6), none is here focalized. We find here only the peculiar ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ, dealt with in detail in §2.6.3. Non-interrogative modifiers (in order of frequency): ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- (esp. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ, ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ-); (ϩⲣⲁⲓ/ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ϩⲛ- (often in the distinctive ϩⲙⲡⲁⲓ —); (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ϩⲓⲧⲛ-; ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ; ⲉⲭⲛ-; ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ; ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ [101]; ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉ-, ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ. Topic constituency: only ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ. Nexus: affirmative; negated (by — ⲁⲛ after the focus: §2.9.2.1).

Documentation: *affirmative*: (*III* 26.8) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲙ- / (*Leyd.* 410) ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲓⲩⲱⲛⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 131a 2ff.) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϩⲱⲣⲓⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ... / (*P* 131[5] 67 vo) ϩⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ... ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ-. Note the chiastic arrangement, recurring in this pattern combined with pattern (2); also *Wess. 9* 144b-c, 153b-c, etc. / (*Cat.* 42.22) ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ (sic) ⲗⲓⲃⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 152c 17ff.) ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲑⲓⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲭⲉ- / (*P* 131[4] 88 ⲣⲁⲅ) ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ... ⲛⲧⲁⲥⲣ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲛⲑⲓⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ / (*III* 210.21f.) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲁⲓ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ "Only afterwards did all those (*scil.* demons) gather against it (*scil.* the misguided soul)"; *v.l.* Basic Perfect / (*A 2* 430, not Sh.) ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉϥⲧⲥⲓⲟϥ ⲙⲙⲟϥ (i.e. of the honey) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉϥⲥⲧⲟⲙⲁⲭⲟⲥ ⲁⲛⲁⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉ / (*IV* 162.2f.) ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ +-ⲧⲱϥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲧⲱϥ (sic) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (i.e. ⲧⲉϥⲛⲁϩⲃⲉ; the sense here is "as soon as..."; see §7.2.3.2).

Negated nexus (affirmative topic only) [102]: (*A 1* 113) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ-ⲩⲱⲡⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 144c 24ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲑⲃⲃⲓⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ... Additional exx.: *III* 24.23 (focus: ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ), 76.8 (ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ), *Ch.* 136.41ff. (ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛ), *A 2* 499 (ϩⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ), *P* 130[2] 68 ⲣⲡ (ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-), 71 ⲣⲡⲋ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ-).

2.5 The circumstantial topicalization: # modifier/(pro)noun → circumstantial conjugation-form # — focalization pattern (5)

[100] Mentioned in passing by Polotsky 1944:44 (= *CP* 148), and (with reference to negation) in 1960a:§32. If one is to judge by these statements, Polotsky recognizes solely a # focus + Sec. Tense # pattern. See also Stern §521.

[101] See §§1.3.11.6, 7.3.1.

[102] Cf. Polotsky 1960a:§32.

2.5.0.1 As may be gathered from the topic and focus constituency lists, this pattern (not mentioned as such in the *Études* [103]) transcends or cuts across a double modular, historically founded dichotomy of Polotsky's: between the "substantival" (thematic) and "adverbial" (adjunctal) verb-forms [104], and between the two complementary Cleft Sentence patterns — one with initial (pro)nominal vedette (focus) and ⲡⲉⲧ- *glose* (theme/topic), and the other with initial Second-Tense theme and subsequent modifier focus [105]. This pattern could be considered separately as a lower-grade member in the focality paradigm, with its topic verging on a marked NON-INITIAL VERB-FORM. This is perhaps due to the devaluating effect of the inherently focal, hence (in terms of focality grading) not pertinent, interrogative pronouns or modifiers. (This is somewhat corroborated by the high incidence of ⲛϩⲗϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲙ "often", ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ "therefore", ⲕⲗⲗⲱⲥ "well" [106] and other, not characteristically focal premodifiers [107].)

2.5.0.2 Two constructions may belong here, which however stand apart: 'ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ', rarely ⲯⲁⲧⲛⲁⲩ "until when...?", followed by a circumstantial present or circumstantial negative perfect [108], and 'ⲉⲓⲥ + temporal expression + ⲉϥ-/ⲭⲓⲛⲧⲁ-'. (*A 2* 105) ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲏⲛⲉⲓⲃⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲛⲙⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ / (*III* 36.24f. = *Ch.* 132.26ff.) ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲅⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲡⲱϩ ⲛⲛⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ / (*P* 131⁴ 144 ⲣⲭⲏ) ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲅⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲛ+ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲕⲧⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*P* 131⁵ 47 ro) ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲛⲙⲏⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲛⲁⲯⲧϩⲏⲧ / (*K* 9068) ⲯⲁⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲙⲡϥⲧⲁⲛϩⲉⲧ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*Ryl. Cat.* 34, No. 70 ⲥⲙⲃ) ⲉⲓⲥⲁⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲭⲓⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲁϩⲟϥ / (*A 1* 71) ⲉⲓⲥϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲧⲛⲣ-ⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ. Although it is probable that these are true focalization patterns with the circumstantial, a thematic topicalization constituent, one cannot help feeling that the circumstantial is (also?) in a complementation or contentualization relationship with the focus. These constructions must be further investigated, with the syntax of time expressions in general.

2.5.1 Focus constituency: interrogatives: ⲁⲯ, ⲟⲩⲏⲣ; ⲛⲁⲯ ⲛϩⲉ, ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ; non-interrogative: numbers; ϩⲁϩ ⲛ-; ϩⲉⲛ-; (ⲛ)ϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲙ, ϩⲉⲛⲥⲟⲙ, ϩⲉⲛⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲟⲙ [109]; -ⲱⲥ-modifiers; ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-; ϩⲛ-; ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉ- [110];

[103] Cf. however 1944:48f. (= *CP* 152f.). See Shisha-Halevy 1972:§2.2.1.2, 1975:475f., 1976a:36f., 1976b:137, 1978. For the Cleft Sentence with *pronominal vedette* and circumstantial *glose*, cf. Browne 1978b, 1979b:202.

[104] Cf. Polotsky's most explicit and elaborate exposition of this thesis in 1976, also 1965 (esp. 99 47-50); an early sketch is 1944:91ff. (= *CP* 195ff.).

[105] See Polotsky 1944:57ff. (*CP* 161ff.). Striking analogies to the (partial) overlapping of the Cleft-Sentence patterns are to be found in the ongoing blurring of the functional boundaries of the *that/wh-/Ø-glose* markers in the English Cleft Sentence, *a-/y-* in Modern Welsh (in Gaelic, *a-* is the sole *glose*-marker). For some comparative notes on the circumstantial *glose*-form, see Polotsky 1944:59 (= *CP* 163) n. 2, Shisha-Halevy 1978:64ff. In a different approach, our circumstantial *glose* may be conceived of as a zero conversion or *conversion base* (cf. Shisha-Halevy 1972:§§2.1.3.1, 2.2.1.3, 2.3.1.2), thus perhaps analogous to the zero-marked *glose* in English: "It's on Wednesday the show opens". A third alternative would be the interpretation of the circumstantial as a *participle* form (cf. the Greek "Second Tenses", Rosén 1957, and Shisha-Halevy 1976c). A construction which recalls Gardiner's "missing link", namely a ⲡⲉⲧ-*glose* after an "adverbial" *vedette* (Gardiner, *JEA* 33:97f. [1947]) actually occurs in *Ryl.* 368 (*Cat.* 172).

[106] Cf. its native counterpart 'ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ + inf.', in which ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ is microsyntactically predicative, yet macrosyntactically thematic (see §7.1.3).

[107] Compare the devaluated status of the Welsh (Old to Modern) so-called "abnormal order" (as distinct from the "mixed order" or "mixed sentence", a true functionally operative Cleft Sentence): if any element other than the verb opens the clause, it is followed by a "phantom" relative: *Ef a welei carw* "He saw a stag", *At y cwn y doeth ef* "He went to [look at] the dogs", *Y march a gymerth* "*He accepted the horse*" (from the MW *Pedeir Keink Y Mabinogi*). Is our circumstantial also but a marked non-initial verb form?

[108] See (with reff.) Shisha-Halevy 1976b:361ff.; add some exx. quoted here, and the unpubl. non-Shenoutean yet Shenoute-emulating *BL Or.* 8811 ⲍⲏ, with Basic (neg.) Future.

[109] Zero-marked noun syntagm in modifier status, §1.3.2.

[110] Cf. §§1.3.11.6, 7.3.1.1.

ⲭⲓⲛⲉⲛⲉⲥ; circumstantial present. TOPIC constituency: (*affirmative topic*) ⲉⲁϥ-, ⲉⲟⲩⲛ-, (*negatived topic*, ⲉ(ⲛ)ϥ(ⲛⲁ)- ⲁⲛ; ⲉⲙⲡϥ-, ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ-, ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ, ⲉ + Nom. Sentence + ⲁⲛ. NEXUS: affirmative, negated (§2.9.2.3).

2.5.2 OBSERVATIONS. (1) ⲉⲁϥ-; POLOTSKY 1944:48f. (= *CP* 152f.)[111] offers two alternative explanations: it is either a true circumstantial topicalization or a Sahidic relic corresponding to Fayumic ⲁⲁϥ- (see *ibid.* 71 = *CP* 175; 94f. = *CP* 198f.). (Compare now the " Middle Egyptian " Second Perfect ⲉⲥⲁϥ-, which may still arguably be circumstantial in form.) With reference to synchronic and internal structure, I believe a circumstantial interpretation is inevitable. For ⲉⲁϥ- as a possible *prefocal* theme form, see §2.2, spec. obs. (5).

(2) ⲉⲙⲡϥ-; replacing ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡϥ- (POLOTSKY 1944:88f. = *CP* 192f., 1960a:§18), yet compare the Demotic *i.ir-bn.pn.f sdm* (POLOTSKY 1944:88 = *CP* 192, JOHNSON 1976:186f.). (3) ⲉⲛϥ — ⲁⲛ replaces ⲉⲧⲉⲛϥ — ⲁⲛ, still uniquely attested (POLOTSKY 1944:89 = *CP* 193). Incidentally, in all cases of a negatived topic, the arrangement factor is neutralized — the focus is always initial.

2.5.3 DOCUMENTATION [112]. *Affirmative nexus* — affirmative or neg. topic; mostly interrogative focus: (*Ryl. Cat.* 34 No. 70 ⲥⲙⲉ) ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲧⲩⲡⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲁⲩⲭⲟⲕⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ /(*A 1* 312) ⲁⲩ ⲛⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲡⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϯⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲱⲣⲭ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲍⲉ (This may be an instance of circumstantial + Sec. Perfect, §2.0.1.1.2, i.e. a topic comprising a whole included Cleft Sentence: " What people or what congregation did God *like us, firmly* teach? ") / (*Wess. 9* 147c 22f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲍⲁⲧⲉϥⲍⲏ / (*A 1* 305) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*Miss.* 278) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ / (*A 2* 155) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲕ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣϩⲩ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲓⲍⲓⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲍⲓⲃⲟⲥⲙ / (*P* 130[2] 47 ⲥⲕⲅ) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ· ⲉⲛϥⲛⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ... / (*Rossi 2/3* 76) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲃⲥ ⲁⲛ... ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱ, ⲏ ⲉⲛϥⲛⲁⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉϫⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ / (*P* 131[6] 117 vo) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲛϥⲛⲁⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*Wess. 9* 86b 21ff.) ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲣ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲍⲙⲍⲁⲗ... ⲉⲁϥⲣ-ⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ ⲍⲓⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲃⲓⲡⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*A 2* 301) ⲍⲉⲛⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲁⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ + ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲧⲙⲉ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲍⲁⲍ ⲣ-ⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ / (*A 2* 7) ⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲩⲁϫⲉ... ⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣⲍⲟⲩⲉϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲓⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ / (*A 1* 111) ⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲟⲩⲱⲩ (sim. *III* 145.25, 146.8, 147.9, 148.11ff. [113]) / (*A 2* 90) ⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲉⲁⲓϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲍⲙⲡⲁⲙⲕⲁⲍ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ... (sim. *Cat.* 42.25) / (*III* 206.4ff.) ⲍⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲍⲉⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲥⲙⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲍⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲁⲃ (sic) ⲍⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉ-ⲛⲟⲥ ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲓⲍⲉ ⲉⲁⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (sim. *A 1* 113 ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲍⲉⲛⲧⲱⲩ ⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ...) / (*III* 69.18f.) ⲧⲁ-ⲓⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲁⲩϫⲡⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁϩϫⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲓⲥⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲭⲣⲓⲁ / (*A 2* 318-19, coll.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲛϫⲱⲥⲙ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛ-ⲥⲱⲱϥ... ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲡⲁⲧϥⲃⲱⲗ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲛ (*v.l.* ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ-) / (*Wess. 18* 140b 8ff.) ⲍⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲩⲍⲏⲧ ⲅⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*Or.* 160.3ff.) ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲕ ⲱ ⲡⲙⲁⲓⲍⲏⲇⲟⲛⲏ ⲉϥⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉϫ-ⲧⲉϥⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*BMCat.* 92, No. 211 2 ro) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲁϥⲣ-ⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲟ / (*III* 56.17f.) ⲙⲉⲩⲁⲕ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉϥⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲥⲁ-ⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲉⲁϥⲍⲟⲡϥ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ.

Negated nexus - affirmative topic: (*Leyd.* 390) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲓⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲁⲡⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲍ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ϫⲉ- / (*Wess. 9* 106a 7ff.) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲥⲧⲙⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲏⲁⲏⲟⲩϥ... (cf. the parall. *P* 130[2] 71 ⲣⲡⲉ, quoted §2.6.2).

[111] Earlier discussions: STERN §423 (*Ming.* 119 = *III* 50.1, transl. as a Cleft Sentence with conditional *glose*); STEINDORFF 1904:§328 (" main clause "); LEVY 1909:§254 (" main clause "); SPIEGELBERG 1909:156f.; EDGERTON 1935:260; TILL §334 (" Sec. Tense ", following Polotsky).

[112] Some non-Shenoutean exx. for the circumstantial topic (see POLOTSKY 1944:48f. = *CP* 152f.): Besa *ed.* Kuhn 32.16 (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ), *BLOr.* 8811 ⲥⲁ (ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, *bis*), *Sap.* 16:1 (ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ) durative negative, ⲉⲛϥ(ⲛⲁ)-ⲁⲛ: *Rom.* 8:32 (Morgan; ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ), *II Cor.* 3:8 (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ), *Heb.* 2:11 (ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ), *Col.* 2:5 (ⲍⲛ-), *Eccles.* 8:16 (ⲍⲛ-).

[113] Note the specially high incidence of this pattern in Leipoldt's No. 40 (*III* 116-151, esp. 141ff.), with its numerous paragraphs introduced by ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ.

Additional exx.: *III* 207.21f. (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲉⲛⲩⲛⲁ -ⲁⲛ), 216.10 (ϫⲓⲛⲉⲛⲉⲥ ⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩ-), *A 2* 78, *A 1* 108, 463, *A 2* 13, 337 (all ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲉ + neg. Bip.); *A 2* 91, *III* 71.19f. Cod. C — all ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ + circ. Nom. Sentence); *A 1* 89 (ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲁ-), *III* 125.9ff. (ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- ⲉⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ, v.l. ⲁⲩ-, 1.12), so too *IV* 29.3ff.; etc.

2.6 The heterofocal second-tense/circumstantial construction: # modifier/(pro)noun → ⲉ + conjugation-form # — focalization pattern (6)

Here we must be content with pointing out the topicalization characteristic, which is a syncretism neutralization of the circumstantial and Second-Tense converters. We cannot resolve this ⲉ-, internally at least, although for some individual foci (esp. those with a low grading of focality, §2.5.0.1) one is tempted to identify the morph as circumstantial. In terms of segmental signalling, however, there is no escaping the fact that this is a case of neutralization [114].

2.6.1 Focus constituency. Interrogatives: ⲟⲩⲏⲣ; ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ, ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ, ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩ, ⲉⲧⲱⲛ; ⲡⲟⲥⲱ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ, ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ, ⲯⲁⲧⲛⲁⲩ (§2.5.0.2); non-interrogative: determinators (ⲟⲩ-, ⲥⲉⲛ-); numbers; ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, (ⲥⲣⲁⲓ, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ⲥⲛ-, ⲛ(ⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ), (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ⲥⲓⲧⲛ-, ⲥⲱⲥ-; ⲙⲙⲁⲩ, -ⲱⲥ-marked modifiers; ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ, ⲉⲓⲥ + time expression; circumstantial, conditional. Topic constituency: ⲉⲩ(ⲛⲁ)-, ⲉⲯⲁⲩ-, ⲉ- + adjective-verbs. Nexus: affirmative, negated (both focus and nexus negativing: §2.9.2.3) [115].

Documentation. *Affirmative nexus*: (*Ch.* 188.40ff.) ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲟⲗⲉ ⲥⲛⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ / (*A 2* 300) ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲯⲏ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*III* 207.8ff.) ⲥⲉⲛⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲥⲉⲛⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲁⲑⲏⲅⲉⲥⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲥⲉⲛⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛⲥⲉⲛⲥⲃⲟⲟⲩⲉ... ⲉⲣⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ (circumstantial? cf. 206.4ff. The low-focality focus and marked non-initial verb are here in evidence) / (*III* 69.13f.) ⲥⲁⲯⲏ ⲛⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲩ+-ⲡⲁⲥⲣⲉ / (*A 1* 96) ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧϫⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲏ ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲥⲛⲧⲉⲓⲃⲓⲛⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Ch.* 72.1ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲟⲩⲁⲥⲧ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ; ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛ+ⲛⲁⲟⲩⲁⲥⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄; / (*P* 130[5] 55 ⲛⲍ) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲉⲓⲛⲁϫⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲛ+ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ / (*A 1* 233) ⲉⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲛⲟϫⲕ, one term of a chiastic figure, see §2.6.3.1.2 (4) / (*Or.* 163.19ff.) ⲡⲟⲥⲱ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲉⲕⲛⲁ+ⲥⲟ... (sim. *Ch.* 74.54ff., 119.30ff., *III* 97.24 etc.) / (*Ch.* 135.44f.) ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ / (*IV* 14.10f.) ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲯⲁⲕⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲕⲃⲱⲛⲧ / (*Mun.* 96) ⲉⲓⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ " It is daringly I am saying this " / (*A 2* 476) ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ.

Negative nexus - affirmative topic, negatived focus or nexus: (*Ch.* 38.35ff.) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲧⲃⲁⲯⲟⲣ ⲁⲯⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ... ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲧⲣⲣⲉ "It is not when the fox cries out that the lion is afraid" (the all-important ⲁⲛ is omitted in the parallel *III* 79.4ff.) / (*A 2* 519) ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲥⲩⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ, ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲛⲁ+-ⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲣ-ⲥⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ... / (*IV* 117.23) ⲛⲛⲉⲛ+ⲯⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛϫⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ " It is not shaming you that we tell you this " / (*A 1* 114) ⲙⲏ ⲥⲱⲥⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ.

More exx.: *III* 199.23f. (ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛ- ⲉⲣⲉ-), 72.2f. (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉ-), *A 2* 333 (ⲥⲛ- ⲉⲩ-), *III* 70.7 (ⲩⲧⲟ ⲛ- ⲉⲩ-), *P* 130[4] 122 ⲁⲃ (ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲩ-), *Rossi 2/3* 86, *A 2* 413, 338, *III* 46-7 *passim*,

[114] Not that extra-Sahidic evidence is of great help. On the one hand, Akhmimic instances point to a Second Tense (' ⲁⲩ-ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙⲉ '): *Ex.* 7:1 (ⲛⲉϩ ⲛϩⲉ), *Clem.* (Schmidt) 46.5 (ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟ), *Prov.* 7:20 (ⲥⲓⲧⲛ-), 11:31 (ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ), *Gespr. Jesu* 9.11f. (ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲉⲕⲉ-ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ). Compare now the clear " Middle Egypt. " evidence for the Sec. Tense (e.g. *Mt.* 12:26, 29, 34), also Fayumic-ME *Joh.* 13:28 (ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲁϩⲁⲩ-) and (late) Bohairic exx. of ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲏ+ ⲁⲩⲛⲁ- etc. (*Mon. of Macarius* 31.7 ϩⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲟ ⲁⲓⲛⲁ-). Polotsky 1934:64 (= *CP* 369), 1960a:§37b interprets ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ (*Ch.* 135.44f.) as Second Tense (also 1960a:§32, *Ch.* 38.35ff.; 1944:39, 44 = *CP* 143, 148). On the other hand, one finds in Akhmimic ample evidence for ⲉ- as a post-focal topic characteristic (cf. Till 1928:§218j). This is common in *Gespräche Jesu* (ⲡⲱⲥ-ⲉⲕ- 10.2, ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟ-ⲉⲕ- 32.1, ⲛⲉϩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ- 25.8, ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲉ- 30.10f., 38.10). Compare in *Clemens* ⲉ- for the *initial* topic (our patt. 2), when occurring after an extraposition, i.e. prominent topicalization of the actor/object: 7.1, 19.1, 20.5, 20.8. At any rate, the Sahidic situation must be judged internally.

[115] For ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ see discussion and more evidence in §2.6.3-4. For ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ see §1.3.1.2; for -ⲱⲥ- modifiers, §1.3.11.1.

IV 109.8f. (all ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ/ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉϥ-); *III* 114.13, *IV* 33.22 (ϩⲛⲛⲁⲓ, ϩⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲩ-, ⲉⲩⲁ-), *A 2* 342 (ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧ= / ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧ= ⲉⲩⲁⲣⲉ-), *IV* 161.12 (ⲙⲙⲁⲩ), *A 1* 107 (ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲛⲁ-), *A 2* 147 (ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉ- ⲛⲁ-).

2.6.2 An unmarked member of the focalization paradigm: # modifier → basic tense #. This is, of course, the case only when the context warrants the distinction from the *non-focal premodifier* (see §1.1.2.2). With the proviso that suprasegmental features, unknown to us, probably constitute the most prominent feature of this pattern, one may say that here the topic is (segmentally) marked only by position — this being morphologically a zero-member of the post-focal topicalization paradigm. Focus constituency: the listing cannot be even attempted here (for certain foci — ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ — the complementary relationship of this pattern with the others will be treated at length in §2.6.3-4[116]). We find here interrogative and non-interrogative prepositional phrases (notably ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ϩⲓⲧⲛ-, ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ). Topic constituency: most frequently ⲁϥ-/ⲙⲡϥ-, ⲩⲁϥ-, ⲛϥ(ⲛⲁ)- ⲁⲛ. The nexus is affirmative or negated (nexus or focus negativing, §2.9.2.4).

Documentation (speciminal). *Affirmative nexus*: (*A 2* 305) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁ+-ⲥⲟ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ / (*A 2* 334) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧ+-ϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ... ⲁⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ / (*P* 130[5] 70 ⲡⲏ) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲧⲛϫⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ / (*III* 199.27f.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲧⲙⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲓⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ.

Negated nexus: (*P* 130[2] 71 ⲣⲡⲉ) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲥⲙⲛⲧ (sic, for -ⲥⲧⲙⲏⲧ) ⲁⲛ ⲁⲛⲁⲓ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲏⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ, ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (cf. the parall. *Wess. 9* 106a 7ff. with ⲉⲁ- topics) / (*A 1* 353) ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ (sim. 88, 366, 354, *Ch.* 139.19f., *III* 55.14f., 56.13) / (*A 1* 125) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲛϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲓⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ + ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*IV* 156.26f.) ⲉⲛⲉⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ, ⲛⲉⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ.
A focalization pattern as unfulfilled-condition protasis, with the topic resuming the irrealis function already signalled for the whole clause: (*P* 131[4] 158 ro) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛⲧⲅⲟⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛⲧⲉϫⲁⲣⲓⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ϫⲉ... ⲧⲅⲟⲙ... ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲛ̄ⲛ̄ⲁ̄ ⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲥⲩⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ.

2.6.3 A selective examination of foci:
Aiming for a complex, full-dimensional paradigmatic picture of the patterns introduced in §§2.4-6, I shall now present the evidence from a different angle: *topic alternation for a constant given focus*. For this purpose, two foci are chosen, no doubt statistically the best represented of their kind: ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ " why? " and ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ " how? " [117]. Since they feature also in the topic-initial pattern (2), this too must be integrated in the picture and related to the focus-initial patterns. A third, rather peculiar interrogative focus examined here for its topic paradigm is ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ " whence? ", " on what grounds? ".

2.6.3.1.1 ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ in *focus-initial* patterns. This is indubitably the usual placement. The topic is (a) a basic tense, for (1) *affirmative/negative* non-durative (tripartite) conjugation (ⲁϥ-/ⲙⲡϥ-, ⲩⲁϥ-, ⲩⲱⲉ), also nominal sentences, (2) *negatived* bipartite conjugation, (3) (specially conditioned) *affirmative* bipartite conjugation. Topic (b) is morphologically marked: (1) ⲉ- (*circumst./Second*): ⲉϥ(ⲛⲁ)-, ⲉⲩⲁϥ-, ⲉ- + adj.-verb; (2) *circumstantial* (affirm./neg.): ⲉ(ⲛ)ϥ(ⲛⲁ)- ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲟⲩⲛ-,ⲉ- + Nom. Sentence, ⲉⲁϥ- (for ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ, n. 117). Note that (3) Sec. Tense ⲛⲧⲁϥ-, patt. (4), is not attested.

Assorted representative examples: a (1) *III* 199.27f., *Ch.* 76.40f., *Wess. 9* 118a 23f., *A 1* 68, *A 2* 458 (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲩⲁⲣⲉ-), *A 2* 69 (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ + neg. Nom. Sent.), *A 2* 19-20 (ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲩⲱⲉ neg.) etc.; a (2) *III* 102

[116] For several instances of this pattern in configuration with others, esp. (5)-(6), see 9.2.7.3.

[117] ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ, incomparably less well attested, still gives in miniature the same distributional picture: a (1) *RE 11*[1] 16a 15f., *A 1* 2, *A 2* 114; b (1) *Ch.* 135.44f., *III* 72.2f., *IV* 10.4, 23.2, *A 1* 175; b (2) *Wess. 9* 86b 21ff., *A 1* 89 (ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲁ-).

passim, *IV* 99.24f., 42.16f., *Ch.* 64.2ff. etc.; a (3) instances are mostly classifiable as follows (some fall into more than one category):

A. QUOTATIONS or REMINISCENCES of Scripture texts [118]: *RE 11* 18b 25f., *Wess. 9* 148b 2f., *Ench.* 66a, *Wess. 9* 171d 7f., *Cl. Pr.* 44 KH-Θ, *A 2* 342 (an adaptation of *Mt.* 15:18f. and *Marc.* 7:21); NAϢ NƵЄ NTϢTN TЄTNAP-BOA... *BMCat.* 83 (No. 199 TƵA), cf. *III* 51.3f., 65.12, *Ch.* 169.7ff.; *Mt.* 23:23, *Heb.* 2:3; also (non-scriptural) arguments attributed to persons other than Shenoute: *Ryl.* 69 NГ, *A 2* 430 (not Sh.).

B. Instances of striking RHETORICITY and pathos: "proforma" or pseudo-topicalization; sometimes, with the flavour of Bible text. Note in particular *series of multiple questions*: (*A 2* 388-9) ЄTBЄOY KO NƵMƵAA... ЄTBЄOY KƵYПOTACCЄ... AYW KCOПC... ЄTBЄOY KCMOY ЄNCWNT NTПЄ, KGWϢT AЄ ON ЄBOA / (*A 2* 351-2) ЄTBЄOY NTOOYN ПPWME P-ΘYCIA AYW ЧNA; ЄTBЄOY AЄ ON ЧϢAHA AYW ЧNHCTЄYЄ; ЄTBЄOY ЧACKЄI... AYW ЧP-ΔI-KAIOCYNH; ЄTBЄOY ЄЧNAP-ПICTOC... AYW ЄTBЄOY ЄNϢП-ƵICЄ... H ЄTBЄOY AЄ ЄPЄПPWME NAXITЧ NGONC ... H ЄTBЄOY ЧOYWWME MMOЧ / (*Or.* 156.7ff.) ЄTBЄOY KƵWC NTϢWTЄ MПЄTƵITOYWЧ H KϢOPϢP MMOC / (*A 2* 146) ЄTBЄOY ЄKO NKPOЧ AYW KXIOYЄ AYW KϢWA H ЄKKW NƵTHK...

C. ЄTBЄOY with Basic Bipartite IN APODOSI (similarly rhetorical topicalization?): (*A 1* 265) ЄNЄЧNA†-ƵHY AN ЄPOOY, NAϢ NƵЄ ЧNAXOOC XЄ- / (*A 1* 239) (ЄNЄMПЄ...) NAϢ NƵЄ KNAЄP-NOЄIK ЄTƵIME MПЄTƵITOYWK / (*P* 130[4] 103 PKB) ЄϢXЄ-ПGЄPWB ƵNNЄNGIX AYW TCHЧЄ, ЄTBЄOY ПMOYI MNПOYWNϢ TWPП MПЄCOOY... ЄϢXЄ-ANON-ƵЄNCABЄЄY... ЄTBЄOY TNПAPABA MПƵAП / (*BLOr.* 3581A 71, No. 202 PПΔ) (ЄϢXЄ...) NAϢ NƵЄ ПCWMA H ПPWME THPЧ NACMINЄ H ЧNAPANAЧ MПЄNTAЧTAMIOЧ.

D. Several instances of OYN-/MN- before the durative (almost in complementary distribution with ЄPЄ-): (*A 2* 483) NAϢ NƵЄ OYNPWME AYW OYNCƵIME NAϢWПЄ ƵNOYTBBO, also *Ench.* 80a, *Or.* 157.39ff.

TOPIC b (1) *Wess 9* 144c 15ff., *Ch.* 28.13f.,34f., *III* 31.13f., *IV* 49.25f., *Or.* 156.21ff., 166.14ff.; b (2) *Wess. 9* 147c 22f. (NAϢ NƵЄ ЄOYN + pres.), *III* 207.21f. (NAϢ NƵЄ ЄNЧ — AN), *Miss.* 278 (NAϢ NƵЄ + Є- Nom. Sent.), *Rossi 2*/3 76 (NAϢ NƵЄ ПXOЄIC NANOYGC AN... H ЄNЧNAPAϢЄ AN...), *III* 71.19f., *A 2* 78.

2.6.3.1.2 ЄTBЄOY, NAϢ NƵЄ in TOPIC-INITIAL pattern (2). This construction, statistically weaker than the preceding ones in *Leipoldt* and *Chassinat* [119] (approx. 33% for NAϢ NƵЄ, less than 10% for ЄTBЄOY) is *marked*, i.e. can be shown to be subject to statements of special conditions. In the great majority of cases — *condition 1* — it is INCLUDED as marked by XЄ-, a characterization of macro-syntactic status [120]

[118] Compare §7.2.1.1.5.1 for a similar convergence of rhetoricity/quotedness; §2.6.3.1.2 for rhetoricity/apodoticity/quotedness.

[119] Not counting the basically different instances of - O NAϢ NƵЄ ("how is...?") where the '*topic* → *focus*' arrangement is obligatory, i.e. unopposed to a focus-initial construction. Moreover, the focality grading is here different: N- marks the *predicative complement* (*adnexal modifier*) of the "copular" (i.e. incomplete-predication) - O -. This, I believe, is the most important distinction between the two phrases 'NAϢ NƵЄ'. Some Shenoutean exx. for -O NAϢ NƵЄ: *III* 74.7, 103.13, *IV* 6.17, 37.20f., 98.12, 155.2f., *Mun.* 110, *Or.* 154.39f. etc.

[120] Cf. POLOTSKY 1934:63f. (= *CP* 368f.), LAYTON 1979:187f. I believe that his statement, to the effect that in indirect questions we have a Second Tense with ЄTBЄOY, skips an all-important descriptive step, namely the conditioning of arrangement. Also, "postverbal whenever a Second Tense is used" (188) is simply an inversion of terms: a Second Tense is used in the topic-initial patterns. We must here observe the following *descriptive order*: (1) arrangement ruling, (2) topic-form selection ruling. A similar inversion of these terms occurs in WILSON's statement (1970:78 n. 3): "Questions with Future III which place the main stress of the sentence on the adverbial extension usually avoid putting the interrogative at the head of the sentence". I see both arrangements as constituting distinct focalization patterns: see §2.6.4. Historically speaking, this conditioning may be described as a preservation, in an "island" of special macrosyntactic circumstances, of the original '*topic* → *focus*' arrangement, the "renewed", inverted focus-initial pattern being restricted to the complementary circumstances. Synchronically, this is of course the Shenoutean situation: it is (as a random check of Wilmet's references for ЄTBЄOY and NAϢ NƵЄ quickly shows) quite different from that prevailing in the New Testament.

(ⲭⲉ-included focus-initial ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ/ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ are rare: about 3% of all initial attestations for ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ, 13% for ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ). Here belong probably also cases of pre-inclusion — see (4) below; circumstantial conversion of the whole focalization pattern, see §2.0.1.1.2, and adverbal expanding focalization pattern (the -ⲱⲛ-Sec.-Tense constr. type, §2.8.3). *Condition 2* is another, probably related macro-syntactic characterization: 'THEMATIC PROGRESSION §§2.0.2.4, 2.7.2), with resuming and linking topicalization of a verb occurring previously. *Condition 3* concerns yet another macro-syntactic relationship: ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ/ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ *in apodosi*, esp. of ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- (which is after all more of a topicalization marker than a true conditional), also of ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲛ " otherwise " [121]. *Condition 4*: certain RHETORICAL configurations: rhetorical questions, chiasm, " proforma " topicalization, pre-inclusion (§2.7.1.4.2), and multiple focalization (ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ corresponding to other post-topic interr. foci). *Condition 5*: Scripture QUOTATIONS or REMINISCENCES or emulation of Scriptural (archaic, authoritative) style. Note however that for topic categories a (1) (neg.), a (2), b (2) (neg.) — that is, for the negative topic (the *nexus* is here invariably affirmative) — the arrangement is not pertinent. A negative topic does not occur as Second Tense, but only as Basic or circumstantial, and then only post-focally.

DOCUMENTATION: (1) ⲭⲉ-*inclusion*: *A 1* 71 (after ⲭⲱ), *A 2* 251 (ⲉⲓⲱⲣⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ), *A 2* 257 (ⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ), 516 (ⲉⲓⲙⲉ), 541 (ⲛⲁⲩ), *P* 130² 70 ⲣⲡⲅ (+-ⲍⲧⲏⲕ) ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ / 130⁵ 90 ro (ⲛⲁⲩ) ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲫⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲓ-ⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ / *Ch.* 55.24ff. (ⲁⲛⲁⲩ), *IV* 156.19f. (ⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ), 188.10f. (ⲩⲓⲏⲉ), 12f. (ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ), etc. etc.; this construction is very common.

(2) *Thematic progression*: (*Ch.* 199.23ff.) ⲡⲁⲏⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲍⲧⲏⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ; ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲍⲧⲏⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ / (*BMCat.* 81, No. 197) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲧ+ ⲉⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲫⲛⲁ+ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 73.4ff.) ' ⲁⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ' ⲛⲧⲁϥⲃⲱⲕ ⲍⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ — *lemmatizing* topicalization, §2.7.2.

(3) *In apodosi*: (*A 2* 19) (If they spare one, many will do so and transgress the law; if so,) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 194) ... ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ / (*A 1* 69) (ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲉⲥⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲣ-ⲩⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ, ⲏ ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲱ ⲣ-ⲩⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲛⲧⲟ) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲩⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ (ⲉ)ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲣ-ⲩⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ.

(4) *Rhetorical configurations*: (*A 2* 385) ⲏ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲩⲟⲩⲩⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲡⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ / (*A 1* 158) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲱⲓ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲛⲁ+-ⲱⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ — a chiastic *disiunctio Sinuthiana* figure / (*P* 131⁴ 87 ⲣⲗⲁ-ⲃ) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲅⲟⲡϥ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ... ⲁⲣⲁ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ... / (*A 2* 530) ⲉⲥⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲍ ⲏⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲍⲙⲡⲏⲓ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲩ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉ+ⲛⲁⲍⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ / (*III* 15.21) ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲭⲉ... — idiom? sim. *A 1* 61 / (*P* 130⁴ 84 ⲛ) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲱⲭⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ· ⲛ+ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲁⲣⲁⲅⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ· ⲙⲡⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ — pre-inclusion focalization figure / (*A 1* 71) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲩⲁⲍⲉⲣⲁⲧⲛ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣϩⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ / (*III* 207.14ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲁⲅⲱⲩⲧ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲍⲣⲁϥ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ... ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲡⲟⲩⲍⲟ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲧⲱⲛ... ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲁⲅⲱⲩⲧ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲍⲣⲁϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲩⲟⲣⲡ ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ / (*A 1* 62-3) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲁⲍⲉ ⲉⲡⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲍ ⲧⲱⲛ... ⲏ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲱⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ. In (*Ming.* 318) ⲧⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲡⲛ- [...] ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲥⲥⲩⲛⲍⲓⲥⲧⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ (ⲉ)ⲛⲧⲁⲩ-ⲭⲓ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ " Of the interest we do not (know) in what wedlock it is begotten, having been conceived in what way " we witness a case of the circumstantial conversion of a pattern (2) focalization construction (§2.0.1.1.2) — here too the non-initial placement of ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ is evidently conditioned; cf. category (1) above.

(5) (*A 1* 80) ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲛⲁⲃⲁⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲍⲙⲡⲁⲩⲗⲏⲗ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲍⲏⲕⲉ.

[121] Cf. SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:§4.1.4.1 (on ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲛ as circumstantial conversion of ⲙⲙⲟⲛ " no, not "). Cf. now the clearly circumstantial ⲉⲙⲁⲛ " otherwise " in " Middle Egyptian " Coptic (*Mt.* 6:1, 9:17; Schenke).

2.6.3.2 The idiosyncratic ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ "whence?", "on what ground?", "how come?" enters the following constructions, with the topic paradigm following it including several members absent in other post-focal environments:

(a) (*initial*)		ⲁϥ-	*A 2* 111, 140, 334... (unmarked topic)
		ⲉϥⲛⲁ-	*P* 131[5] 42 ro, *RE 10* 162b 25f., *A 2* 54
		ⲉϥ-	*A 1* 64, *III* 72.2f.
ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ		ⲉⲟⲩⲛ-	*A 2* 412
		ⲛⲧⲁϥ-	*Wess. 9* 131a 2ff. [122]
	ⲭⲉ-ⲁϥ-		*P* 130[4] 120 ⲕⲏ
	ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ-		*A 1* 67
	ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲉ-		*Ryl.* 69 ⲝ, *A 2* 62.
	ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲛⲁ-		*A 2* 9, *III* 87.7, 26.18ff., etc.
(ⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ)	ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲛⲁ-		*A 2* 8 (coll.) [123]
	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-		*III* 19.20f. [123]

(b) (*non-initial*) ⲭⲉ + Sec. Tense + ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ *A 1* 281, *Cl. Pr.* 38, 1 [124], *IV* 64.23.

Some representative examples: (*A 2* 140) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲏⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲉ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲟⲩⲯϥ / (*A 2* 54) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲓϩⲃⲏⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲕⲁⲕⲉ ϩⲓⲃⲟⲥⲙ ... ⲏⲁⲃⲗⲟⲙⲁⲙ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ / (*P* 130[5] 48 vo) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲁϥⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ / (*A 2* 412) ⲉⲙⲛⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲇⲉ ⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲏ ⲯⲁϩ ⲛⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ / (*A 1* 64) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 131a 2ff.) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϩⲱⲣⲓⲅⲉⲛⲏⲥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ... / (*P* 130[4] 120 ⲕⲏ) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲱⲩⲭⲏ ⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲉⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ / (*A 2* 9) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲁⲁⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲉⲓⲱⲧ / (*A 2* 8 coll.) ⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ / (*A 2* 62) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ-ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ.

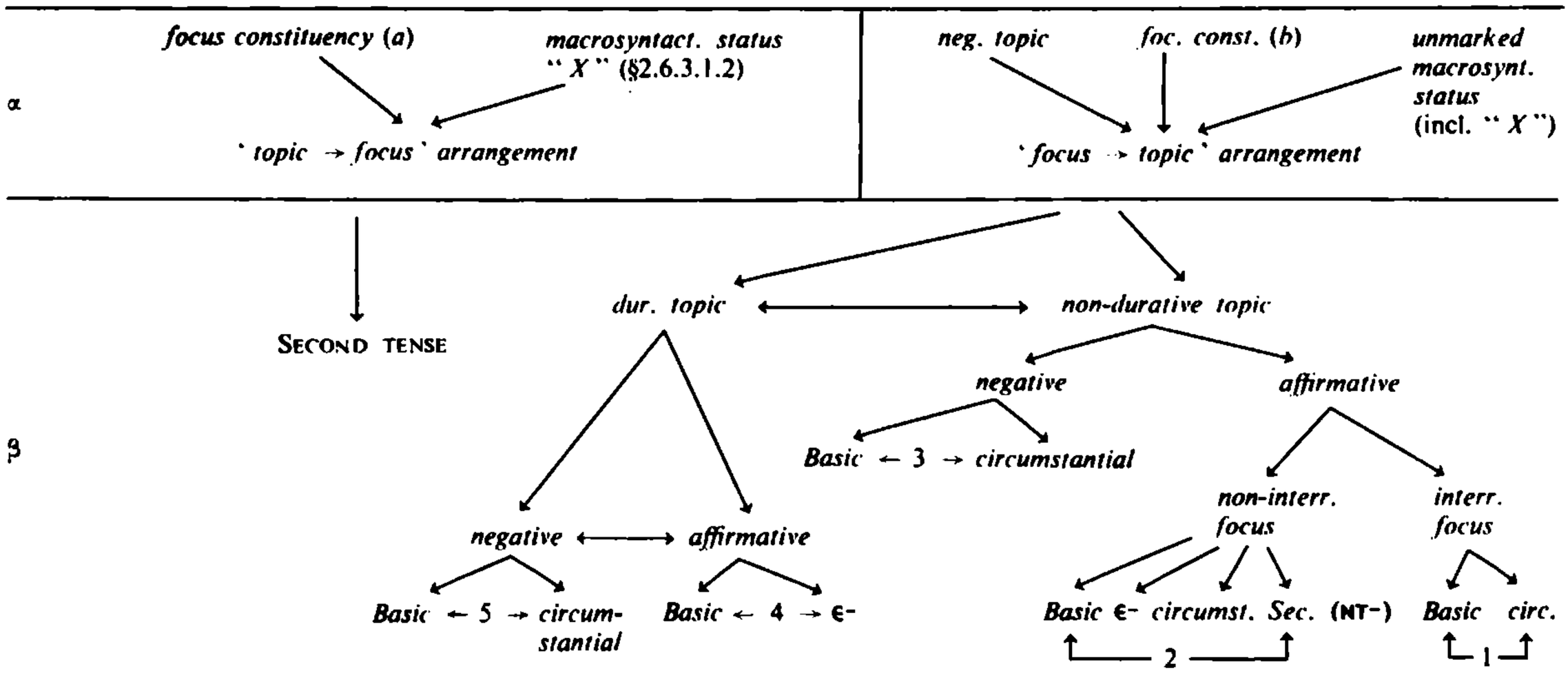
2.6.4 Focus-initial patterns: structural assignment and evaluation. The following chart and tables are based on the data presented in §§2.4–2.6.3. They are fairly complex yet not entirely satisfactory in accounting for functional intricacies. To understand correctly the relationships of pattern form and topic constituency, one must resort to proper *descriptive ordering*.

(a) Descriptive-order ("multiple-choice") flow chart (⟶: conditioning or entailement; "no opposition". ⟷: opposition; choice or selection).

[122] ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ proves the exception to the non-interrogative constituency of the focus in pattern (4).

[123] ⲭⲉ- and ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- may be understood either as true "that"-form topicalizations, albeit with a distinct *prospective* colouring (not unlike the "prospective emphatic" in Old and Middle Egyptian, Polotsky 1969:473ff., 1976:§2.7; cf. the analogous Greek use of ἵνα (νά), Jannaris §§1774b, 1911, pp. 566, 577). Compare the Akhmimic (*Gespr. Jesu* 32.11f.) ⲛⲉϩ ⲅⲉ ⲛϩⲉ ⲁⲧⲉⲡⲟⲩⲉ ⲡⲟⲩⲉ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛⲉ ⲣⲡⲓϩⲁⲙⲧ... In ⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-, ⲭⲉ- is appositive to the pronominal subject in the # modifier + ⲡⲉ# predication pattern (§1.2.1.2).

[124] Rarely, we find ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲛ following the Basic "*imperfectum futuri*" (*in apodosi*), §2.7.3.



That is to say, we obtain five environments with five paradigms which must be expounded, at least *prima facie*. Closer inspection shows we can eliminate the very rare opposition (1), practically also (3).

(b) NEUTRALIZATIONS/OPPOSITIONS IN GIVEN ENVIRONMENTS/CIRCUMSTANCES

topic form	*Basic Tense*	*Second Tense*	*circumstantial*	ϵ- (Sec. + circ.)
Basic Tense		non-interr. perf. affirm. (2)	non- dur. affirm. interr. (1) non-interr. affirm. (2) negative (3) (5)	affirm. dur. (4) non-dur. affirm. non-interr. ЧАЧ- (2)
Second Tense	perfect affirm. non-interr. (2)		non-dur. affirm. non-interr. (2)	
circumstantial	non-dur. affirm. interr. (1) non-interr. affirm. (2) dur., non-dur. negative (3) (5)	non-dur. affirm. non-interr. (2)		
ϵ- (circumst. + Sec.)	non-dur. affirm. non-interr. ЧАЧ- (2) dur. affirm. (4)			

(c) SIGNIFICANT DISTINCTIONS (FOCUS-INITIAL PATTERNS):

	affirm.: *neg.* TOPIC	*interr.*: *non-interr.* FOCUS	*affirm.*: *neg.* NEXUS
non-durative topic	+	+	—
durative topic	+	—	—

(d) INTERPRETATION. We note the existence of two separate, independent but successive conditioning sets at play: (α) PATTERN (arrangement) CONDITIONING, (β) TOPIC-FORM CONDITIONING. The " outputs " (a provisional one, of arrangement; a final one, of topic form) give us five paradigms or opposition environments. (1) The circumstantial member is extremely rare as compared with the bulk (dozens of occurrences) of the Basic Tense. (2) ⲁϥ- has a full three-member paradigm, ⲩⲁϥ-, a two-member one. (Note that focus constituency may also be operative.) Basic Tenses are opposed to converted ones as unmarked:marked topics (for the Nom. Sentence the circumstantial is the only way of marking). ⲉⲁϥ- may be opposed to ⲛⲧⲁϥ- as low-focality (or non-initial verb) marking *vs.* high-focality marking topicalization. Alternatively, the circumstantial belongs perhaps to a more colloquial system. (3) Here again circumstantial instances are very rare, and cannot be viewed as on a functional par with the Basic Tense. (4) Stylistic characterization? (5) See (2). Note that for the interrogative focus, topic-marking is redundant (focality being inherent).

2.7 STYLISTIC SYNTAX: COTEXT PATTERNS, " FIGURES ". In internal, non-contrastive view, " style " and " syntax " cannot be kept apart. The idiosyncratic realization of the grammatical potential of the *langue*, i.e. the idiolectal grammatical norm, is nothing but the writer's/speaker's style. This is no less true of macro-syntax: favoured or distinctive sub-textual stretches and configurations are nonetheless part and parcel of the functional system of grammar. In the following pages I review some of the familiar and recurring Shenoutean figures — those germane to the subject under discussion. Beyond the significance of their formal definition and their diagnostic value for identifying the Shenoutean text [125], they have some importance in an as yet non-existent frame of reference, that of COPTIC STYLISTICS.

2.7.1 RHETORICAL FOCALIZATION FIGURES

2.7.1.1 THE SECOND-TENSE THEME/TOPIC AND THE CIRCUMSTANTIAL FOCUS — patts. (2), (5), (6). Note in particular (a) the " *Wechselsatz* " or correlative " balanced " construction effect [126], where we have two ⲉϥ-forms juxtaposed, and pattern (i.e. topic/focus) assignment is impossible and immaterial — the *topic* - *focus* structure is reversible: (*A 1* 68) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲟⲗⲗⲉ, ⲉⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ ⲛⲧⲟ, ⲏ ⲉⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲏ ⲑⲏⲣⲧⲛ... ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓ, ⲏ ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲁ ⲍⲁⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲁ. Also, instances of the type (*Mun.* 96) ⲉⲓⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ and (*Wess. 9* 158a 30ff.) ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ / (*P* 130² 121 vo) ⲙⲡⲣⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲓⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲏ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲍⲱⲥⲥⲟⲛ

[125] For some equally distinctive syntactic phenomena, see §§0.1.2, 2.7 *passim* and the index.
[126] Cf. POLOTSKY 1964:281f. (= *CP* 66f.), 1969:471f.; JUNGE 1978:115ff.; VERNUS 1981 (esp. 74ff.).

(*III* 122.20) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲉⲓⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ / (*RE 11* 16a 39ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ (ⲉ)ⲛⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲁⲛ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ (ⲉ)ⲛⲁⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ̀ⲥⲟⲩⲟ.

(b) Instances of the " No sooner... than... " sense of the complex [127]: (*Ch.* 202-3) ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩ+ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥ̀ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ ⲉⲩⲁⲥⲱⲟⲩ " (... Walking heavily in his eagerness;) and no sooner does he get the opportunity to aid somebody in need than he (walks) more lightly ".

2.7.1.2 Two complementary focalization patterns, coordinated/disjoined: Second-Tense construction, patt. (2) + Cleft Sentence with nominal/pronominal focus [128]. This is very common; the rhetorical effect of this juxtaposition of the focus-initial and theme/topic-initial patterns is of course *chiastic*. Often, these are *Disiunctio Sinuthiana* cases: (*A 2* 409) ⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲩ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ / (*A 1* 52) ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲣ-ⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ+ⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ / (*A 2* 378) " ⲉⲓⲕⲱ ⲛ̀ⲥⲧⲏⲓ ⲉⲡⲱⲛⲉ " — " ⲡⲣⲏ ⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲣ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ " / (*Ench.* 67a) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲱⲓⲃⲉ ⲥ̀ⲛⲟⲩ; ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲱⲓⲃⲉ / (*ibid.* 74b) ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲏⲡ ⲉⲡⲱⲛⲥ̀ — ⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙⲧ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲥ̀ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲥⲛⲉ / (*RE 10* 163a 15f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲩ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥ̀ⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲉⲕⲥⲧⲁⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲕⲓⲙ ⲉⲡⲕⲁⲥ̀ ⲧⲏⲣⲩ / (*III* 192.4) ⲉⲩⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ...

2.7.1.3.1 Double simultaneous (interrogative) focalization: (*Cat.* 42.27f.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ [129] / (*Wess. 9* 110a 9f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟⲩ ⲉⲏⲓⲙ / (*A 2* 63) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ⲱⲟⲣⲡ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ / (*ibid.* 518-9) ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲓⲙⲉ... ϫⲉ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲩⲓ ⲥ̀ⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲏ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧ-ⲥ̀ⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲓⲙ / (*RE 10* 160a 37) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲉⲩⲧ-ⲛⲓⲙ. Compare (*Ch.* 128.43ff.) ⲁⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲉⲡⲓⲥⲕⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛ̀ⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲏ ⲙⲡⲓⲙⲁ.

2.7.1.3.2 Compare the extremely common complex (expanded, disjoined) focus: (*A 1* 64) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉⲓϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 8-9) ⲛⲁⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛ̀ⲥⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲟⲩⲏⲓ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 312) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩ ⲛ̀ⲥⲱⲃ (sim. 223-4, *III* 214.5) / (*Miss.* 283) ⲥ̀ⲁⲥ̀ⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲥ̀ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲏⲓ / (*Wess. 9* 151c 24ff.) ⲉϫⲛⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉϫⲛⲛⲓⲙ / (*A 1* 109) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲥ̀ⲁⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ / (236) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥ̀ⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ / (412) ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥ̀ⲓⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ (sim. *P* 131[6] 14 vo) / (*III* 72.2f.) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲥ̀ⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ (mostly striking instances of the *figura Sinuthiana*).

2.7.1.3.3 Complex theme (see §2.8.4), very common: (*A 2* 45) ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛ̀ⲥⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲱⲁⲩ... ⲏ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲣⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲧⲙⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲛⲁ+-ⲥ̀ⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 525) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲃⲱⲕ... ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*Leyd.* 410) ⲉϫⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲏ-ⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲥ̀ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲓⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛ-ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲱⲛⲉ ⲉⲥ̀ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲩ. Chiastically, (*Ch.* 119.445ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩⲥ̀ⲏⲧ ⲟⲩⲟⲱⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲕⲏⲩ (" discontinuous theme "); sim. *Ch.* 128.20ff.; compare also the conjunctive subcategorizing the theme (Ch. 7; e.g. *Ch.* 85.26ff., 89.18ff.).

2.7.1.4.1 The indirect or " disguised " focus, with the interrogative included in an expansion of the Second-Tense verb (note again the compatibility of the *nucleus* - *satellite* and *theme* - *rheme* relationships). (*A 2* 413) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲱⲃⲧⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ / (*IV* 105.5) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓ ⲉⲥ̀ⲟⲩⲛ ⲱⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲛϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ / (*Wess. 9* 117a 5f.) ⲉⲩⲛⲁϫⲓⲧⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲩ ⲛⲛⲓⲙ. Note the Basic Tense in (*Wess. 9* 133b 10ff.) ⲁⲩⲥ̀ⲉ ⲉⲥ̀ⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲟⲩⲡⲉⲗⲁⲅⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲟⲟⲧ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ / (*P* 130[2] 103 ro) ⲉⲩⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲣ-ⲟⲩ (sim. *IV* 94.13; *A 2* 513 ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉⲥ̀ⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲣ-ⲟⲩ).

2.7.1.4.2 The preincluded focalization construction is a very distinctive figure. There is

[127] Cf. Polotsky 1957b:114f. (= *CP* 48f.), 1964:277 (= *CP* 62) n. 1; de Cenival 1972:43f.; Vernus 1981:78ff.; Blass 1960:5f. (with bibl., 6 n. 1): " Zwei Geschehen folgen einander so rasch, daß sie gleichzeitig werden: das ist schon eine Hyperbel. Wie können wir sie verstärken, wie noch mehr übertreiben? " See also Paul 1920:§210; Jespersen *MEG* V §21.2.10, and numerous discussions for individual languages. Note ⲉⲱⲁⲩ- ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ- in the same sense, *IV* 20.12f. (" No sooner does the sun rise than the lamp is removed ").

[128] Cf. Polotsky 1944:62ff. (= *CP* 166ff.).

[129] Cf. Plato *Republ.* 332 c-d: ἡ τίσιν οὖν τί ἀποδιδοῦσα ὀφειλόμενον καὶ προσῆκον τέχνη.

here no formal marking of the dependence, beside the arrangement, which is inverse to the normal nucleus-satellite one in Coptic. (*P* 130² 74 ⲣⲭⲇ, parall. *Wess. 9* 108b 23ff.) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲭⲛⲁⲁⲁϥ (sic)· ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*IV* 64.15ff.) ⲉⲁⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲱⲟⲁⲛⲉ... ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*A 2* 223-4) ⲉϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲉⲁⲛⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛ̀ⲧⲛⲁⲁⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ / (*P* 131⁴ 156ⲙ) ⲉⲩⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲟⲛ / (*K* 9317) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ̀ⲧⲛⲁⲁⲟⲟϥ ⲛ̀ⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ̀ⲧⲛⲁⲧⲁⲩⲟϥ ⲛ̀ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ / *P* 130⁴ 84 ⲛ is quoted above (§2.6.3.1.2). Compare the related constructions: (*Wess. 9* 148b 16ff.) ⲉⲁⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ ⲙⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*Leyd.* 365) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲏ ϥⲥⲟⲟⲩ, ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛ̀ⲥⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 210.7f.) ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-...ⲏ ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-... ⲙⲡⲓⲉϣⲃⲙ-ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲛⲟⲉⲓ / (*ibid.* 24.10f.) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲥⲏⲧ ⲃⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁϣⲟⲡϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲗⲁⲥ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲱⲭⲟⲟϥ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*P* 130⁵ 125 vo, parall. *Cat.* 42.14f.) ⲉⲁⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ... ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲱ ⲡⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲥ. The governing verbs are ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, ⲉⲓⲙⲉ, ⲧⲁⲙⲟ, ⲛⲟⲉⲓ, ⲭⲱ; *no resumption is included in the construction* [130].

2.7.2 Rhetorical topicalization figures (a selection)

2.7.2.1 # VERB^{X} → (VERB^{X} + FOCUS) #. The focalization pattern is coherent by repeating, as theme, a foregoing (usually rhematic) verb [131], often with a macro-syntactic topicalization marker.

2.7.2.1.1 Topicalization marked by ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-: (*Ch.* 191.46ff.) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲁϥⲕⲁ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲕⲁ-ϩⲉⲛ-ⲥⲡⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲩⲉⲭⲁⲭⲉ... / (*IV* 24.6f.) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ⲟⲛ, ⲉϥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 32.10f.) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲁⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ, ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧϩⲁⲕ / (*III* 85.13f.) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛⲧϥ-ⲟⲩⲃⲟⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲟⲛ, ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥⲥ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲧⲕⲁ-ⲙⲁ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ. Especially typical of Shenoute is the pattern # ⲉⲱⲭⲉ- VERB^{X} → ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ/ⲁϩⲣⲟ-/ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ + VERB^{X}) #, often with more than one element repeated [132]: (*Ch.* 64.19ff.) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ϩⲛⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲙⲡⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲉϥⲧⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲙⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ, ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ϩⲛⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲙⲡⲉ$\overline{\text{ⲭⲥ}}$... ⲛⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ... ⲛⲛⲁⲧⲉⲛⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ — sim. *ibid.* 79.1ff. / (*A 2* 371) ⲉⲱⲭⲉ-ⲙⲛⲃⲟⲙ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲣⲁⲛⲁϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ ⲟⲩⲛⲃⲟⲙ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲉⲣ-ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲱ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲙⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ.

2.7.2.1.2 Topicalization marked by ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛ-: (*Ch.* 104.5ff.) ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛⲡⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ ⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲙⲏ ⲉϥⲛⲏ-ⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲏ ⲉⲕⲱⲁⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲁϥ / (*Wess. 9* 110b 18ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲱⲁⲛⲃⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲃⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲁ ϩⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ϩⲛⲧⲟⲩⲙⲏⲧⲉ — compare (*Wess. 9* 111-2) ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛ+-ⲙⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲉⲧ-ⲃⲉⲟⲩ and (*IV* 11.9f.) ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉϩⲛⲁⲥ ⲉⲕⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲕⲱϩ ⲏ ⲉϩⲛⲁⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲥⲕⲧⲟⲥ ⲃⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲥⲥⲉⲓ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ..., actually a use of ⲉⲁϥ- as both adverbal and topicalizing; also (*K* 933) ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲣ-ⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲟⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲟⲛ, ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ.

2.7.2.1.2.1 ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ "If I say, when I say" is a striking topicalizing expression (cf. ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ "as to saying...", exx. in §2.7.1.4.2 and n. 130): (*Cl. Pr.* 22 ⲧϩⲉ) ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-+ϩⲟⲟⲩ, ⲉⲓϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ / (*A 2* 333) ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲡⲁⲛϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ... ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲓϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲱⲃⲉ / (*A 1* 281) ⲉⲭⲱⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲣⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲩⲙⲃⲟⲩⲗⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*BLOr.* 3581A f. 160, No. 253 ⲛⲍ) ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲧⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ +-ⲯⲓ ⲉⲡⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ... ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲭⲓⲡⲃⲟⲛⲥ. Also *A 1* 410, *A 2* 295, 482.

[130] Compare the resumptions in the following case: (*P* 130⁵ 66 ⲟⲅ) ϩⲟⲧⲉⲓ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (i.e. desire and anger) -ƎⅠNϩ ⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*A 2* 443, not Sh.) ϩⲟⲧⲉⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲱⲛϩ... ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲕⲁⲧⲟⲣⲑⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲧⲉⲓⲡⲁⲣⲁⲧⲏ-ⲣⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ. Consider also the resuming and non-resuming constructions of ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ "as to saying", a distinctive topicalization figure (§2.7.2.1.2.1): (*Ch.* 61.25ff.) ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ... ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲃⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ / (*A 2* 392) ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩϫⲓ-ⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲥⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲩϫⲓ / (*Cat.* 42.14f.) ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛⲥⲉ... ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲱ ⲡⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲥ / (*P* 130⁴ 115 ⲓⲍ) ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲃⲓⲙⲙⲁ ⲛⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲉⲧϩⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲭⲉ-.

[131] Cf. Polotsky 1944:26ff. (= *CP* 130ff.).

[132] See Müller 1956:62f.; cf. §3.1.1.1.0.1. for the anaphoric objects.

2.7.2.1.3 Relative topicalization. The antecedent is a pronominal or indefinite antecedent: (*IV* 4.2f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲟⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲡⲣⲁⲍⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ / (*III* 115.8f.) ⲙⲏ ϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲁϩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲛ̀ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ϩⲁⲧⲉϥⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲛ̀ ⲡⲉϥⲥⲱⲙⲁ / (*A 2* 463-4) ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲛⲟⲩⲭⲁⲓ.

2.7.2.1.4 Lemmatizing topicalization — topicalization of a quotation or segment of a quotation [133]; very typical of Shenoute [134]. Note the following formal types: (a) Second-Tense marking of the full quote or its verbal part. (b) No formal marking of the verbal lemma, which is nevertheless a theme in our pattern (2). This is the most interesting construction, and argues for a level of cohesion (or grade of junctural delimitation [§6.0.2.]) between the lemmatic topic and its focus different — lower — from that between the usual theme/topic and its focus in patt. (2). (c) " Extraction " of a verbal segment or lexemic component in the quote and its incorporation — *in unaltered form* [135] — in a focalization pattern. (d) Extraction of a non-verbal segment of the quote and its incorporation in a focalization pattern. (e) No further explicit topicalization, but an annexation of an interrogative focus (with a zero topic?) to the quote.

(a) (*A 2* 422, not Sh.) ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲉ " ⲛⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲛ ⲧⲉϥⲁⲡⲉ " (*Eccl.* 2:14) / (*Ch.* 73.5ff.) " ⲁⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ " — ⲛⲧⲁϥⲃⲱⲕ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲟⲩ; (*Joh.* 13:27) / (*Cat.* 42.12) " ⲁϥ-ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ " — ⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ ⲧⲱⲛ; (*Gal.* 4:4 paraphrased) / (*P* 131[6] 19 мг) " ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲓⲯⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲣⲡⲟ-ⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ ⲙⲛⲧⲏⲧⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ " — ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ; ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ (*Jac.* 4:2).

(b) (*IV* 18.2) " ϥⲛⲁⲭⲱⲣ ⲛⲧⲉϥⲥϩⲏⲉ " — ϥⲛⲁⲭⲟⲣⲥ ⲉⲣ-ⲟⲩ; ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲧⲃⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲭⲛ-ⲉⲕⲱⲛⲥ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ (*Ps.* 7:12) / (*A 2* 339) " ϥⲛⲁⲩⲱⲭⲡ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ " — ϥⲛⲁⲩⲱⲭⲡ ⲉⲟⲩ; ϥⲛⲁⲩⲱⲭⲡ ⲉⲡⲭⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ (*Zach.* 9:7) / *A 2* 11) " ⲛⲥⲛⲁⲕⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ " — ⲛⲥⲛⲁⲕⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ ϩⲛⲟⲩ; ⲛⲥⲛⲁⲕⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ ϩⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲛⲥⲛⲁⲕⲓⲙ ⲁⲛ ϩⲛⲛⲁ-ⲧⲉⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲉⲣ-ⲛⲁⲙⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ (*Ps.* 45:5) / (*III* 75.13f., parall. *Ch.* 169.11ff.) " ⲙⲙⲛⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ " — ⲙⲙⲛⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲧⲱⲛ, ϩⲙⲡⲁⲓⲱⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲭⲛ-ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲡⲁⲓ (*Is.* 48:22, 57:21) / (*Ch.* 183.1ff.) " ⲁⲓⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲝ ϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ " — ⲁⲥϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲩ; ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲏⲏⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲕⲉⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲁⲥϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲛⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲇⲓ-ⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (*Ps.* 27:7) / (*Mun.* 142) " ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲭⲓⲯⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲥⲙⲏ " — ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲭⲓⲯⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ; (? *Is.* 24:14).

(c) (*Ch.* 196.10ff.) " ⲁϥⲧⲥⲓⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲥϩⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ " — ⲉⲥϩⲕⲁⲉⲓⲧ ⲙⲡⲛⲁ ⲉⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡϯ (*Ps.* 106:9) / (*III* 54.13) " ⲉⲥⲟ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲏⲡⲟⲥ ⲉϥⲟⲣⲭ " — ⲉϥⲟⲣⲭ ϩⲛⲧⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲙⲛⲧⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ ⲙⲛⲧⲉⲥⲃⲱ ⲙⲡⲱⲛϩ (*Cant.* 4:12) / (*A 2* 245) " ⲁϥⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ " — ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲁϩⲧⲏϥ (*Gal.* 4:4) / (*Wess. 9* 98b 11ff.) " ⲉⲙⲛⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲛϩⲏⲧ " — ⲡⲉⲭⲁϥ — " ⲁⲛⲅ-ⲟⲩⲗⲁⲁⲩ " — ⲉⲙⲛⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱϥ; (*I Cor.* 13:2) / (*III* 45.17ff.) " ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲩⲣⲡ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ " — ⲩⲣⲡ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲟⲩ; ⲩⲣⲡ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲩⲧ ⲏ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲧⲛ (*Ps.* 126:2) / (*III* 192.14f.-193.11) " ⲙⲛⲧⲭⲁⲭⲉ ϩⲓⲁⲩⲁϩⲟⲙ ϩⲓⲛⲟⲅⲛⲉⲅ " — ...ⲁⲩⲁϩⲟⲙ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲏ ⲣ-ⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ; (source? Note that ⲣ-ⲭⲁⲭⲉ represents the [non-verbal] expansion of ⲙⲛⲧ-) / (*A 2* 330-1) " ⲉⲣⲉϯ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲉⲧⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ " — ⲉⲧⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ; ⲉⲧⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ... (*Cant.* 6:4,10).

(d) (*A 2* 365) " ⲡⲉϥⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ ⲛⲙⲙⲁϥ " — ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ; (*Ps.* 48:17).

(e) (*Teza* 684) " ⲁⲥⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲛⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ " — ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲯⲁⲭⲉ; ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲙⲛ-ⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲛⲁⲃⲓⲙⲉⲗⲉⲭ (*Gen.* 22:1) / (*A 2* 386) " ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲩⲧ ⲛⲁϥ " — ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥ-ⲡⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥ-ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ; (*Joh.* 4:23) / (*A 1* 113) " ϯⲛⲁⲭⲓ-ϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲙⲙⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ϯⲛⲁⲭⲓ-ϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲛⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ " — ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ϩⲱⲱϥ; (*Jer.* 2:9; sim. (?) *A 2* 57, *A 1* 299) / (*Ch.* 181.53ff.) " ⲟⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲛⲉ-ⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ " — ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ; (*Ps.* 73:19).

[133] The Trimembral Nominal Sentence supplies another lemmatizing construction, *viz.* # "—" ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ- # (after a quotation or allegory), e.g. *Ch.* 122.18ff.,28ff., 142.11ff., *A 2* 465-6, 491, *IV* 181.10ff.

[134] Thus, I believe, proving the Shenouteanity of *BLOr.* 6954 (12) vo [...]ⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲛ ϩⲓⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲓⲏ; ϩⲓⲧⲉϩⲓⲏ ⲙⲡⲣⲣⲟ ⲭⲛ-ϩⲓⲧⲉϩⲓⲏ ⲙⲡⲭⲁⲓⲉ (B. Layton's copy), probably our type (b).

[135] Cf. *BLOr.* 3581A 160 (No. 253 ⲛⲏ, parall. *RE 10* 159a 13ff.) (ⲛⲉⲧⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲧⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-"ⲧⲱⲱⲙⲉ"; but *IV* 181.11ff. (ⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-" ⲉⲩⲟⲩϩⲛ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ ";) " ⲟⲩϩⲛ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ " ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-; see n. 86.

2.7.3 Basic and second tenses: compatibility, opposition and neutralization

2.7.3.1 Compatibility. Coordination/disjunction; often, the Basic Tense (usually the first term) is negatived and/or non-durative (see also some of the exx. in §§2.1.2, 2.4-6). (*III* 191.25ff.) **мпоуталас нан етрен-, аллл нтаутаас нан є-** / (*III* 38.16f.) **н†р-2отє ан 2олшс оуде єіѱтртшр ан** (*v.l.* **н†ѱтртшр ан**) / (*A 2* 86) **сєнахоос н єухш ммос хє-** / (*Wess. 9* 165c 27ff., parall. *III* 140.8) **2ноунов ммостє єк-напоркн н акпоркн євол 2нтсунагшгн.**

2.7.3.2 Paradigms and alternation

2.7.3.2.1 The Basic Tense as a member in the post-focal topic paradigm (usually negatived and/or non-durative): §§2.6.2, 2.6.4.

2.7.3.2.2 The Basic Tense as a macro-syntactically conditioned alternant of the є-topic: §2.6.3.1.1.

2.7.3.2.3 The Basic Tense (usually in **хє**-inclusion) as an unmarked prefocal theme (interrogative foci) [136].

(a) The focus **тшн**, the theme "**ач̄сштм**": (*Wess. 9* 127b 8ff.) **апінтнв ммінє мінє єі тшн... а†ѱшра тнрс єі тшн...**; also 128a 1ff., *Ch.* 166.24ff., *BMCat.* 80 (No. 195), *A 2* 33; one instance of the Basic Present: (*Wess. 9* 117a 23ff., coll.) **н пєч̄раѱє тшн.**

(b) The focus **ноунр**, theme: *present*: (*P* 130² 45 cıθ) **ш сєоуонг євол ноунр хє-** / (*P* 130² 65 ro) **тноуонг євол ноунр хє-** / (*IV* 35.18) **(хє-)тнтваіну ноунр**; theme: *Basic Perfect*: (*III* 183.3) **(хє-)аур-а-наѱ ноунр**; theme: *adjective-verbs*: (*A 1* 374) **нєсшч̄ ноунр, нєвшч̄ ноунр** / (*A 1* 227) **наноуч̄ аущ ч̄2олв ноунр.** Additional exx.: *IV* 117.3f., 47.7f., *Ch.* 62.33ff., *Berl.* 1613 1 л, *Ryl.* 69 нг, *Rossi 2/3* 26.

(c) The focus: **наѱ нге**, the theme: '**ач̄сштм**' (*P* 130² 36 vo) **(†2тнтн хє-)ач̄2ши наѱ нге... хє.**

2.7.3.2.4 The Basic Tense is very rare (perhaps significantly so) as a *varia lectio* for a marked theme/topic form: *III* 38.17, patt. (1); 210.21, patt. (4); *IV* 14.10, patt. (6); consider also (*BKU* 180² 8ff.) **єч̄-наwс2 ноуwн2 ѱаєнє2** *vs.* (21) **ч̄наwс2 ноуwн2 ѱаєнє2.**

2.7.3.3 Other neutralizations

2.7.3.3.1 "Indifference", i.e. unmarkedness (or rare markedness) for the category of focality: (a) **нє**-converted forms (usually with **тшн**) [137]: (*Wess. 9* 148a 16ff.) **нєч̄тшн пє... нєч̄2моос ае пє наѱ нге**; often the "future imperfect": (*RE 10* 162b 23f.) **нєунаѱшпє тшн** / (*Cl. Pr.* 22 тгг) **нєунатакє-оунр мѱухн**, also *RE 10* 164b 3f., *RE 11* 16b 16f., *P* 130² 87 vo.

(b) Inconvertible conjugation-forms: *Future III* + **ноунр** (*III* 181.17f., 150.26), + **нним** (*III* 111.20), *conjunctive* (*A 2* 512) **єінатбаіє-ау ммєлос нтака-ау н єінар-ау ммєлос нталаіпшрос нтамакарізе наѱ**; compare the *infinitive* expanded by interrogative modifiers (+ **єоу, єним**, *III* 45.18, 193.11).

(c) Nominal Sentence: + **ноунр** (*Ch.* 104.47ff.), + **2ноу** (*A 2* 26), + **наѱ нге** (*A 2* 69, 154, 334, 403),

[136] Cf. Polotsky 1940:245 (= *CP* 37). Note that both **тшн** and **оунр** are also indefinites — the homonymy is in fact resolved syntactically. **оунр** in **оуноунр нвасанос оуноунр нколастнріон бєєт єпршме...** (*P* 130⁵ 71 сєг, also *A 2* 331, *Wess. 9* 143d 12ff.) is a member of a paradigm including also the Second Tense (§2.3.2) and the Cleft Sentence with (pro)nominal *vedette*.

[137] Compare however Polotsky 1960b:25 (= *CP* 396) note 1. Has this something to do with the Akhmimic Second Perfect (**нач̄-**)?

Cleft Sentence (nom. *vedette*) following ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ (*Wess. 9* 105a-b). Note that while the Nom. Sentence is convertible *postfocally* (§§2.5.1, 2.6.3.1.1), the Cleft Sentence with (pro)nominal *vedette* is not.

2.7.3.3.2 After ϫⲉ- and ⲉⲓⲉ-, the opposition of Basic *vs.* Second Tense is sporadically neutralized; consider *III* 21.14, 34.16, 91.10f., 167.6f., *Wess. 9* 117b 31ff., etc.

2.8 SECOND-TENSE CONSTRUCTIONS: NOTES ON PROSODY AND SYNTAGMATICS

2.8.1 PROSODY. All we know of the prosodic characteristics of focalization patterns is that the juncture between theme/topic and focus is open (§6.0.2). One notes the placement of ⲁⲛ, different from and more interesting than in the Bipartite (§2.9); that is about all, in patterns for which the suprasegmentals are of crucial diacritic significance [138]. There cannot be any doubt of the fundamentally different prosodic structure of topic-initial and focus-initial pattern groups, and of the existence of a gradation of differences between the individual patterns [139]. Consider the following instructive cases, indicative of the intricate network of prosodic states superimposed on the segmental skeletal pattern. We note that the focalization pattern usually consists of more than one colon (§6.0.3); also, the instances of strikingly extensive interposition between the theme-topic and focus components: (*III* 72.21) ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ / ⲟⲏ / ϫⲉⲟⲩ " What more can one say? " / (*A 2* 431) ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ / ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ / ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ / (*Wess. 9* 174d 29ff.) ⲛⲉⲛⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ' / ⲡⲉϫⲁⲩ / ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ / (*IV* 183.7) ⲉⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲟⲩ/ϭⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ — a single colon / (*IV* 16.18f.) ⲉⲩⲁⲩϫⲉⲣ-ⲥⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ / ⲛⲧⲟϥ / ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ / (*III* 209.13ff., codd. A, C) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲛϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ⲙⲛⲏⲁⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲩⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲛϩⲉⲓⲕⲱⲛ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲛ (A: ... ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲏⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲕⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ / (*A 2* 541) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲕⲁⲡⲛⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲣⲱⲕϩ ⲉϥⲱⲱⲃⲉ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ ϩⲛⲟⲩ / (*III* 102.12f., 19f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ / ⲛⲧⲟⲕ / ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁϫⲓ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲁⲛ / (*BLOr* 3581A 71, No. 202 ⲣⲡⲇ) ⲛⲁⲩ / ⲛⲧⲟϥ / ⲛϩⲉ ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲏⲁⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ... ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ / ⲛⲧⲟⲕ / ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲣⲱⲁⲩ; see §§6.1.3.1-4.

2.8.2 NEXUS ARRANGEMENT; LOCATION OF THE THEME-TOPIC ‖ FOCUS SEAM: FOCUS ISOLATION. The question of identifying the focus on the basis of our segmental data arises in the common predicament of a topic-initial pattern (2) [140], where a non-interrogative focus is included in a group of modifiers of which any — or, conjointly, some — could be focal. The crux here is obviously the IC-analysis of the utterance into theme and rheme groups, with theoretical a well as practical implications [141]: the organization of the utterance in a relatively simple hierarchic structure [142], with the first section the verbal theme-topic, and the second the rheme-focus. Here again we are faced with the decisions of verbal valency — the distinction between rectional (componential) and complementational modification [143]. This, however, supplies us with a post-analytic *model* rather than a heuristic tool. I would like to point out here, in bold simplification, some facts regarding the arrangement of the pattern and placement of the focus. Generally

, [138] Punctuation data are here of some value, though not immediately applicable or readily interpretable in prosodic terms. Several instances of a point or comma marking the Bipartition of focus-initial patterns have been quoted above (also *Wess. 9* 165c 27ff.); cf. (for LE) Wente, *JNES* 28:6 n. 37 (1969).

[139] A noteworthy distinction in the Subakhmimic John between two syllabifications of "in what way, how": ⲛ̄ⲉⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ vs. ⲛⲉⲩ ⲛ̄ϩⲉ, corresponds to the distinction of *topic-initial* vs. *focus-initial* respectively, and may be indicative of prosodic differentiation: (ⲛ̄ⲉⲩ) 6:25, 9:15.26; (ⲛⲉⲩ) 3:4.9.12, 4:9, 5:44.47, 6:42.52, 8:33, 9:10.16.19.21, 12:34, 14:9.

[140] In patts. (1), (3) the placement of the focus is unambiguous; as it is in patt. (2) cases like ⲟ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ (also the " disguised " focus, §2.7.1.4.1). In focus-initial patterns the focal constituent is by definition initial, and seems to be incompatible with non-focal premodifiers (§1.1.2.2); this point must however be further investigated.

[141] Cf. the general arguments in BARRI 1978 (esp. p. 256ff.).

[142] Cf. JUNGE 1972:33f., 1978:22, 32ff.

[143] JUNGE 1972:36ff.; see §1.1.2.0.1 above and §3.0.1 below.

speaking, two main groups are to be distinguished, with FINAL and NON-FINAL FOCUS. In cases of an inherent-focality (interrogative) focus, the placement (established by complex considerations) is immaterial, non-pertinent. For the non-interrogative focus, however, the precise placement has an essential functional value. The following illustration is representative of the main types; see §2.8.1 for the separation of theme and focus and §2.8.4 for the discontinuous theme.

(a) FINAL FOCUS, the " ideal " arrangement (§2.0.2.4). The focus is interrogative or non-interrogative. Adverbal modifications — rectional and complementational — follow the verb: (*A 2* 54) **ⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲁⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲏⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲕⲟⲥⲙⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ** / (*A 2* 540) **ⲉⲩⲱⲟⲃⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ϩⲛⲟⲩ** / (*A 2* 336) **ⲉⲥⲛⲁϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲧⲱⲛ** / (*A 1* 71) **ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲣ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲥ ϩⲛⲟⲩ** / (*Ryl.* 67 ⲩⲉ) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲙⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ** / (*Ch.* 54.19ff.) **ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲉⲥⲱⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ** / (*ibid.* 183.57ff.) **ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲡⲁⲣⲁⲇⲓⲇⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ' ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲛⲧⲅⲉ-ϩⲉⲛⲛⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ** / (*III* 154.11) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁϭⲟⲧϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲉϥⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ** / (*A 1* 100-1) **ⲉⲩϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲥⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲁⲛⲁⲩ ϫⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ...** Some more striking exx.: *III* 100.16f., 107.11ff., 122.24f., *Ch.* 23,15ff., *Wess. 9* 86a 16ff.

(b) NON-FINAL FOCUS. (1) Focus *interrogative*, adjuncts final: (*A 2* 464) **(ⲉ)ⲩⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲉⲩⲗⲏⲗ ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ** / (*A 1* 69) **ⲉⲣⲉⲙⲟⲕϩ ⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲥ** / (*III* 98.3f.) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁ+-ϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ** / (*Wess. 9* 128a 29ff.) **ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲉ+ⲕⲉⲁⲥⲉⲃⲉⲓⲁ** / (*IV* 35.16f.) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲛⲟⲅⲛⲉⲅ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲣⲙⲛⲏⲓ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲕⲱⲙⲩ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲥⲱⲱⲩ** / (*III* 98.14) **ⲏ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ+-ϩⲁⲡ ϩⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲓⲃⲟⲧⲉ** / (*P* 130[4] 105 ⲣⲕⲉ) **ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲣⲏ ⲙⲛⲡⲟⲟϩ ⲅⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲩⲛⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ.** Consider also *III* 223.19, *IV* 154.20f., 189.7f.

(2) Focus *interrogative*, back extraposition final [144], adjuncts following the focus: (*A 2* 396) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲧⲏⲣⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲅⲓ-ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ** / (*III* 170.19f.) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲛⲅⲓϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ** / (*ibid.* 169.23f.) **ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲡⲱⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ 'ⲛⲅⲓϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲏⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ** / (*A 2* 114) **ⲉⲥⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉϩⲓⲏ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ.**

(c) Focus *non-interrogative*, back extraposition final/non-final (regulated by its extent, i.e. rhythmic factors? [145]): (*III* 116.6f.) **ⲛⲧⲁϥⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲛⲅⲓⲓ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲉϫ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ** / (*III* 117.28f.) **ⲛⲧⲁϥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲅⲓⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϫⲉ-** / (*ibid.* 120.9) **ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲅⲓⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-.**

2.8.3 THE SECOND TENSE AS A " THAT "-FORM. Above (§2.0.0.1) the point was made that nothing in the synchronic set of relations of the Second Tense points unambiguously to its substantival nature. Let us reconsider this issue, reviewing several constructions that may be taken as hinting at substantival syntactic roles, probably integrated in a previous system but at any rate not perceptively so in the synchronic one. I have in mind

(a) The Second Tense (or at least an ⲉ-form) in patt. (2)-(3) focalization constructions *as object-expansion of* ⲓⲛⲉ *in a negatived conjugation form*: (*A 1* 118) **ⲛϥⲛⲁⲅⲛ-ⲉϥⲛⲁϥⲓ-ⲛⲉϥⲃⲁⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ** / (*A 2* 520) **ⲙⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲅⲛ-ⲉϥⲛⲁⲣ-ⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ** (ⲁⲛ probably negatives the rel. future — "it is hardly possible that he will not find what to do... "; I have however not collated the text); also *III* 13.9 (= *A 1* 221), *Ch.* 33.14f., 73.19ff. etc. [146]. Compare an instance of ⲉⲙⲛ-coordinated to a noun in object status: (*K* 9316) **ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲛⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁ ⲓ̄ⲥ̄.**

(b) An instance of a Second Present, non- or auto-focal, patt. (1), predicated by ⲡⲉ: (*A 1* 113 coll.) **ⲛⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲡⲉ** " You do not know that it means that you are asleep " [147].

[144] See §6.0.1. ⲛⲅⲓ- apparently tends to the final position when it introduces a prosodically more weighty noun syntagm.

[145] Cf. (for rhythmic considerations) §3.1.3.3.2.

[146] SHISHA-HALEVY 1976b:363 n. 33, with reff. (to the Shenoutean instances add those quoted here). Note that this may well be a case of a (non-nominal) *interrogative clause* in direct-object status. Consider *Is.* 1:3 (Ciasca; quoted by Shenoute, in *Wess. 9* 153c 2f. parall. 178a 25ff.) **ⲡⲗⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲅⲛ-ⲁⲛⲅ-ⲛⲓⲙ**, *Man. Psalm-Book* 156.9 **ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲅⲛ-ⲉⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ.**

[147] See STERN 1880:217 (two exx. of ⲛⲧⲁ- ⲡⲉ). Cf. CALLENDER 1970:205ff., and see §1.2.1.2, gen. obs. (4). For Egyptian, see POLOTSKY 1976:§2.6.4.

(c) The "conjunctional" use in Sahidic of the Sec. Perfect in the unfulfilled protasis after ⲉⲛⲉ- (e.g. *Ch.* 29.56ff.). Compare the Sec. Tense after (ϩⲱⲥ) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ- §2.1.4-5. I believe these unpredictable, isolated or fixed cases are inconclusive, and cannot be the basis for a synchronic "that"-form interpretation of the Second Tense (see nn. 146-7).

2.8.4 The COMPLEX THEME/TOPIC is made up of two or more (often discontinuous) coordinated or disjoined components, individually or conjointly marked for thematicity, in varying grades of mutual cohesion [148]. In ascending order of union and subcategorization:

(a) 'Sec.-Tense conjugation form + ⲁⲩⲱ/ϩ + Sec.-Tense conjugation form': (*A 2* 45) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲯⲁⲩ... ϩ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲣⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲧⲙⲁⲓϩⲩ ⲛⲁ+-ϩⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 372) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ- ϩ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ- / (*III* 73.8f.) ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲩⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲗⲟⲅⲓϩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ϫⲉ- / (*Ch.* 119.45ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲟⲩⲟⲱⲩ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲕϩⲩ sim. *ibid.* 128.20ff.; also *III* 119.2f., 134.16f., *IV* 63.24f., 107.1f., *Leyd.* 410, etc.

(b) 'Sec.-Tense Conjugation form (+ ⲁⲩⲱ/ϩ) + "epithematic" circumstantial conjugation form' (rare) [149]: (*Ming.* 288) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲙⲛⲧ-ⲙⲡⲛⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲁⲩⲣ-ϩⲓⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*III* 120.7f.) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲩ-ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲡⲉ... ⲉⲁⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ (contrast with *III* 140.17 ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ... ⲁⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ).

(c1) 'Sec. Perfect/Aorist + ⲁⲩⲱ/ϩ + Basic Perfect/Aorist' [150]: (*III* 218.1) ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲏⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲩ ⲕⲓⲙ... ϩ ⲁⲩϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 219.3f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲅⲱⲗⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲓⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ / (*A 1* 108) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲩⲁⲣⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ϩ ⲯⲁⲣⲉⲟⲥϩⲟⲩ. Also *III* 28.25f., 140.17, *IV* 157.22f.

(c2) 'Sec. Future/Aorist + ⲁⲩⲱ/ϩ + conjunctive': (*IV* 76.20f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲩϩⲩⲡⲟⲙⲟⲛⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ / (*III* 40.11f.) ⲉⲩⲁϥⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧϥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲣⲁⲯⲉ ⲉϫⲱϥ; also *IV* 94.3 ff. Chiastically, in (*Ch.* 85.26ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ... ⲛⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥ+-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁϥ cf. 89.18ff.). In (*IV* 14.4f.) ⲉⲩⲛⲁ+-ϩⲁⲡ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ... ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲧⲁⲓ (ⲁⲩⲱ) ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ the focus is repeated and the conjunctive not markedly thematic.

2.9 NEGATION PATTERNS: NEGATIVED FOCALIZATION PATTERNS, NEGATED NEXUS, NEGATIVED ADJUNCTS AND PATTERN COMPONENTS

2.9.0.1 The gist of Polotsky's discussion of the negation of Second-Tense constructions [151] is the distinction between the negation of the theme-focus nexus ("main" or "primary" nexus, in Polotsky's current terminology) and the componential negativing of the theme (constituting in itself a "sub-" or "secondary" nexus). I would comment: (a) This distinction is tailored and indeed appropriate for the topic-initial construction, Bipartite-like focalization pattern (2). We have yet to specify the negation syntagmatics for the autofocal and focus-initial patterns. Polotsky treats the negation of these, esp. of pattern (4), briefly in the "Coptic Conjugation System" (1960a:§32), stating that (ⲛ)- ⲁⲛ is used, while the Second-Tense topic remains affirmative. One observes, however, that a negative topic is quite usual in focus-initial patterns. We must remember that these patterns replace in our corpus the theme/topic-

[148] Cf. (for *relative* conversion) SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:§2.1.3.1, 1976a:51.

[149] Cf. SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:137.

[150] Note the significant absence of this high-cohesion grade in the Bipartite conjugation.

[151] Mainly 1944:87ff. (= *CP* 191ff.), 1960a:§31f.; KICKASOLA 1975, esp. 103-137. The distinction of nexal vs. special negation is of course JESPERSEN's, in the fifth chapter of his classic "Negation in English and Other Languages" (1917; 1962:42ff.).

initial patterns for *negatived themes*, which as a matter of fact do not occur here. This renders the opposition of nexal *vs.* thematic negation meaningless: it does not obtain within the "classic" theme/topic initial construction. (Consider *A 2* 19 ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ for the classical 'ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲛⲟⲩ-'.) (b) It is legitimate to ask whether the two cases of nexal and thematic negation are not just two particular cases in a series of *possible incidence* of the negator, of different localizations of which one is nexal, another thematic. Two other particular localizations to be examined in the present context are the negativing of *an adjunct* (*modifier*) [152] and of the *focus*, both with an affirmative nexus. As a general rule one may say that for theme/topic-initial pattern (2) the nexal negation is located between the theme and the focus; otherwise (as a rule, with rare, prosodically motivated deviations) the ⲁⲛ-negation follows the segment it relates to [153]. (c) We should try to relate the affirmative form of each pattern to its negative one (whether or not the latter is regarded as a transform), and the *placement* of the negator to its *incidence* and functional role, in contributive relation to the focality of the pattern [154]. Below, I shall enumerate and selectively illustrate the negation patterns corresponding to focalization patterns (1) to (6) [155].

2.9.1 Theme/topic-initial patterns

2.9.1.1 Pattern (1): The autofocal second tense. *Present with focal modifier*: (*A 2* 462) ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲥⲥⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲡⲁⲓ / (*ibid.* 340) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲥⲛⲛⲛⲁⲭⲥⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲥⲏⲛⲉⲛⲥⲏⲧ; *rhetorical question*: (*Miss.* 279) ⲏ ⲉⲱⲁⲩⲛⲉⲥⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 108) [156] ⲙⲏ ⲉⲱⲁⲣⲉⲡⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲱⲁⲣⲟⲩⲟⲥⲥⲟⲩ ⲡⲟⲩⲉ ⲡⲟⲩⲉ; *modal*: ⲉⲩⲛⲁ-: (*A 2* 505-6) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲑⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲧⲟⲟⲙ... "Let us not distress" (also *IV* 61.27f., jussive; 154.14, hortative).

Negator: ⲁⲛ. Placement: after the pattern or single expansion of the verb.

2.9.1.2 Pattern (2): # theme/topic → modifier #

2.9.1.2.1 Nexal negation. (*Ryl. Cat.* 32, No. 68 ⲥⲃ) ⲛⲉⲩⲱⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲥⲉⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ / (*A 1* 183) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲱⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲓⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ / (*A 2* 403) ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲟⲧ-ⲙⲉⲩ / (*III* 131.10) ⲛⲛⲉⲓⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ... (also *IV* 51.16, *Wess. 9* 140b 3ff.) / (*III* 21.9f., ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ / (*ibid.* 17.1ff.) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-... (sim. *IV* 111.20f.) 46.28f. etc.). Note also cases with the focusing modifier ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ co-marking the focus: (*A 2* 52) ⲛⲧⲁⲩ-ⲥⲥⲁⲓ-ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- / (*III* 50.4ff.) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲱⲁⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲡⲗⲏⲅⲏ ⲛⲭⲛⲟⲩⲩ ⲛⲃⲣⲃⲣ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ

[152] Cf. (for Egyptian) Gunn 1924:187f.; Satzinger, *Die negativen Konstruktionen im Alt- und Mittelägyptischen* (Berlin 1968), §46; Gilula, *JEA* 56:208ff. (1970), *JAOS* 92:560-5 (1972). On Coptic componential negation, see Stern §386 ("Wortnegation"), Kickasola 1975:219ff., 292ff.

[153] Cf. Prätorius 1881:757f.

[154] See Seiler 1952:79ff., 85f. He points out the tendency of the negator to be attached to the predicate, which is in a tug-of-war for the negation with the verb (see also Moorhouse 1959:4f.; Jespersen 1962:56ff.). In our case of focalization patterns, this tension is between the nexal and special (local) negation. The negation (acc. to Seiler) co- or over-characterizes the focus, contributing (macrosyntactically) to its focality. The negation delimits two statements, evoking the contrary one; cf. (p. 80) "Die Negation führt eine Affirmation nicht bloß zum Nullpunkt, sondern darüber hinaus in die entgegengesetzte oder gegenüberliegende Position... Die Negation konstatiert nicht bloß... das Nichtvorhandensein des Sachverhaltes A, sondern sie weist zugleich ausdrücklich auf diesen Sachverhalt A hin". On the affinity of negation and "emphasis", see also Moorhouse 1959:73ff. The affirmative focalized nexus (cf. "he *did* go", "you *are* stupid") is expressed in Coptic by means of the autofocal Second Tense.

[155] I cannot unfortunately report arriving at any definite statement regarding the distribution of ⲁⲛ *vs.* ⲛ- ⲁⲛ (cf. Shisha-Halevy 1976b:363f.). Pattern-specific information will be given below.

[156] The case of ⲙⲏ - ⲁⲛ is perhaps special (see Prätorius 1881:757f., Shisha-Halevy 1976a:43).

/ (*IV* 184.5f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲭⲡⲉ-ⲥⲁⲥ ⲭⲉ-... / (*A 2* 390) ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ + ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ / (*Wess. 9* 138b 18ff.) ⲉⲩⲡⲁⲓⲇⲉⲩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲃⲱⲛⲧ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲱ. Additional exx. for -ⲁⲛ-negation: *III* 21.1, 66.12f., *Ch.* 136.52ff., 65.15ff., *A 2* 150, 473, etc.

Negator: — ⲁⲛ (all conj. forms), ⲛ — ⲁⲛ (Bip., aor.), ⲛⲛ — ⲁⲛ (Bip.). Theme: affirmative[157]. Placement: (a) ⲁⲛ follows the theme/topic or its closest (usually rectional) expansion; (b) (with a nominal actor in the Tripartite Pattern) optionally after the actor expression.

2.9.1.2.2.1 Focal negation (a). (*A 2* 312) ⲉⲩⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲓⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏⲥ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲏⲧⲛ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲭⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲱⲃ / (*III* 35.20) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲙⲁⲩ-ⲁⲁⲧ / (*Ch.* 89.12ff.) ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲡⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲩ ⲁⲛ (circ. of Sec. Present? other instances: *IV* 64.1f., 65.11ff.) / (*A 2* 87) ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲍⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ (i.e. the mud) ⲥⲁⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲩ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲣⲓⲣ ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲉⲩⲡⲱⲍ ⲁⲛ ⲩⲁⲡⲉⲩⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲏ ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲥⲱⲍⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲩⲁⲛⲉⲩⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲟⲩⲱⲛⲍ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲩⲗⲟⲟⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲗⲁⲗⲱ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲩ / (*III* 131.14f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲅⲓⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁⲍ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ / (*IV* 56.23ff.) ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲥⲩⲅⲭⲱⲣⲉⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ... ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲅⲱⲃ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ.

Negator: — ⲁⲛ. Theme: affirmative. Nexus: affirmative. Placement: immediately following the focus (or, if this is complex, after its first colon)[158]. Observe that ⲁⲛ in all probability co-marks the focus as such. This is the functional value of the adfocal placement. The opposition *nexal* vs. *focal* negation, existing only for this focalization pattern, is not easily reflected in English translation (cf. the subtle distinction, expressable in terms of Immediate Constituents, between " I am not feeling that well " and " I am feeling not that well " — a difference even more difficult to reproduce for the high-focality focalization pattern). Nevertheless, the distinction is unmistakenly there in Coptic syntagmatics. Both the affirmative nexus and the enhanced negative focus must play their part on the *plan du contenu*.

2.9.1.2.2.2 Focal negation (b). *Second focus negated* or: (*affirmative* + *negative*) modifier focalized: (*IV* 24.6f.) ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲗⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩⲍⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ (*A 1* 380) ⲉⲩⲯⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ, ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*Ch.* 91.1ff.) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ. Also *III* 29.7f., 34.11f., *RE 11* 16a 33ff., etc.

2.9.1.2.3 Modifier negation[159]. (a) Expanding a Basic Tense (affirmative or negatived): (*A 2* 464) ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲇⲉ ⲥⲱⲱⲩ ⲁⲩⲯⲡⲍⲓⲥⲉ ⲍⲛⲧⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 151) (ⲁⲩⲛⲁⲩ) ⲁⲩⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲍⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲁⲩⲭⲓⲏⲡⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯⲥ ⲙⲛⲡⲭⲓⲥⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲯⲁⲍ / (*III* 200-1) ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲥⲣⲩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲙⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲅⲓⲭ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲙⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲙⲡⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲭⲱⲍⲙ / (*IV* 116.12f.) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲧⲛⲙⲟⲕⲍ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣ-ⲍⲙⲍⲁⲗ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲉⲛⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ ("not because") / (*III* 18.18ff.) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲣ-ⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲩⲭ̅ⲥ̅... ⲭⲉⲛⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲱⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲛⲉⲕⲧⲱⲗⲙ ⲛⲧⲉⲕⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ("... not in order that... but in order that... "). Also *III* 20.2f., *Ch.* 85.8ff., *III* 116.16ff. (ⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲥ... ⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-[160]), etc.

[157] Kickasola 1975:173; the example *Rom.* 14:6, quoted by Polotsky 1944:89 (= *CP* 193) for the neg. durative theme, is still unique, to the best of my knowledge.

[158] Cf. Kickasola 1975:103ff., 289f.; he obviously does not consider this an essential distinction.

[159] Kickasola 1975:219ff., 294ff. Note here (a) instances where Shenoutean ⲁⲛ corresponds to non-Akhmimicized Sahidic ⲟⲛ: *III* 16.7, *IV* 213.9 (*not IV* 116.13, as I erroneously suggested in 1976b:356); (b) a striking case of componential negation of a *bound morpheme*, non-adjunctal (*P* 130[8] 110 vo) ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲩ, ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ, cf. (130[5] 97 ro) ⲡⲉⲭⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲡⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ.

[160] Occasionally, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ- seems to be in an ancolouthic, loosely connected or janus-faced construction: *III* 19.4f., 66.2, 185-6; cf. ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ, ⲙⲏ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ- (*Ch.* 69.27ff., 73.8ff.) and ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- ⲁⲛ (*Wess. 9* 105a 2ff.).

(b) Expanding a converted or inconvertible tense or extraconjugational (non-tense) verb form; all are *unmarked for thematicity*: (*A 2* 119) ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ / (*III* 185.24ff.) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲓϩⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲁⲅⲱⲛⲧ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲓⲭⲉⲣⲟ... ϩⲛⲟⲩⲅⲱⲛⲧ / (*A 2* 400) ⲡⲉⲓⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ϩⲛⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥⲧⲁⲥⲓⲥ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ+-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲕⲉⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ+-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*III* 19.16ff.) ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥϩⲱⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲛⲉⲕⲱⲣⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲕⲉⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲱ " It is also He who commanded..., not only that... but also... " / (*III* 169.12f.) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲕ+-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲯⲟⲙⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ / (*A 2* 414) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲉⲩⲃⲱⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 465) ...ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣ-ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲯⲡ-ϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ.
NB. The *simultaneous double placement* (the " foreshadowed enclitic ", §6.0.3.3): (*A 2* 475) (ⲧⲁⲓϩⲉ) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ ϫⲉ-. Additional exx.: *Mun.* 96, *III* 111-2, 173. 11ff. (ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩ- ⲁⲛ), 184.16ff. (ⲛⲑⲉ... ⲁⲛ), *IV* 47.8ff. (ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉ- ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ) 57.17ff. (ⲉⲛⲯⲁⲛ- ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛ- ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛ- ⲁⲛ), *Ch.* 177.13ff. (ⲡⲉⲧ- ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-) etc.
Negator: (ⲛ?)- ⲁⲛ. Placement: following the modifier; rarely preceding it (intercolary, §6.0.3), or double.

(c) *modifier* (+ ⲁⲩⲱ) + *neg. modifier* expanding a verb form (affirm. or negatived): (*P* 130² 33 ⲁⲣ) ⲁϥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 212.3f.) ϥⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ+ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲑⲏ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 116.23f.) ⲁϥⲭⲓⲧ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲩⲕⲁⲕⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ / (*Mun.* 98, parall. *III* 169.14f.) ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ϩⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲕⲁ-ⲧⲁⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 72) ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲉⲣⲁⲥⲟⲡⲥ ⲉϫⲱⲥ / (*Ch.* 153.36ff.) ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩϩ... ϩⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 168.26) ⲛⲁϩⲟⲩ-ϯ-ϩⲏⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲁⲧ ⲁⲛ. Additional exx.: *III* 108.4f., *IV* 100.17f., 153.24f. etc.

Negator: (ⲛ)- ⲁⲛ. Placement: following the second modifier or (ⲛ- ⲁⲛ) enclosing it. I consider the modifier in these cases (a-c) to be on the borderline of adjunct and focus, probably a gradient (non dichotomic) distinction: the two relationships are not mutually exclusive (§2.7.1.4.1). Here again, the negator seems to contribute towards enhancing — and co-marking — the focality of the modifier(s); consider the not uncommon case of ' ⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ' + neg. modifier, where we are at a loss to decide between the circumstantial and (circ. ÷) Second Present, e.g. *IV* 64.7ff., 65.11ff.

2.9.1.3 Pattern (3): Non-modifier focalization (*object* only, §2.3.1). (*Ch.* 96.9f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲓϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ / (*Wess. 9* 171c 7) ⲉⲓϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ / (*IV* 94.3) ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲯⲱⲱⲅⲉ-ⲡⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*A 2* 509) ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ.

Negator: ⲁⲛ. Placement: following the object. Theme: affirmative. No opposition between focal and nexal negation.

2.9.2 Focus-initial patterns

2.9.2.1 Pattern (4): # *focus* → *Second Perfect* #. (*A 1* 81) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲙⲁⲥⲧⲓⲅⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ / (*Wess. 9* 144c 24ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲑⲃⲃⲓⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ- / (*A 1* 113) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ... ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ.

Negator: - ⲁⲏ. Placement: immediately after the focus (focus: ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- only?). No opposition between nexal and focal negation. Topic: affirmative [161].

[161] See §§2.5.1-2 for the negative topics, which seem to exclude a negated nexus or negative focus.

2.9.2.2 Pattern (5): # *focus* → *circumstantial* #. (*Wess. 9* 106a 7ff. parall. *P* 130² 71 ⲣⲡⲉ, see §2.9.2.4) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲥⲧⲙⲏⲧ' ⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲛⲁⲓ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲁ-ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧϩⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 219) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲛⲓϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲣⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲛⲡⲗⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉϥⲕⲁ-ϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ ⲉⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲑⲓⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ... ϫⲉ-.
Note (*A 1* 89) ϩⲓⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲁϩⲁϩ ⲣ-ⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲙⲏ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲛⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ.

Negator: - ⲁⲛ. Placement: imm. following the focus (ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- only?). Topic: affirmative [161]. No opposition between nexal and focal negation.

2.9.2.3 Pattern (6): # *focus* → ⲉ-*conj. form* (Sec. tense + circumstantial) [162]. (*A 2* 519) ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲛⲁϩⲩⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲛⲁ+-ⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*Ch.* 38.35ff.) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲧⲃⲁⲱⲟⲣ ⲁⲩⲕⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ... ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲧⲣⲣⲉ / (*A 1* 114) ⲙⲏ ϩⲱⲥⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ / (*Wess. 9* 158a 30ff.) ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲯⲱⲟⲩ.

Negators: - ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲛ- ⲁⲛ (rare). Placement: following or enclosing the focus. Topic: affirmative [161]. No opposition between nexal and focal negation.

2.9.2.4 # *focus* → *Basic Tense* # (§2.6.2): (*III* 16.3f.) ⲙⲏ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲁⲯⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲅⲱⲛⲧ ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲁⲩϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-... / (*P* 130² 71 ⲣⲡⲉ) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲥⲙⲛⲧ (sic) ⲁⲛ ⲁⲛⲁⲓ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (parall. to *Wess. 9* 106a 7ff., see §2.9.2.2) / (*A 1* 124) ⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛ+-ⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲛⲣⲱϥ ⲁϥⲱⲙⲕ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*ibid.* 125) ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-ϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲙⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲙⲁⲁⲃ ⲛϩⲁⲧ ⲁⲡⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲇⲓⲇⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲟⲛⲧϥ / (*A 2* 80) ⲙⲏ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟⲛⲟⲅⲛⲉⲅ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ... ⲁⲓϫⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁϫⲉ / (*A 1* 88) ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲕϫⲟⲟⲥ... (sim. 354, 366). For more exx., see §2.6.2.

2.9.2.5 Predicative modifier negated: # *modifier* - ∅ # (§1.2.1.3.3). (*A 1* 158) ⲉⲛⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛⲯⲟⲙ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*III* 146.20ff.) ⲡⲁⲏⲛ ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲕⲟⲱⲛⲧ ⲁⲛ... ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ (cf. *Jer.* 10:24).

2.10 Concluding note on the functional essence of the second tense

In view of the data here presented, one can hardly consider the Second Tense an " unsatiated sign " (Dressler 1973:70) or a form " of incomplete predication " (Curme) in need of predicative complementation, but rather an index characterizing (a) a verb form as THEME (in the micro-syntactic extent) or THEME-TOPIC (in the macro-syntactic extent), (b) a verb lexeme or modifier as FOCUS. The distinction between (a) and (b) is resolved or signalled by the informational structure of the cotext: the identification of the focus, and therewith the determination of the function of the Second Tense itself, is effected by the isolation or non-isolation of a TOPIC in the extended environment of the converted conjugation form. I see the Second Tense, in association with other phenomena (word order, negation incidence, focusing modifiers and particles, suprasegmentals) as more of a focalizing than topicalizing agent. The functional category of which the Second Tense is but one of the exponents is the *characterization of a predicative syntagm for Functional (or Informational) Sentence Perspective and Communicative Dynamism* (i.e., thematic and generally cotextual boundness). This way of phrasing the functional essence of the form may appear banal: yet I believe it is preferable, highlighting the all-important macrosyntactic role of this conversion.

[161] Cf. Kickasola 1975:134ff. (" Affirmative Second Tense Containing Negative Patterns ", " Affirmative Nexus with a Negated AdvP in Frontal Extraposition "). This is rather a Second Tense + circumstantial syncretism (§2.6). The use here of " extraposition " is unfortunate: the predicative modifier is not *extra-*, but *pre-*posed (see also Kickasola's p. 292f., where he refers to this " adverb " as a " predicative adjunct ").

CHAPTER 3

THE SO-CALLED " DIRECT OBJECT " ADVERBAL EXPANSION: PATTERNS, PARADIGMATICS AND DISTRIBUTION

3.0.1 Definitions: object, valency, diathesis
3.0.2 Construction: relevant patterns and environments
3.0.2.1 Veiling of the morphophonemic mechanism of the verb lexeme
3.1 The opposition *mediate* vs. *immediate object-construction* SUPPRESSED
3.1.1 Opposition representant: the IMMEDIATE construction
3.1.1.1 The *pronominal object* (personal pronoun) in *non-durative* environment
3.1.1.1.0.1 Cotext patterns: the *anaphoric pron. object* — suffix vs. zero
3.1.1.1.0.2 The *objective-pronoun* paradigm
3.1.1.2.1 The *nominal/pronominal object*: zero-determinated noun, substantivized relative, indeterminables
3.1.1.2.2 The *nominal/pronominal object*: ⲟⲩⲉⲱ- ⲟⲩⲁⲱ-, a unique lexicosyntactic overrule
3.1.1.2.3 A trend: the definite *nominal object* of deriving (" auxiliary ") verbs
3.1.2 Opposition representant: the MEDIATE construction
3.1.2.0.1 ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ-: a question of identity
3.1.2.1 *Nominal/pronominal object*: pattern-symptomatic (categorial) neutralization (the " Stern-Jernstedt " Rule: " no immediate construction in the present tense ")
3.1.2.1.1 " Adverbial " predication, durativity and the " adverbial " (mediate) construction
3.1.2.2 *Nominal/pronominal object*: morphological (lexemic) absence of morphophonemic alternation
3.1.2.2.1 Verbs of Egyptian origin, not compound
3.1.2.2.2 Compound verbs of Egyptian origin
3.1.2.2.3 Verbs of Greek origin
3.1.3 Conditioning (selection) of the MEDIATE construction (*pronominal object*, *non-durative* environment)
3.1.3.1 Verb lexemes with pertinent ⲙⲙⲟ- rection
3.1.3.2.1 Cotextual secondary selection of ⲙⲙⲟ- (" non-reflexive object ")
3.1.3.2.2-3 Miscellaneous possible motivations
3.1.3.3 *Nominal object*: discernible stylistic motivation for the selection of the *mediate/immediate* construction
3.1.3.3.1 Bracketing verb, bracketing object
3.1.3.3.2 Rhythmic-euphonic regulation?
3.1.3.3.3 Miscellaneous
3.2 The opposition *mediate* vs. *immediate* object-construction MAINTAINED
3.3 The " predication mediators ": *verb-lexeme premodifiers*
3.3.1 ⲣⲡⲕⲉ-
3.3.2 ⲣⲍⲟⲩⲟ/ⲉ-
3.3.3 -ⲯⲣⲡ(ⲛ)-
3.4 Deverbative lexeme-carrying nominalizations and their object-expansion
3.4.1 ⲣⲉϥ-
3.4.2 ⲁⲧ-
3.4.3 Miscellaneous

3.0.1 DEFINITIONS: OBJECT, VALENCY, DIATHESIS. The *object* is an expansion of the conjugated or extraconjugational verb lexeme, consisting of a pronoun (personal, indefinite, interrogative, demonstrative) or determinator expanded by a noun lexeme. This object is either (a) preceded or (b) not preceded by a marker relating it to its verbal nucleus. Obviously, this definition as it stands would subsume under (a) all prepositional-phrase expansions. To narrow down and delimit that range of adverbal modification which is functionally a case apart and formally predictable — i.e. regulated — there is, I believe, no other way but that of applying the structural distinction between *rectional* (grammatically motivated, uncommutable — hence non-pertinent but a co-constituent of the verb) and *complementational* (optional, grammatically unmotivated, commutable — hence pertinent) modification (§1.1.2.1). The traditional approximative, universalistic (yet inherently ethnocentric) conception of " direct " *vs.* " indirect " objects, of " transitive " *vs.* " intransitive " verbs, must not be uncritically imported into Coptic grammatical description (and then be post-hoc justified), but must be examined with a view to giving it structural meaning.

3.0.1.1 Trying to accommodate the conventional concept of *(in)transitivity* to the Coptic data, one can approach the problem at a semasiological angle [1], a *transformative-paradigmatic* angle (with an incidental morphologic aspect) [2], a *syntagmatic* (" constructional ") angle (again involving the morphosyntactic regulation of construct and pre-pronominal verb-lexeme allomorphs) or — and this is the usual practice — with a definition based on an unequal and individualistic admixture of all three [3]. The first approach, grouping some verb lexemes as transitive by semasiological criteria, would furnish a list partly coextensive with those lexemes selected by the other criteria, but this approach may be dismissed as essentially ungrammatical, also as largely subjective, arbitrary and uncontrollable. The transformational approach would refer the transitive *active* in a relatively simple way to a *passive* transformation. This assumes the existence in Coptic of a passive diathesis such as we know in Indo-European and Semitic, or at least the existence of a regular, clear-cut and predictable relationship: the transformation '*actor* + *verb lexeme* + *direct object*' =>'*patiens* + *stative* + (*instrumental*) *actor*' [4] being symptomatic of transitives.

[1] CHERIX 1979:12f. SAUVAGEOT 1950:158f.; SCHMIDT 1973:118f. calls this an "unsyntactic" differentiation. It is the basis of the generativist " subcategorization " and the structuralist *distinctive feature* in semasiological and morphologic functional analysis.

[2] Cf. SCHMIDT 1973:107, BUSSE 1974:124 n. 13, CALLENDER 1973a:65f. For a different, original conception of transitivity as one of a set of options of information arrangement, one of several " networks of systems " (mood, theme, transitivity), see HALLIDAY 1967:37ff, 1968:212ff., 1972:146ff., 162ff.

[3] CHERIX' exposition (1979:7f.) is a typical one, that (untypically) gives some attention to the matter of definition. Cherix defines as transitive a verb that fulfils one of three conditions: (1) a verb that " has " (i.e. alternates in) construct and pronominal forms of the lexeme, (2) that " has " (i.e. is transformable into) a qualitative, the (grammatical) subject of the state expressed by which is identical (i.e. correferent) with the actor of the infinitive, (3) the N-/MMO- object construction is added by Cherix as distinctive, primarily to cater for Greek-origin verbs and such native ones as " have " no qualitative or morphophonemic-alternation mechanism (without taking into account the possibility that the value of N- may differ here from that of N- alternating with the construct or pronominal forms; N-/MMO- in pattern-oriented view does not enter into Cherix's definition). See also QUECKE 1981:260f., 1982:285ff. and cf. SCHUCHARDT, SPITZER 1928:289, 295f.

[4] POLOTSKY 1960a:§9, FUNK 1978a:120f. (an excellent concise overview of the problem), QUECKE 1981:261. The transformation '*actor* + *verb lexeme* (infinitive, non-dur.)' => '*actor* + *stative* (dur.)' is a possible criterion for *intransitives* (the opposition infinitive vs. stative is suppressed for intransitives in the Bipartite Pattern — i.e. it is maintained in the [rather limited] circumstances of *transitives* predicated in the Bipartite, with the functional opposition of durative action *vs.* statal passive). This would mean that ⲉⲓⲣⲉ, while syntagmatically transitive, is resolvable into two paradigmatically (transformationally) transitive and intransitive-copular homonyms; for the latter, consider (*K* 9100) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲩⲣ-ⲕⲁⲕⲉ / (*Wess. 18* 99.17ff.) ⲡⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ... ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲣ-ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ... / (*Ch.* 98.47ff.) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲛ̀ⲍⲏⲧⲛ ⲧⲛⲏⲡ ⲉⲣ-ⲍⲏⲕⲉ / (*III* 48.28f.) ⲯⲁⲩⲣ-ϭⲱⲃ ⲏ ⲥⲉⲟ ⲛϭⲱⲃ. There are still some problems here, esp. since the two lists, combinations and respective meanings have still to be established; witness such hairline oppositions as (*A 1* 289) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲍⲏⲧⲩ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (" is fearful of...") *vs.* (*ibid.* 297) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲣ-ⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲍⲏⲧⲩ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (" fears "), *vs.* (*P* 131[8] 94 ro) ⲡⲉⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲍⲟⲧⲉ (" frightening ", " fearful "); (*Ch.* 21 *passim*) ⲛⲓⲣ-ⲍⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲉ ⲛⲓⲣ-ⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲓⲣ-ⲙⲁⲥⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉⲍⲧⲟ ⲍⲓⲉⲓⲱ... ⲛⲓⲣ-ⲍⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲍⲓⲟⲩⲟⲟⲍⲉ... ⲛⲓⲣ-ⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ... " you do not *constitute*..." non-actual

However, this test can hardly be accepted as adequate on its own, in view of (a) the considerable group of lexemes for which a stative is not attested (which, on the other hand, cannot be said to constitute a separate class in any sense but this morphological one); (b) the important group of bivalent or trivalent (" one/two-expansion ") " intransitives ", such as NAY or 2APE2, stative-less, which are for all structural-functional purposes not different from " true " (by extra-Coptic standards) transitives; (c) the case of verb syntagms expanded by the prepositional phrase N-/MMO- (forming the subject matter of the present chapter); N- is, on the one hand, a direct-object marker after transitives under given conditions, yet on the other hand an " adverbial " i.e. modifier signal (§1.3.1), and is thus in fact an " inset " of the " indirect " object as rection of transitives [5]; (d) the absence in Coptic of a single, unambiguous, predictable passive [6] corresponding symmetrically to the " active " ' *actor* + *v. lexeme* + *object* '. Moreover, this definition entails a subordinated, secondary treatment of the so-called " absolute ", object-less [7] transitives — which is unsatisfactory in a structural descriptive framework. Some of the foregoing objections will be touched on in the following pages. Cumulatively, they seem to rule out the transformational definition as greatly over-simplifying. The syntagmatic definition is hardly ever adopted independently, but usually appears as a not overly important component of a complex definition. Based on constructional data, including the compatibilities of the combinatory allomorphs of the verb lexemes, it is wanting in depth: it still lacks a *categorial* point of view, to account (*inter alia*) for the N-construction as a surrogate, alternant or variant direct-object expansion. On the whole, however, this approach can be said to be the vestibule to the one advocated here — namely, one of PATTERN and VALENCY STRUCTURE.

present (§3.1.2.1.1)?; (*A I* 37) (the blessed mountain) EqO NOYOEIN H EqP-OYOEIN " is alight or sheds light ". On this issue, see CALLENDER 1970:248ff., 1973b:194 n. 2, 195, SHISHA-HALEVY 1976a:32. The recurring cases of *infinitives* of usually intransitive lexemes in durative environment (non-actual present? §3.1.2.1.1) weaken somewhat the distinctive value of the durative pattern for this purpose. Since it is conceivable that the burden of the functional opposition of *actual* vs. *non-actual* present falls on the formal opposition of *stative* vs. *infinitive* (intr.), we need yet an independent test for defining the intransitive.

[5] Rectional N-/(MMO-) being a " case " morpheme, it is really a constituent of the verb and does not belong, structural-analytically speaking, to the noun syntagm to which it is, by syntagmatic " accident ", prefixed (cf. BARRI 1977:29).

[6] Verb diathesis is a pattern-related phenomenon, determined by the verb-actant(s) structure, rather than one related to the verb alone. This (well put by H. SCHUCHARDT, see *Brevier* 214f.) is almost a truism, but its ramifications are all too seldom fully realized. Consider the dependence of a " passive " value of the infinitive in Coptic on the presence of a (nominal, often pronominal) *object*: (*Ch.* 52.15ff.) 2WB NIM ETEPEПPWME OYAWOY AN EAAY NAq / (*P* 131[6] 44 PIE) EWXE-TNOYWW AE ETMKPINE MMON " not to be judged " / (*Or.* 156.12ff.) (... E2NAK AN) ENEX-OYWNE NOYWT ETWK (i.e. into your well) " a stone to be thrown ", SHISHA-HALEVY 1975:473. Compare the famous *locus* (*Mt.* 22:30, Boh.) (5EN+ANACTACIC) MПAY6I OYAE MПAY6ITOY, corresponding to οὔτε γαμοῦσιν οὔτε γαμίζονται. Passive diathesis is nowhere explicitly defined for Coptic. The stative of transitive verbs furnishes a morphologic statal passive form, predicatable (and occurring) only in the durative conjugation pattern (which in turn may be combined with the Tripartite-Conjugation categories by means of the periphrastic-suppletive conjugation with the use of the auxiliary WWПE). A " *Vorgangspassiv* " does not exist in Coptic as a true category: in the construction ' CE-/-OY..... (EBOA) 2ITN- ', opposable to ' CE-/-OY-..... N6I- ', the burden of the opposition lies on (EBOA) 2ITN-, which does no more than instrumentally introduce the noun-lexical or pronoun-lexical content of an indefinite personal pronoun. Consider the following striking instances: (*Wess. 9* 119a 27ff.) OYNPWME EYXW MMOC EPOq 2ITNNPWME XE-... / (*IV* 8.6) CENAOYEM-THYTN 2ITNTMHTATNAZTE / (*ibid.* 41.16f.) CENAMEPITK 2ITMПNOYTE MNNPWME / (*ibid.* 199.15f.) ПTHPq EYP-2MME MMOq 2ITMПTWW MПNOYTE / (*K* 9292) NAI ETOYWAXE EPOOY 2ITNNEГPAФH / (*Wess. 9* 143d 15ff.) ПENTAqTAMIOOY H ПENTAYTAMIOOY EBOA 2ITOOTq " who created them or by whom they were created ", cf. also *III* 170.27, *IV* 24.11, 66.21f., *Ch.* 88.35ff., 106.47f. etc. However, since, on the one hand, (EBOA) 2ITN- (" through the agency of ") is freely usable as a complement modifier phrase, and, on the other hand, the " indefinite " 3rd person plural pronoun is a fully privileged actor-expression in its own right — with no agentive specification — it is theoretically difficult to establish in Coptic a clear-cut " syntactic " passive category; consider such cases as (*IV* 28.5f.) 6EAAAY N2WB ENANOYq ENNAWAAq NNENEPHY EBOA 2ITMПNOYTE / (*ibid.* 31.12) NTEPOYP-2NAY EBOA 2ITMПNOYTE / (*Ch.* 76.36f.) qTAKO 2ITNNPWME / (*III* 134.5f.) OYOEI NAY EBOA 2ITMПXOEIC / (*ibid.* 47.14) KAAWC 6E EYOYEW-ПAq NEBIW. Again it will be noted that it is the *object*, rather than the combination of 3rd plural and (EBOA) 2ITN-, that marks a construction as a " passive "-surrogate or translation equivalent — not a true passive transform. POLOTSKY (1957a:228f. = *CP* 230f.) accepts (in)transitivity as an intrinsic (lexematic) category in Coptic.

[7] CHERIX 1979:9 (" absolut ", " moyen ").

3.0.1.2 To replace the three related imported dichotomies of transitive:intransitive verb, direct: indirect object, object:non-object (" adverbial ") expansion, I propose a dependency, *pattern* definition — the adaptation to Coptic of an analytic strategy which, although certainly not novel in any of its essential details, has found more and more adherents in the last three decades [8] (in Coptic grammatical description it has not been applied hitherto) — the pattern (i.e. syntagmatic/paradigmatic) compatibilities of the verb lexeme, leading to a non-dichotomous, gradient classification. In a simplified outline (see also §1.1.2.1):

(a) The *matrix*: The verb occupies a slot (" *Leerstelle* ") — a nuclear one — in a pattern or matrix in which other slots are occupiable by its actor and by rective expansions — " *actants* " in Tesnière's terminology. The actantial potential of the verb, its *valency*, can be conveniently stated by the number and nature of potentially or characteristically occupiable rective slots, i.e. the dependences the given lexeme can contract. Thus ϣⲧⲡ (ⲛ-/-) (or rather *s-t-p*, with {*ō/e/o*} allomorphs of a relational archimorpheme), ⲛⲁⲩ (ⲉ-) are *bivalent* verbs, ⲙⲟⲩϩ (-/ⲛ- + ⲛ-), ϩϣ (ⲉ- + ⲉ-), ϩⲗⲁⲣⲉϩ (ⲉ- + ⲉ-) (*cf.* ϩⲗⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩ- *IV* 56.6), ⲧⲥⲗⲃⲟ (-/ⲛ- + ⲉ-) are trivalent, while ⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ, ⲉⲓ are univalent. This classification is distinctive: bivalent ϯ, ⲅⲓⲛⲉ, ⲉⲓⲣⲉ, ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ (" give ", " find [following upon a search] ", " make ", " call ") are different from their trivalent homonyms (ϯ -/ⲛ- + ⲛ- " bring into a [given] state ", ⲅⲓⲛⲉ -/ⲛ- + ⲛ- " discover in a [given] state or act ", ⲉⲓⲣⲉ -/ⲛ- + ⲛ- " make into... ", ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉ- + ⲭⲉ- " name ") — different by the structural definition of identity. Transitive verbs are bi- or trivalent; intransitive ones, univalent (there are no zero-valents, like " *it rains* ", in Coptic). The zero-filled rection slot is very important: the case of ϯ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-/(ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ) ⲉ- (etc.) or — syntagmatically — the zero-anaphora (§3.1.1.1.0.1).

(b) *Slot paradigms*, *object* vs. *complement*: some of the positions in the matrix are occupiable by one member only (or zero). These are conditioned, rectional or " case " expansions — a distinctive component of the verb lexeme (see n. 5). Since it is not opposed to another term, this satellite has no proper meaning, but contributes to the complex meaning of the verb syntagm (the preposition ⲉ- when non-commutable — i.e. after ⲛⲁⲩ or ϩⲗⲁⲣⲉϩ — is as rectional, as devoid of meaning, as ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ- or the immediate object-construction ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-, ⲥⲟⲧⲡ-). When a verb governs a paradigm of several rectional expansions — different prepositions, with an ensuing change of the overall meaning — we have *homonymy* of distinct verb lexemes, differing in meaning and rection-construction: ϣⲱⲧⲙ + Ø " lend an ear " (*Ch.* 154.42), ϣⲱⲧⲙ ⲉ- " listen to ", ϣⲱⲧⲙ -/ⲛ- " hear ", ϣⲱⲧⲙ ⲛϫⲁ- " obey " [9]. When, however, the isolable meaning of the lexeme does not change as the modifiers commute (ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ/ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ/ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ, ϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ϩⲓ-/ϩⲛ-/ⲛϫⲁ — but ϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲙⲛ-, rective) we have truly free (in the sense of " grammatically unmotivated ") substitutability, i.e. *non-rectional*, meaningful, extraneous (not verb-componential) *complement* expansion, Tesnière's " *circonstant* " [10]. A thorough study of Coptic verb valency and compatibilities, as also extensive and precise valency listing of all verb lexemes, awaits future scholarship; my concern in the following pages will be the distributional structure and role relationship of the two major rection types, *viz.* the mediate (ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ-) and immediate object-constructions.

[8] Cf. Schuchardt 1905/6. Definitions in Tesnière 1965, Helbig 1971, Busse 1974, Baum 1976. I have in this paragraph relied heavily upon the illuminating exposition in Rosén 1977.

[9] Cf. Rosén 1977:168ff.

[10] The distinction between " object "-*actant* and " complement "-*circonstant* is difficult, practically and theoretically, and borderline or ambiguous cases abound. See (in addition to the reff. given in §1.1.2.1) the early discussions by von der Gabelentz (1869:383), Frobeen (1878:37f.), Paul (1920:§98). Frei's model does not distinguish between the two (1966:47), although he insists (1961:35f.) on their being kept distinct. Sauvageot (1960:348) relegates this distinction to an extra-grammatical level. See also Trubetzkoy 1939:77f., Mathesius–Vachek 1975:140.

3.0.2 Construction: relevant patterns and environments. Two constructions are in unstructured view rival and collateral [11]: (a) the *immediate* [12] construction: " *a* ", specified as " $a_{dur.}$ " (' $infinitive_{dur.}$ → *pronoun/noun syntagm* ') and " $a_{non\text{-}dur.}$ " ($infinitive_{non\text{-}dur.}$ → *pronoun/noun syntagm* ') and (b) the *mediate* [12] construction " *b* ", specified as " $b_{dur.}$ " (' $infinitive_{dur.}$ → N-*noun syntagm*/MMO-*pronoun* ') or " $b_{non\text{-}dur.}$ " (' $infinitive_{non\text{-}dur.}$ → N-*noun syntagm*/MMO-*pronoun* '). In the pattern code, the subscript refers to *environment* factor (of the nuclear verb): *durative*, the (in a sense) marked environment (almost only the present tense in the Bipartite Pattern) and *non-durative*, unmarked (for *Aktionsart* and in a sense morphosyntactically), the Tripartite Pattern and extra-conjugational infinitive. The expansion constituency includes the pronoun and noun syntagm [13]. The descriptive statements below refer to two kinds of structurally significant environments: (*a*/*b*) *neutralization* environment (§3.1), where patterns (*a*) and (*b*) are mutually unopposed and represented by either (*a*) (§3.1.1) or (*b*) (§3.1.2); (*a*:*b*) *opposition environment* (§3.2), where (*a*) and (*b*) are mutually opposed. I must concede in advance that these last statements are much less confident and decisive than the neutralization statements. My principal concern in this chapter is to examine the *functional load* of the opposition (*a*:*b*).

3.0.2.1 The morphophonemic alternation mechanism of the verb lexeme. As is well known, the Coptic verb lexeme may alternate in two pre-object allomorphs marked for syntactic dependence, often prosodically correlated as sandhi-forms (both are related to the syntactically unmarked " absolute " or dictionary form). These allomorphs signal the *verb* - (*satellite*) *noun* (" construct ") or *verb* - (*satellite*) *pronoun* (" pronominal ") syntagmatic links: (ϵιρϵ) ρ-/ⲗⲗ-, (ϲⲱⲧⲡ) ϲϵⲧⲡ-/ϲⲟⲧⲡ-. Both are specifically *non-final* (the " absolute " is unmarked in this respect). This mechanism, where available, provides the sole signalling of the *verb* - *object* interdependence in pattern (*a*). The sporadic absence (or rather graphemic " veiling ") of the construct allomorph is therefore noteworthy and must be correctly understood. This phenomenon, normal in Akhmimic and quite frequently encountered in Bohairic, is sporadic in Sahidic [14]; it is particularly common in Shenoute as far as literary Sahidic goes. The instances on my files are analyzed in the following table:

[11] The scarceness of a *varia lectio* fluctuation of both constructions ought on principle to prompt the question of some functional difference, be it ever so tenuous (such rare cases are *III* 72 n. 19, *A 1* 174 ⲁⲩϫⲡϵ-ⲛϵⲩⲯⲏⲣϵ/ⲁⲩϫⲡⲟ ⲛⲛϵⲩⲯⲏⲣϵ). Generally, on the construction of the object: Stern §§490, 491, 493; Schwarze–Steinthal 478-484; Steindorff 1951:§§389ff.; Till §261.

[12] I use " mediate " for an object-expansion marked by an extra-lexemic, post-adjunctal demarcative morpheme, " immediate " for a similar expansion marked *intra-lexemically* (by a segmental/modulation morpheme).

[13] This is in Coptic the meeting point *par excellence* of nominal and verbal syntagmatics. What expands the verb is in fact *the determinator* (a pronoun!), which is in turn expanded by a noun lexeme (§3.1.1.2.1 and Ch. 5).

[14] See Stern 1886:133, Andersson 1904:28ff., Erman 1915:187, Crum 1926:I 250, Sethe apud Kahle 1954:202f., 213f., Till 1928:§147a-b (also *ZÄS* 63:146f., 1928), Quecke 1972:45 with further reff., Shisha-Halevy 1976b:359f. This graphemic veiling is extended (in a comparable dialectological distribution) to the interlocutive (" independent ") personal pronoun when a proclitic subject in the bimembral Nominal Sentence: the atonic allomorph (functionally marked as non-predicative) ⲁⲛⲅ-, ⲏⲧⲕ- (etc.) is graphemically wanting, yet juncturally identifiable. This phenomenon is widespread in Shenoute (Shisha-Halevy 1976b:359): ⲁⲛⲟⲛ- (*Ch.* 65.23f., *IV* 19.22), ⲁⲛⲟⲕ- (*A 2* 70), ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ- (*Thompson* K 3 vo, *IV* 100.7).

Conjugation form (*non-dur.*)	Verb lexeme	Determination paradigms	Subsequent indication of juncture	Reference
perfect	ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ	ⲡ-	ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*Ch.* 112.16 ff.
fut. I	ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ	ⲡ-	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*Ch.* 103.7f.
fut. II	ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ	ⲡ-	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*Ch.* 65.10f., 78.13f.
perfect	ⲥⲱⲧⲙ	ⲡ-		*A 1* 109
infinit.	ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	ⲡ-		*Ch.* 104.40f.
conjunct.	ⲥⲱⲕ	ⲡ-	ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ	*IV* 168.7f.
-ⲧⲣⲉ-	ⲱⲡ	ⲡ-		*Wess. 9* 173b 4ff.
perf.	ⲧⲱⲙ	ⲡ-		*P* 130⁴ 122 ⲗⲁ
jussive	ⲧⲱⲙ	ⲡ-		*P* 130⁴ 122 ⲗⲁ
aor.	ⲩⲱⲱⲃⲉ	ⲡ-	ⲁⲛ	*IV* 94.3
fut. II	ⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ	ⲡ-		*P* 131⁵ 43 ⲣ
perf.	ⲥϩⲁⲓ	ⲡ-		*IV* 72.20
		- - - - - - - -		
conjunct.	ⲡⲱⲣϫ	ⲟⲩ-		*III* 219.18f.
-ⲧⲣⲉ-	ϫⲟⲟⲩ	ⲟⲩ-	ⲛⲁⲛ	*IV* 107.25
perf.	ⲩⲟⲣⲩⲣ	ⲟⲩ-		*IV* 19.13f. (A)
fut. I	ⲥⲕⲁⲓ	ⲟⲩ-		*A 2* 24
		- - -		
fut. III	ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	Ø-		*IV* 173.4,9
		- - - - - - - -		
conjunct.	ϫⲟⲟⲩ	(—)		*IV* 102.8
perf.	ⲥϩⲁⲓ	(—)		*IV* 72.19
-ⲧⲣⲉ-	ⲡⲱϩⲧ	(—)	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*IV* 100.2f.
fut. I	ⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ	(—)	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*Ch.* 67.26ff.
(*dur.*)				
pres.	ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	Ø-		*III* 177.18 (A)
pres.	ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	Ø-		*A 2* 509
pres.	ⲟⲩⲱⲙ	Ø-	ϩⲱⲱⲕ	*III* 202.19
pres.	ⲟⲩⲱⲩ	Ø-		*III* 145.28
pres.	ⲧⲱⲃ	Ø-	ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ	*III* 70.7
ⲣⲉⲕ-	ϩⲱⲧⲃ	Ø-		*Ch.* 27.11f. (§3.4.1)
pres.	ⲱϩⲥ	Ø-		*IV* 159.2f.
pres.	ⲧⲁⲩⲟ	Ø-		*IV* 159.2f.
pres.	ⲧⲁⲩⲟ	Ø-	ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	*III* 175.24 (A)

determination paradigms:

" ⲡ- "	incl. demonstratives
" ⲟⲩ- "	incl. ϩⲉⲛ-
∅-	zero determinator
(—)	indeterminables: ϩⲁϩ, ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ

The three essential tell-tale features in this distributional picture are:

(a) *Determination complementary distribution*: ⲡ-determination is restricted to the non-durative infinitive, while for ($a_{dur.}$) only zero-determination of the noun is attested, this being reflected in the statements made in §§3.1.1.2.1, 3.1.2.1, 3.2.0.1.

(b) *Prosody*: in most instances we have clear indication of the close juncture of the *verb - object* link, while the rest do not counterindicate this.

(c) *Lexeme morphology*: the class distribution shows all principal lexemic patterns proportionately represented [15]. We may conclude that this phenomenon constitutes neither an infringement of the Stern-Jernstedt Rule (§3.1.2.1) nor a special zero-marked construction [16].

3.1 The opposition mediate vs. immediate object-construction suppressed

3.1.1 Opposition representant: the immediate construction

3.1.1.1 The pronominal object in non-durative environment. The following statement, found to be true: " unless contrary overruling factors are involved (§3.1.3.3), and when morphologically feasible, the pronominal direct object occurs exclusively in pattern ($a_{non\text{-}dur.}$), with the pronominal state of the verb lexeme expanded by a suffix pronoun ", extends the Stern-Jernstedt Rule (§3.1.2.1) to part of the non-durative environment " uncharted " in Jernstedt 1927 [17]. It hardly needs special exemplification, as the ($a_{non\text{-}dur.}$) pattern is attested on practically every other line in the corpus (many instances will be given *passim* in this chapter). A striking instance is the almost ubiquitous alternation of -ϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ (durative) with -ϫⲟⲟⲥ (non-durative) — the neutric fem. pronoun -ⲥ-, the formal (" dummy ") object, is cataphoric to the subsequent ϫⲉ-. This (and similar) alternation is clearly observable in such

[15] As a matter of fact we have no general statistics by which to evaluate or weight the class incidence of this phenomenon. Striking is the high incidence of the biradicals (" ⲕⲱⲧ "; on ⲟⲩⲱⲙ cf. Quecke 1972:45), also (relatively speaking) of ⲥϩⲁⲓ, ⲥⲕⲁⲓ, and perhaps the low incidence of the causatives (cf., for Subakhmimic, Nagel 1964:157-8).

[16] Cf. Till 1928:§147a-b, Emmel 1981:142f. (n. 5). For ϫⲱⲱⲗⲉ ⲥⲙⲁϩ ⲥⲙⲁϩ, ⲕⲱⲧϥ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ϫⲗⲗⲉ ", see §1.3.3 above.

[17] Two letters from P. V. Jernstedt to W. E. Crum (Brit. Lib. Add. MS 45685, part II, ff. 302f., 379ff.) prove that Jernstedt was well aware of this. He had started investigating the non-durative environment (using as corpus Budge's Martyrdom of Viktor; " Later on " — he writes — " I shall not forget Shenoute "). In his first letter, dated the 26.3.34, he announces his intention to extend the basic formulation of the rule, and reports his interim impression that (for ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ), although with a ⲛ-/ⲟⲩ-determinated object the mediate construction occurs as a rule, with the personal pronoun " the treatment is contrary to that in the praesentia ". In the second letter written five years later (1.3.39) Jernstedt, in a criticism of Chaîne's grammar, remarks on the rarity of the mediate construction with pronominals, stating this to be a fact of Shenoute's usage (and incidentally advocating the *Spezialgrammatik* approach). The existence of these letters was kindly brought to my attention by Prof. Bentley Layton.

cotextual configurations [18] as the following: (*A 1* 82-3) ...ϵγτββο ммоογ н ϵαγτββοογ / (*Ench.* 66b) ϵκϵιρϵ ммос н акаас ммϵλос мпорнн / (*III* 132.17f.) ϵιτϵ нϵнтаγсоγшнч ϵιτϵ нϵтϵнсϵсооγн ммоч ан / (*IF* 108 apud *Dictionary* 742f.) нϵтгшг ммос н нϵнтаγгогс.

3.1.1.1.0.1 Cotext patterns: the anaphoric pronominal object - suffix vs. zero. When a pronominal object is anaphoric to a noun syntagm [19] — and this is the usual case — it is observable that the form of the object varies and indeed alternates with the referate determinator (§5.1.1.0.1). This is fully in keeping with — indeed corroborative of — the general theory of the noun syntagm in Coptic (§5.1.1), according to which the determinator is the prime nucleus, the lexeme its first expansion: the referate of the anaphoric object is the article, not the noun lexeme:

(1) ' {п-}/{оγ-}/∅- ним → *suffix pronoun* ': (*Ch.* 104.8f.) ϵкψанϵιρϵ мпгап мн нтакаач нак / (158. 14ff.) оγон... ϵмнтач-поϵік ϵоγомч / (*III* 38.3) пϵιгшв аінаγ ϵроч / (*ibid.* 34.28f.) ϵγлобϵ нсапран ϵт-рϵγхітч аγш нсанϵгвнγϵ ан ϵаау / (*A 1* 256) хінтϵсвш ϵтнаноγс ϵхоос ψапгап ммϵ ϵаач / (*III* 128.18) нϵθооγ атϵтнтааγ нан / (*ibid.* 25.3f.) гшв ним ϵтϵтноγаψоγ ψахϵ ним ϵтϵтноγаψоγ хооγ аγш арі-соγ / (*A 2* 468) чі мпрооγψ мпϵтнаноγч ним ϵаач / (*ibid.* 396) ...оγψахϵ ϵхооч / (*A 1* 88) гϵннϵθооγ ϵааγ / (*ibid.* 45) аппоγтϵ тшψ нак ϵϵірϵ нгϵнгвнγϵ ϵγнаψт... мпчтшψ нак хϵ-мпраау.

(2) ' ∅- determinator → -∅ object expansion ': (*A 2* 392) ϵхоос ∆ϵ хϵ-мпоγхі-ваптісма ним пϵто ммнтрϵ хϵ-аγхі / (*ibid.* 59) нϵнгвнγϵ гар нϵттрϵнϵіψахϵ †-гап ϵрон аγш наноγс ϵγ† / (*A 1* 39) аψ-агом аγш †шψ гш ммϵ / (*IV* 82.11) ψач†-осϵ нгоγо нчтрϵгϵнкооγϵ† / (*ibid.* 83.3) ...ϵк†-гісϵ нау ϵк† нак / (*Ch.* 113. 47ff.) ϵψхϵ-пноγтϵ гар хі-ϵооγ гннϵγсϵвнс чхі он гннасϵвнс / (*ibid.* 173-4) ϵіс ψомтϵ нромпϵ †ннγ ϵіψінϵ нсакарпос гн†вш нкнтϵ н†бінϵ ан гішшс / (*Ryl. Cat.* 32 No. 68 cϵ) мнтоγ-ллаγ нгшв ϵхш ϵроі / (*Ch.* 91.17ff.) ...ϵнкштϵ нсапϵθооγ ϵϵірϵ / (*P* 131[8] 105 ro) пϵтбн-арікϵ гар ϵчбінϵ ан ϵгоγн ϵпϵтψа-хϵ ллла ϵплогос... / (*A 2* 153) нтанім нршмϵ р-∆ікаіос ϵнϵг ϵтвϵпса мпні ... хϵ-ϵннаϵірϵ анон [20] / (*III* 165.17) пϵтоγшψ ϵр-атсштм марϵчϵірϵ / (*ibid.* 18.15f.) анаψ мϵн мпоγϵірϵ (cf. 17.25) / (*K* 933) нсϵнаψр-ψнрϵ ан ϵнϵг ноγϵішт... ϵаγϵірϵ он нтаγϵірϵ ϵпхінхн. This is a distinctive and favourite Shenoutean figure, of which the most frequently occurring instance is no doubt the constellation ' р-нобϵ → ϵірϵ ' (*III* 16.24) нϵтнар-нобϵ сϵнаϵірϵ он... / (*Ch.* 71.31ff.) ϵіψанр-нобϵ н ϵіψантмϵірϵ, also *ibid.* 65.14f., 66.7, 74.50ff., *III* 93.21, *P* 130[1] 37 pnz, etc. *Anaphorically*, then, there is only a binary opposition of *zero:non-zero* determination, the equipollent opposition {п-}:{оγ-}:∅- being simplified [21].

(3) In passing, let us look at two other noteworthy anaphora patterns: (a) (*A 1* 9) ...ϵγхш ммос хϵ-ϵγо нкоінонια (sic) мннϵγϵрнγ нсϵо ан гноγсооγтн — anaphoric zeroing of a predicative-constituent modifier phrase [22] (' нсϵо ан ' in *thematic* status, the new rheme being гноγсооγтн). This brings us to (b) the anaphoric zeroing of a lexeme-componential modifier: (*IV* 181.13) мнтаноϵі (sic) ш пршмϵ ϵт-

[18] Notably in the precising " *disjunctio Sinuthiana* " figure (Shisha-Halevy 1975:473, 1976a:37ff.).

[19] The *pronominal predicate* (of a "nominal Sentence "), anaphoric to оγ-, гϵн-, is оγа (пϵ)/оγϵі (тϵ), гоϵінϵ (нϵ): (*A 2* 62) тϵгіммϵ ϵтхш ммос хϵ-ан-оγпарθϵнос ϵоγϵі ан тϵ, *Or.* 159.45ff., 159-160 (von Lemm 1972a:12f., Shisha-Halevy 1976a:35). The predicate resumptive of (п-) is problematic — нточ пϵ, an " illogical " extension of the " *c'est lui* " construction to cover the " *case vide* " of " *il l'est* "; e.g. *Or.* 157.27ff. (see Vergote, *BiOr* 13:226b, 1965); паі in (*A 1* 173) ϵγхш ммос хϵ-нϵгооγ мпоγа поγа нϵ ϵмпаі ан пϵ may be another way of expressing this but may on the other hand stand for the whole predication: " this is not the case ". гоінϵ in (*A 2* 254) (animals called) ' іш ' (or) ' саннϵг ' (ϵ)нгоінϵ ан нϵ refers untypically to a lexemic zero form.

[20] Note that both " transitive " and " intransitive " р- are here represented: see n. 4.

[21] п-, оγ- are both excluded as immediate objects after the durative verb (see below); both are coordinated by мн-. An apparent exception to this anaphoric pattern: (*A 1* 154-5) торгн н пϵмкаг нгнт ϵтϵрϵпноγтϵ ϵінϵ н ϵтчнантс ϵхннϵтчноγхϵ н нϵтчнаноχоγ ϵвоλ is explicable by the special zeugmatic construction (yet another junctural link, §6.0.2).

[22] Cf. Tobler 1886:86ff.; see Dressler 1973:27f., 32ff. on (zero-)anaphoric constructions (with further reff.).

ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ. ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲕⲱ / (*Ch.* 183.54ff.) ⲁⲩⲯⲁⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲕⲁ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲕⲁⲁϥ / (*P* 130[1] 35 ⲣⲙⲅ) ...ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲟⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲏ ⲥⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲛⲃⲱⲕ (*IV* 67.7f.) ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲕⲱⲗϩ ⲉⲕⲗⲁ-ⲡⲁⲧ ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲕⲱⲗⲁ ⲧⲏⲡⲛ ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲕⲱⲗϩ ⲉⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲁⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ with both zero object and anaphorically zeroed modifier, proving their basic similarity. Also *A 2* 520 (ⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁ- → ⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ), 360 (ⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲱϥ → ⲕⲁⲁⲩ); compare (*P* 131[7] 39 vo) ⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲕϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲙⲕⲁϩ (see n. 4).

3.1.1.1.0.2 The objective pronoun paradigm. As may be gathered from §3.1.1.1.1, the suffix-pronoun paradigm, when expanding the verb, is *post-lexemic*. When, on the other hand, the pronominal object does not bound on the lexeme (and in isolated, morphologically peculiar cases where it does) we find an allomorphic paradigm — that of the *objective pronoun* (which, in contradistinction to the suffixes, is objective only). The objective pronoun occurs:

(a) After a (synchronic) suffix-pronoun in possessor role in the verboids ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁ-, ⲙⲛⲧⲁ- [23]. Here the objective pronoun is usually anaphoric to the antecedent (most often, substantivizing article) of the relative verboid: '(ⲡ)ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁ-*suffix-pron.*-*objective pron.*' and therefore not as a rule found in the interlocutive persons [24]: *Singular, masc.*: -ϥ, – ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥϥ (*A 1* 41), ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲕϥ (*Or.* 158.2f.), – ⲉⲧⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲓϥ (*A 2* 325), ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲩϥ, ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲩϥ (*III* 172.18, 90.18), ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲛϥ (*A 2* 10, *P* 130[1] 132 ⲧⲕⲅ); *fem.*: -ⲥ, – ⲉⲙⲛ-ⲧⲁⲕⲥ (*P* 130[4] 94 ⲥⲅ, 131[6] 88 ro), ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥⲥ (*III* 85.14, 100.12, *Berl.* 1613 7 ⲥⲉ), – ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲓⲥ (*Mich. 550* 13 ap. *Dictionary* 563b), -ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥ (*P* 130[4] 76 vo). *Plural*: -ⲥⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 23.48f., *K* 929), ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥⲟⲩ (*III* 119.1).

(b) After an indefinite 3rd-person-plural suffix, diachronically in actor role, synchronically a semi-analyzable component of the lexeme: ϫⲟⲟⲩ "send", ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩ "fetch", "send", (ⲧ)ⲧⲟⲟⲩ "make give" in *non-durative* environment (see Obs. (3) below)): *Singular, 1st person*: -ⲧ, ⲉⲩⲧⲙϫⲟⲟⲩⲧ (*A 1* 465); *2nd pers. masc.*: -ⲕ, ⲁϥⲧⲟⲟⲩⲕ (*IV* 193.10), ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩⲕ (*III* 38.21); *3rd person masc.*: -ϥ, ϫⲟⲟⲩϥ (*IV* 88.18, *Ch.* 66.27), (ⲧ)ⲧⲟⲟⲩϥ (*P* 131[6] 44 ⲡⲓⲥ); *Plural, 3rd person*: -ⲥⲟⲩ, -ⲥⲉ, ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ (*III* 24.23), ϫⲟⲟⲩⲥⲉ (very common: *III* 167.21f., *IV* 64.20, *Ch.* 40.23ff. etc.), (*III* 187.5).

(c) After ⲥϩⲁⲓ (in variation with ⲥⲁϩ-), ⲁⲣⲓ- : *3rd pers. plur.* ⲥϩⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 94.15f., 185.23f., 160.2, *v.l.* ⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ), ⲁⲣⲓⲥⲟⲩ (*III* 25.4): a case of ⲓ-final lexemes.

Observations: (1) Morphophonemically, most instances (excepting only ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲕ- (?), ⲁⲣⲓ-) could be phrased as "V$\underset{\sim}{S}$-*pronoun*" ($\underset{\sim}{S}$ = non-syllabic sonant, to include ⲩ).

(2) Only -ⲥⲟⲩ [25] is, properly speaking, a distinctive ecxlusive member of this paradigm: all others (and the list is probably incomplete) are homonymous with the corresponding suffixes or (ⲥⲉ) prefix.

(3) Some examples show the objective pronoun in case (b) to be in alternation with the mediate object-construction, viz. in *durative* environment: (*III* 150.7) ...ⲉⲉⲓϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 187.8) ...ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲛⲛⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ; like the suffix-pronoun, then, it is regulated by the Stern-Jernstedt Rule; in case (a), on the other hand, it is not commutable with ⲙⲙⲟ-.

3.1.1.2.1 Nominal/pronominal object: zero-determinated noun, substantivized relative, indeterminables. (1) The *zero-determinated* nominal object enters exclusively the constructions

[23] See Stern §§316, 342, Steinthal–Misteli 1893:293.

[24] In (*A 1* 41) ⲡⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ "the desire thou (fem.) hast for him" the order of elements may be conditioned (but in *Joh.* 4:18 [also *P* 130[3] 10, not. Sh.] we do find (ⲡ)ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲉⲉϥ). Comparable cases are *Joh.* 16:15 (Chester Beatty and 3 of Horner's MSS) ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲉⲥ-ⲡⲁⲉⲓⲱⲧ "which my Father has", *1 Joh.* 4:16 ⲧⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲥ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ "which God has" and *NHC XI* 16.10f. ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲉⲥ-ⲛⲏ "they have it" — all with a non-personal possessor.

[25] Discussed by Piehl (*ÄZ* 33:40ff. [1895]), Spiegelberg (*ÄZ* 53:133f. [1917]) and Till (*WZKM* 33:128 ff. [1926]), who typically considers these combinations "*unsinnig*".

($a_{dur.}$), ($a_{non\text{-}dur.}$) [26]: (*A 1* 256) ⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲩ+-ⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲁⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲩ+ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲡⲉ / (*A 2* 481) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲯⲉⲉⲧ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲑⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲙⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 352) ⲭⲣ-ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ / (*P* 130[5] 34 I) ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲉⲍ-ⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 154.52ff.) ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲟⲩⲉⲍ-ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ. In more precise rephrasing, this may be taken as a phenomenon of mutual exclusion between ⲛ-, the marker of construction (*b*), and the zero determinator which, as nucleus of the noun syntagm (§5.1.1), is really the object. This is a secondary statement, overruling others (§3.1.2); it does not invalidate them or constitute a deviation. It is absolutely essential here to define the zero for which this statement is true: it is only that zero which is commutable in a full paradigm with the two other determinators (§5.1.1.0.1), *viz.* {ⲡ-}/{ⲟⲩ-}/Ø-, whereas a zero determinator in a paradigm not including either of the other two is not incompatible with ⲛ-, and hence does occur in construction (*b*). Consider the following: ⲟⲩ-*less paradigm*: -ⲕⲉ-/ⲛⲕⲉ- (*III* 74.8, 19.5f.), —/ⲛ + *cardinal numbers* [27] (*III* 52.8, *IV* 124.7, *Berl.* 1613 5 vo [ⲉⲁⲛⲟⲩϥⲣ-ⲙⲁⲁⲃ/-ⲣ-ⲭⲟⲩⲱⲧ] *vs. III* 157.28, 112.1f., *IV* 103.6 — note *IV* 67.6 ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ); ⲡ-*less paradigm*: -ⲗⲁⲁⲩ/ⲛⲗⲁⲁⲩ (*III* 94.1, *Ch.* 130.28f.), -ⲟⲩ/ⲛⲟⲩ (interr.; *IV* 95.17, *A 2* 366 ⲉⲓⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ *vs. III* 45.23, *Ch.* 166.1). *Indeterminables*, of course, do not count as zero-determinated, hence ought to be compatible with ⲛ-. I can, however, find examples of pattern (*b*) only for the indefinite ⲣⲱⲙⲉ [28]: (*IV* 80.18) ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲣⲟⲧⲣⲉⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ. For ⲏⲓⲙ (*Ch.* 78.46ff.), ⲟⲩⲏⲣ (*ibid.*, *III* 107.20f., *IV* 80.15), ⲍⲁⲍ (*Ch.* 29.15ff., *III* 25.4f.), ⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ (*III* 139.4f.) I have only examples of the immediate construction.

(2) ⲡⲉⲧ- (etc.), the substantivized relative syntagm, for which we distinguish (§5.2.3.1) two distinct patterns: (a) ⲡⲉⲧ-/ⲧⲉⲧ-/ⲛⲉⲧ-, present, future, perfect etc. — not further determinable (i.e. ⲡ-, the nuclear determinator, is always initial in this syntagm) and (b) ⲡⲉⲧ-, further determinable: present tense only, ⲡ- uncommutable (hence not a determinator, but a nominalizator morph). Determinators here include the definite (not feminine), indefinite (singular and plural), zero, Ø-... ⲛⲓⲙ; see (3). Pattern (a) is compatible with the object marker ⲛ- (obligatory in the durative, §3.1.2.1): (*III* 15.23f.) ⲍⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲕⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲛⲏⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ / (*ibid.* 109.2f.) ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁϫⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲟⲩⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲉⲣⲟⲥ... ϫⲛⲟⲩⲓ ⲉⲣⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 205.4f.) ⲧⲉⲧⲅⲁⲓⲟ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... ⲧⲉⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲉ / (*IV* 58.26)... ⲛϥⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲙⲡⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ / (*ibid.* 43.28) ⲙⲡⲟⲩ+ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 55.10ff.) ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲛⲁϫⲱ ⲛⲁϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲯⲱⲉ, but occurs also (in non-durative environment) in the immediate construction: (*III* 121.21f.) ⲉϥⲯⲁⲛⲧⲙⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲯⲱⲉ / (*IV* 88.1) ⲛⲛⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲏ ⲍⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ. Pattern (b) is, to my knowledge, found only in the immediate construction (incompatibility with ⲛ-?): *durative*: (*IV* 7.11) ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲣ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 128.27, *Ch.* 63.9f.) — ⲉⲧⲣ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ, *non-durative*: (*III* 104.1) ⲁϥⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 3.17f.) ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ / (*III* 150.21)) ⲉⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ etc.

(3) Ø-...- ⲛⲓⲙ, the discontinuous determinator, and ... - ⲛⲓⲙ, the postpositive determinator (§5.1.1.0.1) are distinct from zero determination, and are both compatible with ⲛ- [29]: (*Wess. 9* 179d 7f.) ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*III* 20.5f.) ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ / (*Ch.* 85.7f.) ⲉⲕⲙⲉ ⲛⲍⲁⲡ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲙⲉ / (*III* 113.11) ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲯ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*ibid.* 151.24) ...ⲉⲩⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲛⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ. In the immediate construction: (*IV* 85.22) ⲯⲁⲣⲉ-ⲡⲉϥⲍⲏⲧ ⲧⲥⲧⲉ-ⲍⲛⲟ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ.

[26] So explicitly in Jernstedt 1927:70, in terms of compatibility. It is interesting to note that the residual pre-object *nomina agentis* (construct participles, historically) have almost exclusively zero-determinated objects: ϥⲁⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ (*Ch.* 199.34f.), ⲙⲁⲓ-ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*III* 120.15), ⲙⲁⲓ-ⲧⲟ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ (*Ch.* 110.10f.), ⲙⲁⲥⲧ-ⲍⲏⲕⲉ (*Ch.* 104.25), ⲙⲁⲥⲧ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (*III* 120.13), and so on. It may have been this generic, cliché-like or terminological application of these syntagms which was responsible for their survival into Coptic. (For the similar behaviour of the productive, remodelled analytic ⲣⲉϥ-, see §3.4.1.)

[27] See §5.1.1.0.1: ⲟⲩ- as the number "one" does belong in this paradigm.

[28] Pronominal ⲣⲱⲙⲉ "(any)one" is the animate counterpart of inanimate ⲗⲁⲁⲩ, and must be kept distinct from the determinable {ⲡ-}/{ⲟⲩ-}/Ø-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ "a (usually male) human being", opposed to ⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ, ⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ, etc. The incompatibility of ⲛ- with zero determination is not absolute. A (very rare) instance of the two morphs co-existing is *Mt.* 10:37 (Sah. and "Middle Egyptian").

[29] ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ in (*Rossi 2/3* 13) ...ⲉϥⲭⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ is different in that ⲟⲩⲟⲛ is in Shenoutean Sahidic indeterminable.

3.1.1.2.2 Nominal / pronominal object: ⲟⲩⲉϣ-/ⲟⲩⲁϣ-, a unique lexicosyntactic overrule ⲟⲩⲱϣ " desire ", " love " constitutes a well-known (though as yet unexplained) deviation from the Stern-Jernstedt Rule [30]. This lexeme enters the immediate construction only, even with non-zero-determinated nominal object: (*Ch.* 93.38f.) ...ⲉϥϩⲟⲣϣ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛϥⲟⲩⲁϣϥ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 167-8) ...ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲡⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲛⲛⲉⲩϣⲏⲣⲉ / (*K* 9040) ⲧⲟⲩⲁϣⲕ ⲧⲱⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 153) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲛⲉⲩϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲛⲉⲩⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲧⲉϥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲧⲉϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲡⲉϩϩⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ. When ⲟⲩⲱϣ " wish " has an infinitival object, we find either the immediate construction or the " absolute " form of the lexeme expanded by (ⲉ + *infinitive*): (*A 2* 238) ⲛⲓⲙ ϭⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲣ-ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉϣ-ϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲅⲁ-ⲙⲟⲥ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲛⲁ ⲁⲛ... ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲁⲛ, ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲁ-ⲧⲉϥϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ϩⲓ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 23.19ff.) ...ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ / (*ibid.* 68.28f.) ⲛ̀ⲧⲟⲩⲉϣ-ϫⲟⲟϥ ⲁⲛ. Note the variation ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲧⲣⲁ-/ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲉⲧⲣⲁ- in *A 2* 513.

3.1.1.2.3 A trend: the definite nominal object of deriving verbs. (1) The statement made in §3.1.1.2.1 is no doubt most pertinent for those syntagms of the form '*construct verb-lexeme* → ∅-*noun lexeme*' in which the verb has the formal-grammatical role of an auxiliary, noun-to-verb deriving element: ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ " shine ", ⲣ-ⲁⲛⲁϣ " swear ", ⲣ-ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ " fight ", ⲣ-ⲑⲩⲥⲓⲁ " sacrifice ", ⲫ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ " honour ", ϫⲓ-ϭⲟⲗ " lie " [31], ⲫ-ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ " report ", ⲭⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩϣ " care for, be mindful of " and the like. This impression of the formal role of the nucleus verb is correlatable with the *semantic fusion* role — " univerbation " — in turn relatable to a systemic conception of its function: these are the denominal derived verbs, the Coptic answer to the Indo-European (notably Greek) derivational suffixes [32]: the verbal element is the marker of their verbal compatibilities (hence, the nucleus) and of their privileges of occurrence, while the zero-determined lexeme, providing the lexical content, is equivalent to the *root* constituent in the Indo-European derived stem, a "*forme base de motivation*" — accordingly, the zero determination is here operative [33]. Now it is my impression, which I offer here for what it is worth and which must still be confirmed or disproved empirically and on a statistical basis, that determination of the object in similar syntagms does not affect the construction — still ($a_{\text{non-dur.}}$), immediate — nor perceptibly the semantic univerbation; the only difference is that the nominal constituent is in this way accommodated to expandability and is characterized as (relatively) independent (a junctural indication). A few representative instances: -ⲣ-ⲡϩⲱⲃ (*Ch.* 103.24f.), -ⲣ-ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ (*Ch.* 57.57), -ⲣ-ⲡϩⲁⲗ, -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϥϩⲁⲗ (*Ch.* 86.42, 134.26f.), -ⲣⲑⲉ ⲛ- (*Ch.* 82.2,5, 182.54), with -ⲣ-ⲧⲉϥϩⲉ (*Ch.* 189.47f.) and -ⲣ-ⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ (*III* 177.6), -ⲣ-ⲡⲃⲟⲗ (*IV* 158.17)

[30] Jernstedt 1927:70. Nagel 1964:296f. attributes this aberrant property of ⲟⲩⲱϣ to its " defectiveness ", insofar as what he terms a " personal passive " function (i.e. its intransitive reference in a non-durative environment) is concerned. I doubt that this reference is so much a property of the lexeme as a function of its environment, or that it is unique to ⲟⲩⲱϣ (cf. ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ *A 1* 108 and Funk 1977:27ff., 30, 34) and that this accounts for this unusual phenomenon — the absence of a syntagmatically identifiable *durative infinitive*. It is true that ⲟⲩⲱϣ, a " transitive " verb, is not opposed to a passive stative (ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲁϣϥ ϩⲓⲧⲛ-, e.g. *Ch.* 106.47f. is suppletive), but neither are ⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ " hate ", ϭⲓⲛⲉ " find ", ⲥⲱⲧⲙ " hear ", ϩⲓⲟⲩⲉ " throw " (in Sah.) and quite a few others — all subject to the Stern-Jernstedt Rule. *Semasiological* incompatibility with durativity cannot be ruled out as the explanation (note the comparable exclusion of " verbs of perception and feeling " from the progressive category in English), but can only be inferred, not proven. We must for the present content ourselves with pointing out the special treatment of this lexeme — unless one accepts as " explanation " the parallel Demotic idiosyncrasy of *mr* (Parker 1961:183f., Johnson 1974:59, 61).

[31] For ⲭⲱ we have four juncture grades (§6.0.2): ⲭⲱ#, ⲭⲉ-, ⲭⲓ +- (with a weakening link ⲉ → ⲓ), ⲭⲟⲟ- (cf. Steinthal–Misteli 1893:91f., 281 for a grading of the *verb-object* juncture).

[32] These too are probably nuclei in their syntagms (Barri 1977:29).

[33] Cf. Guillaume 1919:236f. (" mélange de mots " in " traitement zéro entre verbe et régime direct "); Dubois 1965: 150f., 154f. (" l'absence de l'article supprime l'existence du syntagme nominal "); Krámský 1972:36 (Collinson's definition), 58. The valency model of the compound verb is not straightforward; I suggest the assignment of the whole syntagm to the zero slot of the matrix: like $\overset{0}{\text{ⲥⲱⲧⲡ}} \mid \overset{1}{\text{ⲙⲙⲟ-}}, \overset{2}{\text{ⲛⲁⲩ}} \mid \overset{1}{\text{ⲉⲣⲟ-}}$, so $\overset{0}{\text{ⲣϩⲁⲗ}} \mid \overset{1}{\text{ⲙⲙⲟ-}}, \overset{0}{\text{ⲣϩⲁⲡ}} \mid \overset{1}{\text{ⲉⲣⲟ-}}$ (see §§3.1.2.0.1 and 3.1.2.2.2 below).

and -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϥⲃⲟⲗ (*IV* 82.17), -ⲣ-ⲧⲉⲩⲅⲟⲙ (*III* 165.11, *IV* 159.9f.), -ⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ, -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϥⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ (*Ch.* 71.44f., *III* 146.31), -ⲣ-ⲡⲱⲃⲩ (*Ch.* 102.42, *IV* 49.9 ⲧⲉⲟⲃⲩ) *vs.* ⲁⲣⲉⲣ-ⲡⲱⲃⲩ, -ⲣ-ⲧⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ (*Ch.* 101.11f.), -ⲣ-ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ, -ⲣ-ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (*III* 115.25, *Ch.* 180.2f.), -ⲣ-ⲡⲟⲩⲱϥ -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϥ (*III* 134.3f., *Ch.* 49.53, 100.25f., 134.48f.), -ⲣ-ⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ (*Ch.* 105.50f.), -ⲣ-ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲝⲓⲥ (*IV* 155.25), -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϥⲙⲧⲟⲛ (*IV* 172.21, *Wess. 9* 154d 20ff.), -ⲣ-ⲧⲙⲉ (*IV* 91.3), -ⲣ-ⲧⲉⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ (*IV* 114.1), -ⲣ-ⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ (*Ch.* 157.5f.), etc.; with indefinite determination: -ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲁ-ⲛⲁϣ (*III* 16.12), -ⲣ-ϩⲉⲛⲑⲩⲥⲓⲁ (*III* 73.13), -ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲛⲁ (*IV* 114.20, *Ch.* 162.50f.); other auxiliary verbs: -ⲅⲛ-ⲡⲧⲩⲡⲟⲥ (*III* 114.13), -ⲅⲛ-ⲟⲩⲛⲁ (*Ch.* 104.13f., 118.31f.), -ⲅⲙ-ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ (*Ch.* 101.5f., *III* 204.7), -ⲅⲛ-ⲑⲉ " find means " (*III* 99.6f., 25), -ⲅⲙ-ⲡ(ⲉϥ)ϣⲓⲛⲉ (*IV* 49.5, 61.8), -ⲝⲓ-ⲡⲥⲟ (*IV* 119.10; ⲝⲓ-ⲥⲟ *III* 39.22), ⲝⲓ- ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ (*III* 123.7f., 138.6), etc. [34].

(2) The idea that this preference for construction (*a*) may be symptomatic of the close-juncture contour of these syntagms is perhaps corroborated by the verbs compounded with an " inalienable " noun (and its obligatory possessor-suffix), not all of which are subject to the Stern-Jernstedt Rule [35]: ⲣ-ϩⲧⲏ= (*Ch.* 100.57f., *IV* 128.7, 155.7, *Ch.* 190.7, 191.3f.), ϯ-ϩⲧⲏ= (*IV* 94.20f., *III* 195.3) — all non-durative examples.

(3) ⲣ- as " verb of incomplete predication " (Curme), i.e. with essential adnexal (" predicative ") complementation, " make... into " [36], enters, in non-durative environment predominantly, the immediate construction: (*III* 88.17f.) ⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲣ-ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲛϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ / (*Ch.* 17.39ff.) ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲡϥⲣ-ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲧⲅⲟⲙ / (*IV* 24.2) ⲁⲩⲣ-ⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲃⲁⲗⲉ / (*Ch.* 113.9ff.) ...ⲉⲣ-ϩⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲣⲡⲉ... / (*A 2* 293) ϯⲛⲁⲣ-ⲡⲱⲥ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲓϣⲉ / note (*Wess. 9* 118a 23ff.) ⲁⲕⲁⲁⲕ ⲛ- ... ⲁⲕⲣ-ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲕ with anaphoric zero (also *Ch.* 192.42f.).

(4) ⲣ- (often with predicative complementation) " spend (time) ": *III* 28.5f., 42.25ff., 41.12, 132.22, *IV* 104.4 etc. also enters the immediate construction.

(5) So does ⲣ- " become " (" intransitive " ⲣ-, see n. 4): (*Ch.* 146.14ff.) ⲁϥⲣ-ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲅ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲃⲱ ⲛⲉ-ⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ / (*III* 47.21) ϣⲁϥⲣ-ⲡⲱⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 136.4f., 145.1) (—) ⲁⲩⲣ-ⲡⲉⲩⲝⲟⲉⲓⲥ (cf. ⲛⲉⲓⲟ ⲙⲡⲁⲝⲟⲉⲓⲥ *ibid.* 145.3).

One plausible explanation for cases (3) to (5) is prosodic-junctural. Apparently, the whole ' *incomplete-predication verb* + *nom. object* + *adnexal complement* ' complex constitutes a functionally significant prosodic patterning, in which the close juncture of the first two elements — both of which together constitute the *theme* (" logical subject ") to which the adnexal complement is the rheme (" logical predicate ") — is a functional characteristic.

3.1.2 Opposition representant: the mediate construction

3.1.2.0.1 ⲛ⁻/ⲙⲙⲟ=: a question of identity. Before proceeding to the core of the object-construction regulation — namely, the durative environment, in which construction (*b*) is the primary rule — let us briefly examine some verifiable facts regarding the characteristics of this construction, ($b_{dur./non\text{-}dur.}$). As I see it, the synchronic question [37] to be posed cannot be one of *material* identity (" is ⲛ⁻/ⲙⲙⲟ= the

[34] ⲩⲓ-ⲡ(ⲉϥ)ⲣⲟⲟⲩϣ fluctuates with the mediate construction (ⲩⲓ ⲙⲡ(ⲉϥ)ⲣⲟⲟⲩϣ), which may be due to the homonymy of the absolute and construct allomorphs of this lexeme (*IV* 166.3, 40.4, 19.6, 28.4,11, 36.1f., *Miss.* 283). Exceptions to the rule are relatively infrequent: -ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ (*Ch.* 104.8f), -ⲅⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲁ (*III* 138.7), -ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲧⲩⲡⲟⲥ (*IV* 156.4f) — all naturally in a non-durative environment.

[35] Cf. Polotsky 1960a:§23 Obs. 1, Layton 1981:258f.

[36] The picture for other verbs with adnexal complementation of their object is less clear. However, consider ⲕⲁ- in (*IV* 101.17) ...ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲁ-ⲛⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲉⲓ / (*Mun.* 177) ...ⲛⲩⲕⲁ-ⲡⲉⲩⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲅⲟⲗⲡ, *Ch.* 88.15ff., 198.14ff.

[37] The fallacy that the (*per se* legitimate) diachronic scanning of ⲛ⁻/ⲙⲙⲟ= can somehow pass as a synchronic account is not entirely a matter of the past (Böhlig 1977). Similarly, the Indo-European-style case interpretation of ⲛ⁻ (Steinthal-Misteli 1893:92, 293ff., Stern [see his index, under the various case-names], Till 237, etc.) cannot be considered adequate as a descriptive statement. (See Quecke 1981:260f. on the synchronic predicament.)

"same" lexical entity, throughout its adverbal occurrences?" — a question meaningless anyway as a structural-descriptive inquiry), but rather a taxonomic one of *role relationship*, i.e. of categorial (functional), tagmemic identity. It would advance our understanding to pause here and consider some typical positions and compatibilities:

(a) (*A 2* 107) ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲭⲱⲍⲙ / (*A 1* 463) ⲍⲣⲁ (imp.) ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*III* 114.9f.) ⲩⲛⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲏ / (*Borg.* 247 N) ⲩⲛⲁⲥⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 96.11) ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ / (*ibid.* 199.28) ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁⲙⲁⲍⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ / (*Ch.* 71.3ff.) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲍⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ... ⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲁⲣ-ⲟⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ / (*ibid.* 82.37ff.) ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲧⲁⲥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 84.15) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲩⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ [38].

(b) (*IV* 82.28) ...ⲉⲍⲟⲃⲥⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 79.14) ⲍⲙⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲓⲧⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*III* 166.22) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲱⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲱⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*III* 66.21f.) ...ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲟⲱⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲍⲱⲃ / (*III* 171.20f.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲩⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲭⲟⲗⲏ / (*A 1* 34) ⲧⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲕ [39] / (*Wess. 9* 139a 20f.) ⲙⲟⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 94.51ff.) ⲡⲥⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲥⲙⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 385) ⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*IV* 173.1) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲟⲩⲁⲱⲥ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ.

On the basis of this typology one might suggest the following two valency models with N-/MMO- in the rectional slot(s):

	0	1	2
(a)	V	N-/MMO-	
	0	1	2
(b)	V	N-/MMO-	N-/MMO-

Observe: (1) The obvious shortcoming of this scheme is (as far as the nucleus verb is concerned) that it is two-dimensional. The semasiological differences of nucleus — expansion relationship between "ⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲙⲙⲟ-", "ⲁⲙⲁⲍⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ-", "ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ-", "ⲟⲩⲉ/ⲟⲩⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ-" and "ⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ-" are well substantiated by (and correlatable with) their respective paradigmatic properties (e.g., ⲥⲱⲧⲡ opposed to the stative — also with N-/MMO- opposed to the immediate construction; ⲁⲙⲁⲍⲧⲉ "with" no stative, no immediate construction; ⲱⲱⲡⲉ with no imm. construction, but opposed to ⲱⲟⲟⲡ; ⲟ (N-) alternating with P- in non-durative patterns). However, they are not reflected in the syntagmatic models, which do not display the substitution properties of the verbal nucleus (hence are not patterns in the true sense).

(2) In cases like ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*Ch.* 28.36f.), ⲉⲑⲏ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*IV* 95.16), ⲙⲙⲟ- is a secondary modifier of a modifier nucleus (§1.1.2.4.1), a hierarchy which can be reflected in a syntagmatic model.

(3) In cases like ⲟⲩⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*IV* 51.14f.), ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲧⲛⲍ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ (*ibid.* 96.24), ⲙⲙⲟ- is predicative (predicating "inalienable" possession, in the second position of the Bipartite pattern, §1.2.1.1) and thus not in the valency range of ⲟⲩⲛ.

(4) The fact that the second-slot N-/MMO- remains constant in the case of a "passive transformation" (⇒ ⲩⲱⲁⲁⲧ N-/MMO-, ⲩⲙⲉⲍ N-MMO-) hardly invalidates this structural resolution (cf. Quecke 1981:261): (a) our matrix is a *non-dynamic* characteristic of the *active*, not the passive pattern; (b) on the contrary, the invariability of the second-slot N- is an important distinctive trait of it, adding a *paradigmatic* aspect to its differentiation from its first-slot homonym.

The above model resolves the identity of N-/MMO- — "1st-slot N-/MMO-", "2nd-slot N-/MMO-") — which is adequate, from a structural viewpoint.

[38] Cf. Tobler 1908:1ff. ("De la manière dont nous sommes faits").

[39] With a zero-determinated object, we usually find the the prenominal allomorph (immediate construction): (*III* 106.18f.) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧⲙⲙⲉⲩ-ⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛⲑⲁⲓⲱⲓⲥ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲥⲉⲩ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲑⲁⲓⲱⲓⲥ, but also (*ibid.* 104.13) ⲁⲩⲧⲥⲉⲩ-ⲟⲩⲍⲙⲭ (cf. Emmel 1981:136).

3.1.2.1 NOMINAL/PRONOMINAL OBJECT: PATTERN-SYMPTOMATIC (CATEGORIAL) NEUTRALIZATION: THE " STERN–JERNSTEDT " RULE. The core statement regarding the exclusion of the immediate object construction in durative environment was made by P. V. JERNSTEDT in clear, albeit non-structural terms (1927:70), in a true milestone of Coptic linguistic writing: " Der Gebrauch des Absolutus ist im Präsensstamm obligatorisch, a) wenn das Objekt, sei's äusserlich, sei's an sich determiniert ist, und b) wenn das Objekt mit unbestimmtem Artikel ist ". The two bound (pre-nominal and pre-pronominal) allomorphs of the verb lexeme are excluded before a non-zero-determinated noun or a pronoun, when this lexeme is predicated in the Bipartite pattern [40] (see §3.1.1.2.1.1 for an inverse exclusion before zero determination. Both cases mean neutralization of the opposition between constructions (*a*) and (*b*)).

3.1.2.1.1 This exclusion is a distinctive feature of the durative predicative verb lexeme, providing yet another vital diagnostic datum — a syntagmatic one — to formally define and distinguish between it and the homonymic non-durative (Tripartite and extraconjugational) one:

(ϥ)ⲥⲱⲧⲡ	*vs.*	(ⲁϥ)ⲥⲱⲧⲡ, (ⲛ)ⲥⲱⲧⲡ
ⲥⲟⲧⲡ⁺		ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-
		ⲥⲟⲧⲡ=

(subject to overruling, §§3.1.1.2.1-2) giving us a neat formal structural definition of " $ⲥⲱⲧⲡ_{dur.}$ " and " $ⲥⲱⲧⲡ_{non\text{-}dur.}$ ". I prefer not to take here a stand on the question — essentially speculative and non-descriptive — of whether this exclusion is a consequence or a symptom of the " adverbiality " of the Bipartite predicative verb-lexeme, the wherefore and rationale of this phenomenon [41]. As I see it, the present " durative infinitive " has nothing adverbial about it — it is not a modifier: it is adequately differentiated from its non-durative homonym by both paradigmatic and syntagmatic (pattern and expansion) properties. As far as synchrony goes, I find its structural assignment the only necessary, and quite satisfactory, " explanation ".

An all-important issue which is but marginally within the scope of the present discussion is the correlation of the expansion properties of the present-tense predicate with its two semasiological distinctive features, *durativity* and *actuality*. Under certain circumstances, functional suppression of the durativity feature takes place and is manifested in the invalidation (or overruling) of the Stern-Jernstedt Rule: JERN-

[40] POLOTSKY 1960a:§23 *Obs.* 1-4, FUNK 1978a (III). This issue was treated by the early scholars: the outlines were first described by Stern (§490-40); Spiegelberg, *RT* 36:159f. (1912). The last to ignore the rule was TILL (1928:§147f.).

[41] This aspect of the question has been treated by JELANSKAJA (1970), with a diachronic-mentalistic bias (" How was the adverbial verbal predication *felt*? ") and by Schenkel (1978), who curiously denies the " verbal rection " capabilities of " adverbial " verb forms. The " adverbiality " of the Bipartite predicate *vs.* the " nominality " of the Tripartite predicate is not an explanation, but a tautology, or condensed restatement of pattern (esp. substitution) facts. I cannot see that the " adverbiality " of the durative infinitive is responsible for the exclusion of the immediate construction (where it is excluded): synchronically, the " adverbiality " of this predicate — and of the stative — are established only by substitution. (Moreover, I would not define [as does Schenkell the case of zero-determinated objects as a " *Paradebeispiel* " of *stehende Wendungen* [fixed expressions]). I doubt greatly (to return to the " adverbiality " question) that substitutability alone is sufficient to qualify the Bipartite verbal predicate as a modifier xecept in a vague, general manner of speaking. (Analogously, we would have to consider the predicate in ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲛⲉ [§1.2.1.2, as nominal!) Substitution alone is a notoriously unreliable, lopsided guide for grammatical definition, without the vital syntagmatic ordinate. Just as expansion properties are needed to resolve, e.g., the difference between " *he is trying* " (pres. progressive tense, historically " adverbial ") and " *he is trying* " (adjectival predication): "*he is very trying*", vs. "*he is trying hard*" — " *he is more trying than...* " vs. " *he is trying harder than...* ", in addition to the paradigmatic information " he is *trying/irksome/pestiferous* " vs. " he is *trying/attempting/doing...* ") — so in our Coptic case too we need the syntagmatic dimension, the expansion *differentiae specificae*, to reach a formal distinction. (The parallel between the English *-ing*, tense and gerund [historically, ' preposition + " nominal " infinitive '] with its superficial merger with the *nomen actionis*, and the Coptic " gerundial " infinitive, can be carried a long way.)

STEDT 1927:70(3), ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥ- [42]. Jernstedt himself attributed this to the "grammatical union" in the complex '*auxiliary* + *circumstantial present*', the conjugation base ("*Tempuscharakter*") of the auxiliary dictating the treatment of the lexically more important but grammatically subordinate auxiliate [43]. I find no evidence in Shenoute for this particular neutralization, but we do encounter the *Aufhebung* of durativity expressed in another, namely of the opposition *stative* vs. *infinitive* (for a lexeme with a "movement" sememe), overruling Polotsky 1960a:§9: (*Ch.* 189.32ff.) ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ... ⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϥ-ⲅⲓⲭ (sim. *III* 105.6f., *Ryl. Cat.* 35 No. 70 ⲥⲙⲑ) [44]. It is an open question whether both exclusions — of the immediate object-expansion after transitives and of the infinitive with intransitives — are at all co-extensive, or whether either is symptomatic of any temporal-aspectual distinctive feature; if this is the case, we may glimpse here the syntagmatic-paradigmatic differentiation between an *actual*/durative and *non-actual* (atemporal, "aoristic") present, the latter yet to be empirically established and documented as a formal category [45]. Note, however, that until an independent unified definition of "intransitive" and (grammatically relevant) "movement sememe" is achieved, one runs here the risk of circularity, in basing a categorial definition on an exclusion feature: there are too many ambiguities [46], various componential-modification lexemes ('ⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲁⲓ' 'ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲩⲛ'), to assume an easily definable lexical "category" of this kind.

3.1.2.2 Nominal/pronominal object: morphological (lexemic) absence of morphophonemic alternation. The mediate construction is the sole one — *even in non-durative environment* — where the morphophonemic-alternation mechanism is not available [47].

3.1.2.2.1 Verbs of Egyptian origin, not compound: 1st-slot, rectional ⲙⲙⲟ-: ⲁⲙⲁⲍⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- "hold, grasp" (*III* 199.28, *IV* 86.4), ⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- "reach, obtain" (*III* 100.22); ⲍⲣⲁ ⲙⲙⲟ- "drive off" (*Ming.* 322, *A I* 463); ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- "mock, ridicule" (*III* 104.12); ⲩⲟⲩⲩⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- "boast, pride oneself on..." (*III* 68.5f., *A I* 330); ⲉⲣϩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟ- "pledge" (*III* 132.2f., 223.18), cf. (?) ⲱⲣⲕ ⲙⲙⲟ- "swear by..." (*P* 130² 96 ⲣⲛⲁ); ⲣⲁⲩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- "rejoice in..." (*Mich. 550* 18); ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- "understand, know" (*III* 96.11);

[42] See also Jernstedt 1959:113 n. 8, and cf. Polotsky 1960a:§9 Obs. 1.

[43] It is only in the *perfective* ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥ- (with ⲁ- ⲟⲩⲱ ⲉ- the discontinuous tense-morpheme of the *marked perfect* (*vs.* the unmarked ⲁϥ-) that we find this phenomenon; the negative correspondent here is ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ- (Stern's "perfectum absolutum": ⲙⲡϥ- is unmarked). See Shisha-Halevy 1972, Quecke 1979:442f., Funk 1981:192ff. (Note that ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥ- is the analytic "renewed" successor of ⲍⲁϥ-, the original affirm. counterpart of ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ- — Polotsky 1960a:§4 n. 1 (see now Funk 1981:191ff.). ⲟⲩⲱ is of course a descendant of the same *w3ḥ* that is fused in ⲍⲁϥ-. Thus, the familiar *analysis* → *synthesis* → *reanalysis* diachronic spiral is again in evidence.) Shenoutean exx. for this periphrastic tense: *III* 20.26, *IV* 108.15, *Ch.* 15.49f., 136.49ff. ⲟⲩⲱ in a Clause-Conjugation or post-eventive setting (ⲩⲁⲛⲧϥ-, ⲉϥⲩⲁⲛ-, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉϥ-) has a different value: terminative *Aktionsart* ("have finished doing"), with ⲟⲩⲱ fully contributing lexically (e.g. *IV* 69.23, *Ch.* 133.8ff.).

[44] The case of ⲟⲩⲱ/ⲗⲟ ⲉϥⲩⲱⲡⲉ (*III* 224,15, *Ch.* 175.35f.) may be different — a pertinent infinitive, expressing *ingression* and opposed to a stative expressing *state*.

[45] Shisha-Halevy 1976a:46 (cf. Young 1961:119f., and §7.2.4.1 below). According to Schenkel (1978:15) the present is generally "tempus-indifferent"; yet this is not strictly true, since, with its durative *Aktionsart* reference, it does have some absolute temporal systemic standing (unike the extratemporal ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-/ⲥⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ- or atemporal Clause Conjugation forms). Historically, the category of non-actual present has yet to be traced. For Demotic, cf. Johnson 1974 exx. E44B and E46B; for LE, cf. *nty ḥr jjt* (and not *m jjt*), Wente 1959:96ff., 103ff., Černý-Groll §19.6 and reff. In (*III* 216.18f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϫⲁⲥⲙⲉϥ the second infinitive is not a durative predicate, but hierarchically subordinate, an expansion; §6.0.2, link (5).

[46] The typically Shenoutean ⲥⲉⲣⲏⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲉⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ (*A I* 177, *III* 74.11, *IV* 24.20) juxtaposes the actual ⲥⲉⲣⲏⲥ "they are awake" and non-actual ⲥⲉⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ "they are vigilant". Other candidates: (*III* 215.18) ⲛⲁⲩⲉ-ⲛⲁⲱⲃⲩ ⲉⲧⲍⲉ ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲛⲓⲑⲏⲩ "fall (as a natural fact)" / (*IV* 22.21) ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲛ "those that should die" / (*Ch.* 22.49f.) ⲉⲕⲍⲉ ⲉⲕⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ "now and again" (but ⲉⲕⲡⲏⲧ in line 46!) / (*III* 44.1f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲍⲉⲛϫⲟ ⲍⲉ ⲉϫⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲩ (observe the connection between this present and the determinated relative).

[47] Stern §§493, 495.

ⲛⲉϩⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " wake up " (*A 1* 75); ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- " shake " (*III* 183.12); ⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- " rest oneself " (*III* 219.2f., *IV* 110.25), ⲥϭⲣⲁϩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟ- " rest oneself " (*IV* 69.22); ⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " turn " (no pre-object forms in Sh.? *A 1* 84, *Ch.* 44.49f.); ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " happen to... " (*III* 222.4); ⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- " open " (*III* 206.18, *RE 10* 160a 14ff.); ⲥⲱⲕ ⲙⲙⲟ- (ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ) " impel, drag (by force) " (*IV* 79-80, 80.4f., see below for alternative explanations). The appraisal of this group is far from easy. Firstly, the existence or non-existence of pre-object allomorphs is after all often a subject for corpus-valid, not pan-Coptic (i.e. *Dictionary*-based) information: witness the case of ⲕⲱⲧⲉ, ⲟⲩⲱⲛ, ⲥⲱⲕ (?). Secondly, what about inconclusive, statistical *favouring* of the mediate construction (such as might be impressionistically pointed out for the ' ⲕⲱⲧ ' class)? I have here employed the convenient expedient of syntagmatic consistency, not looking for a special meaning (i.e. pertinence) for 1st-slot, rectional ⲙⲙⲟ-, since I treat only cases where it is unopposed to the immediate construction. Should an instance of such an opposition turn up, it would have to be referred to §§3.1.3.1ff. and scrutinized for pertinence. (With a nominal object after ⲛ-, the situation is even more complicated, not least due to the incomparably more extensive evidence. I have left whatever statement it is possible to make here, to §3.2 below.) Consequently, I do not assume what is often warranted diachronically, namely that ⲙⲙⲟ- has a different " meaning " after, say, ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ, after ⲥⲱⲃⲉ after ⲥⲙⲙⲉ or ⲯⲱⲡⲉ (though here the ⲛ-rection of the stative, ⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲙⲙⲟ- [e.g. *III* 24.9, *IV* 99.8] points to a really distinct entity).

3.1.2.2.2 Compound verbs of Egyptian or Greek origin [48]:

ⲣ-ⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " testify " (*III* 17.10); ⲣ-ϩⲗⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ- " beguile " (*III* 221.28, *P* 130² 60 ⲟⲃ); ⲣ-ⲁⲛⲁⲯ ⲙⲙⲟ- " swear by " (*III* 19.3.11); ⲣ-ϩⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " guide " (*IV* 82.2f., 199.15, both durative); -ⲣ-ⲯⲡⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " be amazed at, wonder at " (*A 2* 319, dur.); ⲣ-ⲭⲣⲓⲁ ⲙⲙⲟ- " need " (*IV* 56.5 [dur.], *A 2* 293); ϫⲓ-ⲏⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " count " (*Ch.* 197.36f.); ϫⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ ⲙⲙⲟ- " revenge oneself on " (*III* 26.11, 64.5f., *P* 130² 53 ⲧⲓⲃ, 131⁴ 151 ⲙ); ϫⲓ-ⲧⲃⲥ ⲙⲙⲟ- " trip up " (*P* 130² 44 ⲡⲓⲇ, 130⁵ 20 ro); ϫⲓ-ⲙⲏⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " take interest in " (*III* 65.26); ⲧ-ⲟⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " lose " (*Ch.* 71.6f.); ⲧ-ϩⲏⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- " gain " (*Ch.* 71.3ff., 97.6f.); ⲧ-ⲛⲁⲁⲕⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " give birth to " (*A 2* 155 [dur.], *P* 131⁵ 65 vo); ϫⲓ-ⲥⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- " bleed ", trans. (*III* 73.11); ⲧⲁⲯⲉ-ⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲙⲙⲟ- " proclaim, preach " (*III* 75.20, *Wess. 9* 147a-b, d 21f.); ⲕⲁ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ- " vomit " (*Ch.* 27.42f.); ⲥⲙⲛ-ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " found " (*A 2* 146, *III* 188.14f.); ⲟⲩⲉϩ-ⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- " enjoin " (*III* 20.3, *IV* 43.1f.); ⲙⲉϩ-ⲉⲓⲁⲧ- ⲙⲙⲟ- " gloat over, look one's fill at " (*Ench.* 71a). At first sight, with the nominal object we face the difficulty of distinguishing *adverbal* ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ- from *adnominal* ⲛ-ⲙⲙⲟ- (cf. §§1.0.2, 1.1.1, chapter 4) — the former expanding the verb syntagm, the latter its nominal component; but this distinction is irrelevant in this syntagm, where the two are neutralized.

3.1.2.2.3 Verbs of Greek origin (a specimen selection): ⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲉⲣⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*III* 62.23); ⲥⲧⲁⲩⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*Ch.* 33.8f.); ⲛⲟⲓ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*III* 204.27); ⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*Ch.* 13.16f.); ⲕⲟⲗⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*IV* 7.19f.); ⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*III* 138.15); ⲫⲟⲣⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*III* 100.4); and so on.

3.1.3 Conditioning (selection) of the mediate construction (pronominal object, non-durative environment)

3.1.3.1 Lexemes with pertinent ⲙⲙⲟ- rection. This group should be carefully kept apart from the non-alternating lexemes (§3.1.2.2.1): here we are concerned with verbs that do " have " a presuffixal

[48] Stern §509. Cf. §§3.0.1 and 1.1.2.1 (gen. obs., on their valency structuring $ⲣ\text{-}ϩ^{0}ⲗⲗ \mid ⲙⲙⲟ\text{-}^{1}$).

allomorph and do enter construction (*a*), but also (*b*) (pronominal) — hence, have pertinent expansion (rection/complementation) properties. I am here concentrating on the pronominal object in non-durative environment (exceptions to the statement made in §3.1.1.1): ⲱⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- "read in..." (*III* 192.20, 193.5); ϩⲱⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- "enjoin", in the following recurring fixed expression: "ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ/ⲛⲱⲗϫⲉ/ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ/ⲛⲑⲉ/ⲡ /ⲛ-...(ⲉ)ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ϩⲱⲏ ⲙⲙⲟ- ⲉ/ⲛ-ⲧⲟⲟⲧ-" (*III* 173.5, *IV* 65.3f.,10, 47.22f., 48.14f., 123.6,14f.,19, *Wess. 9* 173d 14ff., *A 2* 101, 500, *P* 131[6] 21 ro etc.) — a cliché reminiscent of (OT) Scripture idiom? Cf. *Ruth* 3:6, *I Sam.* 13:13, etc.; cf. also ⲟⲩⲉϩⲥⲁϩⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ-, §3.1.2.2.1; ϩⲱⲧⲃ ⲙⲙⲟ-, ⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟ- "slay" (intensive, deliberate, iterative, "augmentative" — occasionally conative?) (*Ch.* 28.7f., 121.27f., both infinitives: cf. *A 1* 167 ⲉⲩⲱⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲙⲟⲩⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ, but *Ch.* 52.50f. ⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲑⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧⲏ); so also ⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟ-: (*A 2* 345) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣⲱⲣⲡ-ⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ, (*Leyd.* 328) ⲏ ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲏ ⲏ ⲛⲏⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ; ⲩⲱⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ-: (*III* 205.28 ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲑⲗⲓⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲱⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ, but see §3.1.3.2.2-3 (also for ⲥⲱⲱⲏ ⲙⲙⲟ-); ⲥⲱⲣ ⲙⲙⲟ-: (*A 2* 513) ϯⲁϫⲓⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲛϯⲙⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲟⲩϫ ⲛⲧⲁⲣⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲱⲣ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ. ⲥⲱⲕ ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ (*IV* 79-80) and ⲥⲱⲕ (ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ understood, *IV* 80.7f.) have probably this rection only, differing from ⲥⲱⲕ alone (so too in the NT: *Luc.* 12:58, *Joh.* 6:44, 21:11, *Act.* 16:15 etc.).

3.1.3.2.1 Cotextual secondary selection of ⲙⲙⲟ- ("non-reflexive object"). Here we encounter a secondary (ad hoc?) opposition or cotextual relevantization: a *non-reflexive* reference of ⲙⲙⲟ-, resolving the ambiguity of identical 3rd-person pronouns (the numbers indicate the personal reference of the pronoun): (*IV* 44.5) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲕⲱ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲁϥ / (*Ch.* 44-5) ..ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲣⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩϫⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 44.49f.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲕⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 71.19f.) ...ⲉⲁϥϥⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ / (*IV* 89.1f.) ⲉⲩⲛⲁϫⲟⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲱⲥ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉϯ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ. Here the rhythmic factor must be considered, §3.1.3.3.2.

3.1.3.2.2 Miscellaneous. (a) *Biblical reminiscence*: (*III* 56.1) ⲁⲧⲉϥⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ (*Cant.* 2:5) and (*IV* 79-80) ...ⲛϥⲥⲱⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲛϫⲛⲁϩ (reminiscence? of *Act.* 16:15): *III* 196-7 *passim*, ⲡⲱϩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟϥ/ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲃⲱⲛⲧ etc., adaptation of *Ez.* 20:13.21, 36:18 (etc.).

(b) *Paradigmatic and cotextual association* (?): (*III* 196-7 *passim*) (-)ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲃⲱⲛⲧ — (-)ⲡⲱϩⲧ ⲙⲙⲟϥ/ⲙⲡⲉϥⲃⲱⲛⲧ, see (a) / (*III* 104.15) ⲁⲩⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ ⲙⲙⲟϥ by association with ⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- (cf. *IV* 59.10 ⲉⲩ-ⲥⲱϥⲉ (sic) ⲏ ⲉⲩⲛⲟⲃⲛⲉⲃ); this may be a case of pertinent ⲙⲙⲟ- (§3.1.3.1), but we need more evidence here.

(c) On *rhythmic-euphonic* motivations we know exceedingly little (§3.1.3.3.2). The wish to avoid a sequence of overshort forms and dissonance may explain (*III* 150.1) ...ⲛⲧⲛϯ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ, (*ibid.* 222.12) ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ, and such cases. (*IV* 157.22f.) ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲱⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ; the presence of enclitic particles (§6.0.3) between two fully stressed units apparently constitutes a desirable rhythmic contour (§3.1.3.3.2); consider (*III* 163.22ff.) ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲑⲃⲃⲓⲟⲩ... ⲉⲁⲩϫⲓⲥⲉ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ.

(d) A residue of unaccountable instances: (*III* 38.14f.) ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲁⲱⲃⲧ ⲙⲙⲟϥ (cf. ⲟⲃⲧ- in *Dictionary* 540b): a case of "augmentative" construction (§3.1.3.1)? (*ibid.* 219.10f.) ...ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϥⲡⲱⲣϫ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ / (*RE 10* 162a 2f.) ⲡⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲩⲥⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ. Is this a case of assimilation to the construction of the durative predicate? Note that ⲙⲙⲟⲕ here expands an extra-conjugational infinitive (see next paragraph).

3.1.3.2.3 Possible morphophonematic/morphosyntactic combinatory conditioning of ⲙⲙⲟ-. One must here consider:

(a) instances of the *2nd person singular feminine* pronominal object after a lexeme of the biradical ('ⲕⲱⲧ') class in a case of a medial laryngal: (*III* 206.10) ⲁⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲙⲟ (reflex.): contrast with (*A 2* 305)

ⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲟϥϥ. Note the relatively high incidence of the ' ⲕⲱⲧ ' class [49] among instances of the pronominal mediate construction (preceding paragraphs), esp. with medial-laryngal lexemes: also ⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*Leyd.* 328, *A 2* 345), ⲕⲱⲱⲥ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*IV* 83.23). More 2nd pers. fem. instances (also in other classes): (*III* 205.28) ...ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲱⲗ ⲙⲙⲟ / (*P* 130² 67 ⲣⲟⲏ) ⲛⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲭⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ ϩⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲁⲁⲁⲙ (" planted you ") ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲭⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ ⲣⲱ ϩⲟⲗⲱⲥ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩⲕⲁϩ.

(b) Alternatively (or conjointly) significant may be the many instances of ⲙⲙⲟ- expanding the *extra-conjugational infinitive* (esp. ⲛ + inf.), (ⲉ)ⲧⲣⲉ- or the conjunctive (*III* 150.1, 219.10f., *IV* 83.23, 89.2 twice, *Ch.* 62.42f.; see §7.1.3 for the structural affinities of the conjunctive with the Bipartite pattern); this construction is relatively rare in Sentence Conjugation infinitives.

These facts may prove to be no more than so many red herrings, but then they may well give glimpses of significant morphologic or morphosyntactic properties, providing an alternative explanation to that of §3.1.3.1.

3.1.3.3 Nominal object: discernible stylistic motivation for the selection of the mediate/immediate construction. In the following paragraphs I indicate tentatively several factors of stylistic relevance that may possibly be responsible for the choice of the mediate or immediate construction. These are not statements of conditioning: contrary exx. are commonplace. Pending full empirical implementation, esp. statistical corroboration, let this be taken as a mere impressionistic record. (These elusive cases are by their very nature *explicable ad hoc* rather than *predictable*, at least until an explicit theory of Coptic literary stylistics is evolved, relating stylistic to syntactic function.)

3.1.3.3.1 (1) The mediate construction *bracketing* two conjugation forms (with identical or semasiologically close lexemes — usually in the *disiunctio Sinuthiana*): ⲛⲉⲧϥⲓ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁϥⲓ ⲛ- (*IV* 206-22), ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲱ ⲛ- (*ibid.* 42.2), ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ- (*III* 189.27f., *sim. Wess. 9* 111a 29ff.), ⲁϥⲭⲱⲱⲗⲉ ⲏ ⲁϥⲕⲱⲧϥ ⲛ- (*III* 196.5f.); other exx.: *III* 193.12, *IV* 13.11, 170.25, *A 1* 88, etc. In (*IV* 44.2) ...ⲉⲁⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲙⲓⲩⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲁⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲥⲱⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ the mediate construction is *zeugmatic*.

(2) With two (or more) bracketed objects (one nuclear verb), we often encounter the immediate construction: (*Ch.* 9.8ff.) ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉ-ⲧⲡⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲕⲁϩ / (*ibid.* 69.45ff.) ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲩ-ⲡⲱⲛϩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ (§3.1.1.2.2) / (*IV* 113.19) ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲩⲉϥⲧ-ⲡⲉⲩⲡⲣⲏⲩ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲩϩⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ, unless with lexemes where the prenominal allomorphs would, being short, upset the " rhythmic balance " (§3.1.3.3.2): (*III* 107.2f.) ⲁⲕⲭⲱ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲙⲉ / (*ibid.* 113.9f.) ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲩ ⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ / (*ibid.* 113.1ff.) (ⲉ)ⲛⲩⲁⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲫⲁⲡ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲧⲁⲓⲉ-ⲡϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲛ ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲩ ⲙⲡⲭⲓⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ ⲙⲛⲡⲧⲱⲣⲡ / (*ibid.* 126.1ff.) ...ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲡⲟⲣⲛⲓⲁ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲭⲱϩⲙ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛⲥⲱⲱϥ... Also 186.2f., 155.8, 156.4 etc. We have an exception in (*IV* 40.21f.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲛⲡⲁⲥⲱⲙⲁ [50].

3.1.3.3.2 Rhythmic-euphonic regulation [51]. Two basic principles seem to be relevant in this connection: (a) stress patterning: the mediate construction constitutes two separate stress-units (verb-noun) of equal prosodic standing, whereas the immediate construction constitutes a single composite

[49] Statistics on the widespread ⲛ-rection of this class are here essential.

[50] (*III* 113.5f.) (ⲉ)ⲛⲩⲁⲛⲣ-ⲣⲙⲣⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϩⲁⲕ is a curious case of expanding (coordinating) the " object " of the intransitive ⲣ- (note 4), marking it as predicative complementation by means of ⲛ- (and not ϩⲓ-).

[51] The rhythmic factor in syntax is notoriously elusive, subjective and speculative, open to the pitfall of circularity and unverifiable. Nonetheless, it incontestably exists. Once again, we need first a full theory based on junctural-prosodic data, for which we hardly have even the rudiments (compare however Czermak 1928 and 1931: esp. 129ff., 156ff., 165ff.). On the rhythmic and similar factors and object constructions, see Stern: 319, Spiegelberg 1912:159f. (on motivation by the extent of the object), Quecke 1979:447. For the ordering factor in + ⲛⲁ- ⲛ- see Emmel 1981 (esp. 139f.).

prosodic unit (probably with primary and secondary stress subunits). The MEDIATE object usually follows an unstressed (or relatively weakly stressed) element, thus forming a rhetorically effective, syllable-like rhythmic patterning or contour: '*stress* - ⏑ - *stress*' ('*peak* - dip - *peak*'). + NA= N- is here especially striking [52] (e.g. *III* 33.24, 59.13, *Ch.* 70.55ff., 83.24ff., *IV* 74.27, 117.9f., 155.9f., 173.14, etc. etc.). Consider also: ⲭⲱ ⲛⲁ= ⲛ- (*Ch.* 94.23ff.), ⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲛⲁ= ⲛ- (*Ch.* 75.40ff.), ⲅⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁ= ⲛ- (*III* 39.6f.), ⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱ= ⲛ- (*IV* 117.28), ⲃⲱⲗ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ- (*Ch.* 74.46ff.), ⲫⲓ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ- (*Ch.* 108.37f., *Or.* 155.49ff.), ⲕⲱ ⲛⲁ= ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛ- (*III* 123. 14ff., 138.12f., *IV* 10.2f.), ⲯⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟ= ⲛ- (*Ch.* 142.15f.) ⲅⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ= ⲛ- (*Ch.* 73.11f.), ⲍⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟ= ⲛ- (*III* 110.1), ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲍⲟ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ- (*Wess. 9* 126b 7f.), and so on.

A case in point is the interplay of (1) '**ⲟⲩⲛⲧ(ⲁ)ⲫ** + *noun* **ⲙⲙⲁⲩ**' and (2) '**ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲫ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ** + *noun*'; exx. for (1): *III* 71.23, *IV* 7.8, *Ch.* 120.7f., 125.20f., 152.27ff., etc.; for (2): *III* 45.7f., 34.16f., 52.9f., 58.8,11, 60.15 etc. With a *zero-determinated* object, this alternation is cancelled, only construction (1) being eligible (*III* 45.1f., 89.4f., 94.11f. etc.).

(b) A second principle seems to be that of RHYTHMIC BALANCING: the avoidance of overshort lexemic body (short, compared with the following — often complex — noun-syntagm and possibly the preceding conjugational framework). This may account for the frequent MEDIATE construction with (non-durative) ⲉⲓⲣⲉ, ⲅⲓⲛⲉ, ⲉⲓⲛⲉ: (*III* 112-3) ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛ-: ⲧⲁⲓⲉ-, ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-, 9× / (*III* 134.2) ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*A 2* 107) ⲁⲧⲉ-ⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲭⲱⲙ / (*Ch.* 105.55f.) ⲉⲓⲯⲁⲛⲧⲙⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲁⲍⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ... / (*III* 178.21) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲡⲟⲣⲛⲓⲁ ⲙⲛⲍⲉⲛⲕⲣⲟⲫ / (*ibid.* 205.16f.) ⲁⲣⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲓⲁ ⲙⲛⲍⲉⲛⲥⲱⲱⲫ ⲙⲛⲍⲉⲛⲕⲣⲟⲫ / (*III* 180.16) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲫⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲙⲛⲡⲉⲫⲅⲱⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ, consider also *III* 203.1, 126.1ff., 189.28, *IV* 4.9, 80.16f., *Wess. 9* 118a 15f., *III* 104.8 (ⲧⲱⲙ). The same may go for (non-durative) ⲭⲓ, +, ⲫⲓ, although in this case the widespread mediate construction may also be preferred, as the only means to mark the verb-object interdependence. Since for these lexemes the absolute and construct allomorphs are homonymic, the functional burden falls on ⲛ- (ⲭⲓ ⲛ- *Ch.* 95.56, 107.14f., *III* 127.15, *IV* 3.19, 36.16f., etc.; ⲫⲓ ⲛ- *Wess. 9* 172d 23f., *III* 57.2f., *IV* 36.1f.,6,12, etc.; + ⲛ- *III* 90.6,7, 117.30, *IV* 26.13, 122.5 etc.).

3.1.3.3.3 MISCELLANEOUS. (a) "Inner", lexically cognate object ("*figura etymologica*"): *immediate construction*: (*Ch.* 27.13ff.) ⲛⲥⲧⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲧⲥⲛ ⲧⲉⲕ+ⲡⲉ / (*A 2* 80, cf. *A 2* 238) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲫ — a recurring expression, cf. *P* 130[1] 36 ⲣⲛⲅ: ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲉⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ, also *IV* 180.2 / (*A 2* 179) ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲧⲉⲛ-ⲧ+ⲛⲉ / (*IV* 54.3) ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲧⲉⲯ-ⲡⲉⲩⲧⲱⲯ.

3.2 THE OPPOSITION MEDIATE VS. IMMEDIATE OBJECT-CONSTRUCTION MAINTAINED

The opposition environment is the *non-durative* infinitive and *nominal* object. Having considered possible motivations for selecting constructions (*a*) or (*b*), we are still left with an impressive bulk of evidence for both constructions, with no apparent *plan du contenu* aspect for their opposition. Without being able to correlate them with any functional difference, I would still like to put on record the following impressions of formal distribution in Shenoute: (a) the class most frequently favouring the *mediate* construction is the biradical ('ⲕⲱⲧ') one, with 'ⲡⲱⲣⲭ' (triradical, medial sonant) a close second. This impression is of course useless until it is weighted and evaluated against the relative frequency of morphologic classes and of the relevant syntagms for each class. (b) An *extralexemic* environmental factor which may be significant is the formal framework of the lexeme. There seems to be preference for the *mediate* object with (ⲉ)ⲧⲣⲉ- and the extra-conjugational infinitive, although this is not pronounced enough to indicate different rectional properties in these cases.

[52] See LÖFSTEDT 1956:35-62, with further references on the question of "Wortform und Wortumfang". In our case, "avoidance" may be too strong; "stylistic selection" is perhaps more apt.

3.3 The " predication mediators " [53]: verb-lexeme premodifiers

These intriguing elements (Funk: " preverbals ", Layton: " preextensions " [54]) immediately precede the verb lexeme: ⲡⲓⲕⲉ- [55] " also, additionally, moreover ", ⲣⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ/ⲉ- " (even) more, rather ", (ⲣ)-ⲱⲣⲡ(ⲛ)- " early, first ". The mediators raise some serious analytic queries, from both syntagmatic and paradigmatic angles: What is their formal role? What " slot " positions do they occupy in the conjugation pattern, and how is it they do not disrupt it, the lexeme having precisely the same categorial definition (by commutation and expansion properties) as in the mediator-less conjugation pattern? [56] Indeed, this last phenomenon is, I am sure, the key to the mystery: these elements are verb-lexeme/stative premodifiers — the only means in Coptic to modify unambiguously a verb lexeme alone [57], not the whole predication pattern (adpattern modification). The verb lexeme is the *nucleus* in this syntagm; the premodifier belongs, in IC terms, to the verb component [58]:

ⲁϥ- | ⲣ-ⲡⲕⲉ || ⲥⲱⲧⲙ

nucl. satellite

satell.(?) nucl.

I query the satellital status of the lexeme/stative premodifiers, since we do not find elsewhere in Coptic the sequence ' *satellite* → *nucleus* ', inverse to the basic Coptic syntagmatic sequence, and because premodifiers (hence lexeme premodifiers?) are not adjuncts, properly speaking, but rather " presetting " modifiers (§1.1.2.2). Given this basic articulation, we must still bear in mind the following qualifications:

(a) The mediators are not (at least in part) mutually exclusive, and are therefore not a single category: (*Ch.* 105.3f.) ⲧⲛⲣⲡⲕⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲉ-ⲧ-ⲥⲱⲛⲧ. The lexeme ⲉⲓⲣⲉ (ⲣ-) is compatible with the mediators.

(b) Except possibly for ⲣϩⲟⲩⲟ-, the commutation of the premodified durative infinitive does not exactly match that of the unmodified one: the *predicative modifier* does not occur after ⲡⲓⲕⲉ-, (ⲣ)ⲱⲣⲡ(ⲛ)- (mutual exclusion of essentially similar entities?).

(c) (ⲣ)ⲱⲣⲡ(ⲛ)- is quite rare in the durative pattern (probably for reasons of semasiological incompatibility); in Shenoute it does not, to the best of my knowledge, premodify a stative form. Consequently, it cannot really be tested for nuclearity. Shenoute's pronounced predilection for the mediators (Quecke 1975/6:480f.) is a tangible distinctive stylistic trait. I cannot point in Shenoute to any other

[53] On these elements, see Jernstedt 1925; Quecke 1962, 1970:380ff., 1975/6 (here treating Shenoutean usage); Funk 1978a: 119, 1978b (with Shenoutean exx.); Layton 1979:191f.; Böhlig 1973; Shisha-Halevy 1975:473. Funk's study of this subject is undoubtedly the most penetrating and careful; Quecke's (and to an extent Funk's) is strikingly contrastive, regarding the mediators as translation-equivalents of Greek preverbs. (Whether or not they are " docile calques " remains outside the scope of an internal description.)

[54] I have used " conjugation mediators " (1975:473) only in the tagmemic sense of " zero slot " elements, i.e. elements that are not pattern constituents — have no formal, operative standing in the pattern — but transparent and phantom-like, manage to transmit the nexal or nucleus-satellite interdependences between the formal-grammatical (actor, conj. base, determinator...) and the lexical constituent.

[55] Jernstedt 1927:71 discusses this lexeme premodifier, concluding that it is " frozen ", ⲣ- being no longer functional as a verb (as evidenced by the stative following it). He does not refer to the object construction after ⲡⲓⲕⲉ- + *infinitive*.

[56] Jernstedt 1925, Funk 1978a:119, 1978b:105ff., Shisha-Halevy 1975:473. Quecke 1970:380ff. raises unnecessary doubts as to the legitimacy of the ' mediator + stative ' construction with ⲣⲱⲣⲡ(ⲛ-). Böhlig 1973 considers the alternation of *infinitive/stative* after ⲣⲱⲣⲡ(ⲛ-) a variation, and thus misses the whole grammatical point. Layton (1979:191f.): " verbal preextensions... which somehow stand outside the conjugation ". (Cf. the transformationalist use of " preverb ".)

[57] Funk 1978b:101.

[58] So explicitly Funk 1978b:105f esp. §§4.2.2, 4.3.1), 1978a:119. The infinitive is not dependent on the modifier (*pace* Quecke 1970:380).

mediator beside the three discussed here [59]: -ⲧⲣⲉ- [60], more of a conjugation-carrier (probably analyzable as ⲧ- (nucl.) + ⲣⲉ-), ⲭⲡⲉ-/ⲭⲡⲓ-, -(ⲉ)ⲱ-, and the future characteristic -ⲛⲁ-, are all nuclear in their respective syntagms, expanded by the "extra-conjugational" infinitive.

3.3.1 ⲣⲡⲕⲉ- (selective representative documentation for the premodified lexeme with object-expansion):

(a) *Non-durative* (rare): (1) *immediate* construction: (*III* 33.4) (2nd perf.) ⲛⲧⲁϥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲣ-ϩⲧⲏϥ / (*Ch.* 149.27f.) ⲁⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲥⲟⲱϣϥ; (2) *mediate* construction: (*III* 57.2f.) ⲁⲩⲡⲁⲏⲅⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲁⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉϥⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲣⲱϣⲛ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ, also *IV* 44.2.

(b) *Durative* (this is the usual environment. Very often, we find here the circumstantial present; also exx. of the autofocal antithetic Second Present: "[not only...] but also"); (*Wess. 9* 119a 21 ff.) ⲥⲉⲣ-ⲡⲕⲉϫⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ / (*Ch.* 151.4ff. parall. *K* 9294) ⲥⲉⲣⲡⲕⲉⲱⲟⲣⲱⲣ ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲡⲏⲩⲉ / (*A 2* 486) ...ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲕⲱ ⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (cf. Polotsky 1960a:§23 Obs. 1) / (*ibid.* 356) ...ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲕⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*Rossi 2/3* 27) ...ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ / (*ibid.* 34) ...ⲉϥⲣⲡⲕⲉϩⲁϫϩⲉϫ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲱⲛϩ / (*Or.* 160.43f.) ...ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ, and so on. Note the frequent instances of -ⲣⲡⲕⲉ- premodifying the *stative*: (*A 1* 96) ⲥⲉⲣⲡⲕⲉⲟ ⲟⲛ ⲛϫⲁϫⲉ / (*Miss.* 284) ...ⲉϥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲁⲩⲡⲏ — contrast with the "intransitive" or copular -ⲣ- in non-durative environment: (*P* 130[2] 137 ⲧⲁⲍ) ⲁϥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲣ-ϫⲁϫⲉ / (*Rossi 2/3* 77) ...ⲉϥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲙⲏⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛ- / (*A 2* 301) ...ⲉϥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲃⲏⲧ / (*ibid.* 322) ...ⲉⲓⲣⲡⲕⲉϣⲁⲁⲧ. In (*IV* 80.9) ...ⲉⲥⲣⲡⲕⲉⲟⲩⲟϫ ⲁⲛ ⲉ- we have a rare *negatived* case (the only one known to me in Shenoute).

3.3.2 ⲣ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ/ⲉ- (selective, representative object-expanded documentation):

(a) *Non-durative*: (1) *immediate* construction: (*A 2* 7-8) ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣϩⲟⲩⲟϫⲟⲟⲩ, ⲁⲥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϫⲁϩⲙⲉⲥ / (*ibid.* 17) ⲙⲡϣⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲧⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲥⲟϣϥ ⲁⲛ; (2) *mediate* construction: (*A 2* 10) ...ⲛϥⲧⲙⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϥⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲣⲁⲛ.

(b) *Durative*: (*B. M. Cat.* 104 No. 230 ⲣⲙⲍ) ⲥⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϫⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϭⲟⲛⲥ / (*A 1* 234) ⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ / (*ibid.* 304) ⲥⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲟϫⲓⲥⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*III* 76.12f., *Wess. 9* 154d 4f.) ⲉϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*P* 130[5] 17 ⲣⲍ) ⲥⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϫⲱⲕ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲏⲉϥⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ. Zero-determinated object: (*P* 131[6] 30 ⲣⲙⲥ) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲧⲁⲩⲉ-ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Or.* 159.52f.) ...ⲉⲥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲓⲙ. The causative of -ⲣϩⲟⲩⲟ- is illustrated by (*IV* 19.14f.) ...ⲛϥⲧⲣⲉⲩϩⲟⲩⲟⲣ-ⲃⲣⲣⲉ. Note here again the stative premodified by -ⲣϩⲟⲩⲟ-: (*A 2* 10) ϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϣⲟⲟⲡ (sim. *A 1* 204) / (*ibid.* 21) (ⲟ)ⲩϩⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲉϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲧⲥⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*ibid.* 331) ⲥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 155) ϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲟⲧⲏⲧ ⲟⲛ ⲛϩⲏⲧ / (*P* 130[2] 75 ro) ϥⲟⲩⲟϫ ⲏ ϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲟⲧⲃⲃⲏⲩ / (*A 1* 266) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲧⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ (a recurring expression, also *A 1* 268, 269, 271, *A 2* 4, etc.) / (*B. M. Cat.* 79 No. 194,3) ⲥⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲉϩⲟⲗϭ / (*A 2* 527) ⲑⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ... ⲉⲧⲣϩⲟⲩⲟⲥϩϣ / (*Ch.* 195.21ff.) ⲡⲓⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲛⲁϣⲧ.

(c) Special cases of the non-durative lexeme. In the non-actual present (§3.1.2.1.1), etc. [61]: (*A 1* 276, collated) (ⲉ)ⲛϥⲡⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛϭⲓⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣ (sic) -ⲡⲟⲗⲗⲁⲓⲙⲟⲥ (sic), ϥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲡⲱⲧ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲛϭⲓⲡⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ / (*A 2* 245, collated) ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲙ-ⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲉ-ϥϣⲟⲟⲡ ⲙⲛⲛⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ ϩⲁⲑⲏ ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲓⲉ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ, ⲉⲩⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲧⲛⲧⲱⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲟⲩϭⲁⲗⲉ ϩⲛⲧⲉϥⲟⲩⲉⲣϩⲧⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ "having shut their hearts to the fact that He had been in existence with His Father

[59] Cf. Funk 1978b:97ff., 101. I would not include -ⲧⲙ- under this heading: it is different formally and functionally. Its position is conditioned and is not always pre-lexemic (ⲉⲣϣⲁⲛⲧⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ); it has a different systemic standing. (Note incidentally an instance — unique as far as I know — of -ⲧⲙ- negativing ⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ *in conjugation* instead of (ⲛ-) ⲁⲛ negativing the conjugation form: (*P* 130[5] 98 ro) ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲧⲙϩⲣⲟϣ ϯⲛⲁⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧ ⲉϣⲱⲡⲉ " Were I not long-suffering, I should not let them exist any longer ".)

[60] Although exceedingly rare in Sahidic, we find as close to Shenoute as Besa (ed. Kuhn, 101.17f.) an instance of durative ⲧⲣⲟ ⲙⲙⲟ- ⲉ- (cf. Polotsky 1939:111 = *CP* 375). Exx. like (*II Tim.* 1:6) ϯⲧⲣⲉⲕⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ are not conclusive, although statistics may here prove illuminating.

[61] See Quecke 1975/6:485f., Funk 1978b:106 n. 68. In (*A 2* 376) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲉϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ...ⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ collation with Zoega 246 ⲍⲣ shows that Amélineau omitted the perfect base.

before anything was created, they rather resemble a man crippled in both legs " — possibly an instance of an apodotic, Tripartite ·ϵϥϹϢΤΜ (Shisha-Halevy 1973) [62].

(d) The common -ϸ2ΟΥΟ 2N- could be taken as predicative modifier premodified by -ϸ2ΟΥΟ-: (*A 1* 110) ΟΥϹΙϢϵ ΠϵΤ2ΜΠϵΥ2ΗΤ ϵϥϸ2ΟΥΟ 2ΝΤϵΥΨΥΧΗ, also *Ch.* 33.43f., 104.51ff., *Or.* 160.41f. etc. Since however we find this also outside the present (*A 2* 396) ϥΝΑϸ2ΟΥΟ 2ΜΠϹΩΒ2 / (*IV* 86.3) ΜΠΡϸ2ΟΥΟ 2ΩΩΚ 2ΝΝΑΙ, we must perhaps conclude that ϸ-2ΟΥΟ in this case is nuclear [63], a fully predicative verb syntagm (" abound ") complemented by 2N- [64]. That this is the copular (" intransitive ") ϸ- is perhaps indicated by (*P* 131[5] 19 Μϝ) ϵΤϵΤΝΟ ΝΟΥΟ 2ΜΠΤΩΒ2: in that case -ϸ2ΟΥΟ- *in the durative* could be the mediator.

3.3.3 -ϸϢϸΠ-/-ϸϢϸΠΝ-/-ϸϢΟϸΠΝ-/-ϢϸΠ- (selective object-expanded documentation):

(*a*) *Non-durative*: (1) the *immediate* construction: ΝϢΑϪϵ/ΚΑΤΑΘϵ/Π/(ϵ)ΝΤΑΝϢϸΠ ϪΟΟ- — a recurring expression, very common: *A 1* 36, 152. *Wess. 9* 87b 28ff., 125a 15f., *III* 30.15, *IV* 7.24, 67.16f. etc. / (*Ch.* 56.28f.) ΑΥϸϢΟϸΠΝΟϸϪΗ / (*ibid.* 123.18ff.) ΝΤΟϹ ΓΑϸ ΠϵΝΤΑϹϸϢΟϸΠΝϸ-ΜΟΥΙ ϵϸΟϥ / (*IV* 47.22ff.) ΝΩΑϪϵ ϵΝΤΑΥ2ΩΝ ΜΜΟΟΥ ϵΤΟΟΤΝ Η ΝϵΝΤΑΥϹΑ2ΟΥ ΝΑΝ ϸϢϸΠΤΑΜϵ-ΤΜΙΝϵ ΝϸΩΜϵ ϵΤΜΜΑΥ...; (2) the *mediate* construction: (*A 2* 345) ...ϵΤϸϵΥϸϢϸΠϢΩΩΤ ΜΜΟΟΥ ΜΑΥΑΑΥ / (*Wess.* 9 145a 11f.) ...ϵΑΥϸϢϸΠΝϹΟΟΥΤΝ Ν-.

(b) *Durative* (rare): (*Wess. 9* 148b-c) ΠϵΤϸϢϸΠϢΩΠϵ / (*IV* 194.1f.) ΝϵϨΒΗΥϵ ϵΤϵΡϵΝΔΑΙΜΟΝ (sic) ϸϢϸΠ-ΝϵΙΡϵ ΜΜΟΟΥ.

3.4 Deverbative lexeme-carrying nominalizations and their object-expansion

ϸϵϥ-, the analytic, productive *nomen agentis* prefix, and ΑΤ-, the " privative " deriving one, are both nuclei in relation to a following verb lexeme [65]. (They themselves, of course, expand a foregoing determinator.) A check of the object-expansion of their respective verbal components yields the following results:

3.4.1 ϸϵϥϹϢΤΜ [66], historically an *antecedent + adnominal present* syntagm, still reveals (with some exceptions) the expansion properties of a present tense (§3.1.2.1) for a nominal object, but of a non-durative pattern for a pronominal one (§3.1.1.1) and for especially close compound verbs (§3.1.1.2.3(2)):

Object construction	*∅-determ. object*	*Non-∅-determ. object/subst. relat.* (determinated) [67] */pron.*
(a) *immediate*	ϸϵϥϥΙ-ΨΥΧΗ (*IV* 21.8) ϸϵϥΤϵ2Μ-ϸΩΜϵ (*III* 61.6f.) ϸϵϥϢΜϢϵ-ϵΙΔΩΛΟΝ (*Ch.* 110.11ff.) ϸϵϥ+-2ΑΠ (*Ch.* 126.51f.)	ΤϵΥΜΝΤϸϵϥΚΑ-2ΤΗΥ... (*IV* 42.4f., 116.8f.) ΠϸϵϥΤΝΤΩΝϥ ϵΠΑΓΓϵΛΟϹ (*Ch.* 204.13f.)

[62] Cf. Funk 1978b:107 n. 71.

[63] -2ΟΥϵ- is nuclear in {ΟΥ-}2ΟΥϵ + *noun* (*A 1* 400, *A 2* 12, 155, 402, *Wess. 9* 144d 29f.) {Πϵ-}2ΟΥϵ + noun (*A 2* 80, *P* 130[4] 119 Κϵ) in relation to the following noun lexeme (it expands its determinator).

[64] This goes for (*Wess. 9* 142d 7ff.) ΑϥΑΑΥ ΑΥΩ ΑϥΡ2ΟΥΟ ϵΡΟΟΥ and (*Ch.* 125.23f.) ΠϵΤΡ-2ΟΥΟ ΝΑϹ.

[65] Cf. Funk 1978a:115f.

[66] Stern §172; Wiesmann 1914:130 (no ϸϵϥ- + *stative* is known to me in Shenoute), 1917:146; Till §§146, 260b, following Jernstedt 1927:70f. (4), who observes (without enlarging on this syntagm), that his rule does not fully apply here. Cherix 1979:11 (71, 75, 83 etc.) subsumes this under the Bipartite Pattern cases. For the opposition ϸϵϥΜΟΥ (aoristic, non-actual present) *vs.* ϸϵϥΜΟΟΥΤ (actual statal present) see Funk 1976a:180 n. 1.

[67] See §5.2.3.1.

		ⲣⲉϥϣⲧⲃ-ⲡⲱⲙⲉ (*Ch.* 27.11f.) ⲣⲉⲣ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (*III* 190.15) ⲣⲉⲣ-ϩⲓⲕ, ⲣⲉⲣ-ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ, ⲣⲉⲕⲁ-ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ (*III* 88) ⲣⲉⲕⲥⲉⲩ-ⲡⲱⲙⲉ (*IV* 99.29) ⲣⲉⲕⲭⲓ-ⲟⲩⲁ (*III* 78.13) ⲣⲉⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ (*III* 88.28) ⲣⲉⲕⲃⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ (*III* 121.23f.) ⲣⲉⲕⲕⲉⲧ-ⲏⲓ (*IV* 75.25) ⲣⲉⲕⲧⲁⲕⲉ-ϩⲏⲧ (*III* 121.15) ⲣⲉⲕⲥⲕⲣⲕⲣ-ⲱⲛⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ (*P* 131⁶ 29 mθ) ⲣⲉⲕⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲉ- (*Ch.* 35.32f.) ⲣⲉⲕⲡⲉϩⲧ-ⲥⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*Ch.* 26.55ff.) ⲣⲉⲕⲭⲓ-ⲯⲟⲭⲛⲉ (*III* 123.22)
(b) *mediate*		ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉⲕⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲛⲙⲙⲉⲗⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 67.32f.) ⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉⲕⲃⲱⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ (*Ch.* 52.2f.) ⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉⲕⲥⲱⲯ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*Ch.* 149.7ff.) ⲡⲣⲉⲕⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ (*Ch.* 177.11ff.) ⲡⲣⲉⲕⲧⲱⲯ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲯⲁⲗⲗⲉⲓ (*Ch.* 206.34f.)? ⲣⲉⲕⲱⲡ ⲉⲛⲛⲥⲓⲟⲩ (*III* 88.12)

3.4.2 ⲁⲧ- [68]: here we have a different picture: (a) With a pronominal or non-zero-determinated nominal object, the construction is *mediate*: ⲣ-/ⲟ ⲛ-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*III* 212.8f., *IV* 2-3, 7.4f., *Ch.* 66.22f.) / (*P* 131⁷ 45 vo.) -ⲟ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲙⲟⲧ. (ⲑⲉⲍⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲧⲧⲁϩⲟⲥ [*III* 108.28] is quoted from Athanasius. Note ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- [*IV* 83.9, 100.5f.]; I know of no instance of *ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲩⲛ-). Is ⲣ-ⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- a case of ⲙⲙⲟ-rection of a compound verb (§3.1.2.2.2)?

(b) We find the *immediate* construction with a zero-determinated object: (*IV* 42.12f.) ϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲯⲡ-ϩⲙⲟⲧ and with the compound verb ⲣ-ϩⲧⲏ-: (*IV* 49.12) ⲛⲁⲧⲣ-ϩⲧⲏⲩ.

3.4.3 Miscellaneous. (a) With ⲯⲟⲩ- "worthy of..." we find the immediate construction of a nominal or pronominal object (the pronoun anaphoric-correferent with the determinator or nucleus of the syntagm): (*III* 64.6f., *IV* 23.20f., *P* 131⁶ 15 ro) — ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲟⲩ / (*IV* 84.21) ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲡⲟⲣⲯϥ / (*A 1* 269) ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲥϩⲟⲩⲱⲣⲟⲩ / (*IV* 157.12) ⲑⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲡⲁϩⲥ / (*III* 96.3) ⲛⲯⲟⲩϥⲉⲧ-ⲡⲉⲩⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Ch.* 205.48ff.) ⲧϩⲉⲓⲕⲱⲛ ⲛⲯⲟⲩ-ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲥ / (*ibid.* 189.2ff.) ⲡⲓⲯⲟⲩⲧⲙⲧⲁⲩⲉ-ⲡⲉϥⲣⲁⲛ / (*A 2* 84) ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲁⲯⲟⲩ (sic), ⲛⲯⲟⲩⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲟⲩ.

(b) With ϭⲓⲛ-, we find the immediate construction of a pronominal object, mediate/(immediate?) for the nominal one: (*A 2* 234) ⲧⲉⲛϭⲓⲛⲧⲁⲛϩⲟⲩⲧϥ/ (*A 1* 15) (of the friendly dog) ⲧϭⲓⲛⲕⲓⲙ ⲉⲣⲟϥ (i.e. for his master) ⲙⲡⲉϥⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲡⲉϥⲥⲁⲧ ⲙⲛⲧϭⲓⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲥϩⲧ ⲛⲛⲉϥⲙⲁⲁⲭⲉ.

(c) ...ⲉϥⲟ ⲙⲙⲁⲓⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ (*IV* 43.5).

[68] Stern §177; Jernstedt 1967, Funk 1976 are concerned mainly with the semantics and diathesis of this deverbative adjective (see §4.2.2.2.1).

CHAPTER 4

THE ADNOMINAL MODIFIER: A DEFINABLE ' ADJECTIVE ' CATEGORY IN COPTIC?

4.0.1 The so-called " adjective " in Coptic: a research-historical note
4.0.2 The problem: noun, substantive, adjective
4.1 Determinative-subordinative syntagmatics: adnominal expansion; *syntactic* vs. *semantic* nucleus and satellite
4.2 Relative-order (arrangement) opposition: semantic nucleus ⇆ satellite, in terms of *placement* opposition
4.2.1 Placement opposition suppressed (order neutralization)
4.2.1.1 First-place-position paradigm
4.2.1.2 Second-place-position paradigms
4.2.1.3 Order neutralization in the case of multiple-attribute syntagms
4.2.2 Placement opposition maintained: ADJECTIVES
4.2.2.1 Rection in ' noun + adjective ' syntagms: CONCORD
4.2.2.2 Definition of the opposition terms: unmarked (second-place-position adjectives) *vs.* marked (first-place-position adjectives)
4.3 Determinative and appositive syntagms: suppletive neutralization for pronominal and proper-noun nuclei

4.0.1 THE SO-CALLED " ADJECTIVE " IN COPTIC: A RESEARCH-HISTORICAL NOTE. Both early and current scholarly opinion speaks for the existence in Coptic of a grammatical category of " adjectives " *as well as* a syntactic device to form attributive syntagms [1], *viz.* the " *nota relationis* " N- (§§1.0.1.2, 1.1.1 spec. obs.). This amounts to a contradiction in terms, seeing that the so-called adjective is in fact such a syntagm [2]. Moreover, the grammars shed no light on the vital question of the ' *nucleus - satellite* ' arrangement or relative order, actually observing on the irrelevance of placement and non-existence of a significant order — hence, the variation status of {OY-}ⲠⲞⲚⲎⲢⲞⲤ ⲚⲢⲰⲘⲈ and {OY-}ⲢⲰⲘⲈ ⲘⲠⲞⲚⲎⲢⲞⲤ, the latter being nevertheless the " normal " (i.e. predominant) arrangement [3].

[1] TILL's unfortunate " Qualitätsgenitiv " (p. 70f.; 1928:§88a). Cf. STEINDORFF 1951:§§148, 156, STERN §§292ff. Stern's " attributive Relation " (§§185-8), distinct from " attributive Annexion " (§ 194, the case of -ϪⲎⲘ, -ⲔⲞⲨⲒ etc., considered by Stern in the same light as the *in fine compositi* elements, -Ⲟ, -ϪⲒⲢⲈ, -ⲚⲞⲨϤⲈ etc.).

[2] STERN §§168-9, 177, 185-8, 194 (Stern stresses the morphologic similarities of " adjective " and " substantive "); TILL §§114ff.; STEINDORFF 1951:§§148, 156. Most expositions (including Crum's in *Dictionary*, " adj " *vs.* " nn ", " adj " usually corresponding to a Greek adjective, e.g. in p. 157a, 159b) have a definite ethnocentric flavour (so too GREGORIUS 1981). Stern, as usual, shows the most insight and offers the most pertinent discussion of this issue. Pre-Stern grammars are even less consistent. PEYRON (1841) calls ⲛⲁϫⲉ- etc. " adiectiva quae distinguuntur ex suffixis " (33) or " quae utuntur suffixis " (74f.), ⲉⲧ-, ⲉϥ- " adiectiva composita ", " participia vel adiectiva " (34). (STEINDORFF 1951:§157 calls the augentia " Adjectiva mit Suffixen ".) Modern treatments assume the existence of such a category and do not bother with definitions (so CHAÎNE 1933, STEINDORFF 1951, BÖHLIG 1979, GREGORIUS 1981, etc.) or evade the issue (so CHERIX 1979:14 " nom à valeur adjective, utilisé sans article, dans la construction attributive "). One often finds " adjective " and " attributive " (construction or noun) used as if synonymous.

[3] STERN §§186-8, STEINTHAL-MISTELI 1893:277, TILL §§114, 117-9, CHAÎNE 1933:§§181-226, STEINDORFF 1951:§156, MALLON-MALININE p. 73 (" Les adjectifs primitifs et derivés se placent soit avant, soit après les substantives "), GREGORIUS 1981:199, and so on.

4.0.2 The problem: noun, substantive, adjective. Some or all of the following characteristics apply as a rule to — and indeed *define* — the Coptic nominal lexemic substitution group: (a) eligibility as expansions (satellites) of pronominal (determinators, §5.1.1.0.1) and semi-pronominal nuclei (**MNT-, PM-, AT-**); (b) eligibility (within noun syntagms) as expansions of verb lexemes (in the construct state, the immediate object construction, §3.0.2); (c) the privilege (within noun syntagms) of occupying the actor slot in various conjugation patterns, often conditioning special base/converter allomorphs; also of occurring in variously appositive and extrapositive status (cf. §6.0.1); (d) compatibility with immediately preceding modifier markers (" prepositions "); (e) (morphologic) movability, irregular and extremely restricted (**CON: CWNE, ϢHPE: ϢEEPE, ϩΛΛO: ϩΛΛW, CΛBE: CΛBH**) [4]; (f) (morphologic) countability, more or less regular, widespread but unpredictable (subject to regulation as yet obscure) (**CNOϤ: CNWWϤ, ϩΛΛO: ϩΛΛOI, CON: CNHY**) [5]. Returning to (d), one notes the modifier and relator signal *par excellence*, the " *nota relationis* " **N-**, often discussed in the course of this work. Yet all these formal criteria do not warrant the differentiation in Coptic of *nomen substantivum* and *nomen adiectivum*, whatever the justification for this distinction in other languages [6] and for that matter pre-Coptic Egyptian [7]: the special " adjectival predicate " predication pattern is absent in Coptic, and the adnominal privilege is restricted to a closed lexical list of few members. This is not to say, however, that nominal subgrouping cannot be achieved on the strength of other formal criteria, for instance, the distinction of alienable and inalienable nouns (cf. §1.2.1.1, spec. obs.); nouns compatible with the determinators of one or both genders (§5.1.1.0.1), including cases of syntactic movability like **Π-/T-2M2ΛΛ, Π-/T-NOϬ, Π-/T-PMN-**; nouns compatible with **MNT-** (until evidence to the contrary is produced, one cannot assume that these constitute an open-ended list); **-OC/-ON** dual-ending Greek loan-adjectives (see below) or loan-substantives *vs.* all others; eligibility as " *in initio compositi* " or " *in fine compositi* " elements (for the unmarked, juxtaposed adnominal modifier, Stern's " attributive Annexion ", see below); verb lexemes, that is to say nouns privileged to occupy the predicate slots in certain verbal predication patterns, *vs.* all others. There are, of course, also many possible *semantic* subdivisions which are no less " formal " in the frame of reference of contextual compatibility. Yet none of these sub-categories can appropriately be termed " adjective ", to the exclusion of some or all of the others. (Note that all nouns, except for the few on the list of juxtaposed attribution, must be **N-**marked to occur adnominally; this applies also to Greek loan-adjectives: **ΠPWME NAΓΛΘOC.**) It is nonetheless the Greek loan-adjectives (**ΠONHPOC, COΦOC, ЄΛΛXICTOC**) — with some original two-ending compounds, like **ΛNOMOC, TΛΛΛIΠWPOC** —, that are implicitly taken as adjectives in Coptic [8] and constitute the core and major constituent of this vague class. Indeed, it is my impression that it is this considerable and prominent group grammarians have in mind when referring, with no formal or theoretical foundation,

[4] Unproductive, and of the same order as lexical motion (**ЄIWT: MΛΛY**).

[5] (*III* 157.11ff.) **ЄYЄϪOOC ЄΠϩΛΛO ϩΛϩTHN ΛYW ЄYЄϪOOC ЄΘΛΛW ϩΛϩTNTHYTN H NCЄϪOOC ЄNϩΛΛOI ЄTϩΛTNTHYTN.** An unpublished monograph by a student of mine, Ms. G. Rozyk, points to an individualizing-concretizing role of the lexemic plural in the Sahidic NT. — Incidentally, **OYCWNЄ NCϩIME** (*III* 94.12f., see *Dictionary* 343a) means here " wife-mate " (not " female sister ").

[6] A relatively late distinction in grammatical terminology (Schoemann 1862:83ff. — mainly a semantic one). The usual adjectival syndrome, often converging with a conglomerate of specific morphs, is one of adnominal privilege of position, concord governability, morphologic grading (comparative, superlative, adequative, etc.), special semasiological characteristics, and (in some languages) syntactic or morphosyntactic peculiarities, such as special predication patterns, a distinction of attributive *vs.* predicative status, and so on.

[7] See Schenkel 1967:77ff.; the Egyptian adjective is primarily a syntactically definable category, yet neither the adnominal position (shared by the so-called " direct genitive ") nor the concord (shared by the appositive noun) are decisive. However, the special " adjectival predicate " pattern, lost between Demotic and Coptic, is. In Coptic this predication pattern is replaced cooperatively by the " adjective verbs ", the stative in the Bipartite conjugation, and the nominal sentence. Note esp. the pattern with zero-determinated predicate: (*Or.* 159.34ff.) **(Є)BOTЄ ΠЄ, (Є)CIϢЄ ΠЄ** / (*III* 208.8) **(Є)MOIϩЄ ΠЄ NAY...** / (*IV* 23.22) **MKAϩ NϩHT ΠЄ ЄCOTM** / (*Ch.* 183.23) **ЄPAϢЄ ΠЄ NAY...** / (*B.L.Or.* 3581A 66, No. 198, f. 2 vo) **ϢIΠЄ ΠЄ ϪЄ-NAI.**

[8] Stern §169; Till §76, etc. See Gregorius 1981.

to Coptic " adjectives ". In the following pages I attempt to trace a way towards gaining a formal basis for a nominal sub-class, for which the name " adjective ", although still somewhat arbitrary, may not be amiss.

4.1 Determinative-subordinative syntagmatics: adnominal expansion; syntactic vs. semantic nucleus and satellite

Let us first examine the syntagmatics of adnominal nominal modification. One (or more) N-marked noun syntagm following (in open juncture) another constitutes the Coptic attributive syntagm. But this is merely a special case in a whole paradigm of two-noun syntagms, where the formal changing factors are (a) the *determination* of either or both constituents, (b) the relator morph N- or NTE-. This corresponds, on the *plan du contenu*, to a semasiological spectrum ranging from possessive, through appurtenative, to attributive relationship[9] between the two consituents. Although the intricacies of this paradigm are, as yet, far from clear (see §1.1.1 spec. obs. for N-/NTE- distribution), it is certain that the *relative determination* of the constituents (or the determination contour of the complex) is a primary factor regulating the selection of their relator, and zero determination of the second constituent corresponds to an attributive connotation of the adnominal modifier[10]: the generic reference effected by the zero article (§5.1.1-2) for the second noun determines the qualificative relations between it and the first. The '*noun* → N + *noun*' phrase is analyzable into nucleus and satellite (expansion)[11]. It is beyond controversy that the " *nomen relatum* " (Tuki's term[12]) or modifier noun is syntactically satellital, the expansion of the unmarked noun. The placement of the N-marked noun is fixed — invariably second in the syntagm. Since both constituents are nominal, the usual paradigmatic (" word-class ") test for identifying the nucleus cannot be applied here. However, it is the first term that carries the determinators (and subsequently relator morphs) for the whole complex syntagm (thus also the gender-number motivating factor: ⲧⲩⲟⲣⲡⲉ ⲛⲥⲟⲧⲉ [*P* 130² 67 vo]). It is nuclear also in accordance with the basic *nucleus* → *satellite* syntagmatic sequence in Coptic. But if this is so, one cannot but query the statement that ⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ and ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ are mere variants: can nucleus and expansion (since the placement of the N-marked noun is fixed and non-pertinent), *determinatum* and *determinans*, really exchange status, with no correlated shift on the *plan du contenu*? In other words, what is the functional load of this arrangement opposition?

[9] Other languages employ a genitive-type morpheme to cover a similar semasiological range. This is striking in Romance, esp. French (cf. Guillaume 1919:125ff., Rothenberg 1970:238ff., 245ff.). But while in French one is concerned with an idiomatic, stylistically marked turn of phrase, in Coptic N-modification is the only systemic means to attribute the quality of one noun to another.

[10] Not the other way round, as is implied in Till's description; ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲙⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ, ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲍⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲱⲉ, ⲟⲩⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲛⲛⲟⲩϫ, ⲟⲩⲧⲣⲟⲫⲏ ⲛⲉⲗⲁϫⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ, ⲟⲩⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ. The " closeness " of ' N-adjective ' *vs.* the " looseness " of ' N-substantive ' (Steinthal–Misteli 1893:276) is equally traceable to the different degree of determination. Incidentally, NTE- does not play a role in the " genitive ": attributive opposition (*pace* Till §122 n. 3), since it is as a rule incompatible with the zero determination of the second noun.

[11] See §5.1.1-0.1; Seiler 1960:6f. The means of formal concatenation in Coptic are twofold: morphematic (N-, mark of satellital dependence) and tagmemic (word-order). This corresponds to pre-Coptic concord + order (see Steinthal–Misteli 1893:275f.). Cf. Schmidt 1974:446f. for a typological-comparative approach to this issue.

[12] Tuki 84ff. and *passim*, in my opinion an excellent term. Elsewhere, Tuki defines N- as a " *littera coniunctiva* "; cf. Steinthal-Misteli's " Nominalcasus " (1893:92), and see also Schwarze-Steinthal 459. The " *nomen relatum* " is in paradigm with other, verbal adnominal modifiers (relative, circumstantial, conjunctive, ETRE-; see Ch. 7 n. 31, §7.4). It syncretizes (neutralizes) the distinction between attributive and adnexal modification (§7.1.3): (*Wess. 9* 110a 5ff.) ⲡⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲅⲁⲉⲓⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲉⲃⲱϥ / (*III* 166.22f.) ⲍⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲁⲑⲉⲧⲉⲓ / (*P* 131⁵ 47 ro) ⲛⲉⲩⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ / (*A 2* 419-420, not Sh.) ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉϥⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲁⲥⲱⲟⲩ / (*Mun.* 104) ⲛⲣⲉϥϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ... ⲙⲛⲛⲣⲉϥϫⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ ⲙⲛⲛⲣⲉϥⲱⲣⲕ ⲛⲛⲟⲩϫ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲍⲛⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*A 2* 338) ⲍⲉⲛ-ⲣⲉϥⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲡⲉⲍⲧ-ⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲛⲍⲏⲕⲉ / (*RE 11* 16b 9f.) ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ: in the last exx., N-/ET- introduce an *additional expansion of the determinator* (§5.1.1).

Note, however, that whereas the *syntactic* nucleus — the first noun — is always the first term, the *syntactic* satellite is always the second, it is otherwise with the non-grammatical " incumbents " in the ' (determinator) [ ] N- [ ] ' grammatical framework. The change in placement means that the two noun lexemes turn or revolve symmetrically around the N-dependence mark (which, although in the scheme of Coptic juncture is attached to the second term, belongs as a matter of fact to the whole syntagm). In this sense, there does take place a reversal of centre and periphery. The SEMANTIC NUCLEUS (contextually essential, representing and integrating the syntagm in the semantic cotext; (OY-)PWME, (T-)ψYXH in OYPWME MПONHPOC and TANOMOC MψYXH [13]; belonging to a certain " meaning class ", cf. " form class " for the syntactic nucleus; often, but not necessarily the non-omissible component [14]) is placed first in OYPWME MПONHPOC, where it coincides with the syntactic nucleus, but second in OYПONHPOC NPWME, where SEMANTIC SATELLITE coincides with the syntactic nucleus. In binary terms, the arrangement opposition is statable as one of *coincidence* vs. *non-coincidence* of syntactic and semantic constituents. Put differently (but amounting to the same thing): a noun lexeme has a different *value* in syntactically nuclear or satellital status. These are, in strict structural analysis, *non-identical homonymic signs*, and it is our task to find out under what (environmental) conditions the one or the other occurs [15]. This reformulation of the problem is, I believe, preferable to a formulation based on order — " usual ", inverted, motivated, etc. — which is more difficult to reduce to non-transformational, static opposition terms. Instead of ARRANGEMENT opposition, we are dealing with opposition of PLACEMENT.

4.2 RELATIVE-ORDER (ARRANGEMENT) OPPOSITION: 'SEMANTIC NUCLEUS ⇆ SATELLITE', IN TERMS OF PLACEMENT OPPOSITION

The superficial impression that the arrangement in determinative-attributive groups is free or arbitrary is proved wrong by a careful sorting of the material. In the first instance, we observe that place-

[13] Consider (*A 2* 486) NEIWNE NPWME (of hypocrites. Amélineau: " ces hommes de pierre ", n. 4: " mot à mot: ces pierres d'hommes, c'est à dire: ces hommes insensibles "). In cases of *proforma expansion* it is often difficult to assign the semantic roles: (*Mun.* 102) NIPEϤϨIK NPEϤP-ПAϨPE / (*Wess. 9* 105b 16ff., 24ff.) EYP-ΔIKAIOC NNAHT AYW NψAY ...EYP-ACEBHC NATNA NPEϤXINGONC AYW NNOEIK (*III* 95.15) OYXACIϨHT NKOINΔOϨOC / (*ibid.* 123.13f.) ПψANϨTHϤ NϨAPψϨHT ETENAψEПEϤNA / (*ibid.* 135.10f.) ϨENPEϤXINGONC NE NPEϤP-NOBE / (*Ch.* 108.15ff.) ...(E)ϨENNAHT NE NψANϨTHϤ MMAIPWME... and so on. These cases are best understood as *additional expansions of a determinator*; see n. 12. (*A 2* 74) ϨENEΛAXICTON NNOYB ϨIϨAT / (*IV* 128.3) ПATNOYTE NΔIABOΛOC / (*ibid.* 153.16) OYXAXE NPWME, OYXAXE NCϨIME / (*A 1* 76) TEIAΘHT NCϨIME; see also the exx. in §4.2.2. Compare here the switch in position of *class* and *selector*, non-identical with (synt.) nucleus and expansion (SEILER 1960:19ff.), resulting in a role of *specification* (synt. nucleus = class, expansion = selector) or *characterization* (nucleus = selector, expansion = class). Consider the following cases of specification: (*Ch.* 56.53f.) ПATNA MMATOI " that soldier who is ruthless", (*Rossi 2/3* 75) ПONHPOC NIM NPWME " every man that is wicked "; yet this is certainly not without exception in Coptic: (*P* 130[4] 97 ro) TEϤKETAΛAIПWPOC MψYXH / (*A 2* 412) ПEBIHN NϨEΛΛHN / (*Wess. 9* 149d 20f.) MПAPANOMOC NIOYΔAI.

[14] Witness (*Miss.* 281) ПEϤCNAY H ПEϤψOMNT (scil. NϨOOY). The so-called " reduction test " (" bad dogs " to " dogs"; SEILER 1960:6f.), leaves us in Coptic with the semantic, rather than syntactic nucleus. The latter is identifiable mainly through the " centrifugal " basic syntagmatic sequence of Coptic (STERN §635: " Das selbständige und regierende steht vor dem angeknüpften und abhängigen "; see too SCHENKEL 1967:71, FUNK 1978a:117).

[15] For the extensive literature on the problem of adjective placement in various languages, see the bibliography in REINER 1968 (also the General Introduction). This issue has been studied, with interesting and often varying results, exp. for French. WEIL 1879:53ff., WEINRICH 1966, BARRI 1975 suggest semantic union (adj. → N) *vs.* disunion or autonomy (N → adj.) The inverse is asserted for English (BOLINGER 1972). Teyssier (*Lingua* 20:236ff., 1961) distinguishes in English between qualifying and modifying placement; REINER 1968 suggests for French a distinction of " coappelative " *vs.* " (co)predicative ", " objectivation " (N → adj.) *vs.* subjective, impressionistic qualification (adj. → N). The comparable opposition in German of *bôse Húnde* vs. *bôse Húnde* is treated by SEILER 1960 (esp. 35f.) in terms of characterization *vs.* specification, respectively. WEINRICH's (1966) and BARRI's (1975) approach to the French constructions is structuralist. Weinrich rejects the " emotive " interpretation (covered in more detail below) as " mystification " (" les sentiments n'y sont pour rien ", p. 89) and advocates a distributional examination (p. 83f.); postposed adjectives are then found to be *distinctive*, while anteposed ones, morpheme-like, form a closer union with the following noun.

ment opposition obtains with a well-defined, restricted (even if extensive) list of noun lexemes (§4.2.2). For other nouns, the placement is fixed, i.e. non-pertinent, out of opposition, in our corpus — either invariably first-place (§4.2.1.1) or a second-place position (§4.2.1.2). In the latter case, a shift from second to first position entails a drastic shift — indeed, often a complete reversal — of the meaning of the syntagm: e.g., " a vessel of wood " becomes " vessel wood ", " women's passion " becomes " a woman of passion "; the interrelationship between the constituents is completely reversed. An " adjective " will be defined below as a nominal modifier for which a shift in placement (or rather replacement by a different-position homonymic alternant) does not bring about an *internal* semantic reversal of that order, but selects another member of an *externally* determinable paradigm, while the inter-constituent relationship remains constant. From another point of view, the *specificity contour* is different in the two cases: sharply rising or dipping in the non-adjectival postposed nom. modifier, it is moderate in the **ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ**: **ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ** paradigm. (Note that the distinction of semantic *vs.* syntactic nucleus and satellite is valid for both adjectives and modifier nouns, the only difference being that for the '**ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ**' type of syntagm the nuclei and satellites are semantically on a par or commensurate, in partial equivalence [i.e. can be substituted for each other]; this is not the case with **ⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲱⲛⲉ, ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ**.)

4.2.1 THE PLACEMENT OPPOSITION SUPPRESSED (ORDER NEUTRALIZATION)

4.2.1.1 FIRST-PLACE-POSITION PARADIGM. This includes (beside determinators)[16]: (a) IDENTIFIERS: **ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ** (*III* 59.27), **ⲁⲩ, ⲟⲩ, ⲛⲓⲙ** (*IV* 75.18f., *III* 108.1f., 137.1); (b) QUANTIFIERS: **ⲛⲟⲩ**: (*A 1* 281) **ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲏ ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲏⲥⲑⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ** (sic) / (*Wess. 9* 131b 2ff.) **ⲡⲓⲛⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣⲃⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ** / (*P* 131[6] 23 ⲡ) **ⲧⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ** / (*A 1* 65) **ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ϩⲓⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ**[17]; **ⲕⲟⲩⲓ, ⲯⲏⲙ** " a little ", " a small quantity/number " (ὀλίγος, *paucus, peu de-*; the second-place opposed homonym means " small, little ", μικρός, *paruus*): **ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲯⲏⲛ, ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲟⲧⲉ...** (*Miss.* 231) / **ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲉⲭⲓ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ** (*A 2* 502f.) / **ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ** (*K* 9028) / **ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲍⲱⲟⲛ** (*III* 45.27) / **ϩⲉⲛⲯⲏⲙ ⲛⲯⲉ** (rare, *IV* 73.14f.); **ϩⲁϩ, ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ**[17], **ⲗⲁⲁⲩ, ⲟⲩⲏⲣ** (*III* 108.5, 140.27, 107.20); *cardinal numbers* (from three onwards): *IV* 51.7, 54.29, *Ch.* 85.56f. With **ⲥⲛⲁⲩ** (masc.) the evidence is conflicting: we find both first-place (" a pair of... ") and the by far more common, historic appositive second-place position, with no detectable difference in meaning: (*Ch.* 86.50f.) **ⲡⲓⲥⲛⲁⲩ... ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲕⲉⲫⲁⲗⲁⲓⲟⲛ** / (*Miss.* 283) **ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ** / (*P* 130[4] 93 vo) **ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ**, but (*P* 130[1] 36 ⲣⲛⲅ) **ⲡⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ.** For the feminine we find the first place: (*IV* 108.3) **ⲕⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ.** *Ordinal numbers*: **ⲯ(ⲟ)ⲣⲡ(ⲉ), ⲙⲉϩ-** (*Ch.* 86.45f., 174.11f., *III* 118.14), (*A 1* 33) **ϩⲉⲛⲙⲉϩⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲏⲓ** / (*ibid.* 92) **ⲡⲙⲉϩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲡⲙⲉϩⲯⲟⲙⲛⲧ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ. ϩⲁⲉ** " last " (movable, countable) has accordingly first place: (*Ch.* 161.1f.) **ⲛϩⲁⲉⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ** / (*ibid.* 198.2f. = *Mt.* 5:26) **ⲡϩⲁⲉ ⲛⲕⲟⲇⲣⲁⲛⲧⲏⲥ**, (17f.) **ⲡϩⲁⲉ ⲛⲁⲉⲡⲧⲟⲛ** / (*A 2* 71) **ⲑⲁⲏ ⲛⲁⲛⲧⲓⲁⲟⲅⲓⲁ** / (*Rossi 2/3* 12) **ⲡⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡϩⲁⲉ ⲛⲁⲅⲱⲛ** / (*P* 130[1] 136 ⲧⲁⲥ) **ⲡϩⲁⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ** (sim. *Rossi 2/3* 83) / (*IV* 208.10f.) **ⲑⲁⲏ ⲛⲥⲁⲗⲡⲓⲅⲍ**, etc.; but in certain temporal fixed expressions it occupies second place, namely after time-nouns, with a categorial (eschatological) reference (**ϩⲁⲉ**, zero-determinated, is invariable here): **ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲛϩⲁⲉ** (*III* 126.24, 164.20, 180.15,19f., 181.4f., *A 1* 90, 285, 290-1 etc.), **ⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲁⲉ** (*IV* 76.15): " last days ", " latter days ".

[16] The determinators are really in " zero " or " pre-first " position; in fact, they constitute the prime nuclear paradigm, the initial boundary signal, the beginning of the concatenation of expansions. On the first-place paradigm see TILL §119, MALLON-MALININE §165, cf. STERN §187.

[17] In **ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩ** (sic), **ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲃⲕ** (*III* 27.10), **ⲛⲟⲩ** is overruled by **ϩⲟⲉⲓⲛⲉ**, due perhaps to the contrast figure. As distinct from **ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲩ** " some great ones ", this perhaps means " some (persons) who are great " (cf. *Man. Homilien* 27.15 **ϩⲁⲓⲛⲉ ⲛϩⲁⲩⲧ, ϩⲁⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ**, also in disjunctive contrast).

4.2.1.2.1 SECOND-PLACE-POSITION PARADIGMS (a). Here an inversion is possible, but entails a reversal of the interrelationship between nucleus and expansion (§4.2): this proves these cases to be *sociative* or appurtenative rather than attributive syntagms. Examples are of course ubiquitous, and the lists are open-ended; the following semasiological subgrouping is selective: (a) Ø-determinated, N-marked *abstracts* (incl. *nomina actionis*, infinitive), MNT-syntagms, individual lexemes: ⲙⲉ " truth ", ⲛⲟⲩⲭ, ⲃⲟⲧⲉ, ⲕⲣⲟϥ, ⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ, ⲗⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ, ⲩⲁⲩ, ⲙⲓⲩⲉ, ⲱⲛϩ and so on; (b) noun lexemes with *generic-categoric* reference: ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ, ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ, ⲣⲱⲙⲉ, ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ, ⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ, ⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ, ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ, ϩⲏⲧ, etc.; (c) noun-lexemes with *material-constituence* reference: ⲱⲛⲉ, ⲩⲉ, ⲥⲁⲣⲝ, ϩⲁⲧ, ⲛⲉϩ, ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ, ⲕⲁⲕⲉ, and so on. This class is compatible with the first-place paradigm: (*IV* 156.19) ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 108.3) ⲕⲉⲛⲟϥ ⲥⲛⲧⲉ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 146. 15ff.) ⲟⲩⲛⲟϥ ⲉⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲃⲱ ⲛⲉⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ... and, unlike members of the latter, attributes in the second-place list can be compiled " freely ". They cannot therefore be taken as constituting a single paradigm but several, according to position and compatibility in a complicated system of semasiological principles (see footnote 19).

4.2.1.2.2 SECOND-PLACE-POSITION PARADIGM (b). Here we find the zero-determinated, dependence-unmarked, invariable [18] ⲩⲏⲙ and (rarely) ⲕⲟⲩⲓ: (*IV* 99.16) ⲡⲙⲁ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲛⲕⲁϩ / (*Ch.* 103.35f.) ϩⲉⲛϩⲣⲏⲩⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲙⲙⲛⲧϩⲏⲕⲉ / (*P* 131[4] 141 vo, Sh.?) ⲑⲏ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲙⲙⲁⲣⲓⲁ / (*P* 130[5] 69 ⲍⲅ) ⲧⲕⲉⲫⲓⲥⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲩⲏⲙ / (*Leyd.* 345) ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲡⲧⲱⲙⲁ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ / (*III* 181.18f.) ⲟⲩⲫⲟⲡⲉ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 503) ⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ; ⲩⲏⲙ occurs in at least two fixed (lexicalized) syntagms, *viz.* ⲩⲏⲣⲉ/ⲩⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ " boy ", " girl ", " child " (*IV* 61.27 ϩⲉⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲉⲩⲥⲟⲃⲕ, *ibid.* 103.14, shows the the semantic weakening of ⲩⲏⲙ, in this compound-like syntagm: " small children "), and ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲩⲏⲙ (*Berl.* 1611 7 ⲧⲍⲑ). ⲕⲟⲩⲓ (perhaps more usually of *quantity* than mere size) and ⲩⲏⲙ are compatible [19]: ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (*K* 9028) " a few small good (works) ", cf. ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (*Berl.* 1613 6 ro) " a few good (works) ". This curious, unique attributive syntagm is the last vestige of the pre-Coptic tagmemically marked attributive dependence — this marking being only partial, since in Coptic there is in this case no concord to (co-)mark this dependence.

4.2.1.2.3 ⲥⲁⲃⲉ/ⲏ (" wise, clever ", *III* 22.21, 120.18, *IV* 82.9, etc.) and ⲃⲣⲣⲉ (" new ", *III* 65.10, 103.16, *Ch.* 44.45f. etc.) appear to have the privilege of only second-place position, although additional attestation is necessary; a glance at *Dictionary* 43a, 319a shows this is correct, with few exceptions, for Coptic generally [20].

4.2.1.3 In the case of MULTIPLE-ATTRIBUTE SYNTAGMS, the phrase loses its basic binary form, and N-symmetrical inversion is impossible. This probably means a neutralization of the arrangement factor. Consider the following examples: (*Ch.* 191.36ff.) ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲁ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ / (*III* 172.10f.) ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲯⲧⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲭⲁⲥⲓϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ / (*Ch.* 111.35ff.) ⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ / (*Ch.* 199.37ff.) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ ⲛⲯⲁⲛϩⲧⲏϥ ⲙⲙⲁⲓϩⲏⲕⲉ / (*III* 190. 14f.) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲧⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲛϩⲱⲛ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ / (*IV* 126.6f.) ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ / (*III* 121.23f.) ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲕⲣⲙⲣⲙ ⲛⲣⲉϥϧⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ. NB. A complex single attribute (" bracketed ", coordinated): (*Ch.* 79.31ff.) ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ⲥⲓϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ / (*III* 34.17) ⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲃⲃⲟ ϩⲓⲙⲉ.

[18] Yet note ϩⲉⲛⲩⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙⲉ (*Wess. 9* 94a 1f., collated).

[19] I know of no other instance in Coptic of the compatibility of similar, paradigm-defined attributes (of the type " The Good Old Bad Old Days ", a programme on BBC Radio 4, 1979).

[20] -ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ (" wild ", ⲡⲓⲣⲓⲣϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ, ⲡⲓⲁϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ, *A 2* 104), -ⲙⲉ (" genuine ", ⲛⲉϩⲙⲉ *III* 71.5), -ⲟⲩⲏⲣ (ⲥⲟⲩⲟⲩⲏⲣ " dav such-and-such ", *IF* 232 *apud Dictionary* 489a), -ⲃⲱⲱⲛ " bad ", -ⲛⲟⲩϥⲉ " good ", -ⲩⲓⲣⲉ (" young ", in ⲩⲏⲣⲉⲩⲓⲣⲉ *IF* 298, *Dictionary* 486a), -ⲁⲥ (" old", ⲏⲣⲡ ⲁⲥ *vs.* -ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ, *A 1* 194) are all in our corpus final (close-juncture?) constituents of compounds.

4.2.2 Placement opposition maintained: I define here the ADJECTIVE as any specific noun lexeme (N^x) featuring in both following paradigms: (α) ' N → N-N^x ' (parad. α); (β) ' N^x → N-N ' (parad. β), i.e. having the privilege of both first- and second-place positions; analytically speaking, the adjective comprises *two homonymic signs*, formally opposed and distinguishable by placement properties. Note that whereas in this class the conception of *a category or paradigm of two non-identical homonyms* — **ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ** and **ⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ** — is feasible, this is not so with second-position modifier nouns (§4.2.1.2). There the total reversal of the constituent interrelationship brought about by a change in their arrangement, precludes their analysis as two different signs; a paradigmatic association of α- and β-sequences is not meaningful in that case.

Adjectives comprise the following subgroups:

(a) Loan-adjectives of Greek origin. Various Greek morphologic types: **-ⲛⲟⲥ, -ⲣⲟⲥ, -ⲓⲟⲥ, -ⲧⲟⲥ, -ⲕⲟⲥ, -ⲏⲥ.** Also exocentric (**ⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ, ⲍⲟⲙⲟⲟⲩⲥⲓⲟⲥ**) and other two-ending Greek compounds (**ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ, ⲧⲁⲗⲁⲓ-ⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ**).

(b) Adjectives of Egyptian origin: prenominal *agent nouns*, non-analytic (ⲁ-vocalized) (hist. " conjunct participles "): **ϣⲁⲛ-, ϫⲁⲥⲓ-, ⲍⲁⲣϣ-, ⲛⲁϣⲧ-, ⲙⲁⲓ-** as well as the analytic, productive agent nouns (really syntagms) in **ⲣⲉϥ-**; **ⲁⲧ-** " privative " syntagms [21]; **ϫⲁϫⲉ** " inimical, hostile ".

(c) **ⲍⲗⲗⲟ** " old ", **ϣⲙⲙⲟ** " alien "; **ⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ** " miserable ", **ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ** " beloved ", **ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ** " holy ".

Documentation (representative; I am here illustrating the α paradigm):

(a) (*III* 41.2f.) **ⲍⲉⲛϣⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲏⲛⲓⲕⲟⲛ**, (49.2) **ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ**, (78.6) **ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ**, (90.18) **ⲡⲁⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ**, (154.15) **ⲍⲉⲛⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ**, (*IV* 156.7) **ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ**, (*Ch.* 12.19f.) **ⲟⲩⲭⲣⲉⲓⲁ... ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ**, (14.13ff.) **ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ**, (138.52ff.) **ⲡⲛⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ**;
(b) (*III* 50.3f.) **ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲛⲁϣⲧⲍⲏⲧ**, (57.7) **ⲧⲉⲥⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ ⲛⲁⲧⲕⲓⲙ**, (76.22) **ⲍⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ**, (70-1) **ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛϫⲁϫⲉ**, (189.23,30) **ⲡⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲁ**, (*Ch.* 27.4ff.) **ⲡⲓⲧⲱϣ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲧⲁⲛⲍⲟ**, (57.40ff.) **ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲣⲡ**, (77.51f.) **ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲓⲛⲟⲃⲉ**;
(c) (*III* 103.7f., 142.5f.) **ⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ/ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲉⲥⲃⲩⲧⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲍⲗⲗⲟ**, (*IV* 172.16) **ⲟⲩⲍⲏⲧ ⲛϣⲙⲙⲟ**, (*III* 62.22) **ⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉϥ-ⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ.**

4.2.2.1 Rection in ' noun + adjective ' syntagms: concord. As has long ago been noted and often restated since [22], the Greek loan-adjectives have in Coptic partly kept their movability, alternating (extra- or sub-systemically in Coptic, though not of course in pre-Coptic Egyptian [23]) in a conditioning set of *animate* (common gender, ⲡ-/ⲧ- → -ⲟⲥ)/*inanimate* (sexual or natural neuter, ⲡ-/ⲧ- → -ⲟⲛ). Since this has never, to my knowledge, been put to the test in an extensive and homogenous corpus, let me specify here the nuclei governing each of these concord alternants in the Shenoutean texts. Note: (1) The *motivating element* is the *determinator* of the nucleus, the initiator and prime nucleus of the expansion concatenation. (2) The nucleus may be either singular or plural. (3) For the rection of personal pronouns and proper names, see below, §4.3; their expansion is *appositive*. (4) This concord rection operates in adnominal attributive adjectives. We need more evidence for *predicative* adjectives, namely ones expanding the predicate determinator in a Nominal Sentence pattern ('**ⲟⲩⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ**', consider [*P* 131[6] 88ro] **ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲕ**), or N-marked adnexally modifying **ⲉⲓⲣⲉ/ⲟ** (consider **ⲥⲟ ⲛⲁⲣⲅⲟⲛ** *III* 34.15f., **ⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ** *IV* 41.9f., and **ⲧⲉⲓⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲛⲥⲍⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲁⲥ ⲛϣⲙⲙⲟ** *A 1* 76, indicating that the rules are different in this adverbal status). (5) This concord is observable in instances of the *postposed* (α) adjective;

[21] Cf. Jernstedt 1967, Funk 1976b.

[22] Stern §169, Steindorff 1904:§172, Till 1928:§88f., Till §76, Gregorius 1981:199f.

[23] The very few movable Coptic adjectives (**ⲍⲗⲗⲟ/ⲱ, ϣⲙⲙⲟ/ⲱ, ⲥⲁⲓⲉ/ⲏ, ⲥⲁⲃⲉ/ⲏ**) are better viewed as double-entry semi-analyzable lexemes, rather than true concord alternants.

exx. of concord in the anteposed (β) adjective are too few to be conclusive (see below). (6) -HC is invariable (animate only? *III* 182.3, 221.4, *IV* 156.7).

(a) -OC: *human beings and their parts*; *some special faculties*; *groupings*: ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (ⲣⲉϥ- *IV* 3.20, ⲣⲙⲛ- *III* 220.15); ϩⲓⲙⲉ (*IV* 28.20); ⲉⲓⲱⲧ (*IV* 29.18); ⲯⲏⲣⲉ, ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ (*III* 173.14f., *Ch.* 169.31a.); ⲥⲟⲛ (*IV* 32.21f., see obs. 1); ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ (*Ch.* 70.37ff.); ⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ (*Ch.* 143.25f.); ⲣⲣⲟ (*IV* 29.22f.); ⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ (*III* 95.19); ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ (*III* 171.14); ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ (*III* 28.5). *Note especially*: ⲥⲛⲟϥ (only in the cliché '**ⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ**', see obs. 2; *III* 166.18, 167.1f., *Ch.* 174.54f., *Thompson* A ⲥⲙ); ⲃⲁⲗ (in the cliché '**ⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ**', see obs. 5; *IV* 88.10, *A 2* 527); ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ (*Ch.* 78.1f., *Wess. 9* 134a 3ff.); ⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ (*III* 213.13f., *Ch.* 137.12f., 144.20f.; obs. 3); ⲯⲩⲭⲏ (*Ch.* 140.17ff., obs. 4); ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 102.9ff.); ⲗⲁⲟⲥ (*P* 131⁵ 21 vo); ⲃⲓⲟⲥ (*A 2* 368: **ⲛⲥⲉⲙⲛⲟⲥ**, cliché); ⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ (*IV* 175.2f., obs. 6); ϩⲟⲟⲩ, ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ (only + **ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ**, obs. 7; *III* 164.12f., *A 2* 22, 247).

(b) -ON: *inanimates*; *abstracts* (*incl. infinitives*); *plants*, *non-human animates*: ϩⲛⲟ, ⲥⲕⲉⲩⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 193. 34f.), ϩⲱⲃ (*IV* 194.5), ϩⲣⲉ, ⲧⲣⲟⲫⲏ (*Ch.* 118.57f., *IV* 86.21, *P* 131⁶ 42 ro), ⲥⲙⲟⲧ (*III* 49.2), ⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ (*Ch.* 20. 32ff.), ⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ (*P* 131⁵ 56 ⲛ), ⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ (*III* 114.27), ⲙⲧⲟⲛ (*IV* 116.14), ⲱⲛϩ (*III* 114.22f.), ⲟⲩⲱⲯ (*Ch.* 73. 22f.,28f.), ⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ, ⲉⲡⲓⲃⲟⲩⲗⲏ (*Ch.* 33.10f., *III* 89.23), ⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ (*Wess. 9* 131b 30f.), ⲥⲱ (*IV* 86.22), ⲉⲣⲏⲧ (*Ch.* 135.17f.), ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ, ⲯⲁϫⲉ (*III* 63.20f., 148.16), ⲥⲃⲱ (*A 2* 486), ⲙⲛⲧ-syntagms (*III* 155.16f., *P* 130² 10 **ⲣⲗⲑ, ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ**), ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ (*Ch.* 168.27f.), ⲥⲩⲛⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ (*III* 49.2f.), ⲃⲓⲟⲥ (*A 2* 423, not Sh.), ⲡⲣⲁⲍⲓⲥ (*Ch.* 120.46ff., *A 1* 163), ϫⲣⲉⲓⲁ (*IV* 172.12f.), ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ (*III* 100.25), ϩⲁⲡ, ⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 85.4f.,39f.), ⲗⲟⲅⲓⲥⲙⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 77.46ff.), ⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ (*Ch.* 129.24f.), ⲱⲇⲏ (*Ch.* 207.3ff., Sh.?), ⲧⲕⲗⲥ (*Ch.* 36.19f.), ⲯⲱⲛϥ (*Ming.* 318), ⲉⲛⲧⲏϭ (*A 2* 402), ⲥⲟϭⲛ (*Teza* 683). Note especially: ⲃⲁⲗ (*III* 185.10, **ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ**, obs. 5), ⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ (*III* 208.12, **ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ**, obs. 4, 8), ⲥⲱⲙⲁ (*III* 106.4f., *IV* 190.10, 191.12, obs. 8), ϫⲱⲟⲛ (*K* 913, **ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ**, obs. 8), ⲯⲃⲏⲣ (*III* 30.8f., obs. 9), ϩⲛⲧ (*Wess. 9* 172a 8f.).

Observations: (1) Occurs once (*IV* 84.2) with -ON, perhaps to be taken as an ad-pattern modifier: **ⲉⲛⲉⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲡⲉ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲙⲛⲧⲉⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ**. Compare in this status **(ⲛ)ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲥⲁⲣⲍ** (*IV* 81.2f., 159.13).

(2) Only **ⲥⲛⲟϥ (ⲛⲓⲙ) ⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ**, excerpt quotation from *Mt.* 23:35.

(3) As against **ⲡⲛⲁ̄**, list (b).

(4) For **ⲡⲉⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ** (*III* 208.12) cf. *Is.* 1:4, 14:20, 57:3-4, also in *A 2* 122 **ⲡⲉⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ ... ⲏ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ϩⲓⲡⲟⲣⲛⲏ.**

(5) -OC is the consensus in the source of this excerpt quotation (*Mt.* 6:23, 20:15, *Luc.* 11:34); **ⲟⲩⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ** (*III* 185.10) is an adaptation to the system of Shenoute.

(6) Only in **ⲡⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲩⲙⲛⲟⲥ** (*IV* 175.2f.), a calque of σεμνὸς γάμος? Compare **ⲟⲩⲅⲁⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲙⲛⲟⲛ** (Bohairic, *Acta Martyrum* [edd. Balestri-Hyvernat] I 37.29), and see Drescher, *Le Muséon* 82:92f. (1969): also **ⲃⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲙⲛⲟⲥ/ⲛⲕⲟⲥⲙⲓⲕⲟⲥ** (*A 2* 368).

(7) Only in **ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ/ⲛⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ** " past times ", " days of old ". **ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ** appears to be an invariable modifier, " of old ", " of yore ", adverbal as well as adnominal [24]: (*P* 130⁴ 118 ⲕⲅ) **ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ**, (*P* 131⁵ 23 [ⲟⲑ]) **ⲉⲯϫⲉ-ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϯⲥⲟ ⲉⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ**, (*Or.* 166.42ff.) **ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ**; consider also *III* 19.14, 66.21, 203.17 and (*A 1* 12) **ⲡⲛⲟϭ ⲙⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ϫⲓⲛⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ.**

(8) Influence of Greek gender?

(9) This would be difficult to explain without referring to *Act.* 10:14, where all Boh. MSS and Horner's " *a* " (Bodl. Hunt. 345) have **ⲛⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ (ⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲉⲟⲛ)** for ἀναγκαίους.

[24] Cf. Brugmann, *IF* 27:233ff. (1910), for a comparative study of the nominative masc. sgl. Greek adjective in " adverbial " status (esp. p. 240ff.). Incidentally, ἀρχαῖος does not occur (to the best of my knowledge) in this construction; however, we do find τἀρχαῖον (Schwyzer I 620, II 617f.).

(10) Fixed, " imported complete ", often technical, terms and collocations, with the original concord [25], include ΔΗΜΟCΙΟΝ ΓΡΑΜΜΑ (*III* 23.22), ΤΕΠΛΑΤΩΝΙΚΗ ΔΙΔΑCΚΑΛΙΑ (*A 1* 15), ΤΚΑΘΟΛΙΚΗ ΕΚΚΛΗCΙΑ (*Thompson* K 3 vo, *III* 61.1f., *Ch.* 146.50f. etc., very common), ΤΠΑΛΑΙΑ (ΑΥΩ/ΜΝ-Τ-)ΚΑΙΝΗ ΔΙΑΘΗΚΗ (*Ch.* 175.32f., 186.52ff., *A 2* 244, *Duke* 2 vo etc., very common); here we find the feminine form of Greek adjectives.

(11) The feminine occurs also in collocations which are Coptic in construction, but are still calques of Greek terminological and fixed clichés: (*A 2* 440, not Sh.) ΤΑΠΟΛΑΥCΙC ΝCΩΜΑΤΙΚΗ, (*BMCat.* 77, No. 192 COr) ΝΕΙΠΑΡΘΕΝΟC ΝCΕΜΝΗ. Otherwise, the feminine occurs only in in substantives, like ΠΟΡΝΗ " whore " (the quoted ΟΥC2ΙΜΕ ΜΠΟΡΝΗ, *III* 97.14, where formally a modifier, is in appositive role), ΤCΑΙΗ ΜΠ̄Ν̄ΙΚΗ " the beautiful spiritual (woman) " (*Teza* 683).

4.2.2.2 Definition of the opposition terms: unmarked (second-place-position adjectives) vs. marked (first-place-position adjectives). The paradigm of first-place-privileged adjectives, (β) is lexically and semasiologically much more restricted, and its functional value specifically definable: " *attribution* + *X* ", " X " being either (a) a detectable *affective or emotive charge*, or (b) a *contrastively distinctive* role (it is probable that (a) and (b) are but two aspects of one and the same semantic range; see n. 29). This characterization is unspecified (though not incompatible) with second-place (α)-adjectives. One is therefore led to regard (β)-adjectives as *marked*, and (α)-adjectives as *unmarked* members in a binary (privative) opposition: the first-place adjective is characterized, the second-place adjective, an uncharacterized or neutral term: " banal " attribution [26].

4.2.2.2.1 Constituency: position (β). First and foremost in all groups (§4.2.2) are *pejorative*, *degradatory* or *disapproving* attributes [27]: ΠΟΝΗΡΟC, ΑΚΑΘΑΡΤΟC, ΤΑΛΑΙΠΩΡΟC, 2ΑΙΡΕΤΙΚΟC, ΑCΕΒΗC, ΑΝΟΜΟC, ΠΑΡΑΝΟΜΟC, ΕΛΑΧΙCΤΟC, ΑΚΕΡΑΙΟC, ΑΡΓΟC, ΕΒΙΗΝ, ΧΑΧΕ, ΧΑCΙ2ΗΤ, ΡΕ4ΡΝΟΒΕ, ΡΕ4ΚΩ2, ΑΤΝΑ, ΑΘΗΤ, ΑΤΝΟΥΤΕ, ΨΜΜΟ; much less prevalent are non-pejorative ones (§4.2.2.2): ΑΓΑΘΟC, ΑΤΝΟΒΕ, ΡΕ4ΨΜΨΕ-ΝΟΥΤΕ ΜΑΚΑΡΙΟC, ΧΡΗCΤΟC, CΟΦΟC, ΜΕΡΙΤ.

4.2.2.2.2 Function (1): In the case of *pejorative attributes* [28] we are obviously faced with some attitudinal *differentia specifica* which, though hardly traceable formally in the context, is nevertheless inferable from the semasiological peculiarity of the adjectives themselves. This is, I believe, sufficient mark for some context-oriented property. Another, even more " formal ", is the frequent ΠΙ-determination [29] in this construction. Yet another, *relative* formal index may be the very high incidence of such indefinite or low-specificity semantic nuclei as ΡΨΜΕ (very frequent), 2ΨΒ, 2ΝΑΑΥ/2ΝΟ, etc. The (β)-adjective may have been marked also by a special stress or intonation contour. " Affect " is as good a cover-term for this as any [30]: (*P* 130[4] 97 ro) ΤΕ4ΚΕΤΑΛΑΙΠΩΡΟC ΜΨΥΧΗ (sim. *Ch.* 186.7) / (*Ch.* 123.48ff.) ΤΑΚΑ-

[25] Gregorius 1981:201.

[26] Bergson's term (1960:62-98), opposed to " emphatic " (logically or affectively).

[27] In the unmarked term (postposed adjective) the proportion of pejorative *vs.* non-pejorative attributes is decidedly different. Obviously, both the subject-matter and Shenoute's stylistic temperament and predilections must be taken into account. All one can hope to establish is an inner consistency, a norm of usage proving the privileges of position to be more than whimsical variants.

[28] The usually pejorative (—) ΜΙΝΕ Ν- (" kind of... ") shares the marked (β) adjective paradigm: ΝΙΜΙΝΕ ΝΡΨΜΕ ΝΑΡΓΟC (*Ch.* 62.3f.) / ϯΜΙΝΕ ΜΜΟΝΑΧΟC (*III* 92.10) / ΤΕΙΜΙΝΕ ΝΡΨΜΕ ΝΑΘΗΤ (*A 2* 486), also *III* 82.7f., *IV* 42.3f., 47.24. Contrast this with the unmarked — ΝΤΕΙΜΙΝΕ (*III* 50.13, 110.19, 124.19f., 146.26, *IV* 59.7 etc.). Rare non-pejorative (neutral) instances, again with ΡΨΜΕ the semantic nucleus (this seems to be significant): (*Ch.* 98.44f.) ΤΕΝΜΙΝΕ ΝΡΨΜΕ / (*A 2* 398) 2ΕΝΚΕΜΙΝΕ ΝΡΨΜΕ.

[29] Polotsky 1957a:229 (= *CP* 231). Observe that ΠΙ- too, like β-adjectives, is characterized both affectively and distinctively,

[30] Compare (among many other applications of this principle) Weil 1879:36ff. (" l'ordre pathétique "); Gamillscheg 1930:15. 25, 32 (affect including antithesis); Regula 1951:179, 181d. (" Affektsyntax "); the " emotive order " in Firbas, *Časopis pro mod. filologii* 39:173 (1957); Jones 1977:63f. (" the emotive principle "); also Reiner 1968: 225-244, 256. Other terms for approximately the same factor are " emphatic ", " subjective ", " impulsive ", " figured " order or syntax.

ϑαρτος ncynaγωγh / (*A 2* 73) πιελαχιστος npωme (sim. *Wess. 9* 168b 13f.; — nzωon *III* 47.15, — naч *ibid.* 82.28, — n2naay *A 2* 507, etc.) / (*IV* 82.1) nκeapγος npωme / (*Ch.* 147-8) niaθht npωme / (*A 2* 412) πeβihn nzeλλhn (cf. *Cl. Pr.* 22 tnz: πaeβihn npωme, appositive: "I, the miserable"; cf. §4.3) / (*Rossi 2/3* 75) πonhpoc nim npωme / (*Ch.* 56.53f.) πatna mmatoi / (*A 1* 194) πatnoyte mmanixaioc / (*P* 131[8] 109 vo) zenxaxe npωme / (*III* 87.19) neiaceβhc npωme. Additional exx.: *Ch.* 63.55f., 142.39ff., 204.8ff., *Wess. 9* 149d 20f., 154a 17f., *A 1* 14 etc.

Function (2), with *non-pejorative* attributes (rather unusual): (a) In distinctive, antithetic role: (*IV* 127.25f.,29) πaγaθoc npωme, contrasting with ππonhpoc npωme, πρωme nxaxe in 11. 27, 28f., 30.

(b) Stylistic motivation (?) in the chiastic arrangement of (*A 1* 182-3) (πωpx) naπictoc natnoyte eβoλ nnpmnnoyte mπictoc (four-pole contrast: aπictoc: πictoc/atnoyte: pmnnoyte).

(c) Polite clichés (devaluation of function 1): (*III* 15.14) πenmakapioc ncon "our late brother" / (*III* 13.23 = 14.22) πpeчωmωe-noyte ncon / (*III* 25.8) πamepit ncon (sim. *Mun.* 92) / (*III* 13.15) πenmepit neiωt etcmamaat (sim. *Mun.* 95) / (*III* 32.4f.) oymepit nωβp; compare with (*IV* 26.15) (ωωπe) noyωhpe mmepit, (*ibid.* 117.24) zωc-con mmepit (but also nacnhy mmepate, *III* 123.27f., probably appositive — m- the definite article?); perhaps also (*III* 147.16) zenxphctoc npωme "worthy persons", sim. *ibid.* 128.20f.

(d) A bracketing role, with multiple nuclei: (*III* 106.11f.) zenatnoβe naποctoλoc aγω mπpoφhthc.

(e) Unexplained is still (*III* 213.9f.) ncoφoc mπpoφhthc ncaβe npmn2ht (cod. A only) — which may be stylistically motivated, with middle placement of the semantic nucleus.

Function (3)[?]: Although several examples seem to indicate an *inherent attribution* value for position (β) attributes (πatna mmatoi *Ch.* 56.53f.), *vs.* an *incidental attribution* value for the unmarked placement (n- being the non-predicative counterpart of -o n-), I have not been able to follow this lead through to achieve a comprehensive description.

4.3 Determinative and appositive syntagms: suppletive neutralization for pronominal and proper-name nuclei

Proper names and personal pronouns, neither determinable, since both are extreme on the scale of specificity (the pronoun of maximal specificity and maximal phoric applicability, the proper name of maximal specificity, minimal phoric applicability [31]) are as a rule nuclei of an *appositive* attributive syntagm, i.e. are expanded by a 'determinator (definite article) + adjective' syntagm and not by an n-marked modifier adjective or substantive [32]. Thus it is the satellite that carries the overt determination, when the nucleus does not. Here are some examples for this allosyntagm of the attribution syntagmeme:

Proper names (adjectives occupy here first or second-place positions; no6 always precedes the nucleus [33]): cinoyθioc πielaxictoc (*Mun.* 92, 95, *III* 13.19, 14.15 etc.) / πaikaioc aβeλ, πaikaioc nωze (*P* 130[2] 105 tmδ) / aβeλ πaikaioc (*III* 173.10, *P* 130[2] 53 tiλ, etc.) / πaikaioc iωβ (*Ch.* 38.10f., *A 2* 367, 478) / πno6 aβpazam (*RE 10* 162a 10) / πno6 naρxaγγeλoc mixaha (*Ch.* 33.37ff.) / πno6 mmωychc ihcoy

[31] See Kuryłowicz 1960:182. The present writer is preparing a monographic study of the syntax of the proper name in Coptic.

[32] Cf. Callender 1970:297f.: "a proper noun cannot form part of an attribution but may form part of an apposition". (The modals "cannot", "may" would be out of place in a descriptive statement. Callender uses "attribution" in a more restricted sense than I do; the construction in point, while syntactically appositive, is functionally still attributive.)

[33] πno6... nγaβpiha (*A 2* 376, collated) is a rare instance of an n-marked proper name semantic nucleus. Under certain contextual conditions, a proper name may be determinated: oyioyδac (noyωt), zaniouδac, naiioyδac, in De Vis, *Homélies coptes de la Vaticane* I 64f — the proper name is thus "de-specified", marked as appellative.

ⲛⲁⲩⲏ (*Ch.* 76.3ff.) / ⲡⲙⲁⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲗⲓⲃⲉⲣⲓⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 200.2f.) / ⲡⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ [34] (*Ch.* 148.14f.) / ⲡⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲃⲟⲩⲭⲟⲇⲟⲛⲟⲥⲥⲟⲣ (*Ch.* 49.17ff.) / ⲓⲱϩⲁⲛⲛⲏⲥ ⲡⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧ (*P* 131[6] 23 ⲡ). With *pronouns*, the nucleus invariably precedes the appositive attribute: ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ (*A 1* 175, *Ch.* 99.2f., etc.) / ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲓⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ (*A 1* 16) / ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲃⲱ, ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲣⲉⲩⲕⲣⲙⲣⲙ (*III* 144.1.16). (For the '*pronoun* + *noun*' apposition to a preceding personal pronoun, see §6.1.3.3.) Note that ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ usually behaves like a proper name [35]: ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ (*Ch.* 13.31, *A 1* 154, etc.) / ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲯⲁⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ (*A 2* 178) / ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡϩⲁⲣⲯϩⲛⲧ (*III* 123.13) / NB. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲛⲁⲏⲧ ⲛⲯⲁⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲛϩⲁⲣⲯϩⲛⲧ ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ (*A 1* 87, uncollated) / ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲯⲁⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ (*IV* 34.7f.) / ⲡⲙⲁⲓⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*III* 23.21). So too do ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ and of course ⲓ̅ⲥ̅: ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ (*A 2* 287) / ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲯⲁⲛⲧϩⲧⲏⲩ (*A 1* 103) / ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲡⲯⲁⲛϩⲧⲏⲩ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ (*A 1* 105, uncollated). ⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ is apparently not considered a proper name: ⲡⲕⲉⲛⲟⳋ ⲙⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ (*Ch.* 44.52f.).

[34] ⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ is a common appellative in (*Ch.* 65.31f.) ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲯ ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ or else, like ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, part of a proper name with innate determination.

[35] Cf. ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲯⲁⲉⲛⲉϩ (*Teza* 684). (*A 2* 411) ⲙⲏ ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ... ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-ⲡϩⲛⲟ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ... ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⳋⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ (uncollated) may be a contrary example; others are (*A 1* 130) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ (uncollated) / (*A 2* 376) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲉ.

CHAPTER 5

EXCURSUS: NEUTER GENDER AS A SYNTAGMATICALLY MANIFESTED, PARADIGMATICALLY DEFINED CATEGORY

5.1 Coptic gender
5.1.1 Exponents; syntagmatics
5.1.1.0.1 Determinators
5.1.1.1 Phorics and concord
5.1.2 Categorial structure
5.2 Gender neutralization environment: " Neuter Gender "
5.2.0.1 Synopsis of patterns
5.2.1 Cotext patterns: anaphoric reference to a zero article: Ø-Noun, Ø-Noun-NIM, Ø-KE-Noun
5.2.2 Cotext patterns: cataphoric reference to a verbal nominalization, " that "-clause or adnexal complementation: " sentence pronominalization "
5.2.3 Non-phoric environment and neuter gender
5.3 A concluding note: pronouns, conjugation bases and the typology of Coptic

5.1 COPTIC GENDER

The observation of gender in Coptic [1] provides the occasion for a study in structural description with several interesting theoretical aspects, the more specific ones being those of environment (conditioning, rection) and neutralization, the more general and basic ones being gender exponence, option and selection, as well as the definition of a category in general. The relevance of this study to our examination of Coptic modifiers lies in its contribution to an understanding of the *nucleus - satellite* nominal/adnominal syntagmatics, in a classic illustration of the advantages of a structuralist approach to a difficult grammatical issue.

5.1.1 EXPONENTS; SYNTAGMATICS. It is well known that Coptic gender is syntagmatic and pronominal rather than lexematic or morphematic (FUNK 1978a:110): the article-pronoun or determinator is, insofar as it is marked for gender, the primary exponent or carrier of this category. The noun lexeme (a satellite expanding the article nucleus, see below) does not usually carry any intrinsic mark of gender. Of course, the question of concord does not yet arise here, within the ' *article* → *noun* ' minimal noun syntagm, but only when this is further expanded, in cotext patterns involving other pronouns in cohesion with the article (§5.1.1.1) [2]. The interdependence of the article and its expansion I see as one of *mutual selection*, i.e. the compatibility of a lexeme with either — or both [3] — of the two singular definite articles,

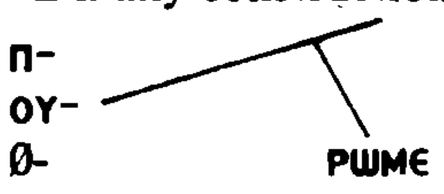
[1] Some conventional discussions of Coptic gender: STERN §§302, 487; TILL §§75f., 79; MALLON-MALININE p. 44ff.

[2] Meillet (" Le genre grammatical ", 1919, in *Linguistique historique et linguistique générale* p. 206) calls these movable pronouns " débris de genre "; English, he says, " a profité de la destruction totale de la fin de mot où figurait la marque du genre pour écarter une distinction inutile ". The " usefulness " of any grammatical distinction may be arguable, but in Coptic — and, in a different way, in English — the pronouns have proved staunch custodians of the historic category.

[3] Fodor's general definition of gender (1959) as " the concord between a variable and an invariable " is hardly applicable

ⲡ-, ⲧ-. The question of " where " the gender is, is not one of descriptive relevance; the article is the concord motivant. The general thesis of the so-called inherence of grammatical (i.e. *signifié*-less) gender in the lexeme itself [4] is therefore nowhere put to the test in Coptic. The few instances of " nomen mobile ", the sex-referable residue of a pre-Coptic system (ⲥⲟⲛ: ⲥⲱⲛⲉ, ϩⲗⲗⲟ: ϩⲗⲗⲱ, ⲯⲏⲣⲉ: ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ, see §4.0.1), synchronically only semi-morphological and unproductive, — as also are the lexical pairs (ⲉⲓⲱⲧ: ⲙⲁⲁⲩ, ⲣⲱⲙⲉ: ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ) — are not really marked for gender, but stand in semasiological-paradigmatic opposition, which must grammatically be related to the same pronoun-compatibility or mutual selection.

5.1.1.0.1 Determinators. It is the articles or gender-characterized determinators that carry the gender mark for the minimal noun syntagm. This is by no means a novel observation or one peculiar to Coptic [5], but it is certainly not banal or trivial, since it opens our eyes to a crucial fact, namely the *nuclear status* of the article in the noun syntagm, with the noun lexeme its satellite (expansion). This analytic statement, although by no means *communis opinio* as far as general and European linguistics is concerned, is upheld by some eminent syntacticians [6], and constitutes in fact the major and most noteworthy contribution of Jernstedt's study of Coptic determination (1949) [7]. To be exact, he asserts this of the *indefinite* articles, pointing to a subordination relationship between them and their nouns not unlike that between a noun and its attribute: " one (of the category...) "; see Jernstedt 1949 *passim*, esp. §§10,14, 18, 20ff., 25. The same is true, however, of all determinators [8]: the article is the prime nucleus, the initial boundary signal and beginning of the concatenation of adnominal modification (Ch. 4). Indications that this analysis is correct abound in many constructions involving the noun syntagm, a model of which (after Frei 1965:44f.) would be



It is the determinators that establish here, where we have two lists, a very short one (a) of determinators (ⲡ-, ⲧ-) and a much longer one (b) of noun lexemes, with a member from (b) compatible and coupled with either one or both members of (a). It is possible to describe this in terms of *presupposition* — a given member of (a) presupposing a certain member of (b), or vice versa — i.e. as determination or rection (Bazell 1949:8ff.).

[4] Cf. Hamp, *Archiv Orientalní* 40 (1972) 344 (on Western Iranian dialects): " The gender is inherent in the noun and is transplanted to pronominals... by a simple but far-reaching concord rule "; cf. also Damourette-Pichon §303: " L'article reçoit la sexuisemblance et ne la confère pas... elle leur [i.e. to substantives] est donnée en dehors de lui par l'acte mental, qui conçoit la substantialité ". Jernstedt, whose study of Coptic gender-determination phenomena is by far the most penetrating, says (1949:§4): " Gender is a lexical characteristic of the noun " — with which it is difficult to differ; but when he claims (*ibid.*) to know that the determinator " agrees in gender with the determined noun ", he risks circularity, for the gender of the determinated noun is made manifest only by, and in, the determinator. Moreover, when he says (§25) that the article " overrules the inherent gender of the noun ", he is again begging the question. Generally speaking, the major flaw in Jernstedt's discussion lies in its overemphasis of the mentalistic and dynamic aspects of concord phenomena, this making many of his statements (esp. in §§13, 19) hard to accept. I also disagree with his assertion (§23) that the lexeme embodies both (abstract) property and (concrete) substance; it contains neither, except as a potentiality realized and resolved in syntagm with the *actualisateur* pronoun.

[5] See, for instance, Bally 1950:§139, Dubois 1965:56 (the article opposition " met en évidence la marque du genre "). In Gaelic bardic-grammatical terminology, *innsgne* covers both " gender ", " person " and " pronoun-article " (O'Cuiv, *Transact. Philol. Soc.* 1965:152, Adams, *FL* 4:160 [1970]). Cf. Kuryłowicz 1964:210f., Kern 1888:100, 103n., and, the earliest instance to my knowledge of this approach, the Stoic definition of the article (Diocles ap. Schmidt 1839:39) ἄρθρον ἐστί στοιχεῖον λόγου πτωτικὸν διορίζων τὰ γένη τῶν ὀνομάτων καὶ τοὺς ἀριθμούς "; see too Robins 1951:31.

[6] See Seiler 1960:12ff.; Frei 1956:163-5, *idem* 1968:§3.2.3.1, 3.3.2.1; Barri 1975a:75-83. We find this idea expressed by Guillaume as early as1919 (p. 25), though in a somewhat different sense: " L'article est quelque chose qui ' emploie ' le nom ".

[7] The same view is held by Schenkel 1966:129. See also (for Egyptian) Edel, *BiOr* 25 (1968) 36. This has an immediate bearing on the morphology:syntax " levelling " issue: the " word-internal " interdependence between article and noun is only juncturally different from that between the two-word nucleus and satellite (cf. Hjelmslev, *Prolegomena* 26). Incidentally, the distinction between *syntactic* and *semantic* nucleus is as valid for noun-syntagm analysis as it is for the 'NS + expansion' one (§4.1).

[8] Probably also of other prefixed morphs in the minimal syntagm, like ⲁⲧ- and ⲙⲛⲧ- (Funk 1978a:116); the *izâfet* dependence is synchronic in Coptic too (*pace* Nagel 1980:89f.).

the class status (" nominal " syntax) for the whole syntagm; it is to them that anaphoric reference is made [9]. This analysis conforms to the basic non-predicative syntagmatic sequence in Coptic: nucleus → satellite. Only thus can we account (and account elegantly) for instances of apparent inconsistency [10]. like ⲡⲥⲩⲗⲗⲁⲃⲏ " the (book) of the syllable, syllabary " (*BL Or.* 8800 4 vo.) [11]; ⲡⲅⲟⲙ ⲧⲏⲣϥ " he who is all power " (*RE 10* 161a 27f.); ⲡⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ " he who is all wonder " (*ibid.* 28); ⲡⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ (*ibid.* 163a 33) [12]; ⲡⲙⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ (*Ch.* 59.20f.) [13] " he who alone is of truth ". This seems to prove that (a) it is not the lexeme which selects the gender; (b) the determinator/noun dependence is a mutual one of *compatibility*, rather than of rection: ⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ can in principle expand both " masculine " and " feminine " determinator pronouns, just (from the point of view of syntagmatic compatibility) as ϩⲙϩⲁⲗ or ⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ can, and with precisely the same internal relationship. The same, of course, applies to the indefinite determinators, which, however, are either unmarked or indirectly marked for gender (see below): ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ " A wondrous one is God " (*P* 130² 46 ⲥⲕ) / ⲟⲩⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ (*P* 130⁵ 22 ⲫⲛ) / the common ϩⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧ- " phenomena characterized by the quality of... " (e.g. *III* 206.1-5) / ϩⲉⲛⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲛⲉⲓⲱ ϩⲓϩⲧⲟ (*P* 130² 86 ro, not Sh.?) " (persons) characterized by ass and horse-flesh ", and so on. Although it is true that the above are isolated, rare instances — lexemes have their " usual " (i.e. statistically prevalent) compatibilities with either ⲡ- or ⲧ-, hence " are " masculine or feminine —, it is important to remember that the rarer compatibility is an open possibility [14], a productive procedure.

Paradigmatically, I would suggest the following scheme as the structured inventory of the main determinators, all quintessentially nuclear, expandable by noun lexemes [15]:

determinators proper		*quantifiers*	
ⲡ-ⲧ-/ⲛ-	" the- "	ⲕⲉ-	" other- "
ⲟⲩ^{m}-/ⲟⲩ^{f}-/ϩⲉⲛ-	" a- "	ⲟⲩ^{m}-/ⲟⲩ^{f}-	" one- "
∅-	" - "	∅- ... ⲛⲓⲙ	" any, every- " (discontinuous)
— ⲛⲓⲙ	" all "		

Observations: ⲡ-/ⲧ-//ⲛ- — masc. sgl./fem. sgl./masc. + fem. pl. — represent the whole demonstrative and possessive series.

[9] See below §5.2.1, and §3.1.1.1.0.1. The Nominal Sentence is a striking case in which the advantages of this conception are clear, it being really a pronominal predication pattern: ⲟⲩ-/ⲡ- + ⲡⲉ. This analysis, as Jernstedt himself points out, would account for syntagms like (a) ⲟⲩ-/ϩⲉⲛ-ⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ (*A 2* 417, 421 [not Sh.], *RE 11* 16a 10), an instance of hyperdetermination, where ⲧⲉⲓ-, in commutation with the bare noun, expands the indefinite articles; (b) ϩⲉⲛⲧⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲉ ϩⲓⲅⲱⲛⲧ ϩⲓⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ (*A 2* 435, not Sh.), ⲡⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ϩⲓⲁⲩⲡⲏ ϩⲓⲁⲯⲁϩⲟⲙ (*A 1* 77), (ⲯⲱⲱⲧ ⲙ)ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ϩⲓϩⲟⲉⲓⲧⲉ (*III* 205.23f.). Note ϩⲉⲛⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲉⲝⲛⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ (*Cat.* 43.29) " His works constitute wonder upon wonder " — for ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉⲝⲛⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ, here expanding ϩⲉⲛ-, see §1.2.1.1; the articles here bracket ϩⲓ-coordinated, zero-determinated nouns (see Polotsky 1957a:233f. = *CP* 233). (Incidentally, in BM 991 ro - *BMCat.* 411, collated) we find the remarkable ⲡⲉⲓⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ... ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ.)

[10] One suspects that a misunderstanding of the true nature of the article-noun relationship underlies " fluctuating gender " in Crum's *Dictionary* (e.g. in ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ, ⲩⲡⲏⲣⲉ, ⲅⲟⲟⲛⲉ), and also the so-called " overrule " of the " inherent gender " by the article (Jernstedt 1949:§25). See further instances in Kahle 1954:250 (sub b); ⲧⲡⲗⲅⲉ *Luc.* 5:36 (Palau Rib. ed. Quecke, see Browne 1979b:201); ⲡⲧⲁⲗⲉⲡⲱⲣⲓⲁ in (Boh.) *Ps.* 11:6, 13:3, 39:3; *Rom.* 3:16, must be accounted for differently.

[11] Shisha-Halevy 1976a:33. The translation in *Enchoria* 5 (1975) 98 should be modified accordingly.

[12] Cf. ⲡⲉⲯⲡⲏⲣⲉ *Dan.* 9:4 (and other exx. in Crum 581a).

[13] Cf. ⲡⲙⲉ *Apoc.* 3:7, 19:11. Again, these cases may be viewed as instances of *hyperdetermination* (definite article before zero-determination).

[14] There may be a connection between the compatibility of a lexeme with both masculine and feminine articles and its occurrence as zero-determined predicate in a Nominal Sentence (see Ch. 4, n. 7).

[15] It is amazing that a hundred years after Stern's *Grammatik* we have no adequate account of noun determination in Coptic. (Krámský's facts [1972:89] are either over-simplified or inaccurate; so, for that matter, are his Greek and Celtic systems. This is of course a constant danger in this genre of linguistic reporting, and yet the difference in the quality of the information given by modern typologists and that found in nineteenth-century studies such as Steinthal-Misteli is truly staggering.) I see the major obstacle here in the too narrow patterning, the scrutiny of the noun syntagm alone — at best with some offhand contextual consideration — in an attempt to isolate the function of what is a macrosyntactically operative element *par excellence*. See Nagel 1980:77f., Layton 1981:261 for recent brief expositions.

OY-: in a juncturally different way, all *numbers* are pronominal nuclei of their noun syntagm.
KЄ-: the plural of **KЄOYA** is **2ЄNKOOYЄ**, just as that of **OYA** is **2OINЄ**; cf. *IV* 88.1f.
Ø-: see below, §5.2.0.1. It is not strictly true (Layton 1981:261) that zero and **OY-** share the same privileges of occurrence: **OY-** (not **2ЄN-**) is excluded before **KЄ-**, **Ø-** isn't; **Ø-** is compatible as immediate expansion of the durative verbal predicate, **OY-** is not.
— **NIM**, **Ø- NIM**: (discontinuous): **NIM**, like zero determination, suppresses (overrules) the gender-number category, and is accordingly incompatible with gender-number-explicit determinators [16]. As a rule, though with not infrequent deviations, — **NIM** expresses *universal*, **Ø- NIM** *distributive*, **THP=** (§6.1.1) *integral* totality [17].

5.1.1.1 Phorics and concord. When the minimal noun syntagm is in any way expanded or included, there may arise the occasion of a cohesive secondary exponent of gender, usually in the form of an amalgamate person-gender-number pronoun — third-person **-Ч-**/**-С-**/**-OY-** — but also by a non-personal demonstrative, by **OYA**/**OYEI**/**2OINЄ** [18], or, more rarely, zero [19]. This linear reference may be either resuming, ANAPHORIC (§5.2.1) to a determinator [20], or assuming, CATAPHORIC (§5.2.2) [21]. In either case, but especially in the former, *concord ruling* between the referent (pronoun) and referate (determinator) constitutes an important feature, a junctural link (§6.0.2) in the cotext pattern: concord exists here in the sense of *rection* only in the ultra-noun-syntagm extent:

(a)	**П-**	motivates	(governs)	masc. + sgl.
	Т-	"	"	fem. + sgl.
	N-	"	"	(masc. + fem.) + pl.
(b)	**OY^{m}-**	"	"	masc. + sgl.
	OY^{f}-	"	"	fem. + sgl.
	2ЄN-	"	"	(masc. + fem.) + pl.
(c)	**Ø-**	"	"	suppression of the gender-number distinction (§5.2)
	Ø- NIM	"	"	
	ØKЄ-	"	"	

(a) In the case of the gender-explicit referate, the concord is resolute and comparatively straightforward:

' П ⇆ РШМЄ..... -Ч- ' (etc.)

(b) With **OY-** we have a superficial syncretism-neutralization of **OYA**/**OYEI** in the nuclear syntagm (Jernstedt 1949:§§4, 13) to be resolved in the sequence [22].

[16] See Quecke 1979:447. I know of two Sah. instances of **NIM** in compatibility with non-zero determinators: **OY2OOYT NIM** (*Ex.* 12:48 Bodmer) and **ПВАРОС NIM** (NHC VII 11.10) — insufficient evidence to modify the above structure (more Boh. exx. in Crum 225b).

[17] See Brøndal 1943:25ff.

[18] See Jernstedt 1949:§2, v. Lemm 1972a:12f. (1899).

[19] See §5.2.1.5 and §§3.1.1.1.0.1, 6.0.2 (delimitations) for zero resumptions.

[20] Two typologically important points of consideration are the *redundance of gender signals* in the noun syntagm (cf. Dubois 1965:64ff.), comparatively low in Coptic, and the *cohesive value* of the respective resumptions (*ibid.* 87f.).

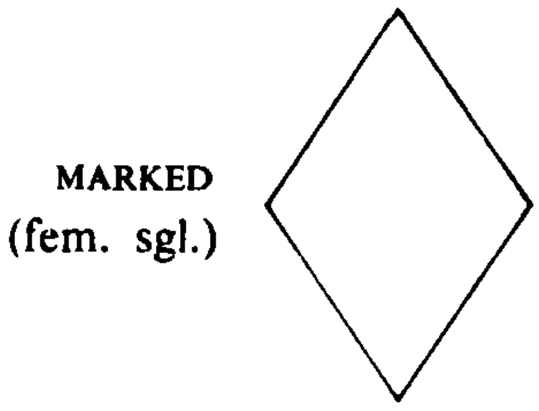
[21] See Dressler 1973:§12.4, pp. 20ff., 57, with further literature on " phorics " in general; also Palek (1968), Halliday-Hasan (1976) for English. The cataphoric direction of reference is called by Guillaume (1919:224f.) " extension anaphoric prospective ".

[22] A nice question is, what motivates the gender when the **OY**-determinated noun syntagm is the predicate of a Nominal

(c) It is pre-eminently in patterns with the zero-determination referate that one observes the masc. ~ fem. fluctuation, indicating a neutralization which I propose to call " neuter gender " (§§5.2.0.1, 5.2.1).

5.1.2 CATEGORIAL STRUCTURE. I suggest the following categorial model (after KURYŁOWICZ 1964: Ch. 1 §10 and BRØNDAL 1943:15ff.) as a convenient summary diagram for displaying the paradigmatic (role) relationship within this category:

(neuter gender: masc. ~ fem. ~ plur. fluctuation)
Ø



MARKED
(fem. sgl.)

UNMARKED
(masc. sgl.)

COMPLEX
(plural, common gender)

Observations: (a) The masculine:feminine opposition in Coptic is really *equipollent*, but some of its former characteristics of privative opposition still survive (§5.2).
(b) ⁻ı⁻, ⁺⁻ and ANOK represent the one case where the animate class overrules the category of gender; elsewhere, the inverse is true: animate-inanimate is a transsecting distinction in Coptic.

5.2 GENDER NEUTRALIZATION ENVIRONMENT: NEUTER GENDER

It is mainly in two phoric patterns — the anaphora to a zero article (Ø-, Ø- NIM, Ø-KЄ-) and the cataphora to a verbal nominalization, content clause, adnexal complementation etc. — that a masc./fem. neutralization takes place. This I now propose to define as a NEUTER GENDER ARCHIMORPHEME[23] neutralization, as defir ed by Trubetzkoy: replacement of a feature (in our case, gender) by zero in a given environment. Needless to say, the neutralization takes place in the expansion, not in the nominal nucleus itself. This neutralization is in favour of the masculine term of the opposition, that is to say, no zero-determinated noun with masculine-article compatibility is resumed by a feminine pronoun, whereas the contrary is true (exx. below). Thus the masculine reveals itself as the *unmarked* term or node in a

Sentence with the gender-explicit TЄ the pronominal subject. In §12, JERNSTEDT (1949) suggests that TЄ is the motivant; in §10 his analysis hints at the following descriptive order: (1) TЄ resolves OY-, (2) OY- motivates the sequence (Є)C-; in §25 he states explicitly that " OY- ' underlies ' the concord and overrules the gender ".

[23] Naturally, taking the term not in its usual morphologic Indo-European-oriented sense, but as a descriptive designation of a syntagmatic-paradigmatic phenomenon. Some delving into the original purport and tortuous terminological history of " neuter " may here prove rewarding: Protagoras' σκευή, the Stoics' οὐδέτερον, Aristotle's μεταξύ (" indifferent ", acc. to H. M. Hoenigswald, " Media, Neutrum u. Zirkumflex ", in *Festschrift A. Debrunner*, Bern 1954, 209-212) — see ROBINS 1951:22. The connection between neuter gender and masc./fem. neutralization is not unknown outside Coptic, notably in Rumanian (with a complementary distribution, masc. in the sgl. and fem. in the pl., see Rosetti, " Sur la catégorie du neutre ", *Proc. 9th Intern. Congr. Ling.*, 1964, 779ff., criticised by R. H. Hall, *Word* 21:421ff. [1965]). One ought however to make a distinction between the *diachronic* issue — the transition from a morphologic 3-gender to a 2-gender system — and the purely synchronic one.

privative opposition of gender [24]. This is fully in agreement with pre-Coptic morphology. This zero or " neuter " node of the categorial structure is realized through "*flottement*", a fluctuation between masc. and fem. of which the *signifié* is gender indifference, " neither " gender, *Ungeschlechtigkeit* — not to be confused with the *complex* node, common gender, conflating *both* masculine and feminine. The apparent choice between masc. and fem. resumption is but a false option, since it does not entail a corresponding change on the *plan du contenu* — insofar as one can judge by contextual information.

Without enlarging on the semantics of the zero article, the referate of this neutralization, one cannot but note that its *deindividualizing* effect [25] corresponds, as far as gender is concerned, to an *ageneric* (as well as anumeric) functional standing of the noun syntagm: a negation of all noun categories, pronominally and adnominally manifested in Coptic.

5.2.0.1 SYNOPSIS OF REFERENCE COTEXT PATTERNS

CATAPHORIC	ANAPHORIC
infin. prep. ⸗ϥ ~ ⲥ → ⲭⲉ- / ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- circ. conv. (the pron.: *object expansion*) §5.2.2.1 f.	' Ø-Noun$^{fem.}$ → ⸗ϥ ~ ⲥ ~ ⲟⲩ ' §5.2.1.1
# ϥ ~ ⲥ + conj. form → ⲭⲉ- / ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- conjunctive # (the pron.: *gramm. subject*) §5.2.2.1 f.	' Ø-Noun$^{fem.}$ + ⲛⲓⲙ → ϥ ~ ⲥ ~ ⲟⲩ ' §5.2.1.2
# ⲟⲩ-Noun → ⲡⲉ → ⲭⲉ- / ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- # §5.2.2.2.1	' Ø-ⲕⲉ-Noun$^{fem.}$ → ϥ ~ ⲥ ~ ⲟⲩ ' §5.2.1.3
' ⲡⲁⲓ → ⲭⲉ- / ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- ' §5.2.2.2.2	' Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$ / Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$ + ⲛⲓⲙ / Ø-ⲕⲉ-Noun$^{masc.}$ → ϥ ~ ⲟⲩ ' §5.2.1.4

[24] In French too we observe the neutric use of the masculine, unmarked term of a privative opposition (DUBOIS 1965:52, 57; see S. Lampach, " La relation des genres dans le système de pronoms de la 3e personne en français "; *Word* 12:51ff. [1956]; S. A. Schane, " The Notion of Markedness and its Morphosyntactic Consequences ", *Proc. 10th Intern. Congr. Ling.* II, 757ff.; critically, C. E. Bazell, " The Correspondence Fallacy in Structural Linguistics ", in E. P. Hamp *et al.*, *Readings in Linguistics* II, Chicago 1966, p. 276ff.). In Coptic the unmarkedness of the masc. gender is semasiologic rather than morphologic: " masculine gender " *means* " masc. + indifferent ", while " feminine gender " means " feminine ". Feminine-oriented gender neutralization does occur in Coptic: a well-known instance is ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲏⲧⲉ " behold ", where the feminine, originally anaphoric, synchronically — f at all analyzable — cataphoric, is normal, although both masc. and pl. marked alternants are frequent. CRUM has an impressive collection of exx. for ⲧⲉ as an "invariable" subject or occasionally copula in Nominal Sentence patterns (391b): these must be further examined and classified before they can be appreciated. On the whole, however, it is the masculine that is the " freezing " gender: beside the phoric cases discussed here, consider the particles ϩⲱⲱϥ, ⲛⲧⲟϥ (originally phoric too - §§6.1.2.3, 6.1.3.4 - synchronically " phoric " in a macrosyntactic sense, back to a preceding context).

[25] See GUILLAUME 1919:62, 233ff., 241f., 303f.; DUBOIS 1965:149ff. (" L'absence de tout référent supprime toute forme d'actualisation "), 154f. (the absence of the article suppresses and negates the existence of the noun syntagm, giving the noun ad-

5.2.1 Cotext patterns: anaphoric reference to a zero article

5.2.1.1 Referate: Ø-Noun$^{fem.}$; Referent (a): *masculine singular* (always 3rd person; all referents actor-expressions in adnominal circumstantial forms)[26]: (*III* 205.17f.) ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ ... ⲉϥϫⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (87.2) ⲕⲁⲓⲉ (ⲉϥⲣⲏⲧ / (93.10) ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲉϥϫⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (195.2ff.) ⲙⲛⲧϫⲁϫⲉ ⲉϥⲣ-ⲛⲟϥⲣⲉ / (*IV* 154.22) ⲉⲧⲡⲱ ⲉϥϩⲟⲣⲩ / (*Ch* 144.10f.) ⲉⲕⲓⲃⲉ ⲉϥⲟ ⲙⲡⲩⲣⲅⲟⲥ / (*A 2* 242) ϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲉϥⲯⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ / (289) ⲡⲓⲧⲉ ⲉϥϫⲟⲗⲕ ⲏ ⲉϥϩⲏⲕ / (*Wess. 9* 141d 6f.) ⲥⲃⲱ ⲉϥⲃⲟⲟⲙⲉ / (*Or.* 160.4f.) ϩⲏⲇⲟⲛⲏ ⲉϥϩⲟⲟⲩ / (*P* 130^2 f.6, ⲡⲍ-ⲡⲏ) ⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉϥⲣ-ⲃⲣⲱϩ ⲉϥⲥⲟⲩⲙ.

Referent (b): *feminine singular* (actor-expression, object expansion of adnominal constructions; reflexive object in adverbal modification): (*III* 76.6f.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲡⲟⲩⲣⲯⲣⲡⲣ-ⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲁⲡⲉⲓⲑ. ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ / (*IV* 15.8f.) ⲙⲛⲥⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲃⲙ-ⲃⲟⲙ ⲉⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... / (*Or.* 153.8f.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲯⲁⲥⲃⲱⲯⲧ... / (159.51f.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ... ⲉⲥⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ / (160.47ff.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲥⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲩⲉ...

Obviously, this evidence[27], which is quantitatively weaker than that for the masc. referent, raises the possibility that in fact the masculine is the normal anaphoric referent in this case. Moreover, one cannot gainsay the possible argument that in cases of Ø-ϩⲓⲙⲉ *sex* may be overruling *gender* (in Shenoute I do not recall any instance of Ø-ϩⲓⲙⲉ with a masc. anaphora).

Referent (c): *plural* (actor-expression or object expansion, possessor in adnominal constructions): (*Or.* 160.50ff.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲥⲉⲧ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲕⲉϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲥϩⲁⲓ, ⲡⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲯⲁⲥⲯⲙⲯⲏⲧϥ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ " There are women who not only do not receive anything, but even serve those who commit adultery with them, with the products of their husbands' toil "; note the progressive transition from plur. to fem. sgl.; the inverse is evident in (*P* 130^2 5-6 ⲡⲍ-ⲡⲏ) ⲟⲩⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲟⲛ ⲉϥⲣ-ⲃⲣⲱϩ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩϥⲓ ϩⲁϩⲉⲛⲑⲗⲓⲯⲓⲥ... ⲟⲩⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲟⲛ ⲉϥⲥⲟⲩⲙ... ⲉⲩⲯⲱⲟⲩϩ.

5.2.1.2 Referate: Ø-Noun$^{fem.}$ + ⲛⲓⲙ; Referent (a): *masculine singular*; no exx. in Shenoute[28].

Referent (b): *feminine singular* (possessor in adnominal circumstantial construction or Nominal Sentence): (*Wess. 9* 132a 4f.) ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲥⲟⲫⲓⲁ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ / (*Zoega* 603.18) ⲅⲉⲛⲉⲥⲓⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲧⲉⲥϩⲁⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲧⲁⲕⲟ.

Referent (c): *plural*[29] (object-resumption of the extraposed zero-determinated noun): (*Thompson* H 3 ro) ⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲉⲛⲁϫⲟⲕⲣⲟⲩ.

jectival status and affiliating it to the verb syntagm: " une tarte maison ", " il est médecin "). See too Tobler 1908: 81ff., 1894:96-112, Krámský 1972:23. Note that the zero-form of the Coptic lexeme does not show the ' lexemic plural ' (ϩⲱⲃ : -ϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ), which seems in fact to have a concretizing/individualizing value.

[26] See Jelanskaja 1965:108, 1967, where she places the phenomenon in its right context, the ageneric function of zero-determination. Jelanskaja was the first to interpret this remarkable construction correctly (see also Crum 1926 I 189 n. 1, 250). As a rule, editors have either emended (so occasionally, though not always, Leipoldt) or ignored the masc. readings without further deliberation. Some non-Shenoutean exx. on my files: *Deut.* (Budge) 22:11 (ϩⲃⲥⲱ), 25:14 (ⲟⲓⲡⲉ), *Joh.* 15:13 (ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ), *Tit.* 2:3 (ⲥⲃⲱ), *Sir.* 36:29 (ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ), *Clem.* 26.1 (Schmidt, Akhm. ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ), *Apoc. El.* 7.10 (Steindorff, Akhm., ⲥⲉⲉⲧⲉ); Crum, *Short Texts* 189 (ⲅⲟⲟⲩⲛⲉ), 289 (ⲁⲅⲁⲡⲏ), *BMCat.* 511 f. 1 (Fay., ⲓⲱϯ); Chassinat, *Papyrus médical* 48, 73, 159 (ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉ, ⲃⲛⲛⲉ, ⲁⲣϯⲙⲉⲥⲓⲥ); *Wess. 18* 5.20 (ⲃⲛⲛⲉ), *Zoega* 629f. (ⲕⲁⲣⲟⲉⲓⲁ, ⲃⲁⲯⲟⲩⲯ, ⲕⲱⲕⲕⲟⲧⲁⲫⲏ); *NHC* II 128.19f. (Layton, *BASP* 14:72f., 1977: ⲃⲟⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ), VII 74.18f. (ⲧⲉϫⲛⲏ); Crum-Steindorff, *Rechtsurkunden* 92.35 (ⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ), 10.32 (ⲡⲣⲁⲥⲓⲥ); Till, *Osterbrief* (Akhm.) A 80 (ϩⲟⲙⲓⲗⲓⲁ), B III 4 (ϩⲣⲏⲣⲉ). *Deut.* 22:5 (Budge) " ⲥⲕⲉⲩⲏ... ⲉⲡⲁ-ⲡⲉ " raises an interesting question: are we to read here σκευή (fem. sgl.) or σκεύη (neut. pl. — so apparently understood by Rahlfs, Swete, also Hatch-Redpath)? The former seems preferable: the uniqueness of the Coptic adnominal construction here as regards gender must be weighed against the difficulty of assuming a Greek construction (neut. pl. + sgl. verb) *with* a Greek plural noun in the Coptic text.

[27] Also uncommon outside Shenoute: Allberry, *Man. Psalm Book* 151.18 (Subakhm., ⲕⲛϩⲉ).

[28] This is a provisional and probably erroneous statement, to judge by the ample non-Shenoutean evidence: *Lev.* 7:21 (ⲃⲟⲧⲉ), *Act.* 23:1 (ⲥⲩⲛⲉⲓⲇⲏⲥⲓⲥ), *Tit.* 2:10 (ⲡⲓⲥⲧⲓⲥ), Athanasius (Lefort) 2.23 (ⲥⲙⲏ), Besa (Kuhn) 35.15 (ⲉⲓⲟⲡⲉ), Pachom (Lefort) 55.24f. (ⲯⲩⲭⲏ); Polotsky, *Kephalaia* (Subakhm.) 84.27f. (ⲥⲁⲣⲝ), 139.2ff. (ⲅⲁⲙ), 150.26 (ⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲏ); Crum, *Epiphanius* 110.8f., 247.11 (ⲁⲣⲉⲧⲏ); Budge, *Homilies* 88.6 (ϩⲓⲏ); *NHC* VII 91.23 (ⲅⲛⲱⲙⲏ); Crum-Steindorff, *Rechtsurkunden* 23.10 (ⲡⲣⲟϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ), 75.53 (ⲅⲟⲙ), 82.37 (ⲯⲩⲭⲏ, ⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ), 104.42f. (ⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ).

[29] Outside Shenoute: *Lev.* 21:11 (ⲯⲩⲭⲏ)), 23:29 (ⲯⲩⲭⲏ), *Jud.* 21:11 (ϩⲓⲙⲉ). See Stern §486. I cannot find a correlation between the number of the referent and the kind of totality expressed by ⲛⲓⲙ. On the other hand, ⲛⲓⲙ in the quantifier paradigm is usually expanded by the adnominal circumstantial, not the relative (Shisha-Halevy 1972:105f.).

5.2.1.3 Referate: Ø-ⲕⲉ(ⲅⲉ)-Noun$^{fem.}$ (usually after ⲟⲩⲛ-, ⲙⲛ-); Referent (a): *masculine singular* (actor-expression in adnominal constructions)[30]: (*III* 92.6f.) ⲙⲛⲅⲉⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲉϥϩⲟⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 125.38ff.) ⲙⲙⲛ-ⲅⲉϩⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲛϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛϥⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲁⲛ / (*Rossi 2/3* 12) ⲕⲉⲅⲛⲙⲓⲯⲉ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛⲛⲟⲩ.

Referent (b): *feminine singular* (actor expression in adnominal circumstantial): (*Cat.* 42.26f.) ⲕⲉ-ⲙⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲉⲥⲛϩⲟⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲥⲟ ⲛⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ.

Referent (c): *plural* (actor expression or object in adnom. constructions; for adnominal ϫⲉ-clauses see §7.4): (*A 1* 215) ⲟⲩⲛⲕⲉⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲉⲁⲩⲣ-ⲡⲁⲓ / (*A 2* 33) ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲛⲅⲉⲯⲁⲓⲣⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲡⲟⲣϫⲟⲩ / (*Ryl. Cat.* p. 31 No. 67) ⲙⲛⲅⲉⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲡⲭⲁⲁⲩ / (*P* 130^{5} 15 ro) ⲏ ⲟⲩⲛⲕⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ.

5.2.1.4 Referates: Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$, Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$ + ⲛⲓⲙ, Ø-ⲕⲉ-Noun$^{masc.}$; Referents: *masculine singular*; *plural*. The masculine referent *per se* is not as significant as is the absence of a feminine variant i.e. the absence of fluctuation. This definitely means that the neutralization is masculine-oriented. Where it not for the (scant) evidence of feminine variants and the cataphoric referents (see below), one could conclude that the masculine term is the sole exponent of neuter gender. The exemplification is selective:

(1) Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$: (*A 2* 16) ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲉϥⲡⲏⲧ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ / (*IV* 85.6) ϩⲛⲟ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ / (*P* 130^{5} 95 vo) ⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ... ⲉϥϫⲓ-ϩⲙϫ / (*A 1* 72) ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ / (*IV* 17.9f.) ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲥ-ⲛⲉⲥϩⲓⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 226) ⲟⲩⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲯⲟⲛϥ ... ⲟⲩⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲯⲁⲩⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ.

(2) Ø-Noun$^{masc.}$ + ⲛⲓⲙ: (*IV* 73.8f.) ⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Ch.* 161.19ff.) ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲓ$\overline{\text{ⲥ}}$ ⲛⲁⲟⲩⲟⲯϥⲟⲩ ϩⲁⲣⲁⲧϥ.

(3) Ø-ⲕⲉ-Noun$^{masc.}$: (*III* 201.16) ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲁⲣⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲧⲉⲱⲡ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ / (*Ch.* 21.3ff.) ⲕⲉϩⲛⲟ ⲉⲯⲁⲕⲣ-ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ / (*P* 130^{5} 59 vo) ⲙⲙⲛⲅⲉⲟⲥⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲛⲅⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛⲛⲟⲩ... / (*BMCat.* 81, No. 196) ⲙⲛⲅⲉϩⲱⲃ ϫⲉ-ⲛϥϫⲏⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ.

5.2.1.5 Some remarkable anaphoric constructions

(a) Anaphora to a non-specific referate — either the preceding context comprehensively or any unboundable component thereof: Referents: *feminine singular*: ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ " thereafter " (*IV* 200.21, *Ch.* 18.24f. etc.), ⲛⲥϫⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲛ "this does not concern me" (*A 1* 52), -ϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ " discover this, arrive at this conclusion " (*IV* 64.18f., *Ch.* 12.6, *A 1* 135.6). Note that these cases are easily mistaken for *non-phoric*; the pronouns, however, are invariably referents in a linear sense.

(b) Anaphora to an extra-(pre-)posed, topicalized verbal (" preinclusion ") nominalization. Referents: *masculine/conditioned feminine/zero* (see §2.7.1.4.2 for further exx.): (*A 1* 199) ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲛ-ⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲯⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲱⲯ ⲉⲫⲁⲗⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲃⲟⲕ ⲉⲩⲓ-ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲟⲥⲫⲟⲣⲁ ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ; ⲉϫⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲉⲥⲱ ⲉⲥⲱⲃⲉ, ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲡⲟⲣⲛⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲥⲧⲃ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲧⲉ / (*A 2* 443, not Sh.) ϩⲟⲧⲉⲓ ⲇⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲡⲉϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲱⲛϩ... ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲕⲁⲧⲟⲣⲑⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲧⲉⲓⲡⲁⲣⲁⲑⲏⲣⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ, ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ / (*A 1* 405-6) ⲉϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ϫⲉ... ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲅⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ / (*IV* 64.15f.) ⲉϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲇⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲏⲁⲯ ⲛϩⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲯⲟϫⲛⲉ... ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ (sim. *Wess. 9* 148b 16ff.).

(c) The case of anaphoric-cataphoric concord " conflict ": see §5.2.2.3.3.

5.2.2 " Sentence pronominalization ": cataphoric reference to a verbal nominalization, " that "-clause, adnexal complementation

5.2.2.1 Referents: *masculine* ~ *feminine* (ϥ ~ ϲ). These pronouns herald and represent the referate noun (-equivalent) in the nuclear verb syntagm, and cannot be replaced by it — that is, they are

[30] Outside Shenoute: *Marc.* 12:31 (ⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ), with fem. variae lectiones.

in an exclusively syntagmatic relationship with it; this is the formal cohesion-factor of the pattern. The '*pronoun → noun*' discontinuous component may be considered the distinctive grammatical feature here (and in fact the kernel of the typological correspondence with the Indo-European "impersonals", to which this pattern is in part the Coptic answer):

(a) *feminine*: OBJECT-EXPANSION: ⲧⲁⲁ=ⲥ (ⲛⲁ=) ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- (*III* 191.25f., *Ench.* 79a); ⲥⲟⲧⲡ=ⲥ (ⲛⲁ=) ⲉ- (*A 1* 275, *III* 39.17f.); ⲥⲙⲛⲧ=ⲥ ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- (*III* 20.2f.); ⲧⲟⲅ=ⲥ (ⲉⲣⲟ=) ϫⲉ- (*A 2* 50); ϫⲟⲟ=ⲥ ϫⲉ-[31] (*passim*); ⲟⲛ=ⲥ ϫⲉ- (*A 2* 44); ⲕⲁⲁ=ⲥ ⲥⲙⲛⲉϥⲥⲏⲧ ⲉ- (*P* 130² 100 ro); ⲥⲉ ⲉⲣⲟ=ⲥ + circumstantial (*A 2* 543, *Wess. 9* 159a 8ff., *P* 130² 107 ro)[32]; ⲅⲛⲧ=ⲥ + circumstantial (*P* 131⁶ 13 vo); ACTOR EXPRESSION: (ⲛⲉ)ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-/ϫⲉ-/circumstantial/conjunctive[33] (*A 2* 380, *Ryl.* 69 ⲛⲍ, *Wess. 9* 174d 25ff., 158b 24ff.); (ⲉ)ⲥⲙⲟⲕⲥ (ⲛⲁ=) ⲉ-, (ⲉ)ⲥⲙⲟⲧⲛ (ⲛⲁ=) ⲉ- (*Rossi 2/3* 63, *A 2* 266, *Ch.* 13.49ff.); -ⲥ-ⲯⲱⲡⲉ (ⲥⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ, ⲉⲥⲯⲁⲛⲯⲱⲡⲉ, ⲛⲛⲉⲥ-ⲯⲱⲡⲉ) ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-/conjunctive[33] (*III* 164.5f., *IV* 102.7) ⲥⲡⲣⲉⲡⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*A 2* 258); ⲥⲧⲟ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*A 2* 103, 258); ⲥⲕⲏ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*IV* 91.16f.); ⲛⲥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ-) (*IV* 98.23); ⲛⲥⲣ-ⲭⲣⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲛ- (*Miss.* 233); ⲛⲥϫⲓ ⲉⲣⲟ= ⲁⲛ ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- (*IV* 103.12); ⲉⲥⲛⲥⲱ= ⲉ- (*Ch.* 65.13ff.); ⲥⲉⲣⲟ= ⲉ- (*III* 22.22); ⲁⲥⲣⲁⲛⲁ= ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*IV* 96.10f.).

(b) *masculine*: OBJECT-EXPANSION: ⲅⲛⲧ=ⲩ ⲉⲩⲥⲏⲍ ϫⲉ- (the second pronoun is non-pertinent [conditioned]; *III* 21.18, *P* 130¹ 137 ⲧⲁⲏ); ⲕⲁⲁ=ⲩ (ⲛⲁ=) ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- (*IV* 63.1f., 66.12); ⲥⲁⲍ=ⲩ ϫⲉ- (*IV* 108.15f.); ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟ=ⲩ ϫⲉ- (*IV* 39.4ff., *P* 131⁶ 42 ro-vo), ⲟⲛ=ⲩ ϫⲉ- (*A 2* 256); ACTOR EXPRESSION: (ⲉ)ⲩⲥⲏⲍ ϫⲉ- (*passim*); ⲩⲟ ⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ (= ⲣⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ) (ⲛⲁ=) ϫⲉ-/ⲍⲁ-/ⲉⲧⲃⲉ- (*III* 34.9, *Miss.* 279); ⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲉ- (*Ming.* 325); ⲩⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲓⲍⲉ ϫⲉ- (*A 2* 537); ⲩⲟⲃⲯ ⲉⲣⲟ= ϫⲉ- (*A 2* 454); ⲩⲣⲱⲯⲉ ⲉ- (*Wess. 9* 140c 2f.); ⲩⲟⲩⲟⲛⲍ, ⲩⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲛⲍ (ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) ϫⲉ- (*IV* 8.17); ⲩⲍⲙⲡⲉⲛⲍⲏⲧ, ⲛⲉⲩⲍⲙⲡⲉⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲁⲛ, ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϫⲙⲡⲁⲍⲏⲧ... ϫⲉ- (*IV* 18.4f., *A 2* 151, *RE 10* 159b 30ff., *Mun.* 176); ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ, ⲩⲍⲟⲗⲅ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*A 1* 227)[34]; ⲩⲣ-ⲯⲁⲩ + ⲩⲣⲁⲛⲁ= ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*IV* 167.15f.).

5.2.2.1.1 Analysis of the distributional structure of the above patterns, carried out on the basis of the classification shown below, reveals several unmistakable combinatory features (the symbol (*) means a very rare or unique attestation):

	masculine referent		*fem. referent*		*masc./fem. referent*		
						masc.	*fem.*
OBJECT EXPANSION:	ⲥⲁⲍ=	ϫⲉ-	ⲧⲁⲁ=	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-	ⲟⲛ=	ϫⲉ- (*)	ϫⲉ- (*)
	(*) ⲕⲁⲁ=	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-	ⲥⲟⲧⲡ=	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-			
	ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟ=	ϫⲉ-	ⲥⲙⲛⲧ=	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-			
	ⲅⲛⲧ= ⲫⲩⲥⲏⲍ	ϫⲉ-	ϫⲟⲟ=	ϫⲉ-			
			(*) ⲧⲟⲅ=	ϫⲉ-			
			ⲍⲉ ⲉⲣⲟ=	circ.			

[31] Outside Shenoute, one encounters ϫⲟⲟⲩ, exclusively or alongside ϫⲟⲟⲥ. See KAHLE 126:1 233ff., 252; CRUM 1954:150f.; STERN p. 310. The object-pronoun here is obligatory, hence purely formal (unless it is lexicalized by ⲡⲯⲁϫⲉ or sim.); ϫⲱ "sing" is therefore a different lexeme.

[32] A similar instance of circumstantial adnexal complementation after a neutric cataphoric referent is ϫⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ + circ. Future III (POLOTSKY 1957:233 = *CP* 233), although it is doubtful whether ϫⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ is synchronically at all analyzable.

[33] The conjunctive too is an adnexal modifier, in paradigm with the circumstantial: see §7.1.3.

[34] Possibly not cataphoric, at least not purely so: ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲩⲍⲟⲗⲅ ⲉⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ (sic) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲣ-ⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲍⲉⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ (sic)... ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩⲍ ⲉⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ. Cf. earlier on the same page ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲟⲧⲙ, and (p. 257) ⲩⲍⲟⲗⲅ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ (ⲩ here *anaphoric*, referring to the inside of the fruit). *NB*: (*P* 130² ⲕⲃ, not Sh.?) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲅⲙ-ⲡⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲍⲏⲯ ⲛⲍⲉⲛⲯⲱⲛⲉ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲍⲙⲍⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ: the second pronoun group is ana-, not cataphoric.

ACTOR EXPRESSION:	*masculine referent*		*fem. referent*		*masc./fem. referent*		
						masc.	*fem.*
	=CHZ	ⲭⲉ-	=TO	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ=	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*)	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-/ⲭⲉ-/
	=O ⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ	ⲭⲉ-	=KH ⲉⲃⲣⲁⲓ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	(?)	(?)	circ./conj.
	=O ⲙⲙⲟⲓⲃⲉ	ⲭⲉ-	=P-ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲉ	ⲉ-			
	=OBⲱ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ	ⲭⲉ-	=P-ⲭⲣⲓⲁ	ⲛ-			
	=OYⲱⲛⲃ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ	ⲭⲉ-	=ⲣⲁⲛⲁ=	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-	=ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲩ	ⲭⲉ- (*)	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-
(*)	=ⲣⲱⲱⲉ	ⲉ-	=ⲙⲟⲧⲛ	ⲉ-	ⲥⲏⲧ		
(*)	=ⲥⲟⲗⲇ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	=ⲙⲟⲕⲥ	ⲉ-			
(?)	ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ=		=ⲡⲣⲉⲡⲉⲓ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	=ⲣⲁⲛⲁⲩ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*)	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-
	=ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲁⲥⲏⲧ	ⲭⲉ-	=ⲥⲟⲧⲡ	ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-			
	=ⲣ-ⲱⲁⲩ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-	=ⲭⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲩ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-			
			=ⲉⲣⲟⲩ	ⲉ-			
			=ⲛⲥⲱⲩ	ⲉ-			

The *feminine* referent points most often to a following *infinitive* referate (ⲉ + inf., ⲛ + inf., ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-), whereas the *masculine* regularly assumes the sequence of ⲭⲉ-: this impression is enhanced by a quantitative consideration of the evidence, since, barring ⲭⲟⲟ= and ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ= for the fem., ⲕⲁⲁ= for the masculine, all deviations from the alternation ⲥ → ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-/ⲩ → ⲭⲉ- are extremely rare. Now it is precisely in the case of ⲭⲟⲟⲥ, ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ, ⲕⲁⲁⲩ that the different functions of ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)- and ⲭⲉ- are most clearly observable and (after ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ) even paradigmatically opposed: ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- for a *marked prospective* reference, ⲭⲉ- for an unmarked general inclusion of various constructions (notably the Nominal Sentence, Second Tense and tense-marked predications). It may therefore be stated as a general rule that ⲥ- is used to herald *prospective expansions of the nuclear syntagm* whereas the masculine pronoun assumes the sequence of an included clause in general. However, this statement cannot well be reconciled with the feminine in ⲭⲟⲟⲥ (ⲭⲉ- only), ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲭⲉ- or the (rare) ⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-, ⲟⲛⲥ ⲭⲉ- etc. where we have true neutric fluctuation (neutralization) [35].

5.2.2.2 REFERENTS: ⲡⲉ, ⲡⲁⲓ: masculine only.

5.2.2.2.1 ⲡⲉ, the pronominal subject in a Nominal Sentence of the pattern # Predicate → Subject #, may serve to represent formally a following noun or noun equivalent; in the latter case, we may have instances in which the masculine gender of ⲡⲉ must be cataphoric, since it can hardly be anaphoric to a predicate which is either feminine or not gender-characterized:

(a) REFERATE ⲭⲉ-: (*A 1* 150) ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ- / (*A 2* 465-6) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-‘ ⲍⲓⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ’ ⲏ ⲭⲉ-‘ ⲍⲓⲑⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ’ ‘ ⲍⲓⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ ’ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-, ‘ ⲍⲓⲑⲏ ’ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-. In the answer we have a different (Subject → Predicate) pattern, with ⲡⲉ copular and of unclear phoric standing (so too *A 2* 491 ‘ ⲥⲟⲕⲩ ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ ’ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-).

(b) REFERATE ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ)-: (*A 1* 307) ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- / (*IV* 89.14) ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ... ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- (§1.2.1.2) / (*A 2* 148) ⲟⲩⲑⲗⲓⲫⲓⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- (5) ⲧⲉⲓⲍⲉ ⲱⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲕⲁⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ...

(c) REFERATE *non-specific*: (*Wess. 9* 90b 13ff.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ... ⲭⲉ-..., ⲧⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ... ⲭⲉ...

[35] Note that the conjunctive shares a paradigm with ⲉ(ⲧⲣⲉ-) after the feminine-neutric cataphora, as an adnexal-subcoordinative modification of the verb, not expansion of the pronoun: §§7.2.4(a), 7.3.2, 7.4.

We see that when the predicate is marked for gender, the subject-pronoun may concord anaphorically with the predicate — or, to put it differently, the anaphora may overrule the cataphora as regards gender (see §5.2.2.3.3): (*IV* 166.3f.) ⲦⲈⲬⲢⲒⲀ ⲦⲈ Ⲉ- / (*A 2* 61) ⲦⲈⲒⲤⲈ ⲯⲎⲘ ⲦⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ - / (*K* 9298) ⲦⲘⲞⲒⲤⲈ ⲦⲈ ⲬⲈ- / (*III* 183.28) ⲞⲨⲘⲞⲒⲤⲈ ⲦⲈ ⲬⲈ- / (*A 2* 3) ⲞⲨⲘⲚⲦⲀⲐⲎⲦ... ⲦⲈ Ⲉ- (7) ⲞⲨⲀⲚⲞⲘⲒⲀ ⲦⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- / (*III* 26.4) ⲞⲨⲀⲚⲞⲘⲒⲀ... ⲦⲈ ⲬⲈ- / (*III* 184.2) ⲞⲨⲯⲠⲎⲢⲈ ⲦⲈ ⲈⲬⲯⲀⲚ-... which brings home to us that in this pattern neither the phoric status nor the concomitant concord are predictable. In a manner of speaking, ⲠⲈ/ⲦⲈ are Janus-faced, with either face apt to take concord precedence with no discernable environmental conditioning or consequence. When the predicate bears a masculine gender mark, it is of course impossible to refer the gender of ⲠⲈ: (*A 1* 181) ⲞⲨⲀⲄⲀⲐⲞⲚ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (the lexeme morphologically marked) / (*A 1* 1) ⲠⲈⲦⲈⲤⲚⲀⲒ ⲀⲚ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- / (*A 2* 432, not Sh.) ⲘⲠⲀⲢⲰⲘⲈ ⲄⲀⲢ ⲚⲒⲘ ⲀⲚ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈⲤⲒ-, ⲠⲈ possibly anaphoric to a non-phoric (§5.2.3) " neuter " pronoun ⲠⲀ- — or are ⲠⲀ- (and ⲠⲈ) cataphoric to ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-? / (*A 1* 307) ⲞⲨⲀⲦⲰⲰⲠⲈ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈⲤⲒ- / (*Ch.* 76.23ff.) ⲞⲨⲀⲦⲄⲞⲘ ⲠⲈ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-.

5.2.2.2.2 ⲠⲀⲒ is cataphoric to an appositive ⲬⲈ-clause or ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-, serving apparently to accommodate ⲬⲈ-/ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- in various syntactical positions: modifying verbs (ⲤⲞⲞⲨⲚ, ⲤⲰⲦⲘ, ⲘⲈⲈⲨⲈ), governed by prepositions, in actor status, appositive subject in a Nominal Sentence pattern, etc.: ⲠⲀⲒ ⲬⲈ- (*Ch.* 174.22f., *III* 128.23, *IV* 2.20, 112.20, *A 1* 161, 230, *A 2* 371, *Wess. 9* 164d 20ff.); ⲠⲀⲒ ⲞⲨⲞⲚϨ ⲈⲂⲞⲖ ⲬⲈ- (*P* 131[5] 152 ro); ⲠⲀⲒ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (*Ch.* 123.2f., *III* 61.8, *IV* 104.9f. ⲠⲈⲒⲔⲈⲞⲨⲀ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-, 107.19f.).

5.2.2.3 Some remarkable cataphoric constructions

5.2.2.3.1 Major types and representative examples of a *zero cataphoric referent* — thus no explicit cohesion with the ⲬⲈ-/ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- referate:

(a) ⲦⲚⲚⲞⲞⲨ ⲬⲈ- (*III* 26.22); (b) ⲘⲠⲰⲢ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (*A 1* 213, *Ming.* 92); (c) ⲔⲀⲦⲀⲐⲈ ⲈⲦⲤⲀϨ ⲬⲈ- (*III* 118.20) and similar cases where ⲈⲦ-, marking the adnominal status of the verb syntagm, also occupies the actor slot of the Bipartite pattern [36], leaving no room for an exponent of cohesion with ⲬⲈ-; (d) Greek loan-elements: the 3rd person sgl. of finite verbs, treated as if containing a Coptic pronominal element: (ⲞⲨⲔ) ⲈⲬⲈⲤⲦⲒ Ⲉ + infinitive (*III* 30.16, *IV* 4.12): note that ⲈⲬⲈⲤⲦⲒ is partly conversible in Coptic, thus assimilated as a predication form; ⲄⲈⲚⲞⲒⲦⲞ + conjunctive, ⲘⲎ ⲄⲈⲚⲞⲒⲦⲞ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-, ⲀⲖⲖⲞ — ⲀⲖⲖⲞ conj./ⲦⲢⲈ-: see §7.3.3.

(e) Unconjugated lexemes, the valency of which includes, or consists of ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- or ⲬⲈ- (as first or second modification: §1.1.2.0.1): ϩⲰ ⲈⲢⲞ- ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (*A 1* 67, 205), ϩⲰ ⲬⲈ- (*Ryl.* 70 ⲤⲚⲄ), ϩⲀⲠⲤ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (*A 2* 378); compare the contentualization of noun lexemes, usually in predicative status, by means of ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- (ⲦⲀ-ⲚⲀⲄⲔⲎ... ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- *IV* 69.16f., (Ⲡ)ⲔⲀⲒⲢⲞⲤ... ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- *III* 74.14, perhaps (ⲞⲨⲚ/)ⲘⲚⲄⲞⲘ ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- *III* 145.11 — here ⲈⲦⲢⲈ- is in paradigm with the conjunctive: see §§7.3.2, 7.4), and of course the numerous verb lexemes (ⲞⲨⲰⲰⲨ, ⲞⲨⲈϩ-ⲤⲀϩⲚⲈ, ...) modifiable by ⲈⲦⲢⲈ-, where the cohesion factor is inherent in the valency spectrum.

(f) In (*III* 107.6) ⲚⲚⲀϩⲢⲀⲒ ϩⲰⲤ ⲈⲯⲬⲈ-ⲚⲞⲨⲎϩ ⲚⲤⲀⲞⲨⲤⲀ... " It seems to me as if we live apart... " a zero cataphoric referent may be postulated, coinciding with the zero subject of the predicative ϩⲰⲤ ⲈⲯⲬⲈ- (§1.2.1.3.3), but it may be preferable to take ⲚⲚⲀϩⲢⲀⲒ as the subject, with no cataphora at all.

5.2.2.3.2 Rare instances of an invariable masculine referent -ϥ, the formal obligatory exponent of inalienable possession (cf. §1.2.1.1, spec. obs. 1), expanded by a noun syntagm (even fem. or plural) and really part of a discontinuous possessor morph {ϥ + Noun} (§6.0.1.2.3): ϩⲎⲦϥ ⲚⲚⲈϩⲒⲞⲘⲈ (*Ench.* 66a) / ⲠⲦⲀϩⲞ ⲈⲢⲀⲦϥ ⲚⲀⲢⲈⲦⲎ ⲚⲒⲘ (*A 2* 442-3, not Sh.) / ⲠⲔⲀⲀⲈ ⲈⲦⲚⲀⲒⲔⲦϥ ⲚⲦⲈⲚⲠⲢⲞϩⲀⲒⲢⲈⲤⲒⲤ (*P* 130[5] 50 ⲤⲔⲀ), cf., not Shenoutean but emulating his idiom, (*BLOr.* 8811 17 ⲤⲀⲎ) ⲔⲞⲨⲚϥ ⲚⲦⲈϩⲒⲘⲈ [37].

[36] Polotsky 1960a:§12.

[37] See Polotsky 1930:874 (= *CP* 343).

5.2.2.3.3 Anaphora *vs.* cataphora in a single syntagm: an interesting instance of *varia lectio* reflecting a conflict of anaphoric and cataphoric references: (*A 2* 169) ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ- (*Borg.*, -ⲥ- cataphoric) *vs.* ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓϫⲟⲟϥ ϫⲉ- (*Ryl.* with -ϥ- seemingly resuming ⲡ-); however, this is not the substantivizing pronominal nucleus (§5.2.3.1) but the formal subject/glose marker, which does not usually motivate anaphoric reference, and here anaphora is by no means the rule: (*A 1* 365) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲩ ϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ϫⲉ-, with two other symptoms of the non-phoricity of ⲡ-: the masc. sgl. after a plural *vedette* and the resumption by a 2nd person plural pronoun. As a rule, the anaphora to substantivizing ⲡ- overrules a cataphora in such cases of conflict; consider (*Ench.* 67b) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϫⲉ-, or (*Ch.* 29.55f.) ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛϫⲟⲟϥ ϫⲉ-.

5.2.2.3.4 In a case like (*RE 11* 16b 20) ⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲭⲁⲣⲓⲥⲙⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ, the concord is cataphoric, regressively motivated.

5.2.3 NON-PHORIC ENVIRONMENT. Here neuter gender is realized by a "freezing", i.e. a greater or lesser degree of *incommutability* of the masculine pronoun.

5.2.3.1 In the nuclear ⲡ- expanded by a relative conversion (ⲡⲉⲧ-, ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥ-, etc.) [38]. The analysis of this difficult syntagm is by no means straightforward [39]. In brief, one notes here two different patterns: (a) ⲡⲉⲧ-/ⲧⲉⲧ-/ⲛⲉⲧ- (etc.): any conjugation-form; "definite", i.e. not further determinable, so really *outside* the determination category; ⲡ- is the determinator; (b) ⲡⲉⲧ-: present(-equivalent) only, invariable, unmotivating, of "zero determination" status, i.e. further determinable [40]; ⲡ- is a substantivator morpheme. Pattern (b) is paradigmatically restricted as regards both the conjugation-form and its predicate constituency (NAGEL 1973:120). Now it is difficult to see what the invariability of ⲡ- in pattern (b) could mean, unless it is the same indifference to gender that we have called "neuter"; note, however, that this ⲡⲉⲧ- is compatible only with masculine-marked or unmarked determinators: ⲡⲡⲉⲧ-, ⲡⲓⲡⲉⲧ-, ϩⲉⲛⲡⲉⲧ-, excluding *ⲧ-ⲡⲉⲧ- (NAGEL op. cit. 118f.); that is to say, the gender-explicit, *marked* feminine nucleus ⲧ- is incompatible with the substantivator (homonymic with the unmarked masculine determinator): this is, I daresay, a case of systemic, not haphazard non-attestation. In instances of pattern (a) like (*IV* 112.20) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲓⲛⲁϫⲟⲟϥ / (*A 1* 1) ⲡⲉⲧⲉϩⲛⲁⲓ / (*IV* 107.19) ⲡⲉⲧⲡⲣⲏⲡⲉⲓ (sic) / even (*III* 119.28) ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲏϩ, it would perhaps be rash to interpret ⲡ- as neutric, as anything but masculine gender, be its associative connection with any specific masculine noun lexeme (ⲯⲁϫⲉ, ⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ, ϩⲱⲃ...) doubtful as it may; the opposition of this ⲡⲉⲧ- to ⲧⲉⲧ- and ⲛⲉⲧ- is sufficient grounds, as the only pertinent, necessary and sufficient datum for a definition of gender in Coptic.

5.2.3.2 In the *glose* segment ⲡⲉⲧ- (etc.) of a Cleft Sentence with (pro)nominal *vedette* (POLOTSKY 1962:§1f.); although this ⲡ- can be traced to the pronominal subject ⲡⲉ, it is in the crystallized Cleft Sentence pattern not the anaphoric pronoun, referring to a specific identifiable nominal or pronominal element, but the formal, non-phoric mark of the logical subject: ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ+ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲉⲓⲁ ϫⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲥ ϫⲉ- (*Ch.* 143.44ff.) [41].

[38] ⲡⲉⲧ- *can* be anaphoric, in such cotext patterns as (*Wess. 9* 179b 30ff.) ⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩ, also *III* 126.20ff.

[39] See NAGEL 1973, SHISHA-HALEVY 1976c:134 n. 1, QUECKE forthcoming.

[40] See NAGEL 1973b, QUECKE forthcoming ("*determinierbar*" vs. "*undeterminierbar*"), *id.* 1981:261f. Consider ϩⲉⲛ-ⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (*A 1* 103), ⲕⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (*Ch.* 88.16f.), ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲉⲯⲩⲉ (*A 2* 256), ⲛⲓⲡⲉⲧⲯⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ (*Wess.* 9 141b 21f.), ⲙⲡⲉⲑⲏⲡ (*III* 165.13), ⲛⲉⲩ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (*A 2* 471), ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲓⲙ (*A 1* 133), ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ (*P* 130[4] 93 vo), ϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (*III* 206.21) which shows the non-motivating nature of ⲡ-.

[41] A basically similar case is ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ, ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ, ⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲡⲉ (*III* 224.20f., *IV* 29.26, *Ch.* 167.47f.), for which the "not yet" form is ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥⲣⲛⲁⲩ (*Ch.* 107.32f.) In a cotextually conditioned alternant pattern occurring in the sequence of a Cleft Sentence, ⲡⲉ is anaphoric and represents the whole *glose*: (*Ch.* 103.31ff.) ⲙⲙⲟⲛⲁϫⲟⲥ... ⲛⲉⲧⲏⲡ ⲉⲣ-ⲛⲏⲥⲧⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ-ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ / (*III* 68.14ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁϫⲛⲟⲩϥ... / (SHISHA-HALEVY 1976a:55) ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲏ ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲧⲁϩⲉ, ϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲣⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ...

5.3 A CONCLUDING NOTE: PRONOUNS, CONJUGATION BASES AND THE TYPOLOGY OF COPTIC

We have seen that the prime nucleus in the noun syntagm and noun phrase is the determinator pronoun (" article "). Indeed, in Coptic grammar, so to speak, the pronoun reigns supreme: with the possible exception of the stative, the entire grammatical system may be phrased in terms of a pronominal core and an indispensable yet inessential (indeed *satellital*) lexemic periphery: the patterns are formulable for the nuclear pronoun, which is given a lexical content by lexemic expansion. Within this frame of reference the " pronouns " in verbal syntagmatics are the CONJUGATION BASES. They (with their pronominal actor) are the nuclei of the verb syntagm, representing the verb in the system and incorporating it in the discourse [42]. Like the determinators, they are of necessity expanded (by verb lexemes: these are also privileged to occur after the determinators, and prove the noun syntagm to be — in this respect at least — hierarchically different from the verb syntagm. While both noun and verb lexemes are " nominal ", only the verb-lexeme subdivision features in verb syntagms). Allowing for the difference in semasiological categories, ⲁϥ-[ⲥⲱⲧⲙ] is no different, analytically speaking, from ⲡⲉϥ-[ⲥⲟⲛ]. In a final reckoning, then, in Coptic we are left with verb/noun lexemes and pro-verbs/pronouns to " grammaticalize " and actualize [43] them. (The stative — neither a lexeme nor a grammeme, but a typically pre-Coptic " synthetic " blending of both — does not fit in this scheme. neither do the " adjective-verbs ", another piece of " historical left-over " in Coptic.)

[42] Cf. already Aug. Schleicher (*Zur Morphologie der Sprache*, 1859, p. 21) who, at a time when the Coptic conjug. bases were conventionally termed ' Tempuscharakteristik ' or ' Tempuszeichen ', suggested they were ' original demonstratives '. For a comparable conception of a lexically empty auxiliary verb as a grammaticalized substitute (' *verbum vicarium* ', ' verbal pronoun ') see BALLY 1950:87, TESNIÈRE 1965:73, 91, DUBOIS 1965:96f.

[43] To my knowledge, only Vergote uses " actualisateur " in this connection (*Grammaire copte* I a, Louvain 1973, p. 84); see BALLY 1950:§119.

CHAPTER 6

THE AUGENS, AN ANAPHORIC-COHESION MODIFIER OF PRONOMINAL REFERENCE. SYNTACTIC PROSODY

6.0.0.1 Terminology and definition
6.0.1-3 Sentence-prosodic features
6.0.1 Apposition, extraposition; word-order and the placement of the nominal actor
6.0.2 Juncture (cohesion) features; boundaries; the Coptic word
6.0.3 Sub-sentence prosodic units: the colon; enclisis, hierarchies and placements
6.1.0.1-3 The augens: paradigms and compatibilities. A synoptic preview
6.1.1 ⲦⲎⲢ-
6.1.2.1-2 ϩⲱⲱ-
6.1.2.3 Non-commuting, non-phoric ϩⲱⲱⲩ
6.1.3.1-2 {ⲛⲧⲟ-}
6.1.3.3 Augens and extraposed independent pronoun
6.1.3.4 Non-commuting, non-phoric ⲛⲧⲟⲩ
6.1.4.1 ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-
6.1.4.2 ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-
6.1.4.3 ⲟⲩⲁⲁ-
6.1.4.4 Cotext patterns: 'ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- + ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-'
6.1.5 Border-line augentia: ϩⲁⲣⲓϩⲁⲣⲟ-, ⲛⲁ-
6.2 The augens as modifier
6.2.1 Focalizability of the augens
6.3 Concluding note: on the functional essence of the augens

6.0.0.1 TERMINOLOGY AND DEFINITION. The pronoun-containing group of modifiers has had scant special attention hitherto, and nowhere can I find a discussion of its functions, compatibilities or paradigms. The prosodic properties of the augens (né " Verstärker ") have in part been the topic of an important paper by Polotsky (1961), yet with no functional or categorial definition; other discussions are scattered, meagre and inadequate [1]. Polotsky's " *Verstärker* " is in fact the only cover-term for this group. This I propose to replace by the Celtological " *augens* ", which is earlier, more cosmopolitan and in the general run of grammatical terminology, and, from the functional point of view, remarkably apt [2].

[1] STERN §§256-8 (the felicitous " *adjunctive* pronomina "), SCHWARZE–STEINTHAL §§345-6, 468-9 (" Pronominalstämme "), TILL §§194-6, p. 390.

[2] " *Nota augens* " was coined by Zeuss (*Grammatica Celtica*, 1853, 332ff., 341, 344f.), for the Gaelic (old Irish) *-se/su/som*, etc., the Cymric " reduplicated " and especially the " conjunctive " pronouns (mod. Welsh *minnau/tithau/yntau*, etc.). However, his terminology is not uniform: he employs in a similar sense " *nota amplians* ", " *positio ampliata* ", " *ampliatio* " (347), " *augmentum* " (344), " *amplificatio* " (379ff.), " *emphatica forma* " (of the Breton pronoun, 375). The primary pronoun is " *auctum* " or " *ampliatum* ". His main statement runs as follows (332): " Comitantur saepissime in utraque quoque lingua [i.e. in Gaelic

The augens is by no means a single category, in the strict sense of the word; it is here used as a common cognomen for the class of modifier morphs, typically of secondary prosodic status, that include or constitute a secondary pronominal element, in cohesion with a primary (pro)nominal segment, in a specific prosodic-syntagmatic extent. Functionally, the augens does not precisely "strengthen" or "emphasize"[3] the primary (pro)noun. It expands it, and modifies it in a structurable range of semasiological nuances, including that of "insistence": see below. The prosodic properties of the augens, related to its functional ones, call for a brief and selective preliminary investigation of *sentence-prosodic features*, before we proceed to introduce the data and their paradigmatic/syntagmatic structuring: this will be but a sketch, aiming at the boldest simplification.

6.0.1 Apposition, extraposition; word-order and the placement of the nominal actor

6.0.1.1 Frontal extraposition[4]. A noun syntagm or independent pronoun may be followed in the same pattern extent, by a pronominal resumption or representation. This is known (from a formal point of view) as (*frontal*) *extraposition* of the primary (pro)noun[5] or as *segmentation*[6] of the sentence (cf. the rhetorical-stylistic "anticipation", "prolepsis", "nominativus pendens", "casus absolutus"). Prosodically, the extraposed element is shown by what segmental criteria we have to be an *independent colon* (§6.0.3; see Stern §§484, 635; Schwarze-Steinthal 465f., 487 on the construction): (*A 1* 333) ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲅⲉ ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲣ-ⲥⲁⲣⲝ / (*Ch.* 50.20ff.) ⲍⲁⲍ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲍⲱⲃ ⲁⲓⲭⲟⲟⲩ / (*III* 18.15f.) ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ[7] / (*III* 86.4) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛϥ / (*P* 130² 54 ⲧⲓⲇ) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲛ+-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ / (*III* 197.6f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲩⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲩⲏⲉⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩⲍⲓⲟⲙⲉ ⲍⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲩⲣ-ⲛⲁⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ. A *functional* analysis must regard the thematic structure of the whole pattern. This is a case of topicalization, very typical of Coptic, a topic-prominent language (§2.0.2.1), or *theme prominence* ("thematic foregrounding", Halliday's "marked theme")[8]. This relative functional and structural autonomy of the extraposed segment matches, and is correlatable with, its prosodic one.

and Cymric] pronomina personalia ad maiorem emphasin primitus, ut videtur, idque tam absoluta quam infixa vel suffixa, notae quaedam, orta plerumque ex ipsis pronominibus, quas dicere poterimus notas ampliantas vel augentes; atque pronomina ipsa, si occurrunt vel sine his notis vel cum iisdem, sunt aut formae simplices vel aucta aut ampliata". It was Pedersen (*Vergl. Grammatik*, 1913, II 137ff.) who modified Zeuss' term into "*Augens*", pointing out that it is a pronoun in its own right, an enclitic "pronominal" which follows the "pronomhaltige Betonungseinheit", emphasizing the "durch die Verbalendung, das infigierte oder suffigierte Pronomen oder die verbundene Genitivform ausgedrückte Begriff". For the functional attribute of the augens, Pedersen applies the vague though ubiquitous "Hervorhebung" (cf. §§2.0.2.1-2); the native Irish term is *treise* ("force", "emphasis"). For some classic discussions, see E. Lewy, *ZCPh* 27:10-13 (1957); Greene, *Ériu* 24:121-133 (1973); O'Briain, *ZCPh* 14:311-315 (1923); Pokorny, *ZCPh* 18:233ff. (1930); Hull, *Lg.* 16:12-16 (1940).

[3] See §§2.0.2.1-2. The idea is that of the "*nachdrücklicher Hinweis*" kind of emphasis (Hofmann 1936:37); "*renforcement*" (Müller-Hauser 1943:116f.: "lui + même, seul..., pron. personal tonique"). Polotsky's "Verstärker" (1961:294 n. 1 = *CP* 398) is an adaptation of the Arabic "corroborative strengthener", *at-ta'kīd* (Wright II 282).

[4] "Front" and "rear" correspond to the initial and final boundaries of the sentence, respectively.

[5] Cf. Jespersen 1937: Ch. 12.

[6] Bally 1950:§§79-99, cf. Satzinger 1976:7ff.; see Regula 1966:131ff., Hintze 1952:281ff., Schenkel 1967, esp. 116ff., and our §2.0.2.1.

[7] See §3.1.1.1.0.1 for this "zero" resumption of a zero article; §2.7.1.4.2 and note 130 there for the resumptions of extraposed ⲍⲟⲧⲓ (ⲭⲉ-) and ⲉⲕⲟⲟⲥ; for resumption generally as an exponent of cohesion, see §6.0.2.1; for concord issues, §5.2.1. In ⲁⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ (*III* 18.15f.) we witness the only way of focalizing the lexical component of a compound verb, an idiomatic native equivalent of the "tautological infinitive" (Goldenberg 1971).

[8] Halliday 1967:213f., 219, 237, 242; Grimes 1975:342, 344.

6.0.1.2 Rear extraposition [4] refers to a different set of patterns, in which a noun syntagm or independent pronoun [9] expands, refers back to and as a rule *lexicalizes* a nuclear pronoun. These patterns give one a recurrent typologic impression that in Coptic the minimal patterns of grammar are all " custom-built " for the pronoun: the grammar may be phrased in terms of a system in which the pronoun rules supreme. The pronoun is grammatically essential, nuclear; the noun (which as a matter of fact is actualized in the *parole* as a noun syntagm by its determinator, yet another pronoun) is not essential, but expands the pronoun or is substituted (i.e. in syntagmatic or paradigmatic relation) for it [10].

6.0.1.2.1 *Rear extraposition marked by* ⲛⲉⲓ-: this is a well-known construction, often quoted as a typological showpiece [11]. ⲛⲉⲓ- marks an expansion of a third-person " suffix "-pronoun nucleus. This is usually a formal actor, with a verbal predicate: (*III* 160.22f.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲁⲧⲕⲁⲣ-ⲡⲟⲥ / (*Ch.* 78.2ff.) ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲉⲓ- / (*ibid.* 141.31f.) ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲥ ⲛⲉⲓ- / (*ibid.* 162.7f., *A I* 167) ⲛⲁϣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲓ-, *vs.* ⲛⲁϣⲉ- 176.16f. etc. Here Shenoute agrees with Gnostic Sah. usage (cf. *NHC* VI 28.28). This extraposition is as a rule placed after other expansions (rectional and complementational) of the verb syntagm: (*A 2* 396) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉⲓⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩⲃⲁⲡⲧⲓⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 449, not Sh.) ⲡⲁⲓ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲛⲟⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ (sic) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲉⲓⲡⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁⲥⲧⲏⲥ / (*IV* 5.26ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ... ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲓⲧⲏⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲛⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 206.27ff.) ⲉⲩⲉⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϧⲱⲟⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲉ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲓⲛⲉⲓⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*IV* 68.17f.) ⲛϥⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲁⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲉⲓ-. Note too the distribution of two appositional constructions with a Second-Tense focalization pattern: (*theme/topic* → *focus*) ⲛⲉⲓ- (*III* 116.6, 169.23, 183.3f.) and (*theme/topic* ⲛⲉⲓ-) → *focus* (*III* 117.28f., 133.11f., *IV* 127.4f.), where the type of focality plays a role (§2.8.2). Rarely, the nucleus may be the *possessor*, in the possession verboid or possessive determinator: (*Ch.* 192.31ff.) ⲙⲛⲧⲁϥ-ⲥⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϣⲓ ⲛⲉⲓⲡϧⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ / (*IV* 45.24f.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲩⲥⲩⲛⲏⲑⲉⲓⲁ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ ϧⲓⲛⲧⲉⲩⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲛⲉⲓ- / (*A 1* 90) ⲧⲉϥⲃⲓⲛⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲛ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... ⲛⲉⲓⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (compare ⲧⲉⲩⲃⲓⲛⲉⲓ ϣⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ, *Wess. 9* 161c 11ff., where ϩⲓⲧⲛ- introduces a non-appositive " new " nominal actor). The appositive noun syntagm may be indefinite: (*A 2* 449, not Sh.) ϧⲩⲉⲓ ⲛⲉⲓⲟⲩⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ, but is usually ⲡ- (or equivalently) determinated.

6.0.1.2.2 Cases of *zero-marked rear extraposition* in special circumstances:

(a) An appositive noun introduced — *mediated* — by an appositive independent pronoun (all persons): (*III* 60.4f.) ϥϧⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡϧⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϧⲉ- (see §6.1.3.3).

[9] Here we come up against the difficulty of distinguishing (with the segmental data at our disposal) between pronominal apposition and the augens: §3.1.3.3.

[10] Cf. Steinthal–Misteli 1893:50, and see §5.3 above.

[11] The only monographic discussion of ⲛⲉⲓ- is by Morenz (1952), who looks to Shenoute for his source material. What Morenz has in mind, however, is the rhetorical or stylistic motivation for the selection of this construction, rather than its structural definition and function. Considerations like the alleged " inelegance " (" unschön ", pp. 4f., 7) of an inserted extensive nominal " subject " (i.e. actor) which has therefore to be deferred until after the completion of the conjugation form are rather dubious. Even if such considerations were true, this cannot constitute a descriptive statement, particularly since (on the one hand) ⲛⲉⲓ- can introduce the shortest appositive actor-expressions (consider ...ⲛⲉⲓ-ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ *RE 10* 163a 27, ...ⲛⲉⲓ-ⲛⲁⲓ *III* 160.22, ...ⲛⲉⲓ-ⲡϧⲟⲉⲓⲥ *III* 117.28), while, on the other hand, very long complex nominal phrases are found in mid-conjugation actor position (witness the constructions in §6.0.2.1, link 6). Nor is the " Betonung " (p. 5ff.) of the " subject " an independently determinable and controllable factor. It is rather the tendency of the language to separate (" isolate ") the lexical from the grammatical which underlies the widespread incidence of this construction (cf. Steinthal–Misteli 1893:50, 284, and see §5.3 above). Typologically speaking, one recalls the " *complément explicatif* " of Berber dialects (cf. Galand, *CFS* 21:33-53, 1964, esp. pp. 43ff.; *ead.*, " Relations du verbe et du nom dans l'énoncé berbère ", in: *LACITO-documents* [EURASIE, 2], Colloque: Relations Prédicat-Actant(s), I, Paris: SELAF, 1979, 131-146, esp. 132ff.) completing the purely grammatical information of the person index and localizing it in the " infinite " (so Galand, meaning " long out of all comparison ", but of course closed) list of the lexicon. Here, too, Celtic supplies a striking parallel (studies by O'Nolan, Pokorny, MacCana and others). I believe the " Hellenizing " interpretation of the Shenoutean phenomenon (Weiss 1972: n. 112) is as doubtful as the stylistic one.

(b) Nominal apposition to a *delocutive* (third person) pronoun in object status: (*BMCat.* 83, No. 199 TΣA) NAϢ NΣE NTϢTN TETNAP-BOA EPOC TOPΓH ETNHY / (*Ch.* 43.38ff.) NTEPEIMOϢTϤ NKECOΠ ΠEKHI MΠI-ϬN-ΛΛAY NEIΔϢΛON NΣHTϤ / (*III* 21.19) AYKϢT MMOϤ ΠΠYPΓOC ETMMAY / (*ibid.* 88.27) ϮNATPETNCOYϢNOY ϬE NEPϢOY / (*Ench.* 66b) KTAKO MMOC NTOϤ ΘIKϢN MΠNOYTE ΣNNBOTE NTAKAAY. In (*IV* 36.21f.) AϤTPEY-ϢϢΠE THPOY MΠHYE MNΠKAΣ, the apposition is to the actor exponent in the causative infinitive; cf. exx. in §6.0.1.2 (a).

(c) Nouns in " vocative " or addressing role, esp. in post-imperative position: (*P* 130² 7 Ϥ) MΠPϢϢΠE TCYNAΓϢΓH EPE-... / (*A 1* 464) H EKNAϪOOC ΠBABEPϢME...

(d) Nominal apposition to the " actor " (third-person pronoun) of a modifier predicate (Bipartite pattern): (*III* 15.21f.) NϤΣATNTHYTN AN ΠCATANAC. Here probably belongs the regular construction EϤTϢN + *noun* (*III* 31.13, 107.15, *Ch.* 200.43, 48f., 206.31ff., etc.) where (1) no real opposition obtains with a mid-conjugation nominal actor (a rare example of this is *A 1* 212: EPENENKEEC TϢN), which means that the pronominal " actor " is a mere " slot filler ", a cataphoric index with no nominal substitution; (2) EϤ-TϢN NϬI- does occur, as a rare variant (e.g. *A 2* 336, collated: ECTϢN TANOMIA... EYTϢN ΔE NCAPΣ... H EYTϢN NϬINETOYOYϢM ΣNTEYTAΠPO).

6.0.1.2.3 The N-*marked nom. modifier in apposition to a suffix pronoun* is of yet more restricted distribution [12].

(a) A cataphoric pronominal representation of a *nominal possessor* after one of a closed list of inalienable nouns as *possessum* (cf. §1.2.1.1 spec. obs.). This is again a case where no noun is substitutable for the pronoun, which is thus a formal obligatory slot-filler " heralding " the subsequent noun: '-Ϥ → N+*noun*' is structurally the possessor expression [13]: ϪϢϤ MΠKAΣ (*RE 10* 163a 17f.), PϢC NTANOMIA (*A 1* 298), but generally as components of prepositions: ΣAPATϤ N- (*III* 38.10), NAIKTϤ N- (*K* 9067, *P* 130⁵ 50 CKA), ETOOTOY N- (*III* 48.3), EΣOYN EΣPAY N- (*P* 130¹ 139 TMS), ΣHTϤ (a preposition in itself) N-, (*BLOr.* 3581A 159, No. 253 NS), ΣITOYϢϤ N- (*III* 52.16) etc.; the N-mark of dependence is thus complementary (allomorphic) to the immediate (markless) government of non-compound prepositions [14]. Some examples of this kind hint at a tendency to " fossilizing ", i.e. immutability of the pronominal exponent in the masc. sgl. [15]: ΣHTϤ NNEΣIOME ETEET (*Ench.* 66a).

(b) MΠECNAY " ... the two ", " both/either of... ", not in opposition to NϬI-; the nuclear plural (second, third persons) pronoun is in different roles (not however in actor status?): (*A 2* 403) ϮNAΠIΘE MMϢTN MΠECNAY / (*Miss.* 283) NNEΣOOY EPENEΣBHYE ϪI MMOOY EPOOY AN MΠECNAY... ΠCOΠ ETOYNAϪITOY EPOOY AN MΠECNAY / (*Or.* 160.27f.) ϤCΣOYOPT NϬIΠETNOYϢϢ MΠECNAY / (*A 2* 443-4, not Sh.) ΠΣϢB ΔE OYONΣ EBOA ΣITOOTOY MΠECNAY (sim. *ibid.* 436, 445); NB. (*III* 39.11f.) EICNE MΠECNAY AYOYϢNΣ EBOA TAXY, where MΠECNAY must be appositive to NE, itself with the same reference as the actor-suffix.

6.0.1.3 WORD ORDER; THE PLACEMENT OF THE NOMINAL ACTOR, A PARADIGMATIC EVALUATION. Turning our attention to placement rules for individual pattern components, we find they combine a conditioning by a great many factors in several parameters [16] and are by nature mutual and relative, i.e.

[12] LAYTON 1981:§6.2 (I would prefer " restricted " to " anomalous ").

[13] Cf. the Semitic " extended construct state " (cf. Rosén, *JAOS* 81:25. 1961).

[14] Some non-compound (unanalyzable) prepositions use this mediate manner of governing a noun: ΣAPOϤ MΠAI (*P* 130² 115 IZ), ΣAPOC NTΠE (*P* 131⁵ 20 PΠZ, *A 2* 360, *III* 96.21, *Ch.* 195.46 — " ΣATΠE " not attested? — also ΣAPOϤ MΠPH *P* 131⁵ 20 PΠZ, all after *Eccl.* 3:1, 1:3 etc.), EPOϤ N- (only in the sense of " to the debit of... ": *Ryl. Cat.* 34, No. 69 NS, *A 2* 59, *Ch.* 102.9f., *Rossi 2/3* 58 EPOϤ NNΣHKE, uncollated: -Ϥ immutable?), OYTϢϤ N- (*IF* 163 apud *Dictionary* 495a).

[15] See §5.2.2.3.2 above, with reff.

[16] See for instance §2.6.3-4.

influenced by other rules regarding the placement of other elements in a given extent. This calls for a multivariate analysis for which I doubt that Coptic grammatical research is yet ready. Generally speaking, one assumes word order is not " free "; it involves either taxemes, i.e. features of arrangement, or a distinctive feature of placement (for example, with the adjective: see Ch. 4). In either case, a change in order entails a corresponding change (often too subtle to be detected by the linguist or to be transposed into another language) on the *plan du contenu*. What we can supply, however, are (1) statements on the relative placement of isolated pattern constituents (modifiers, Chs. 1 and 4; the augens, particles, see below). (2) Statements on the relative placement of constituent *groups* (theme/topic and focus, Ch. 2). This is obviously not adequate by any standard, when the call is for a " general theory of Coptic word order ". It is nevertheless an indispensable stage in evolving such a theory: the individual placement-consideration of individual constituent categories. Word-order statements are the aftermath and culmination of the description process, not an early phase of it, nor an issue to be resolved on its own. In Coptic, where the mobility of most of the basic constituents of patterns is low or nil, this approach is even more requisite; here one can hardly concur with Dionysius of Halicarnassus' dictum[17] that " the order of words is more significant than their selection ".

Among unmistakable circumstances with greater or lesser bearing on the arrangement of constructions and placement of elements, we note (a) the typologically significant " *Grundrichtung* " or basic syntagmatic phrase sequence, *nucleus* → *satellite* (*determinatum* → *determinans*)[18], (b) the sequence in the predication and focalization patterns, (c) a cotext-oriented *thematic* sequence[19], (d) the prosodic contour(s) of the utterance, correlated with (c) and mapped on (a) and (b), and (e) motivation of a rhetorical, stylistic, rhythmic-euphonic order[20], mapped whenever required and possible onto (a), (b), (c) and (d). This is a notoriously slippery ground, where the dangers of circular statement are plain to see, since we do not have any working knowledge of these factors; they constitute mere post-analysis judgements of interpretation, not pre-analysis principles. All (a) to (e) factors concur to give the actual arrangement and placements; we cannot hope to resolve these into its several sets of conditioning, except in a very imperfect, approximative and always speculative manner.

As regards the placement of the nominal actor (" grammatical " and, unless there is some signa to the contrary, " logical " subject, i.e. theme/topic, §2.0.2.0.1) of a verbal predication, we note the following ternary (double-binary) paradigm and opposition (the Tripartite is chosen as representative):

(a) " ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ "

\- - - - - - - - - - - - - -

(b) " ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ "

(c) " ⲁⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲓ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ "

In one analysis, the less common member (a), far from being *synchronically* the unmarked " neutral " term (which is historically the case), is revealed as being marked by the synthesis of lexical and grammatical components. Members (b) and (c) are opposed to (a) as " isolating " (see n. 11) and analytic, and mutually opposed in their thematic structure. I would say that (c), strictly speaking a case of " delayed theme " and secondary information point[21], is here unmarked, while (b) is the marked member, in which

[17] *Apud* Weil 1879:2.

[18] Cf. Steinthal–Misteli 1893:275ff. Although this issue has never been properly treated, it constitutes an essential part of the scholar's *Sprachgefühl* (cf. P. de Lagarde's " unkoptische Stellung ", " kein Kopte stellt so ", in *Aus dem deutschen Gelehrtenleben*, Göttingen 1881, pp. 44, 50, 59).

[19] Weil 1879:11ff., 76ff., 83ff.; Mathesius 1941, and subsequently often in Prague School treatments of this question (see §2.0.2.0.1 ff.).

[20] Note the case of a chiastic placement of nominal actors, (b)-(c) below, also the chiastic arrangement of topic and focus, §2.6.3.1.2: (*Z* 306 cnz) ⲥⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲡⲁⲩⲗⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-... ⲛⲧⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲉ-...

[21] Halliday 1967:239ff.

the thematicity of the actor is specially signalled by segmentation, the thematic structure of the clause being thus made transparent: ⲟⲩⲡⲛ̄ⲁ̄ ⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲛ ⲁϥⲣ-ⲟⲩⲇⲣⲁⲕⲱⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲍⲟϥ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲥⲓⲧ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲟⲩⲱⲛϣ ⲁϥⲣ-ⲟⲩⲃⲁϣⲟⲣ (*RE 10* 160a 27ff.). In another view, it is (a) which is unmarked *vis à vis* (b) and (c), in which the thematic structure is overt.

6.0.2 Juncture (cohesion) features. Boundaries. The coptic word. Any two segments and elements of an utterance join each other in a way that is gradable on a scale exposing the gradient or parameter of cohesion. As criteria for the hierarchic assignment of inter-segment cohesion, we isolate juncture (cohesion) features: links [22] and their negation, delimitations [23], the former amounting to measure points of *closeness*, the latter of openness or non-closeness, of " looseness ". By links and delimitations, phonological or ultra-phonemic, we can characterize any given syntagmatic constellation: the more links there are, the closer the attachment — the more delimitations, the more open. Links are symptoms of the *extent of validity*, while delimitations give us *juncture boundaries* [24]. I do not offer here a systematic scale-related gradation of juncture. This must be done as part of a special study, preferably based on examination of homogenous MSS. I simply give selective lists of the more striking cohesive patterns: links and delimitations. Note that these are no more than *relative indexes*, exponents of the parameter or level of juncture (even the apparently absolute junctural dichotomies, *initial*:*final*, *close*:*open*, are deceptively so, and in fact equally relative [25]).

6.0.2.1 Links: (*morphophonemic* [26], *morphemic*) (∅) " A short vowel is maintained in an open syllable ", valid only in the extent of the lexemic unanalyzable " word ": ⲥⲟⲧⲡ, ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-, ϣⲟⲣⲡ, ⲟⲣϧ, ϥⲟⲧ-ⲛ, ⲕⲟⲧ-ϥ.

(1) " A labializable [27] nasal constituting part or the whole of a prefixed morph is assimilated to an immediately following primary (i.e. unconditioned) non-syllabic [28] labial ", validity extent: the segment '*prefix* + *noun syntagm* '; progressive dependence (allophonic allomorph): ⲅⲙ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ (*A 2* 117), ⲉⲣⲙ-ⲡϧⲟⲉⲓⲥ (*A 2* 165), ϣⲁⲛⲧϥⲙ-ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ (*IV* 101.16, *Ryl. Cat.* 34f. No. 70 ⲥⲙⲇ) [29], ⲧⲉⲧⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲑⲏⲧ (*Wess. 9* 141a 17), ⲡⲥⲁ ⲃⲃⲟⲗ (*III* 196.28f.), ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ (*III* 203.13) [30], ⲁϧⲙⲡⲍⲗⲗⲟ (*IV* 113.5), ⲛⲧⲙⲡϧⲟⲉⲓⲥ (*IV* 33.22).

(2) " A ' suffix-paradigm ' pronoun is selected as actor expression by an immediately preceding converter morpheme ", validity extent: the converted conjugation form; regressive dependence (allomorph): ⲉⲓⲥⲱⲧⲙ (ⲁⲛ) (closer than ⲉⲛ†ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ [31], delimitation 2).

[22] I adopt here Rosén's terminology of 1964, but extend the notion of juncture to be coterminous with " cohesion ". Rosén 1964:160: " A dependence that exists between two parts of the same order if they occur in a segment not exceeding their arrangement, but which does not exist if they occur in separate utterances ".

[23] Rosén 1964:163: " A dependence that exists between two parts of the same order if they occur in two different utterances, but which does not exist if they occur in a segment not exceeding their arrangement ".

[24] Rosén 1964:§45.

[25] The only special study of this subject is Erman 1915, a contrastive Sahidic:Bohairic listing of environments (see Shisha-Halevy 1981:317f.).

[26] Not (to the best of my knowledge) attested in Shenoute is the Coptic case of Trubetzkoy's " *corrélation prosodique de gémination* ", like ⲟⲩⲙⲉⲉ ⲡⲉ (*Deut.* 13:14, see Polotsky 1957c:348f. = *CP* 390f.).

[27] Not, for instance, the ⲛ in ⲙⲛ-, ⲍⲉⲛ-, ϧⲓⲛ-. Another link:delimitation opposition is signalled by the syllabic:non-syllabic status of the plural definite article before the initial (stressed:unstressed) vowel of a noun lexeme, regularly at least for native lexemes. Cf. Polotsky, *OLZ* 59:253 n. 1, 1964 (note omitted by mistake in *CP*).

[28] Not in ⲛⲙⲥⲁⲍ (*Wess. 9* 139a 27).

[29] Not in *Chassinat* (ⲛ-ⲡⲟⲥⲉ, *Ch.* 56.50f.). Cf. for this phenomenon Kahle 1954:98ff.

[30] But ⲉⲛⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ (*III* 202.5f.), ⲛⲛⲃⲁⲁⲙⲡⲉ (*ibid.* 219.12).

[31] Polotsky 1960a:§28 (obs.).

(3) " A prenominal converter allomorph is selected by an immediately following nominal actor expression ", validity extent: the converted conjugation form; progressive dependence (allomorph): ⲉⲣⲉ/ⲛⲉⲣⲉ/ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ (ⲁⲛ) (closer than ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ [32], delimitation 3).

Syntactic: (4) ' Determinator {*noun-lexeme* + ϩⲓ- *noun-lexeme*} ' juncture between the noun lexemes closer than in '*determinator* + *noun lexeme* + ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲙⲛ- *determinator* + *noun lexeme*' (delimitation 4); progressive bracketing: ϩⲉⲛⲧⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲉ ϩⲓⲅⲱⲛⲧ ϩⲓⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ (sic) (*A 2* 435, not Sh.) / ⲡⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ϩⲓⲁⲩⲡⲏ ϩⲓⲁⲯⲁϩⲟⲙ ϩⲓⲛⲟⲅⲛⲉⲅ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲱⲁⲥ ⲛϩⲏⲧ (*A 1* 77).

(5) (a) # *converter* + *conjugation base* [33]/*converter* + *actor* {*verb lexeme* + *verb lexeme* + *verb lexeme* [34]...} #; (b) # *converter* {(*conj. base* + *verb lexeme*) + (*conj. base* + *verb lexeme*) + (*conj. base* + *verb lexeme*)} # (perfect tense only); (c) # {(*conjugation base/converter* + *actor*) + (*conj. base/converter* + *actor*)...} *verb lexeme* #. Cases of progressive (a-b) or regressive bracketing [35], closer than the juncture of repeated (coordinated, disjoined) (*base/converter* + *verb lexeme*) unit (delimitation 5).

Examples: (a) ⲁⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲟⲙⲕⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥⲟⲟⲩ (*IF* 268, apud *Dictionary* 318a-b) / ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲥⲃⲧⲉ-ϩⲉⲛ-ⲥⲟⲧⲃⲉϥ ⲛⲁⲩ (*A 2* 341) / ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲭⲛⲟⲩⲕ ⲏ ⲭⲛⲟⲩⲧⲛ (*ibid.* 528) / ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲉⲕ-ⲧⲉϥϩⲟⲓⲧⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ... ⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲥ... (*IV* 95.10f.) / ⲙⲡϥⲥⲱⲙⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ϥⲱⲧⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*Wess. 9* 87a 31ff.) / ⲛⲧⲱⲯ... ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲁⲁⲩ (*Ench.* 72b) / ⲉⲣⲉ ⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲕⲧⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ (circ., *A 2* 24) / ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉϥⲛⲉϩ ⲧⲟϩⲥ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲱⲟⲩ (*ibid.* 529) / ...ⲡⲉⲧⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲭⲁϩⲙⲉϥ, v. l. ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲭⲱϩⲙ ⲙⲙⲟϥ (*A 1* 327; note the non-susceptibility of the second infinitive to the Stern-Jernstedt Rule, §3.1.2).

(b) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲓ-ⲥⲟⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲁⲩⲯⲟⲟⲅⲟⲩ (*III* 69.14f., *v.l.* ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲯⲟⲟⲅⲟⲩ) / ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁϥⲭⲓ-ⲥⲃⲱ (*ibid.* 173.18f.) / ...ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲩϩⲉⲗⲡⲓϩⲉ ⲉⲡⲉϥⲭ̄ⲥ̄ (rel., *RE 11* 17a 12f.) / ⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲥⲁⲃⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁϥⲣ-ϩⲏⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ ϩⲓⲧⲙ- (Sec. Perf., *III* 28.25f.) / ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲅⲱⲗⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲓⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ ⲧⲁⲓ (Sec. Perf., *ibid.* 219.3f.).

(c) base + *zero-determinated* actor (ⲙⲡⲉ- repeated 26 times, *A 2* 383; 7 times, *A 1* 80; 9 times, *Ch.* 26-7; ⲙⲉⲣⲉ- 5 times, *A 2* 25); ⲉⲛϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲁⲯⲅⲙ-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲉⲡⲟⲣⲭⲛ... (*A 2* 381) / ⲟⲩⲛ-ⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ... ⲟⲩⲛⲣⲉϥⲭⲓⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ, ⲟⲩⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ, ⲟⲩⲛⲡⲟⲣⲛⲟⲥ, ⲟⲩⲛⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ... (*Ch.* 57.40ff.).

(6) # (*conjugation base/converter*) + (interposition) + (*pred. verb-lexeme*) #, closer than # (*conj. base/converter* + *nom. actor*) + (interposition) + (*conj. base* + *anaphoric pronoun* + *pred. verb-lexeme*) # (delimitation 6) [36]. Examples: ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲭ̄ⲥ̄ ⲡⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲓⲥⲧⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ, ⲉⲓⲧⲉ... ⲉⲓⲧⲉ... ⲉⲓⲧⲉ

[32] Polotsky 1960a:§28.

[33] -ⲧⲣⲉ(ϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ) behaves in this respect like a conjugation base (it is a *conjugation carrier*): ⲁⲛⲧⲓⲧⲣⲉⲩⲱⲣⲭ ⲏ ⲧⲱⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (*A 2* 505), ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓ... ⲁⲩⲱ ϥⲟⲧⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*ibid.* 529), ⲭⲉ-ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲣⲉⲛⲓⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲛ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ (*III* 107-8), also *A 1* 173, *A 2* 81 So does (*base* + *mediator* [lexeme premodifier §3.3]): ⲁⲩⲯⲣⲡ-ⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲙⲉ (*A 2* 97), ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲯⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ... ⲏ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲣⲱⲙⲉ (*IV* 61.7f.). Likewise the future characteristic ⲛⲁ: ⲉⲛⲁⲑⲁⲓⲃⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲁⲧⲅⲟⲙ ⲏ ⲅⲟⲧⲡⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (*A 2* 505-6), ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ... ⲏ ⲕⲟⲙⲯⲟⲩ, ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲅⲁⲉⲓⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥⲟⲯⲟⲩ (*P* 130[2] 9 ⲥⲁⲏ), and ⲙⲛ-/ⲟⲩⲛ-: ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲏ ⲧⲁϩⲉ (*IV* 180.3). Consider also the rare bracketing # *base* [(*actor* + *v. lexeme*) + (*actor* + *v. lexeme*)] # ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ⲥⲉⲯϥ-ϩⲛⲟ ⲏ ⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ⲟⲩⲁⲯϥ ⲁⲛ (*IV* 85.6f.), and the variation ⲯⲁⲩⲑⲙⲕⲟϥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲭⲉ-ⲛⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ (*A 1* 241).

[34] ⲉ + infinitive, ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- occur as bracketed verbal predicates: *IV* 94.27f., 61.7f., 20f. (see Ch. 7 n. 63).

[35] Pattern (b) with the relative converter corresponds to Jespersen's " exhausted relative ". See Wiesmann 1927:67f., Till §483, Shisha-Halevy 1976a:51; for Egyptian, cf. De Buck, *JEA* 23:162 (1937). See §2.8.4 for the analogous pattern with the Second-Tense converter.

[36] Cf. Steinthal-Misteli 1893:50; Till 1928:§202e; Nagel 1969:465ff.; Browne 1976:231; Quecke 1977:77f. The construction is especially common, on the one hand, in Gnostic texts, on the other in late Sahidic ones. Note that a juncture contour *noun syntagm.....noun syntagm* usually characterizes the " Trimembral " # *subject* + *copula* + *predicate* # Nominal Sentence pattern (also the *Wechselsatz* # N_1 ⲡⲉ N_2 #), in contrast to the # *predicate* + *pron. subject* + *nominal* (*lexical*) *subject* # one: ⲡⲩⲱϥ ⲛⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ... (*A 2* 76) / ⲁⲣⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲛⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ (*ibid.* 364) / ⲡⲁⲛⲉⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ + ⲛⲧⲥⲛϥⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲭⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (*III* 90.5f.). Note the punctuation in: ϩⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲥⲱⲯ ⲧⲟ ϩⲓⲱⲟⲩ' ⲛⲉ ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ... (*Or.* 153.27ff.)

ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲁⲩϫⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲱⲣⲉⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲕⲟⲧⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 150.42ff.) / ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲓⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲁⲛⲍⲟⲩⲧⲟⲩ ⲟ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ (*IV* 84.15ff., circ.) / ⲛⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲧ+ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲍⲁⲣⲡⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲍⲁⲛⲟⲩⲃ ⲡⲱⲍ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ (*III* 35.2ff.) / ⲙⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲕⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲑⲟⲥⲙ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲱⲧ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲍⲉⲛ-ⲃⲁⲯⲟⲣ ⲉⲩⲡⲏⲧ ⲍⲁⲡⲍⲟ ⲛⲙⲙⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲁϫⲟⲟⲩ... (*ibid.* 87.22ff.). Also *III* 128.19f., 221.24ff., *IV* 46.8f., 108.2f., 163.7f., 56.11f., 17.9ff., *A 1* 150-1, etc.

(7) ' ϫⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ ⲉⲭⲉ-/(ⲉ)ⲛⲛⲉⲭ- ', closer than ' ϫⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ + (interposition) + *conjunctive* (delimitation 7; see §7.2.6.1 [c]).

(8) ' (*pro*)*noun* [→ (resumption)] ' (in various constructions), closer than ' (*pronoun* [→ (no resumption)] ' (delimitation 8). Examples: ⲟⲩⲯⲁϫⲉ... ⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲭ ⲉϫⲟⲟⲩ (*A 2* 462) / ⲍⲁⲍ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲍⲱⲃ ⲁⲓϫⲟⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 50.20ff.) / ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲙⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ (*III* 130. 7f.) / ⲁⲯ ⲙⲯⲩⲭⲏ... ⲛⲉⲧⲭⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲅⲓⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ (*ibid.* 211.8f.) / ⲉⲛⲙⲏⲏⲯⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲕϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ⲥⲉϫⲓ-ⲍⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲭ (*Ch.* 41.12ff.) / ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉⲧⲟⲩϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲕ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲡⲁⲑⲟⲥ (*ibid.* 21.18ff.) / ⲛⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲥⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ... ⲡⲱⲍ ⲉⲙⲁⲩ (*ibid.* 129.23ff.). There is no doubt a need to refine further the gradation of cohesion (e.g. by kind and " strength " of anaphoric exponents; consider [*Ench.* 74-5] ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ϫⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ) and relate it to anaphoric concord, which similarly displays allomorphic " assimilation " conditioning: the derelevantization in a given environment of a morphological opposition that is elsewhere pertinent.

Additional links discussed elsewhere (see n. 26): the compatibility and ordering of enclitics (see §6.0. 3.2); negative syncategorization and personal maintenance between the nucleus and the conjunctive (adnexal modifier), see §7.1.2.2.

6.0.2.2 Delimitations. (Ø) Devalidization of link (Ø); ensuing boundary: *lexeme stem* (ⲧⲁⲙⲱ-ⲧⲛ)

(1) Labializable morpheme or morpheme-part not labialized before a secondary (conditioned) labial (cf. link 1); ensuing boundary: *prefix*] [*assimilated prefix*. ⲍⲛⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (*Wess. 9* 91a 27f.), ⲛⲙⲙⲟⲩⲓ (*A 2* 383), ⲛⲙⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ (*III* 132.15).

(2) Negation of link (2). Ensuing boundary: *converter*] [ⲛ-ⲁⲛ *negatived Bipartite* (pronominal actor).

(3) Negation of link (3). Ensuing boundary: *converter*] [ⲛ-ⲁⲛ *negatived Bipartite* (nominal actor) [37].

(4) Opposition to link (4). Ensuing boundary: *determinator*] [*several coordinated noun lexemes.*

(5) Opposition to link (5). Ensuing boundary: (*several*) *base/converters*] [(*several*) *predicative verb-lexemes.*

(6) Opposition to link (6). Ensuing boundary: *base/converter* + *nominal actor*] [*pred. verb lexeme*; examples: ⲁ-... ⲁⲩ- (*IV* 205.15ff.), ⲛⲧⲁ-... ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩ- (Sec. Perf., *III* 90.8f.), ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛ-... ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛ- (*Ch.* 41.11ff., parall. *III* 80.15f.), ⲉⲣⲉ-... ⲉⲩ- (Sec. Pres., *III* 209.13ff.), ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉ- ... ⲉⲛⲉⲩ- (*RE 10* 164b 12ff.) [38]. The extended intervening segment in this case is symptomatic of the open(er) juncture. A similarly telltale phenomenon is the intercalability of the parenthetic — ⲡⲉϫⲁⲩ — " said he " [39]: *antecedent*] [*rel. form* (*A 1* 228, *A 2*

ⲉⲯϫⲉ-ⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲩ-ⲓⲥ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ϫⲉ... · ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲁϫⲱⲁϫ... (*Ch.* 185.8ff.; also *A 1* 131, 234, *III* 223.10f.). One could formulate the distinction also by postulating two {ⲡⲉ} morphemes, differing in prosodic properties (see §1.1.2.3, spec. obs.). — Note the punctuation in (*Besa* 48.7f.) ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲍⲉ· ⲧⲉ ⲧⲛⲍⲉ, ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ· ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ, vs. lack of punctuation in other types of Nom. Sentence (42.23, 48.17, 42.17, 51.13).

[37] One may include here the second person feminine singular: ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ({*ere-Ø-sôtm an*}) *vs.* ⲉⲛⲧⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ, perhaps also more open than ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ. Cf. Rosén 1964:182: " Two segments apparently adjacent, but separated by a zero segment, join in a different degree of juncture than either of them would join with a medium segment that was not zero ".

[38] See Young 1969:400. Note other cases of morpheme resumption: ⲛ- ... ⲛⲩⲛⲁ- ⲁⲛ (*IV* 11.15f.), ⲙⲏ ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛ-... ⲙⲏ ⲣⲱ + apodosis (*A 2* 26), ⲉⲯϫⲉ- ... ⲉⲯϫⲉ- (*IV* 28.16ff.).

[39] Cf. Kiecker's well-known discussion of the " *Schaltesatz* " in various languages, *Glotta* 11:179-183 (1921); also *IF* 30: 145-185 (1912), *IF* 32:7-23 (1913). For the " vocative " as a parenthetic prosodic indicator, consider (*P* 130[2] 6 ⲡⲏ) ⲍⲱ ϭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲩⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲯⲟϫⲡ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ; cf. — ⲛⲧⲟⲕ in §6.1.3, and E. Fraenkel 1965, Hintze 1950:135ff. (on parenthesis generally).

192), *extraposed noun*] [*main pattern* (ⲡⲣⲣⲟ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ϥⲛⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟ *A 2* 335, *RE 10* 159a 10f.; NB. ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲡ *III* 17.20f. / ⲡⲉⲧⲡⲛⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲁϥⲕⲁⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ *P* 130⁴ 102 vo), *conj. carrier*] [*verbal lexeme* (ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲧⲁⲯⲩⲭⲏ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ *III* 199.5f.), *Second-Tense theme*] [*focal modifier* (*Wess. 9* 174d 29ff. / ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ *A 2* 431), *nominal predicate* (+ augens)] [*pronominal subject* (ϩⲉⲛⲯⲁϥⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ — ⲡⲉϫⲁⲩ — ⲛⲉ *III* 118.15f.), *cataphoric referent*] [*referate* (ⲛⲁⲯ ⲛϩⲉ ⲕϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ϫⲉ- *A 2* 430, also *ibid.* 432-3 [all not Sh.], 453), *verbal nucleus*] [*expansion* (*III* 99.8f., *Wess. 9* 140a 15ff. / ϩⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲉⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲟⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ *P* 131⁶ 20 ⲕⲇ; between two co-ordinated clauses, — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ· ⲁⲩⲱ — *Wess. 9* 161d 10ff.), and, surprisingly, *rel. converter* (prenominal!)] [*conv. Nominal Sentence* (ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉ — ⲡⲉϫⲁϥ — ⲟⲩⲡⲉⲧⲯⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ ⲡⲉ... *A 2* 435 [not Sh.], collated). Yet another symptom, still in need of being refined, is the prosodic slot open for enclitics (§6.0.3, and note the position of enclitics in the exx. quoted above).

(7) Opposition to link (7). Ensuing boundary: ϫⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ] [" *eventual* "-*apodotic conjunctive.*

(8) Absence of resumption [40] of a (pro)noun (stylistically, anacoluthic construction [41]): (*IV* 108.17f.) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲛⲁϩⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲁϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲛⲛⲁⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ / (*III* 24.10f.) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲅⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁⲯⲟⲡϥ... ⲡⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲯϫⲟⲟϥ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*Ch.* 85.1ff.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲕϥⲓ-ⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ϩⲁⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ / (*IV* 26.13) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁ-ⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϯ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲁⲃⲣⲁϩⲁⲙ / (*III* 21.13f.) ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲯⲁⲓⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ / (*IV* 80.1f.) ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲉϯⲛⲁⲧⲱⲯ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ / (*IV* 34.9f.) ⲧⲁⲣⲭⲏ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲱⲛⲧ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*III* 68.2f.) ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲯⲱⲗ / (*P* 131⁷ 45 ro) ⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲉⲯⲁⲩⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲡⲛⲉϩ / (*III* 138.26ff.) ⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ϯⲛⲁⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲛⲧⲁϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲛⲏⲩ... ϫⲉ-...

Additional delimitations, treated elsewhere [42]: *topicalized quotation*] [*focus* (§2.7.2.4, (b) topic: ' Basic Tense + interrogative modifier ', more open than ' Second Tense + interr. modifier '.

6.0.2.3 The question of the definition and delimitation of the WORD, far from being banal or trivial is as perplexing in Coptic as it is in other languages or in general linguistics. The futility of the attempt to apply universally any of the criteria currently suggested was admitted as early as 1949 (at the Sixth International Congress of Linguists, Oslo) [43]. Different " words " — semantic, lexical, prosodic, syntactic, morphologic, paradigmatic — are not coextensive; such properties as autonomy, separability, bondage, semasiological or prosodic weight are gradient and relative. The definition, tacitly accepted unanimously — " minimal free form " (originally Bloomfield's) — cannot be uncritically accepted, since " minimal ", " free ", even " form " all beg the question, being values that are questionable, relative or in need of definition (" minimalness ", also in Martinet's " *signe minimum* ", is as illusory as contextual independence; " freedom " and prosodic weight vary with the pattern; " form " is just an empty terminological head-word). Often, a vague conception of the word is carried over from languages for which it has in some way been crystallized and as it were legitimized and perpetuated in word-dividing print, to serve as a model for unwritten languages and generally exotic ones. This is, however, hardly relevant

[40] To be distinguished from *zero* resumption, §3.1.1.1.0.1.

[41] One might aim at a general cohesional definition of anacoluthia, e.g. in cases like (*III* 104.23ff.) ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ... ⲉⲕⲛⲁ- ⲁⲛ (opener juncture than for ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲛⲛⲉⲕ), or (*Ch.* 88.22ff.) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲟⲩⲁ ⲇⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ϫⲉ-ϯⲙⲉ ⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲙⲡⲉϥϩⲏⲧ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲙⲛⲧⲉϥⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ... where the 3rd-person pronoun is an exponent of cohesion that would be absent in the 1st person; in the case of (*A 1* 137) ⲉⲛⲉⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲏ ⲧⲉⲛⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲧϩⲁⲧⲏⲛ ... ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁⲯⲛ-ϩⲧⲏⲛ ⲁⲛ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ, the protasis - apodosis juncture is looser than in the " orthodox " ⲉⲛⲉ-, ⲛⲉ- ⲛⲁ (ⲡⲉ) *irrealis* complex.

[42] Juncture would distinguish the two seams — and eventually the two morphs — in ⲉⲛⲉ + *conjugation form*; interrogative ⲉⲛⲉ is followed by more open juncture: ⲉⲛⲉ ⲁⲣⲁ ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲓⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ (*P* 130⁵ 66 or), not affecting the actor pronoun by " converting " it from the prefix to the suffix paradigm: (ϫ)ⲉⲛⲉϯ- (*Ch.* 95.33f.); consider also ⲉⲛⲉⲁϥ- (*IV* 184.2, *vs.* ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥ- for the converter), ⲉⲛⲉ + Sec. Tense (*BMCat.* p. 79 No. 194 f. 4).

[43] See MATTHEWS 1974:Chs. 2, 5, 9; BARRI 1977, for some discussions and further reff. to the extensive literature on this subject (and the related issue of morphology/syntax stratification).

to Coptic, where *scriptio continua* is the rule, and no length of intimate contact with Greek could change this; indeed, other than the isolated instances of syllable-division marking, this is almost the only consistent piece of evidence we have reflecting native grammatical theory. As a matter of fact, word-division in Coptic texts has ever been a pseudo-issue, purely the preoccupation of Western scholarship, rather than a meaningful issue of grammar [44]. In Coptic, we have SYNTAGMS — patterns of ordered categories, with distinctively varying juncture contours:

ⲁ = ϥ = ⲥⲱⲧⲙ	*vs.*	ⲁ = ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ◡ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ
ⲁⲛⲅ = ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ	*vs.*	ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ◡ ⲡⲉ
ⲙ̄ⲥⲉⲧⲡ = ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ	*vs.*	ⲥⲱⲧⲡ ◡ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ
ϥ = ⲥⲱⲧⲙ	*vs.*	ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ◡ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ

Unless we use " word " as synonymous with these patterns, I cannot see that the term is called for by the system. Of the precise role of manuscript *punctuation* we are still ignorant. Both its purpose (rhetorical, dictional?) and system(s), probably idiotextual or idiosyncratic with every scribe, must be decided for every text separately [45], in conjunction with its grammatical norm. Punctuation marks, far from being " *sinnlos gesetzt* ", " *nicht eben wichtig oder nothwendig, sondern der Übersichtlichkeit eher hinderlich* " [46], where not reading instructions, may be optional signals of junctural boundaries of different levels. ⲛⲉⲕ-ⲛⲁⲣⲟⲩ̂ ⲡⲉ (*Ch.* 13.42f.) is opposed to ⲙ̄ⲡ'ⲁⲧⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (*ibid.* 17.15) and ⲙ̄ⲡ'ⲡⲟⲗⲉⲙⲟⲥ (*ibid.* 21.28); the comma *before* ⲡⲉ (*ibid.* 25.23, 59.13) indicates prosodic characteristics of a distinct Nominal Sentence pattern; commas mark the opening and closing of a parenthesis (*Or.* 161.40f.), and so on. (Attention is drawn *passim* to punctuation in connection with syntactical issues.)

6.0.3 SUB-SENTENCE PROSODIC UNITS: THE COLON; ENCLISIS, HIERARCHIES AND PLACEMENTS. Beyond information on the parameter of cohesion inside patterns, the placement of certain kinds of element supplies us with data on the boundaries of prosodic units which make up, as constituent elements, the prosodic structure of the whole: the COLA. These are more easily isolated than defined in a dead language where we are in the dark regarding phonetic realities, and can see only their traces. We must content ourselves with those that are objective, non-circular and striking enough even to " syntaktisch unbewaffnete

[44] Cf. STEINTHAL–MISTELI 1893:290 (on " looseness " and independence of elements). There is to date no theoretical discussion of the Coptic word; various proposals for word-division systems have been a poor substitute (we do not even have a passable working definition of the " word " in Coptic). Initially devised with a practical view to facilitating the analysis of the text, these systems have acquired through time and use a kind of theoretical authority and significance, although none are based on a preliminary set of theoretical principles. Often, technical and grammatical considerations are inextricably mixed. To mention the main systems proposed or in use: STERN 1886 is the most reflective of all, and combines junctural-prosodic, semasiological and functional considerations, none quite consistent with the others: ⲭⲉ is separated (cf. ὅτι), so are ⲟⲩⲛ, ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲉⲛ ⲫⲧ, ⲉⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ (*vs.* ⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ). MISTELI's (1893) has maximal separation, employing the hyphen to mark some (not all) special cases of close juncture: ⲉⲙⲡⲉ-ⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉ ⲟⲩ ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉ ⲁ ⲡ-ⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲕⲁⲁ-ϥ ⲛⲥⲱ-ϥ/ⲥ-ⲛⲉⲙⲏ-ⲓ/ⲙⲡⲉ ⲍⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ. TILL 1941 offers two arbitrary contrasting lists — his aim is clearly diacritic and practical. " Lexical " units are separated, " grammatical " ones are not: ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ *vs.* ⲙⲉⲣⲉ (love) ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ; ⲛⲟⲩⲭⲱⲱⲙⲉ *vs.* ⲛ (bring) ⲟⲩⲭⲱⲱⲙⲉ; ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ — *vs.* ⲛⲧⲉ (of) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ; ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ- (conj.) *vs.* ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ ⲛⲁⲩⲃⲏⲣ. So too in TILL 1960: here the professed motivation is to " enhance the perspicuity of the text "; whatever combination is juncturally close *may* be written as a single stretch, but is divided to eliminate ambiguities: ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲡⲱⲛⲍ, ⲧ (inf.) ⲍⲓⲥⲉ, ⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ, ⲁϥⲣ ⲍⲁⲍ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ, ⲙⲛ (" with ") ⲧⲉϥⲙⲁⲁⲩ, ⲁϥⲩ (" can ") ⲱⲡ. KASSER 1965 introduces — together with separation of words — the apostrophe, thus applying a native Coptic division mark, albeit without precise statement of its role in MSS. It is used in close and open junctures alike: ⲡⲁ' ⲉⲧ' ⲛⲁ' ⲡⲉϥ'; ⲡⲁⲓ' ⲡⲉ' ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲧⲁ' ⲡⲉⲛ'ⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲉⲧ'ⲟⲩⲁⲃ ⲙ'ⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲁⲡⲁ ⲩⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲭⲟⲟϥ. ⲛⲓⲙ' ⲡⲉⲧ'ⲛⲁ'ⲍⲱⲡ ⲛ'ⲛⲉⲧ'ⲣ'ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... See also Amélineau, *Schenoudi*, I, p. xxxviii and *Sphinx* 17:177-207 (1913), 18:1-30 (1914-5).

[45] In Shenoute, cf. SHISHA–HALEVY 1972:§4.6.1 (for Chassinat), 1975:482-4 (for *BLOr.* 8664).

[46] STERN §§4, 635; cf. PEYRON §9, SCHWARZE–STEINHAL I §§46-50; POLOTSKY 1959:457 (= *CP* 236). For the junctural significance of the Boh. Djinkim, cf. POLOTSKY 1949.

Augen "[47], and we must bear in mind that they are probably phantom-images of a colon, definable as " an expiratory complex with a main stress unit "[48]. One cannot say what the significance of our written cola is, in terms of " real " prosody (intonation, stress, pauses), just as no syntaxization can be really valid without suprasegmental data; yet these textual hints must be exploited for what they are worth.

6.0.3.1 Foremost among the syntactic phenomena indicative of colon boundaries is the placement of the so-called " enclitics " — the amorphous class of words which are found to occupy the *second position* in the sentence[49]. Yet this is thin ground, and we must walk with care, for it is after all by means of these self-same enclitics that the first (initial) position is defined. The circularity of the definition and the inadequacy of the conception of " sentence " as a prosodic unit become apparent once we extend our attention to *native* Coptic particles. On the basis of examples (a selection of which is given in §6.0.3.1.1) we arrive at the following statements: (a) enclitics are *indexes* of some prosodic articulation, following the distinction of an immobile Greek-origin core (ⲘⲈⲚ, ⲇⲈ, ⲅⲀⲢ) and a mobile native-origin periphery (ⲋⲈ, ⲢⲰ, ⲞⲚ, ⲚⲦⲞⲤ, ⲤⲰⲰⲤ, certain augentia). (b) Enclitics ride (not unlike corks on water) the (to us otherwise imperceptible) prosodic scheme. They are " floated " by the suprasegmental contour, and their actual placement is a co-product of their segmental relationships and this contour[50]; this placement is neither secondary nor shifted. (c) Enclitics are placed as (1) COLON-SECOND, (2) COLON-FINAL (as *colon-boundary signals*[51]; in a different view, this amounts to *intercolary* placement, the enclitics being disjunctors, signalling something like a musical " rest "). (d) The following syntactical units (as isolated by enclitics) occur as separate cola: conjugation forms (+ expansion); Nominal Sentence patterns; noun syntagms, extraposed noun syntagms, expanded noun syntagms; modifiers, incl. coordinatives or disjunctives: ⲀⲨⲰ, Ⲏ, ⲞⲨⲦⲈ, ⲀⲖⲖⲀ; in focalization patterns, the theme, focus or both together may constitute a colon.

6.0.3.1.1 A representative selection of examples — colon boundaries for which I believe there is segmental signalling — are indicated (see also §6.0.2.2 (6), for — ⲠⲈⲬⲀⲤ — as intercolary boundary marker): ⲀⲚⲞⲚ ⲇⲈ ⲤⲰⲰⲚ | ⲞⲨ ⲠⲈⲦⲚⲚⲀⲬⲞⲞⲤ (*III* 29.10) / ⲘⲀⲢⲈⲠⲞⲨⲀ ⲅⲀⲢ | ⲠⲞⲨⲀ ⲘⲞⲰⲦⲤ (*ibid.* 110.6f.) / ⲤⲞⲦⲀⲚ ⲇⲈ | ⲠⲈⲚⲤⲞⲚ | ⲈⲢⲰⲀⲚ- (*ibid.* 101.11f.) / ⲚⲀⲒ ⲅⲀⲢ ⲦⲎⲢⲞⲨ | ⲈⲢⲰⲀⲚⲠⲚⲞⲨⲦⲈ Ⲣ-ⲤⲚⲀⲤ | ⲤⲈⲚⲀⲠⲀⲢⲀⲔⲈ (*ibid.* 31.6f.) / ⲤⲘⲠⲈⲒⲰⲀⲬⲈ ⲅⲀⲢ | ⲚⲦⲀⲠⲀⲒ ⲈⲦⲘⲘⲀⲨ ⲪⲈⲒ... (*IV* 164.9f.) / ⲀⲚⲞⲚ-ⲤⲈⲚⲢⲰⲘⲈ ⲅⲀⲢ | (*ibid.* 155.1f.) / ⲈⲚⲚⲀ†-ⲤⲎⲨ ⲅⲀⲢ | ⲚⲞⲨ (*ibid.* 184.7) / ⲀⲢⲬⲈⲖⲀⲞⲤ ⲇⲈ ⲞⲚ | ⲠⲈⲠⲒⲤⲔⲞⲠⲞⲤ ⲤⲰⲰⲪ ⲚⲔⲀⲢⲬⲀⲢⲒⲤ | ⲀⲪ- (*III* 109.4f.) / ⲤⲚⲞⲨⲰⲤⲚⲈ ⲇⲈ | ⲤⲰⲤ ⲈⲰⲬⲈ-ⲚⲦⲀⲨⲠⲰⲰⲤ ⲚⲤⲎⲦ | ⲚⲦⲀⲨⲠⲰⲰⲤ ⲅⲀⲢ | ⲠⲤⲞⲞⲨⲦ ⲘⲈⲚ | ⲚⲦⲀⲪ† ⲘⲠⲈⲪⲎⲒ ⲚⲞⲨⲰⲘⲘⲞ... (*ibid.* 96.24f.) / ⲚⲰⲈⲈⲢⲈ ⲇⲈ | ⲦⲞⲨⲈⲒ ⲘⲈⲚ | ⲀⲤ†-ⲠⲰⲤ ⲤⲰⲰⲤ ⲞⲚ | (*ibid.* 97.1f.) / ⲞⲨⲚⲤⲈⲚⲀⲪ ⲅⲀⲢ | ⲰⲞⲞⲠ | ⲤⲞⲠ ⲘⲈⲚ | ⲰⲀⲨ- | ⲤⲞⲠ ⲇⲈ ⲞⲚ | ⲰⲀⲨ- (*ibid.* 48.6ff.) / ⲈⲠⲒⲇⲎ | ⲀⲔⲬⲞⲞⲤ ⲇⲈ ⲞⲚ | ⲤⲚⲚⲈⲔⲰⲀⲬⲈ ⲚⲈⲠⲢⲀ (*ibid.* 81.12) / ⲈⲂⲞⲖ ⲅⲀⲢ ⲀⲚ | ⲬⲈ-ⲈⲬⲞ ⲈⲠⲀⲒ ⲚⲦⲞⲪ | ⲚⲄⲒ- (*ibid.* 66.2f.) / ...ⲚⲪⲠⲰⲤ ⲇⲈ ⲞⲚ | ⲪⲠⲎⲤ ⲢⲰ | (*ibid.* 113.13f.) / ⲚⲈⲦⲈⲚⲞⲨⲪ ⲚⲈ ⲇⲈ | ⲚⲈ ⲚⲈⲬⲎⲢⲀ ⲘⲚⲚⲞⲢⲪⲀⲚⲞⲤ (*ibid.* 93.18f.) / ⲤⲈⲚⲈⲂⲞⲖ ⲦⲰⲚ ⲋⲈ | ⲚⲈ (*v.l.* ⲤⲈⲚⲈⲂⲞⲖ ⲋⲈ | ⲦⲰⲚ | ⲚⲈ, *ibid.* 216.17) / †ⲚⲀⲪ-ⲠⲤⲀⲦ ⲅⲀⲢ | (*Leyd.* 311)[52] / ⲀⲒⲬⲈ-ⲠⲒⲰⲀⲬⲈ ⲠⲀⲒ ⲞⲚ | ⲘⲘⲀⲢⲔⲈⲖⲒⲚⲞⲤ (*III* 31.27) / ⲈⲦⲢⲈⲨ†-ⲚⲀⲠⲢⲢⲞ | ⲘⲠⲢⲢⲞ ⲞⲚ (*ibid.* 88.18) / ⲚⲦⲞⲪ ⲠⲈ ⲀⲚⲞⲚ | ⲤⲘⲠⲈⲦⲚⲈⲒⲢⲈ ⲘⲘⲞⲪ (*Ch.* 90.8ff., if ⲚⲦⲞⲪ is taken as an augens and not as a term in an identify-

[47] E. FRAENKEL 1964a:73. Fraenkel's classic studies (1964a-c, 1965), with those of WACKERNAGEL 1892 and POLOTSKY 1961, have been the main source of inspiration for the present discussion; see also J. J. FRAENKEL 1947.

[48] E. FRAENKEL 1964c:135ff., 138; cf. CZERMAK 1928 and 1931:79f.

[49] WEIL 1879:90ff.; WACKERNAGEL 1892; LAUER 1959; E. FRAENKEL 1964, 1965; HELLWIG 1974, esp. p. 160ff. For Egyptian-Coptic, see CZERMAK 1931:129ff.; POLOTSKY 1961. FECHT 1964 and SÄVE-SÖDERBERGH 1949 are motivated rather by metric and not essentially syntactic considerations: "stress" and "accentuation" have within this frame of reference a connotation different from (though certainly related to) that of non-metric sentence prosody. (For further references, see POLOTSKY 1961: 313 n. 2.)

[50] Cf. HELLWIG 1974:164ff.

[51] Cf. POLOTSKY 1961:esp. 295ff., 303ff. Polotsky's " *Spitzenwort* " is often, if not always, a whole colon; cases like ⲚⲑⲈ ⲅⲀⲢ ⲚⲚⲢⲰⲘⲈ... (*III* 181.3) are possibly instances of colon-second placement, although even here we may have colon-final or intercolary placement.

[52] See EMMEL 1981: esp. 137ff.

ing Wechselsatz "ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ") / ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲇⲉ | ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲉⲣⲱⲁⲛ — (*III* 174.15,28). Instances of " Kurzkolon " [53]: ⲙⲏ ⲅⲁⲣ | ⲙⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... (*IV* 180.12) / ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲣⲱ | ⲙⲛϩⲏⲩ (*A 1* 46) / ϩⲙⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ | ⲏ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ (*IV* 205.10f.) / ⲏ ⲣⲱ | ⲁⲡⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉⲓ (*III* 105.6) / ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ (*III* 200.22) / ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲱ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ (*ibid.* 165.19) / ⲁⲗⲗⲁ | ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ϫⲉ- (*P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ) / ϯⲛⲁⲡⲉⲓⲑⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲛⲁⲩ | ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ | ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲣⲁⲱⲉ (*A 2* 403) / ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲭⲣⲏⲥⲓⲡⲡⲟⲥ (*III* 32.1f.) / ⲁⲕⲱⲱⲱϫⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲃⲛⲏ | ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲕⲉϩⲱⲃ (*ibid.* 62.25f.) / ⲁⲩⲱ ⲅⲉ | ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛϫⲉ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ (*ibid.* 185.3) / ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲅⲁⲣ | ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉϥⲉⲓⲱⲧ | ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲉ (*RE 11* 17a 2) / ⲉⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ | ⲉⲟⲩ ⲅⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ | (*IV* 183.7) / ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ϩⲱⲱⲛ | ⲥⲉⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲟⲛ | ⲛⲥⲁ- (*III* 142.18f.) / ⲁⲗⲗⲁ | ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ | ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱϣ ⲡⲉ | ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*ibid.* 131.15f., cod. B; see §6.0.3.3).

6.0.3.2 Enclitics: relative placement and compatibilities. As suggested above, the placement of any member of a pattern is a facet of its categorial, i.e. functional essence. A study of the combined and relative placement of *enclitics*, however, is instructive of their *prosodic hierarchy* and *relative encliticity*. Observe in the following table: (1) Since factors of semasiological as well as prosodic compatibility are at play here, it is extremely difficult to classify non-attestation in this case as significant (systemic) or accidental. However, presumably accidental (provisional) non-occurrence is indicated by parentheses: (—). (2) One must remember that this presentation is extremely simplified, ignoring (for the sake of convenience) (a) the interdependence of word and pattern prosodic properties, (b) the possible influence of various prosodic patterns transcending the syntactic ones, (c) the influence of the environment in general, and neighbouring particles in particular, and (d) the possibility, not to be ignored, of mobility — flexible placement — of individual enclitics.

Table I

→	ⲘⲈⲚ	ⲅⲀⲢ	ⲇⲈ	ⲢⲰ	ϫⲉ$_1$	ⲚⲦⲞϤ	ⲀⲚ	ⲞⲚ	ϩⲱⲱϤ	ϫⲉ$_2$	ⲡⲉ
ⲘⲈⲚ	×	+	—	(—)	+	(—)	+	(—)	(—)	(—)	(—)
ⲅⲀⲢ	—	×	—	(—)	(—)	(—)	+	+	+	(—)	+
ⲇⲈ	—	—	×	(—)	(—)	+	+	+	+	(—)	+
ⲢⲰ	—	—	—	×	(—)	+	+	(—)	(—)	(—)	+
ϫⲉ$_1$	—	—	—	—	×	+	+	+	+	—	+
ⲚⲦⲞϤ	—	—	—	—	—	×	+	(—)	—	(—)	+
ⲀⲚ	—	—	—	—	—	+	×	+	+	+	+
ⲞⲚ	—	—	—	—	—	+	—	×	(—)	(—)	+
ϩⲱⲱϤ	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	+	×	(—)	+
ϫⲉ$_2$	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	(—)	(—)	×	(—)
ⲡⲉ	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	—	×

Documentation: ⲘⲈⲚ ⲅⲀⲢ: *P* 131[4] 158 ro (Denniston 67) [54]: ⲘⲈⲚ ⲅⲀⲢ — ⲇⲈ — ⲇⲈ —, — ⲅⲀⲢ relating the whole complex to the preceding cotext, ⲘⲈⲚ cataphorically to the ⲇⲈ-related sequence. ⲘⲈⲚ ϫⲉ: *Ench.* 77b. ⲘⲈⲚ ⲀⲚ: *III* 33.16f., 34.19, 94.25. ⲅⲀⲢ ⲀⲚ: *III* 55.14, 66.2. ⲅⲀⲢ ⲞⲚ: *III* 85.13f. ⲅⲀⲢ ϩⲱⲱϤ: *P* 131[5] 65 ro. ⲅⲀⲢ ⲡⲉ: *III* 32.22, 66.4. ⲅⲀⲢ ⲀⲚ ⲡⲉ: *Or.* 168.10f. ⲇⲈ ⲀⲚ: *A 2* 4, *IV* 71.13f. ⲇⲈ ⲚⲦⲞϤ: *III* 46.5f.,

[53] Cf. Lauer 1959:70.

[54] Other ready-imported Greek particle amalgams are ⲀⲢⲀⲅⲉ (Denniston 43; *A 2* 334. To be related in some way to the very common ⲀⲢⲀ ϫⲉ — *IV* 179.2, 193.8, *III* 71.23, 220.15f., *Ch.* 11.9f., 164.18ff.?); ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ (both οὐκοῦν and οὔκουν, *III* 24-5, 66.17, 93.14f., *Wess. 9* 142b 28ff.); ⲙⲏ ⲀⲢⲀ (ϫⲉ) (*III* 80.25f., *IV* 129.8, 193.8, *Ch.* 110.26f.); ⲕⲁⲓⲧⲟⲓⲅⲉ (Denniston 564; *Ch.* 81.5f., 138.5f., 158.11f., *Wess. 9* 131b 15f.) and ⲕⲁⲓⲧⲟⲓ (*IV* 38.1f.); ⲕⲁⲓⲅⲁⲣ (καὶ γάρ, Denniston 108ff.; *III* 32.18, 461f., 135.29, *IV* 19.16, 92.19, 184.11f.).

145.12f. ⲁⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ: *III* 65.16; this is ⲁⲉ marked as adversative. ⲁⲉ ⲟⲛ: *III* 37.4; ⲁⲉ marked as additive or non-adversative. An extremely common combination, more frequent than ⲁⲉ alone (ⲁⲉ in its various combinations is the most frequent of all Greek-origin particles in Shenoute). ⲁⲉ ⲡⲉ: *III* 60.29, 110.20; rather rare, the usual form being ⲁⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (in *III* 52.18, 53.25 we have ⲁⲉ preceding the *copular*, not pronominal ⲡⲉ). ⲣⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ: *Ch.* 42.10ff. ⲣⲱ ⲁⲛ: *A 2* 87, *III* 22.19, 211.17, 215.2f. ⲣⲱ ⲡⲉ: *Ch.* 17.4f., *III* 164.9f. ϭⲉ$_1$ ⲁⲛ: *Ch.* 157.28ff. ϭⲉ$_1$ ⲟⲛ: *Wess. 9* 88a 14f., *III* 199.10. ϭⲉ$_1$ ϩⲱⲱϥ: *Ch.* 112-3, *Young* 15. ϭⲉ$_1$ ⲡⲉ: *III* 216.17, *Mun.* 177, *Ench.* 94a. ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ: *A 1* 135 ⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲁⲯϥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ / *Ch.* 52.37ff. ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ / *ibid.* 198.45ff. ⲙⲏ ⲉⲩϯ-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ. ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ: *III* 105.24f., 145.12f. ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ: *only in rhetorical questions* (usually introduced by ϩ, ⲙⲏ): *III* 105.24f. ϩ ⲁⲣⲛⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ... / *P* 130^2 71 ⲣⲡⲉ... ϩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛⲉⲓⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... / *A 1* 125 ⲙⲏ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ... ⲁⲛ ⲟⲛ: *Wess. 9* 120a 24f. [55]. ⲁⲛ ϩⲱⲱϥ: *Mun.* 177. ⲁⲛ ϭⲉ$_2$ " not anymore ": *Ch.* 80.32ff., *Ench.* 85b, *BLOr.* 3581A 93 (No. 209 2 vo). ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ: *IV* 157.15f. ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ " at least ": *III* 93.24. ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ: III 42.23, *A 1* 250. ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲟⲛ: *III* 65.16. ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲡⲉ: *IV* 207.3.

Needless to say, this *exposé* covers no more than a paragraph in some future comprehensive work on Coptic prosody, written to integrate " particles " with other pattern constituents (especially modifiers). One can nonetheless make out at least seven prosodic paradigms (or fillers of prosodic slots) on a *scale of decreasing encliticity* (no compatibility within each group, only commutation). In syntagm, the particle higher on the list precedes the lower:

(1) ⲙⲉⲛ
(2) ⲅⲁⲣ, ⲇⲉ
(3) ⲣⲱ, ϭⲉ$_1$
(4) ⲁⲛ
(5) ⲛⲧⲟϥ, ϩⲱⲱϥ
(6) ϭⲉ$_2$, ⲟⲛ
(7) ⲡⲉ

Note: These compatibilities are valid only within *a single-colon-extent*, and thus constitute a link (§6.0.2.1). Consider (*III* 93.18) - ⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛⲉ | ⲇⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*III* 97.1f.) ⲛⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲇⲉ | ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲙⲉⲛ | / (*A 1* 123) ⲟⲩⲱⲡⲏⲣⲉ ⲡⲉ | ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛ (for the compatibility and relative placement of particles and augentia see §6.1.0.1). Group (6) is closest to the modifier hypercategory. (To this group may be assigned the " particular " ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ, see §1.3.4.) ϭⲉ$_1$: ϭⲉ$_2$: (3:6), based on ⲁⲛ ϭⲉ$_2$ " not... anymore " *vs.* ϭⲉ$_1$ ⲁⲛ " not... then ". ⲡⲉ is not a particle but an enclitic pronoun in the Bimembral Nominal Sentence pattern (see §1.1.2.3 and note 36). ϭⲉ$_2$ and ⲡⲉ are the only absolutely final particles; as such, they form *final boundary signals* of the relevant junctural extent (colon). ⲛⲧⲟϥ (5) can probably be resolved into ⲛⲧⲟϥ$_1$ " on the other hand ", " just ", grade (3), and ⲛⲧⲟϥ$_2$ " at least ", " only ", grade (6), before ⲡⲉ — on the strength of the opposition ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ$_2$: ⲛⲧⲟϥ$_1$ ⲁⲛ (for ⲛⲧⲟϥ and ϩⲱⲱϥ see also §§6.1.2.3, 6.1.3.4).

6.0.3.3 " The case of the ' foreshadowed enclitic ' ". One of the most intriguing phenomena to do with the linear behaviour of enclitics is their occasional *double simultaneous occurrence* in a single syntactic unit — once in the colon-second/final conditioned " secondary " (or better in the prosodic-structure overrule) position, and again in the constructional syntactic-structure (" primary ") position. This provides us with a neat junctural index confirming the colon delimitation [56]. I find the following enclitics with this property:

[55] See Layton 1979:173ff.

[56] Cf. (for the Greek ἄν) Wackernagel 1892:394, 396ff., 399ff. and E. Fraenkel, *Beobachtungen zu Aristophanes* (Rome, 1962) pp. 89ff., 216 (on με, ἐμοί, τι, τις). For Coptic, this phenomenon has not (to the best of my knowledge) been discussed; it is usually discredited by the editors and " buried " in apparatuses. Outside Shenoute, I note (Bohairic) *Acta Martyrum* (CSCO, edd. Balestri-Hyvernat) I 106.26 cod. A, 143.20f., 144.20, all exx. of ⲡⲉ; II 246.5f, (ⲟⲛ), 351.24f., 17.26 (ⲇⲉ), 323.16 (ⲅⲁⲣ), 306.9f. (ⲛⲁ-); (Bohairic) *Gen.* 43:32 (ⲡⲉ; see Andersson 1904:39). See *Dictionary* 256a for two exx. of " repeated " ⲟⲛ.

(a) ⲡⲉ, by far the most common: (*IV* 52.27) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲍⲓⲣⲟⲩⲍⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲩⲟⲙⲧ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲡⲉ (*subject*, *predicate* - ⲡⲉ) / (*A 2* 447, not Sh.) ⲟⲩⲙⲩⲧⲣⲟⲛ (sic) ⲡⲉ ⲛⲕⲟⲓⲛⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ (*predicate* - ⲡⲉ) / (*A 2* 111) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲙⲛ ⲍⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲁⲩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲭⲡⲓⲟ (*predicate* - ⲡⲉ, *subject*) / (*IV* 104.9 cod. A) ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲕⲉⲍⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ (*predicate* - ⲡⲉ, *subject*) / (*A 2* 196, parall. *III* 131.15f. cod. B) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩ- (*subject* - ⲡⲉ - *predicate*; Amélineau's note: " lisez: ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲡⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲡⲉ; le mot ⲛⲁⲙⲉ s'employant comme adverbe et ne comportant pas la présence d'un enclitique qui se trouve d'ailleurs après le mot suivant, comme il doit s'y trouver d'après la grammaire. ") / (*Mun.* 103) ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩ ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲗⲗⲁⲕⲟⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲉ (*rel.* - *predicate* - ⲡⲉ). Perhaps also *III* 22.12ff., 75.16f., both alternatively interpretable as instances of the # *modifier* - ⲡⲉ # predication, §1.2.1.2. Compare also instances of (ⲛⲉ) ⲉⲓⲥⲡⲉ ⲁϥ— ⲡⲉ in irrealis apodoses, e.g. (*A 1* 95) ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲍⲛⲍⲉⲛⲕⲉⲙⲁ... ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲕⲟⲛⲥⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲉⲓⲥⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲕⲟⲛⲥⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ, also ibid. 107.

(b) ⲁⲛ: (*A 2* 475) (ⲧⲁⲟⲓⲍⲉ) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ ⲭⲉ... (cf. 476, with a single negator; §2.9.1.1-2) / (*ibid.*) ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲕⲟⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲭⲏⲩ ⲉⲧⲁⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩⲛⲁⲍⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲱⲙⲥ.

(c) ⲟⲛ (*IV* 150.4, not Shenoute) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲛϥⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲑⲓⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ.

(d) ⲛⲧⲟϥ (*A 1* 295, quot. from *Deut.* 31:27) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲍⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲡⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ+-ⲛⲟⲩⲑⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ.

6.0.3.4 Polar placement. Another intriguing placement phenomenon, which I cannot integrate in a broad theory, is the polar placement of the augens ⲍⲱⲱϥ in the Nominal Sentence pattern. The augens is *colon*-(or at least pattern-)*final* when referable to a pronoun *inside* the pattern, but *colon-second* when its referate follows the pattern (differently Polotsky 1961:306 [+ n. 4] = *CP* 410): (*Wess. 9* 171c 15f.) ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲍⲱ' / (*III* 179.13f.) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲍⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ, *vs.* (*III* 187.12) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲍⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲍⲉ / (*P* 130[1] 140 ⲧⲙⲍ-ⲏ) ⲛⲉⲡⲉⲧⲉⲩⲱⲉ ⲍⲱⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲥ / (*RE 11* 18a 24f.) ⲍⲉⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ ⲍⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*A 1* 260) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲍⲱϥ (sic) ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲙⲡⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ / (*A 2* 45) ⲍⲉⲛⲡⲣⲟⲇⲟⲧⲏⲥ ⲍⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲭⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲁⲧⲏⲥ ⲛⲉ.

6.1.0.1-3 The augens: paradigms and compatibilities, a synoptic preview

In the following tables, " + " signifies normal (strong) documentation, " (+) " significantly weak documentation, " — " significant non-attestation, " (—) " (probably) accidental non-attestation.

6.1.0.1 Minimal combinatory (reference) patterns (augens/referate framing)

Table II

Referate			ⲧⲏⲣ-	ⲍⲱⲱ-	{ⲛⲧⲟ-}	ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-	ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-
Determinator	*Sgl.*	def.	+	+	+	(+)	+
		indef.	+	—	—	—	+
		∅	—	—	—	—	—
	Pl.	def.	+	+	+	—	+
		indef.	+	(+)	—	—	+
Actor pronoun	*Sgl.*	1	—	+	+	—	+
		2	(+)	+	+	—	(—)
		3	(+)	+	+	—	+
	Pl.	1	+	+	+	—	+
		2	+	+	+	—	(—)
		3	+	+	+	—	+

REFERATE			THP-	2WW-	{NTO-}	MMIN MMO-	MAYAA-
OBJECT PRONOUN (or actor + obj.)	*Sgl.*	1	—	+	+	+	+
		2	—	+	+	+	+
		3	—	+	+	+	+
	Pl.	1	—	+	+	+	+
		2	—	+	+	+	+
		3	+	+	+	+	+
NET-			(+) §6.1.1.1(d)	(—)	+	—	(—)
NET-			+	+	+	—	+
Noun + ET-			(+) §6.1.1.1(d)	(+)	(—)	—	+
IMPERATIVE (+ expansion)	*Sgl.*	1	—	(—)	(—)	(+)	—
		2	—	+	+	—	—
	Pl.	1	—	(+)	(—)	—	—
		2	+	+	+	—	—
ZERO REFERATE			+ §6.1.1.1(e)	—	—	—	+ §6.1.4.1.3
PW4, PE4-	*Sgl.*	1	—	+	—	(+)	+
		2	—	+	+	(+)	+
		3	—	+	—	+	+
	Pl.	1	+	+	—	(+)	+
		2	(—)	+	+	(+)	+
		3	+	+	—	+	+
INDEPENDENT PRONOUN	*Sgl.*	1	—	+	—	—	(—)
		2	—	+	—	—	+
		3	—	+	—	—	+
	Pl.	1	—	+	—	—	+
		2	(+)	+	—	(+)	(—)
		3	+	+	—	(+)	+
PRONOMINAL SUBJECT in Nom. Sent. {NE}	*Sgl.*	1	—	—	—	—	—
		2	—	—	+	—	—
		3	(+)?	—	—	—	—
	Pl.	1	—	—	—	—	—
		2	—	—	—	—	—
		3	+	+	+	—	+

6.1.0.2 AUGENS PLACEMENT: TABLE III

augens placement		ⲦⲎⲢ=	ϩⲱⲱ=	{ⲚⲦⲞ=}	ⲘⲀⲨⲀⲀ=	ⲘⲘⲒⲚ ⲘⲘⲞ=
post-referate:	immediate	+	+	+	+	+
	non-immediate	(+)	+	+	(—)	(—)
pre-referate:	immediate	(+)	+	+	—	—
	non-immediate	(+)	+	+	—	—

Non-immediate placement: the augens is separated from its nucleus (referate) by an element (or elements), which is not a grammatical entity, nor an enclitic, nor a simple expansion. Two prosodic groups emerge: on the one hand, ϩⲱⲱ= and ⲚⲦⲞ=; on the other hand, ⲘⲀⲨⲀⲀ= and ⲘⲘⲒⲚ ⲘⲘⲞ=; ⲦⲎⲢ= occupies an intermediate position. (The paradigmatic affinity of ϩⲱⲱ= with ⲚⲦⲞ= on the one hand, and of ⲘⲀⲨⲀⲀ= with ⲘⲘⲒⲚ ⲘⲘⲞ= and ⲦⲎⲢ= on the other hand, is also corroborated by the data presented in Table IV.)

6.1.0.3 AUGENS/AUGENS AND AUGENS/ENCLITIC: COMPATIBILITIES AND ARRANGEMENT

TABLE IV

	ⲦⲎⲢ=	ϩⲱⲱ=	{ⲚⲦⲞ=}	ⲘⲀⲨ-ⲀⲀ=	ⲘⲘⲒⲚ ⲘⲘⲞ=	ⲀⲈ	ⲄⲀⲢ	ⲀⲚ	ⲞⲚ	ⲬⲈ	ⲢⲰ	{ⲠⲈ}
ⲦⲎⲢ=	×	—	—	—	—	—	—	+	+	—	—	+
ϩⲱⲱ=	+	×	+	+	+	—	—	—	+	—	—	+
{ⲚⲦⲞ=}	—	—	×	—	—	—	—	+	—	—	—	+
ⲘⲀⲨⲀⲀ=	—	—	+	×	+	—	—	+	—	—	—	+
ⲘⲘⲒⲚ ⲘⲘⲞ=	—	—	—	—	×	—	—	—	—	—	—	—
ⲀⲈ	+	+	+	+	(—)							
ⲄⲀⲢ	+	—	—	(—)	(—)							
ⲀⲚ	+	—	+	+	+							
ⲞⲚ	+	—	+	—	—							
ⲬⲈ	+	+	—	—	—							
ⲢⲰ	—	—	+	—	—							
{ⲠⲈ}	—	+	—	—	+							

See TABLE I (§6.0.3.2)

Documentation: ⲦⲎⲢ= ⲁⲛ: *Wess. 9* 143b 4ff., *A 2* 238-9, *Ch.*52.53ff.; ⲦⲎⲢ= ⲟⲛ: *III* 73.2; ⲦⲎⲢ= {ⲡⲉ}: see §6.1.1.2.4. ϩⲱⲱ= ⲟⲛ (very common): *III* 66.8, *P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ, etc.; ϩⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ: *A 2* 468; ϩⲱⲱ= | {ⲛⲧⲟ=} + Noun (§ 6.1.3.3): *Ch.* 56.30ff., *A 1* 16 ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ϩⲱ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲉⲓⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ; ϩⲱⲱ= ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ= *A 1* 261; ϩⲱⲱ= ⲧⲏⲣ= *A 1* 373; ϩⲱⲱ= {ⲡⲉ} see §§6.0.3.4 and 6.1.2.2c. {ⲛⲧⲟ=} ⲁⲛ: *Ch.* 156.1ff., *III* 65.8; {ⲛⲧⲟ=} {ⲡⲉ}: §6.1.3.2 (c), *Wess. 9* 147d 28f., *IV* 207.7. ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=: *III* 146.24f. (cf. ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= + ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=, §6.1.4.4); ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ + Noun: *A 2* 31; ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= {ⲡⲉ}: *Wess. 9* 125b 18f., *IV* 207.6. ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱ=: *A 1* 374, *III* 65.16 (ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ), *A 1* 261 (ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ); {ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ=}: *Ch.* 86.3f., 15.28f., *A 1* 192, *IV* 12.7; ⲇⲉ ⲧⲏⲣ=: *A 1* 289, *III* 46.10f.; ⲇⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=: *III* 46.12. ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲏⲣ=: *III* 31.6 *Ch.* 165.44ff., *A 2* 546, *P* 131[6] 20 ⲕⲇ. ⲁⲛ {ⲛⲧⲟ=}: *IV* 207.7, *A 2* 78, *A 1* 74, 205, *III* 211.17, *IV* 38.21, 193.15; ⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣ=: *A 2* 151, *IV* 20.20f.; ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=: *Wess. 9* 144c 24ff.; ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=: *A 2* 459. ⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣ=: *Wess. 18* 140b 8ff.; ⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ: *P* 130[2] 65 vo. ⲅⲉ ⲧⲏⲣ=: *A 2* 520; ⲅⲉ ϩⲱⲱ=: *III* 67.17f., 107.14. ⲣⲱ {ⲛⲧⲟ=}: *III* 188.18f., *Ch.* 42.10ff., *Wess. 9* 95a 20f. {ⲡⲉ} ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=: *III* 202.27ff., *Wess. 9* 156a 4ff.

We note that (a) ⲅⲁⲣ, ⲇⲉ, ⲅⲉ, ⲣⲱ all precede the augens, (b) some augentia ({ⲛⲧⲟ=}, ⲧⲏⲣ=, ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=) precede {ⲡⲉ}, ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ= follows it, while ϩⲱⲱ= occurs in both positions, under a special conditioning (§6.0.3.4) [57]; (c) the placement oppositions: ⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣ=: ⲧⲏⲣ= ⲁⲛ, ⲁⲛ {ⲛⲧⲟ=}: {ⲛⲧⲟ=} ⲁⲛ, ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=: ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= ⲁⲛ are all formally definable as the difference between *adjunctal negation* of the augens ('*augens*→ⲁⲛ') and *augential modification of a locally negated (pro)noun* ('ⲁⲛ→*augens*'). {ⲛⲧⲟ=} ⲁⲛ is much less common than ⲁⲛ {ⲛⲧⲟ=} (the former occurs in focalization patterns). ⲧⲏⲣ= ⲁⲛ too occurs in focalization patterns, while ⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣ= is characteristic of *rhetorical questions*. I cannot find any regulation for ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= ⲁⲛ *vs.* ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=.

6.1.1 "All", "entire(ly)" (*totus, universus* [58]): group or unitary totality (integrality).

6.1.1.1 ⲧⲏⲣ= in cohesion with pronominal referates in verb syntagms. (a) *Actor suffix-pronouns*: (*A 1* 48) ⲧⲛⲙⲟⲕϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ / (*Ch.* 155.27f.) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲡⲏⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 381) ⲁϥⲧⲣⲉⲩⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (sim. *A 2* 355, *IV* 36.21, *RE 10* 161b 1) / (*IV* 207.4f.) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲉⲟ ⲛⲯⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲛϩ ⲥⲉⲏⲡ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 90-1) ⲁⲛⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲓⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ / (*A 1* 302) ⲛⲥⲉⲭⲏⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ. Additional exx.: *III* 87.17, 140.2, *IV* 67.7, 109.16, 191.7f., *Ch.* 97.10, 133.53ff., 162.44ff., etc.

(b) *Object* (*expansion*) *suffix-pronouns*: (*A 2* 238-9) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲯⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ (sim. *Ch.* 52.53ff., 11.9f.) / (*Ch.* 197-8) ...ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*III* 45.28) ⲡⲁϥ ⲛⲉⲃⲓⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (cf. *ibid.* 144.14f. ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ) / *IV* 36.5f., 49.16f., 5.20f., *Mun.* 161: ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ, a recurring collocation, tending to the final position / (*IV* 20.20f.) ⲙⲏ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟ ⲛⲛⲟϭ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ.

(c) *Determinators*; *nuclei of relative forms/nuclei* + *anaphoric pronoun*: (*A 1* 87) ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩϩⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 18.19f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (zero subject, but in 19.4f. ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ) / (*A 2* 360) ⲛⲉⲧⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁϥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 17.28f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ / (*Wess. 9* 129a 6f.) ⲛⲉⲧϩⲛⲙⲡⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*P* 130[4] 156 ⲧⲯⲇ) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲯⲩⲉ ⲉⲗⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ) / (*P* 130[2] 7 ⲡⲑ) ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟ / (*A 1* 121) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*RE 10* 163a 38) ⲛⲉⲧⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (ambiguous; sim. *IV* 36.22) / (*A 1* 266) ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲃⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ. Note that here we find only *plural referates*. Additional exx.: *Ch.* 130.5f., *A 1* 388, 446, *RE 10* 161b 20.

(d) ⲧⲏⲣ= with *adverbal* reference, in merely formal cohesion with an actor pronoun or nucleus of a relative form (here also singular): (*RE 10* 162a 1f.) ⲡⲉⲧϩⲟⲗϭ ⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*A 1* 14) ⲡⲉⲧⲏⲡ ⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*Ch.* 70.43f.) ⲡⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲟⲯϥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ (sim. *IV* 175.11f. ...ⲛⲅⲟⲩⲱⲯϥ ⲧⲏⲣⲕ) / (*A 2* 396) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲃⲃⲟ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ

[57] {ⲛⲧⲟ=} follows {ⲡⲉ} when they belong to different cola: ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ | ⲁⲛⲟⲛ | ϩⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ (*Ch.* 90.9f.).

[58] Cf. Ebeling 1905:51-87 ("Tutto 'lauter'"), Løfstedt, *Vermischte Studien zur lateinischen Sprachkunde und Syntax*, Lund 1936, 209ff. (*toti* = *omnes*), Brøndal 1943: 125-132, Hofmann, "Die lateinischen Totalitätsausdrücke", in *Mélanges... Marouzeau*, Paris 1948, 283-290.

/ (*IV* 193.6f.) ⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛⲥⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ / (*Ch.* 22.3f.) ⲡⲥⲛⲟ ⲉⲧⲃⲁⲙⲁⲟⲙⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲩ / NB. (*A 1* 463) ⲛⲥⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ.

(e) *Post-imperatival* ⲧⲏⲣ-: (*A 1* 70) ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲃⲉ ⲛⲥⲱⲓ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ. Cf. ⲙⲓⲱⲧⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ (*III* 25.18). ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲁⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲉ ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲥⲏⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ (*Wess. 9* 115b 5ff.) is a quotation (*I Pet.* 3:8). ⲧⲏⲣ- here has a zero referate, and "finitizes" the infinitive (cf. §7.2.5 for the conjunctive in a similar function). Similarly, the post-imperatival augens explicates and specifies the gender/number category neutralized (syncretized) in the imperative form.

6.1.1.2 ⲧⲏⲣ- IN COHESION WITH PRONOUNS OUTSIDE VERB SYNTAGMS

6.1.1.2.1 *Determinators.* (a) *Plural* (definite article, demonstratives, possessive articles): (*A 2* 247) ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ / (*A 1* 373) ⲁⲛⲥⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲭⲓ-ⲟⲩⲁ... ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*Ch.* 179.10ff.) ⲛⲣⲉϥ-ⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ / (*Wess. 18* 140b 8ff.) ⲥⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲙⲡⲉⲩⲥⲏⲧ ⲅⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*III* 118.11f.) ⲛⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲭⲡⲓⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 289) ⲛⲉⲡⲣⲟⲫⲏⲧⲏⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ... / (*III* 215.24f.) ⲱⲁⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲓⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ.

(b) ⲥⲉⲛ- ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ "all sorts of...", especially frequent after ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲉ- "all kinds of other...": (*Wess. 9* 172d 6ff.) ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲉⲥⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ (sim. *IV* 30.28f.) / (*IV* 14.21f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ (sim. *ibid.* 115.10) / (*A 1* 114) ⲛⲧⲟ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲥⲉⲛⲛⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ "all sorts of evil" (Amélineau's translation, "tous les maux", is wrong) / (*A 2* 504) ⲫⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲕⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ.

(c) *Numbers* + ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ "whole", "complete": (*IV* 57.22f.) ...ⲉⲟⲩⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ ⲱⲁⲱⲟⲙⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ "three whole (loaves)" / (*ibid.* 71.4f.) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲛ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲛ ⲱⲟⲙⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ.

(d) *Singular definite article*: unitary totality: "the whole", "all of the...": (*P* 131[6] 108 ro, *III* 168.5, *A 2* 108) ⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣϥ "all that is of death" / (*Ch.* 99.21f.) ⲑⲉⲗⲡⲓⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲙⲡⲁⲃⲓⲟⲥ / (*A 2* 238) ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲡⲉ̅ⲭ̅ⲥ̅ ⲡⲉⲥⲗⲟⲅ ⲧⲏⲣϥ "all (that is) of sweetness" / (*Ryl. Cat.* 35 No. 70 ⲥⲙⲑ) ⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ / (*III* 184.8) ⲧⲉⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ ⲧⲉ... / (*P* 130[5] 52 vo) ⲡⲉⲓⲕⲉⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲧⲏⲣϥ... ⲛⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ, ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ... ⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ... ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*RE 10* 161a 27ff.) ⲕⲥⲙⲁⲙⲁⲁⲧ ⲡⲅⲟⲙ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲭⲱⲱⲣⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲡⲙⲟⲓⲥⲉ ⲧⲏⲣϥ... ⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲧⲏⲣϥ "(thou) who art all might and all strength, all wonder... all light" [59] / Note the recurring idiomatic ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ "so much" (*IV* 162.6, *Ch.* 42.2f., *P* 130[4] 48 vo, etc.), cf. Hebrew *kol-kax*. Additional exx.: *Ch.* 133.42f., 140.17ff., *IV* 64.11, 163.4, *III* 37.20, 185.24f., etc.

(e) *Singular indefinite* ⲟⲩ- ⲧⲏⲣ- "a whole...", "a complete...": (*IV* 153.23f.) ⲟⲩⲡⲁⲱⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ / (*A 1* 204) ⲥⲛⲁⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲩⲱⲏ ⲛⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲥ / NB. (*A 2* 16) ⲟⲩⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛⲣⲉⲙⲥⲉ (sic) ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ "a congregation of people who are all freemen".

6.1.1.2.2 *The possessor exponent in the possessive article* (*uncommon*): (*A 2* 315) ⲡⲉⲛⲁⲱⲕⲁⲕ ⲧⲏⲣⲛ / (*III* 43.26) ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ. Also *ibid.* 13.3, *IV* 34.5f. Plural only, most often 1st person plural.

6.1.1.2.3 *Independent pronoun* (rare): (*Ch.* 165.44ff.) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ-ⲛⲱⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ / (*III* 139.21) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲧⲛ ⲙⲙⲉⲣⲁⲧⲉ / (*P* 131[6] 88 ro) ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲥⲁⲣⲕⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲕ.

6.1.1.2.4 *Pronominal subject of a Nominal Sentence.* Note the conditioned placement. The predicate noun syntagm is indefinite: (*Ch.* 22.18f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲫⲁⲛⲧⲁⲥⲓⲁ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ / (*III* 217.11) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ

[59] See §5.1.1.0.1 for the significance of such cases of '*masc. determinator* + "*feminine*" *noun lexeme*'. For the sense of the modified syntagm ("he is all heart and no brain"), cf. Ebeling 1905:52f., 57ff.

ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ *vs.* (215.10) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ: ⲥⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ interposes between the referate and ⲧⲏⲣ-; otherwise, the pre-referate placement is constant / (*A 2* 16) ⲥⲟⲓⲛⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ; ⲥⲟⲓⲛⲉ is anaphoric to the determinator in the preceding ⲥⲉⲛⲱⲭ " thieves " / (*P* 130² 2 ⲡ) ⲟⲩⲕⲣⲟϥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲡⲉ / (*P* 130⁵ 22 ⲫⲙⲑ) ⲥⲉⲛⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ / (*RE 10* 159b 7) ⲟⲩⲯⲗⲟϥ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲡⲉ.

6.1.1.3 Peculiarities of placement [60]. ⲧⲏⲣ- *colon-(or sentence-)final*: pre-referate: ⲥⲉⲛⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ (*Ch.* 32.48f., §6.1.1.2.4) / ⲉⲓⲥⲥⲏⲛⲧⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲥⲉⲥⲏⲥ... (*III* 61-2, sim. *ibid.* 89.11f.) / ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲓⲯⲱⲯ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (*Ch.* 61.5ff.) / ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ (*P* 131⁶ 81 ro).

6.1.2 ⲥⲱⲙ- " INCLUSIVE/SEQUENTIAL CONFRONTATION " (" he too ", " he... in his turn ", " he, for his part "); the *second term* is characterized (§6.3).

6.1.2.0.1 Morphological. *1st person sgl.* ⲥⲱ/ⲥⲱⲙⲧ, in variation (variant readings in *III* 168.15). *2nd fem. sgl.* ⲥⲱⲙⲧⲉ (*III* 194.16, *Or.* 157.8). *2nd plur.* ⲥⲱⲧ-ⲧⲏⲛⲉ (*IV* 60.28) is Akhmimoid [61] (ⲥⲱⲙⲧ-ⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ in *A 1* 366, collated). *3rd plur.* ⲥⲱⲙⲟⲩ (*IV* 105.22, collated). ⲥⲱⲧ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ and ⲥⲱⲟⲩ are normal.

6.1.2.1 *Post-referate* placement.

6.1.2.1.1 In cohesion with *pronominal* referates: *immediate* post-referate placement.

6.1.2.1.1.1 Referate in *verb syntagms*: (a) *Actor pronoun*: (*A 1* 39) ⲁⲩⲁⲥⲟⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲱⲩ ⲥⲱ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ / (*IV* 60.27f.) ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲥⲁⲧⲏⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲁⲁⲥ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲛⲉ / (*Ch.* 43.2ff.) (ⲉⲕⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ... ⲭⲉ-...) ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲙⲧ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ... ⲭⲉ- / (*ibid.* 51.2f.) ⲩⲁⲛⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲥⲱⲙⲛ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ, " we too " / (*III* 19.23f.) ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲃⲱⲕ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 24.12f.) ⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲅⲓⲭ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲛⲏⲩ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ. Additional exx.: *III* 53 *passim*, 54.2, 64.28-65.3, *RE 11* 15a 8f., etc.

(b) *Actor noun-syntagm* (*determinator*); *nucleus of relative*; *demonstrative*: (*III* 63.21ff.) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ⲙⲉϥⲥⲉⲓ... ⲉⲓⲉ ⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ... ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲏ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲙⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ / (*A' 2* 491) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛ ⲧⲉⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲟⲅⲥ ⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲯⲁⲣⲉⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲙⲉⲣⲓⲧⲥ... / (*IV* 105.22) ⲁⲡⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ, ⲁⲛⲁⲓ ⲥⲱⲱⲟⲩ (sic) ⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 77) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲥⲁⲣⲉⲥ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲉϥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲥ... ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲛ-ⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲟⲭϥ ⲉⲥⲉⲛⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ / (*III* 45.5f.) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲯⲁⲣⲉ ⲡⲥⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ ⲅⲉ ⲙⲛⲡⲥⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ⲡⲱⲣⲯ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲅⲓⲭ... ⲉⲓⲥ-ⲛⲥⲁⲗⲗⲁⲧⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲁⲥ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ. Also: *III* 65.12,16, *A 1* 373-4.

(c) *Object pronoun* (*expansion pronoun*): (*A 2* 462) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲯⲟⲡⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ... ⲥⲛⲁⲯⲟⲡⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ / (*A 2* 358) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙⲧ ⲉⲡⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲉⲓⲉⲩⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲥⲱ / (*III* 144.28f.) ⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ ⲥⲱⲱⲧ ⲛⲯⲙⲙⲟ ⲛⲥⲁⲥ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲥⲙⲡⲁⲥⲏⲧ / (*IV* 108.21) ⲡⲉⲥⲥⲁⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲡⲉ / (*III* 162.9) ⲧⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲥⲱ ⲟⲛ / (*A 1* 16) ...ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲥⲱ.

(d) Post-imperatival ⲥⲱⲙ- (cf. *independent* pronoun + ⲥⲱⲙ- + *imperative*, below): ⲥⲱⲙ- is gender/number characterizing: (*P* 130¹ 132 ⲧⲕⲍ) ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*IV* 86.8) ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲧⲙⲡⲉⲧⲯⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲭⲓⲧϥ ⲛⲭⲛⲁⲥ ⲉⲟⲩⲉⲙ-ⲟⲩⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ, ⲯⲁⲣⲉⲡⲉϥⲥⲏⲧ ⲱⲣⲭ; ⲃⲱ ⲥⲱⲱⲕ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲯⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙ / NB. (*Ch.* 182.57f.) ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲱⲛ (*inclusive* 1st person plural, = " 1st + 2nd pers. "; cf. *P* 131⁶ 44 ⲣⲓⲉ: ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲫⲏⲩ).

6.1.2.1.1.2 *Determinators*; ⲡ- etc.: (*III* 17.6) (The empty sealed tomb is full of bones and impurities) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲧⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... ϥⲯⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ, ϥⲙⲉⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲧⲟⲥ /(*Cat.* 41 .5f.) ⲟⲩⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ " for the Jews too ". ⲥⲉⲛ-: (*A 2* 19) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲯⲯⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲥⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ...

[60] Cf. Polotsky 1961:308f. (= *CP* 412f.).
[61] Shisha-Halevy 1976b:358.

ⲛⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ (as did the people and Josua in the case of Achan) / (*Wess. 9* 151c 1ff.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲉⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲓⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲛϩⲉⲛⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲓⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲛⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ (or is this pre-referate placement?) / (*RE 10* 160a 16ff.) (ϩⲉⲛⲡⲩⲅⲏ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ, when blocked, are opened up with proper tools) ϩⲉⲛⲙⲁⲁϫⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲁⲩⲧⲱⲙ... ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ.

6.1.2.1.1.3 *The possessor exponent of the possessive article or pronoun*: (*A 2* 280) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲛ-... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲧⲛⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ϩⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*III* 97.2) (ⲡϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲧⲁϥ+ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲙⲙⲟ) ⲡⲱⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲁⲥ+-ⲡⲱⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ / (*IV* 50.20) ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲥϩⲁⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲱⲃ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 186.40f.) (Everyone's shadow) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲱⲛ ϩⲱⲱⲛ / (*A 1* 464) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲃⲣⲓⲉⲓⲙ ⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲟⲩϩ, ⲧⲉⲕⲥⲃⲱ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲕ-ⲱⲁϫⲉ... ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲱⲟⲩ (ϩⲱⲱⲕ " illogically " modifying ⲧⲉⲕ-, instead of ⲧⲉⲕⲥⲃⲱ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲕⲱⲁϫⲉ).

6.1.2.1.1.4 *Independent pronoun* (very common): (*A 1* 61) ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ- / (*P* 130[5] 133 ro) ⲁⲩ+-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲓ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ +ⲛⲁ+-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*III* 29.10) (the foal can be bridled and tamed) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁϫⲟⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 38.19f.) ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ̅ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲉⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲁⲛⲅ-ⲡⲉϥϩⲙϩⲁⲗ / (*Or.* 153-5, *passim*) ⲉⲩϫⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲱ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲧⲉϩⲓⲙⲉ... ⲁϫⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ... / (*A 2* 382-3) ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲛ+ⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲁⲛ... ⲉⲓⲉⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ϩⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲙⲡⲣⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ / (*A 2* 293f.) ⲙⲡⲥ+-ϩⲧⲏⲥ ⲙⲡⲁⲱⲁϫⲉ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱ +ⲛⲁⲕⲱ ⲛⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲕⲁ ⲉⲣⲉⲑⲁⲧⲏⲩ ϥⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲉ. ⲁⲥⲛⲟⲩϫⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲥⲓⲡⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲥⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱ +ⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ... ⲁⲥⲁⲩⲡⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱ +ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ / (*P* 130[2] 1 oz) ⲕⲟ ⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲕϩⲱⲃ, ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲧ +ⲟ ⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲙⲡⲁϩⲱⲃ / (*A 2* 519), an especially illuminating example: ⲛⲁⲱ ⲛϩⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉϫⲱⲕ, ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲙⲡⲕ-ⲣ-ⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲉϫⲱⲓ ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ϩⲁⲣⲟⲕ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ. Additional exx.: *III* 29.27f., 94.15, 124.22, 176.20f., *IV* 56.5f., 108.5, *Ch.* 39.8f., 62.38ff., *Or.* 157.50ff., 158.14ff., 165.20ff., etc.

6.1.2.1.2 *Non-immediate* post-referate placement (relatively rare). Referate: *noun* syntagm: (*A 1* 76) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲧⲉⲓⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲛϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲩⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲥ ⲟⲛ ϫⲉ- / (*ibid.* 87) ⲉⲱϫⲉ-+ⲛⲁϫⲓ-ⲡⲁϫⲡⲓⲟ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲉϫⲡⲓⲟ... / (*ibid.* 104) ⲙⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ ⲉⲩⲓ ϩⲱ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲥⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ (*even* in the present predicament, let alone if God bring down upon me the retribution or malediction of this oath...).

6.1.2.2 *Pre-referate* placement [62], ϩⲱⲱ- *colon-final* (*intercolary*): (a) Following ⲛⲑⲉ, ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ, ⲧⲁⲓ (ⲧⲉ ⲑⲉ), ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ [63]: (*A 1* 41) ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲩⲩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲑⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲩⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 297) (they sinned) ⲛⲑⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲛⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 162c 15ff., parall. *III* 136.28f.) ...ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲑⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲁⲱⲉⲡⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲧ+-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ... / (*A 2* 468) ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϩⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲱⲩⲁⲛⲧⲙⲁⲓⲉ-ⲡⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ / (*Borg.* 194 15) ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ, ⲱ ⲡϩⲉⲗⲗⲏⲛ ⲙⲛⲛϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ, ⲛⲧⲉ-ⲧⲛⲁⲱⲣ-ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲁⲛ. Also *III* 48.24f., 150.28, *IV* 36.1, *Ch.* 105.6ff., *A 1* 61, 366, etc. Compare also the recurring, idiomatic (post-referate) ⲛⲧⲁϩⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲧ ⲟⲛ " like me (too) " (e.g. *III* 150.23, 162.22, 168.15, 171.10, 184.24, *P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ etc.).

(b) Following ϫⲉⲕⲁ(ⲁ)ⲥ [64]: (*A 2* 49) ...ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ϩⲛϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲛⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ / (*A 1* 461) ...ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲛⲛⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲱⲡ-ϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲕ ⲉⲛⲉϩ / (*Wess. 9* 115b 8ff.) ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲧⲟⲛ, sim. (*P* 130[1] 134 ⲧⲗⲁ) ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲧⲟⲛ. Compare also the recurring ϫⲉ(ⲕⲁⲥ) ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲕⲱ/ⲉϥⲉⲕⲱ ϩⲱ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲁⲛⲟⲃⲉ (*III* 135.28f., *A 1* 87, *P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ). Additional exx.: *III* 104.9f., *IV* 7.16, 194.12f., *P* 130[1] 133 ⲧⲗ.

[62] Polotsky 1961:295ff. (= *CP* 399ff.).

[63] Polotsky 1961:301, 304ff. (= *CP* 405, 408ff.). Polotsky treats ⲛⲑⲉ with other antecedents; in Shenoute, — ⲑⲉ — clearly has a special standing.

[64] Polotsky 1961: 304f., 307 (= *CP* 408f., 411).

(c) Following a (plural, mostly indefinite) predicative noun syntagm, in a Nominal Sentence: (*RE 11* 18a 24f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲃⲣⲣⲉ ⲛⲉ / (*IV* 90.18) ⲥⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲥⲉⲧⲃ-ⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ / (*A 2* 12) ⲥⲉⲛⲥⲟⲩⲉⲣⲉϥ-ⲭⲓ-ⲅⲟⲗ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ / (*P* 130[1] 137 ⲧⲁⲏ) ⲛⲉⲛⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ. Also: *III* 31.15f., *IV* 52.7, 91.5, *A 2* 511, etc. For (*III* 187.12) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲉ [65], see §6.0.3.4.

(d) Miscellaneous cola: *Imperatives*: (*A 2* 320) ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲅⲉ ⲥⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲥⲏⲃⲥ / (*P* 131[6] 30 ⲣⲙⲉ) ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲥⲟⲟⲩ (sic) ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲁⲩ / (*P* 130[2] 24 ⲫⲛⲇ) ⲁⲣⲉⲕⲱⲛⲥ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲥ ⲙⲡⲥⲟϥ... ⲕⲱⲛⲥ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲥⲛⲧⲉⲛⲧⲟⲗⲏ. *Conjugation-forms* (+ expansion): (*IV* 205.18f.) ⲁϥⲅⲱⲯⲧ ⲥⲱⲱⲛ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲛ / (*ibid.* 105.29) ⲥⲉⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲥⲃϩⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲱⲃⲉ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ " with them too ". (*Pre*)*modifiers*: (*A 2* 76) ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲕⲧⲟ ⲉⲡⲁⲥⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲧⲥⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲧ ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ... ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲥⲩⲛⲟⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ ⲥⲱⲱⲕ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉⲕⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ / (*Wess. 9* 156a 18ff.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲥⲉ.

6.1.2.3 The non-commuting, non-phoric ⲥⲱⲱϥ: a "particle", exponent of interclausal cohesion [66]: " on the contrary ", " on the other hand ", " rather ", " actually ". The " particle " ⲥⲱⲱϥ can be distinguished from the phoric (within clause extent) ⲥⲱⲱ- in the 3rd person sgl. masculine by criteria of contextual semantics: it is often adversative, and as a rule not inclusive; by its prevalence in certain configurations (mostly interrogative): (*A 1* 113, *A 2* 298) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲱϥ / (*III* 103.7) ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲱⲱϥ / ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ- (*RE 10* 164a 2f., *Young* ⲓⲅ, etc.) / (*RE 11* 15b 1) ⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲉⲕⲁⲥⲉ; of course, also by the significant absence of concord (Polotsky 1961:304 n. 2 = *CP* 408): (*III* 161.13) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲙⲁ ⲛⲉ-ⲗⲟⲟⲗⲉ / (*ibid.* 163.19f.) ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 51.20) ⲕⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲡⲥⲏⲧ / (*ibid.* 56.10) (the deviation and evil of the Jewish congregation) ⲙⲛⲛⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲧⲁⲓ (i.e. of the Christian one) / (*ibid.* 202.18f.) ⲧⲉⲯⲓⲟⲉⲓⲕ ... ⲧⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ. Nevertheless, there is considerable overlapping between the augential, sequential (" ... in his turn ") and non-commutable ⲥⲱⲱϥ. In many instances, the opposition between the macro-syntactic signal (interclausal relator, " anaphoric-regressive conjunct ", referring in a sense to the whole preceding cotext as to a nucleus) and its augential, clause-extent phoric homonym (referring to a noun or 3rd pers. sgl. masc. pronoun) cannot be maintained unless by subjective semasiological interpretation. Some such ambiguous instances: (*Ch.* 169.22ff.) ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲟⲩⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲯⲁϧⲧⲉ ⲡⲉ / (*ibid.* 77.41ff.) (ⲡⲁⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲭⲉ...) ⲡⲁⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲭ- / (*III* 52.7) (ⲡⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲯⲁⲛⲧⲁⲥϥ ⲙⲛⲡⲏⲣⲡ ⲯⲁϧⲣ-ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ) ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ, ⲉϥⲯⲁⲛⲙⲉⲧⲉⲭⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲯⲁϧⲣ-ⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲛⲙⲙⲁϥ / (*A 1* 162) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲧⲱⲥ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲛⲥⲟⲩⲟ ⲡⲉ.

6.1.3 {ⲛⲧⲟ-}: " non-inclusive (often exclusive) non-sequential symmetric confrontation " (" he, for one ", " he insofar as he is concerned ", " he, however " [66]) or reinforcement [67]; the *second* term is characterized.

6.1.3.1 *Post-referate* (immediate, non-immediate) placement.

6.1.3.1.1 Referate in *verb syntagm*: (a) *Actor pronoun* (more rarely, actor noun syntagm): (*A 2* 298) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲉϥⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲅⲓⲡⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ / (*ibid.* 267) (they say what they do not know will or will not

[65] Cf. Polotsky 1961:301 (= *CP* 405).

[66] Cf. Amélineau, *Schenoudi* II p. xciii (on " ⲙⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲕ ⲏ ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲧⲁⲙⲟⲕ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ "): " Cette tournure de phrase est assez souvent employée par Schenoudi, et c'est une manière de parler tout à fait primitive: *les deux personnes y sont toujours opposées l'une à l'autre au sens contraire* " (my italics). As a matter of fact, the actual semantics depend on contextual factors, the address tone and interpersonal environment. This is especially striking in the case of the post-imperatival ⲛⲧⲟⲕ (see below).

[67] This is the " Verstärker " *par excellence* (Schwarze–Steinthal 466 " Verstärkung ", Stern §255 " Hervorhebung "; Czermak 1931 " dynamisch gestärkt ", and so on). Here is indeed the nearest thing to *bona fide* reinforcement, or better *insistence*, since here a true pronoun — prosodically marked as modifier — corroborates another. For pre-Coptic, cf. Hintze 1952: 290f. (" pronominale Hervorhebung "). (Incidentally, in LE — *gr ntf* (etc.) [Erman 1933:§682] " he too " is a striking *clause-final* construction of this augens.)

happen) ⲧⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲕ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ (sim. *ibid.* 382, 521, *III* 128.19f., a recurring expression) / (*ibid.* 292) ⲙⲏ ⲁⲁⲇⲁⲙ ⲧ-ϩⲏⲩ ⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ, ⲏ ⲁⲥⲧ-ϩⲏⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡϩⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 153) ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲣ-ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲉϩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲥⲁ ⲙⲡⲏⲓ ... ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 374) ⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ, ⲉⲛⲁⲓⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*P* 130² 6 ⲡⲍ-ⲡⲏ) ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲉⲛⲓⲙ... ⲙⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲟⲩⲟⲧⲃ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲓ... ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲯⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲓ... ⲙⲏ ⲉⲛⲉⲥⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲉⲧⲁⲓ... / (*III* 21.9f.) ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲙⲡⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲧ ⲯⲁ-ⲡⲟⲟⲩ, ⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ / NB., in *text-initial* position (*III* 44.18) # ⲉⲓϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ϩⲓⲭⲛⲟⲩⲧⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 208.5) # ⲁⲓⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲟⲩⲁ / (*A 1* 122) ⲉⲣⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲭⲉ- / (*Cat.* 42.32) God said: ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ, and not: ⲧⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ / (*III* 156.16) (those who curse their neighbours) ⲉⲩⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ. Additional exx.: *IV* 38.21, *Wess. 9* 95a 20f., *RE 10* 163a 27, *Ch.* 117.8, 156.1ff., 183.57f., *A 1* 123, *A 2* 18, 78, *P* 130² 65 vo, *III* 65.8, 144.1, 201.9, 211.17 and many more; this is undoubtedly the commonest construction of this augens.

(b) *Post-imperatival* {ⲛⲧⲟ=}, more patently than in the case of other augentia, supplies gender-number characterization of the imperative form. Accordingly, the augens is here evidently different in syntactic status and the ensuing function: it is often indistinguishable from the *extraposed independent pronoun* (§6.1.3.3) [68]. (*P* 130¹ 35 ⲣⲙⲅ) ⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲙⲡⲁⲯⲁⲭⲉ / (*Cat.* 42.33) God said: ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ, not: ⲧⲁⲙⲓⲟ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ / (*III* 88.11,14f.) ⲙⲡⲣⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ, ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲩⲁⲛⲁⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ / (*ibid.* 145.10) ⲙⲡⲣⲉⲣ-ⲕⲁⲕⲉⲓ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ / (*IV* 86.8f.) ϩⲕⲟ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲙⲡⲟⲣⲯⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*ibid.* 189.3) ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲙⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲕ-ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ / (*A 1* 78) ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲱ ⲏ ⲭⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ... ⲧⲛⲁⲧ ⲏ ⲧ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ.

6.1.3.1.2 The referate: *expansion suffix-pronoun* (no "direct object"?): (*IV* 119.20f., also 120.4, *P* 130² 61 ⲟⲅ) ϩⲁⲧⲏⲛ ⲏ ϩⲁⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ, a recurring expression / (*P* 131⁵ 23 ro-vo) (if God did not spare the ancients), ⲉⲓⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲧ-ⲥⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ... / (*Ch.* 57.44ff.) ⲏ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲁⲙⲛⲧⲯⲁⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲏⲡ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ', — note the punctuation / (*Wess. 9* 147d 28f.) ⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲯⲓⲛⲉ...

6.1.3.1.3 The referate: *possessor exponent* in the possessive-pronoun syntagm: (*A 1* 69) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲉⲥⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲣ-ⲯⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ, ⲏ ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲱ ⲣ-ⲯⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲥ ⲛⲧⲟ, sim. (*A 1* 122) ⲙⲡⲩⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧⲩ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ *your* temple, vs. the old Temple / (*IV* 207.6f.) ⲡⲁ-ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲛϩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ... ⲡⲁ-ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ. In the two last constructions, the incidence of {ⲛⲧⲟ=} is remarkably rarer than for ϩⲱⲱ=. So too, in the case of the next one.

6.1.3.1.4 The referate: *noun syntagm* (in extraposition): (*III* 109.19ff.) ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲯⲡ-ϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲧⲁⲁⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲙⲙⲩⲥⲧⲏⲣⲓⲟⲛ.

6.1.3.1.5 The referate: *pronominal subject of interrogative Nominal Sentence* (see also §6.1.3.2), interlocutive person only? ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ (*Cat.* 42.14, 43.8) / ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ (*A 1* 210). The augens appears to be here a rhetoricity marker (no answer expected).

6.1.3.2 *Pre-referate placement* [69]: {ⲛⲧⲟ=} colon-second or intercolary. (a) Following ⲛⲑⲉ: (*A 2* 307) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲕⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ / (*IV* 112.19) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲛⲧⲁⲓⲉⲓⲙⲉ / (*Ch.* 144.2f.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲥⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ.

(b) Following the focus modifier in interrogative (focus-initial) focalization patterns (§2.6): (*A 2* 519) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲭⲱⲕ / (*ibid.* 11) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲩⲟⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*P* 130⁵ 24 ⲣⲡⲁ) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲭⲟⲟⲥ / (*Ch.* 169.7f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ..., *vs.* ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ, e.g. *III* 75.12. See §6.1.3.3 on the *augens*: *extraposed indep. pronoun* issue.

[68] Cf. the post-imperatival dependent pronoun in Middle Egyptian (Gardiner §337) and of course comparable constructions in numerous old and modern languages.

[69] Polotsky 1961:310ff. (= *CP* 414 ff.).

(c) The referate: 3rd person *pronominal subject in the Nominal Sentence*: (*A 1* 108) ⲡⲁⳭⲉ ⲡⲁⳭⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉ.

(d) Following various predications (augens or extraposed pronoun?): (*Ch.* 90.8ff.) ϩⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*A 1* 61) ⲙⲛ̀ϩⲧⲟⲣ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 1* 113) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲛ̀ϩⲁⲡ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ... ⲏ ⲭⲉ-ⲙⲛ̀ϩⲁⲡ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ.

6.1.3.3 {ⲛⲧⲟ-}: *augens* vs. *independent pronoun, extraposed*[70]. On the face of it, the independent pronoun — the prosodically full (or unmarked) pronoun *lexeme*[71] — is conspicuous in that, like a noun syntagm, it may constitute a whole colon or be the initial component of one. The *augens* {ⲛⲧⲟ-}, on the other hand, being prosodically marked as dependent (as a modifier?) can only join (or " fasten onto ") and boundary-mark an existing colon. In the reality of the written *parole*, however, there are few cases in which this difference can be detected or formally determined in the text (the more so since the pronoun, like the post-referate augens, occurs as an expansion — an apposed pronominal lexeme, lexicalizing suffix-pronouns). Two especially striking such cases are the appositive phrases '*indep. pron.* + *noun*'[72] and '*indep. pron.* + ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲙⲛ + *noun*/*indep. pron.*'. In the former we find (a) the pronoun serving to introduce a nominal apposition — in complementary distribution with ⲛⲁⳭⲓ-: the *interlocutive* persons are here prevalent, ' ⲛⲧⲟϥ + *noun* ' being uncommon; (b) ' ⲛⲧⲟⲕ + vocative noun '. For the latter, we find naturally only interlocutive persons. Both cola tend to be sentence-final. Polotsky's " rule of thumb"[73], according to which an augential {ⲛⲧⲟ-} occupies second position, whereas the independent pronoun does not, assumes that the augens, like Greek-origin enclitics, is invariably colon-second (*pronoun*: ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ — vs. *augens*: ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ —). Since I believe the augens can (like other enclitics) be colon-final, marking the colon boundary, as well as colon-second; and since the augens (like other native enclitics) may have properties different from the " core " group of Greek-origin ones (§6.0.3), it is questionable whether this distinction is really so tangible. It may imply no more than the variability of the prosodic contour of ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ. Incidentally, I find in Shenoute no clear instance of ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ - (augens), while we do find some of ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ with ⲛⲧⲟϥ, the invariable " particle " (§3.1.3.4), evidently enclitic. It is of course not to be taken for granted that {ⲛⲧⲟ-} and ⲛⲧⲟϥ share the same prosodic properties.

Examples: (a) ' *indep. pron.* + *noun* ': (*P* 130[1] 136 ⲧⲗⲉ) ⲉⲛⲧⲅⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲓⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ / (*P* 131[5] 36 ⲥⲙⲃ) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁϥⲭⲓ-ⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ (sic) / (*A 1* 74) ⲛ̀ⲑⲏⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲉⲏⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ / (*III* 137.25) ...ⲏ ⲉⲓⲯⲁⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲡⲓⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ... / (*ibid.* 13.13f.) ⲡⲁⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ (i.e. " my humble person ") ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲛⲉ-ⲃⲓⲏⲛ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ-ⲛⲉⲕϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ / (*Ch.* 56.29ff.) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ' ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁⲛ-ⲧⲉⲛⲅⲟⲣⲅⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲛ' ⲁ̀ⲛ̀ⲟⲛ' ⲙⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲏⲃ (note the colon-boundary punctuation; also that ϩⲱⲱ- and the *augens* {ⲛⲧⲟ-} are not attested as compatible) / (*III* 60.4f.) ⲭⲁⲱ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲭⲉ-. Additional exx.: *III* 68.9, 70.17f., 96.9f., 134.25, *A 2* 31, etc.

(b) ' ⲛⲧⲟⲕ + *voc. noun* ': (*III* 47.4f.) ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲙⲟⲥⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ... ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲱ ⲛϩⲁⲓⲣⲉⲧⲓⲕⲟⲥ.

(c) ' *indep. pron.* + ⲁⲩⲱ/ⲙⲛ + *indep. pron./noun*: (*III* 185.6f.) ⲁⲛⲱⲭⲛ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 131) ⲧⲱⲕ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ / (*ibid.* 71) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲯⲛⲓ-ⲡⲣⲟⲟⲩⲯ ⲙⲡⲉⲓϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣⲫⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ / (*IV* 38.17f.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲅⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲡⲇⲓⲡⲛⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲥ / (*Ch.* 159-160) ...ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲛⲕⲉⲏⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ / (*ibid.* 42.14ff.) ...ϩⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲕⲟ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ... ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ / (*III* 37.12ff.) ⲟⲩⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲉⲓⲏⲥ ⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲭⲱⲛ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ... / (*ibid.*

[70] Polotsky 1961:295 (= *CP* 399), 309f. (= *CP* 413f.), 311 (= *CP* 415) n. 2.

[71] In Brøndal's term (1943:103), {ⲛⲧⲟ-} is the "*forme substantielle*" of the pronoun, *vs.* the "*formes fonctionnelles*" {-ϥ}, {ϥ-}, {ⲁⲛⲅ-}, {ⲡⲉ} and the augens (modifier pronoun) {ⲛⲧⲟ-}.

[72] Czermak 1931:§259.

[73] 1961:§17.

157.2) ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲙⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲟⲩⲧⲉⲡϩⲗⲁⲟ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛϩⲗⲁⲟⲓ... Cases like (*III* 88.11f.) ⲉⲓⲥϩⲏⲧⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲧⲧ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ- or (*ibid.* 36.24f.) ⲩⲁⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩ... ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲛ- are ambiguous, as are in my opinion ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ= (etc., §6.1.3.2).

6.1.3.4 Non-commuting (non-phoric) ⲛⲧⲟϥ is a "particle"[74], an inter-clausal relator, often (like ϩⲱⲱϥ, §6.1.2.3) accompanied by ⲁⲗⲗⲁ or ⲇⲉ. Indeed, its synchronic relation to the commuting (i.e. analyzable) augens {ⲛⲧⲟ=} is analogous to that of the particle ϩⲱⲱϥ to the augens ϩⲱⲱ=. On the formal level, this is a case of "freezing" or fossilization of the pronoun component, which is the cohesion (within clause-extent) or segment-reference factor, in the unmarked gender, namely the masculine (3rd person sgl.)[75]. This cancels its segment-reference, its phoricity (a cancelling evident in instances of discord). On the functional level, this entails a shift from *intra*-clausal modification to *inter*-clausal relation[76]. Some typical and instructive cases of the particle, distinguishable from the augens (3rd pers. sgl. masc.) mainly by discord and sometimes by placement: (*A 1* 123) ⲟⲩⲱⲡⲏⲣⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ... | ...ⲉϥⲱⲁⲛ- / (*A 2* 540) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ... | ...ⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ... ⲉϥⲛⲁ+-ϭⲟ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ (also *III* 153.10; *vs.* ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ *IV* 195.2; in *A 1* 295 ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ+-ⲛⲟⲩϭⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ, the augens (post-referate) and particle occur in one clause[77]) / (*Rossi 2/3* 27) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ / (*III* 174-5 *passim*) ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲉⲛⲱⲁⲛ—, a recurring expression / (*ibid.* 76.15f.) ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲱⲁϫⲉ ϫⲉ-. Note the following indicative cases of the particle in construction with other elements: ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ, ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ "and moreover", "or even" and the like: *III* 32.1, 62.26, *IV* 80.20, 206.28, 207.25f. etc. (contrast with ⲏ ⲕⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲧⲟϥ, *IV* 46.29); — ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ "at least", *III* 93.24; — ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ is of course ubiquitous (e.g. *III* 145.13); ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ϫⲉ-, *III* 19.8, 186.5, *A 1* 71, *P* 130[1] 139 ⲧⲙⲉ, 130[2] 10 ⲥⲗⲑ etc.; — ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ in rhetorical questions, *A 1* 125, 152, *Wess. 9* 106a 11ff. Consider also the following striking instances of the particle: (*III* 192.19f.) (ⲙⲡⲣϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲥⲛ ⲧⲉⲓⲉⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲗⲏ ϫⲉ-) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲱⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ϫⲉ- / (*IV* 12.10f.) (ⲙⲡⲣⲱ-ⲙⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲧⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ...) ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉⲧⲕⲧⲟ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ / (*ibid.* 13.9) (this is not the occasion to discuss these things) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉϫⲱ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲙⲉⲣⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 15.5) (not in order to slay sinner and innocent alike) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϩ+ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧϥ ⲙⲡϫⲓ-ⲕⲃⲁ / (*ibid.* 16.18f.) ⲉⲱⲁⲩϫⲟⲣⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲥⲓⲧⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲱⲁⲩϫⲉⲣ-ⲥϩⲩⲉ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲥⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ / (*ibid.* 157.21ff.) ⲁⲛ+ⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲱⲣⲉⲕ (sic) ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲉⲛⲧϩϭ... ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲧⲱϭⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲧⲟϥ / (*III* 165.19) ⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲧⲟϥ | ⲱ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲱⲧⲙ: post-imperatival particle ("*doch*", "*donc*", with an additional "rest" prosodic signalling role?). The augens/particle are variant readings in (*IV* 103.1) ⲉⲛⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ, ⲉⲩⲧⲱⲣⲡ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ/ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ.

6.1.4 ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=, ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=, ⲟⲩⲁⲁ=

6.1.4.1 ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=: Polemic, contrastive, exclusive, (less usually) reflexive modification: "... alone", "only...", "... (him)self- (by [his] own agency, with no one's intervention)"[78] (μόνος/μόνον, ἐμ-/σε-/ἑαυτοῦ, κατ' ἰδίαν).

[74] Cf. Polotsky 1961:304 (= *CP* 408), 309f. (= *CP* 413f.), Stern §598, *Dictionary* 232-3.

[75] Compare §5.1.2 above.

[76] Cf. the illuminating parallel in Old and Middle Egyptian, namely *r.f*, *r.k*, *r.i*... the analyzable augens and modifier, where *r-* is the modification, and *-f* the cohesion exponent, *vs. jrf/rf* (the latter, at least in the *Coffin Texts*, a prosodically included alternant), an unanalyzable, invariable particle, "frozen" in the unmarked gender and non-phoric within clause-extent but signalling inter-clausal relation. Celtic parallels are Irish *leis* (3rd sgl. masc. form of the preposition *le-*) and Welsh *ynteu* (old 3rd sgl. masc. "conjunctive" pronoun).

[77] Cf. (particle *vs.* augens/extraposed pronoun) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲉ ⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲑⲏⲣϥ ⲛⲁⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ... ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲣ-ⲩⲁⲩ... (*BLOr.* 3581A 71, No. 202 ⲣⲡⲁ).

[78] Stern §257, Schwarze-Steinthal 345f., 468 ("*allein*" → "*selbst*").

6.1.4.1.0.1 1st sgl. MAYAAT, 2nd sgl. fem. MAYAATE. Two fluctuating bases, MAYAA= (with all persons, sgl. and plural) and MAYA(A)T= (all *plural* persons, but also 3rd sgl. masc. and fem.; 2nd plur. MAYA(A)T-THYTN); acc. to *Dict.* 198a, MAYAT- is Shenoutean.

6.1.4.1.1 MAYAA= in cohesion with a *verb syntagm* (or verb lexeme). (a) With a *single pronominal referate* (NB. This construction is not attested with MMIN MMO=); " adverbal ". *Reflexive*: (*Ch.* 71.6ff.) OY NE+NA+-2HY MMOq... NCATPA+-OCE MAYAAT / (*ibid.* 132.15ff.) NKEMEAOC NTANTAKOOY MAYAAN. "Only": (*A 2* 429, not Sh.) 2WC EPETEWWE NE KATAPCWMA ETPEqMOY MAYAAq NGIPPONHPOC / (*III* 109.16) (TECBW MME) TAI NTAYGM-GOM MAYAAY NWOPC EPOOY NGINENTAYTAAC NAY EEIME... *Non-reflexive*, "alone", "on one's own", "by oneself (also = with no outside help)": (*RE 10* 163a 36f.) NETGEET MAYAAY (cf. *IV* 91.22 PETOYEW-GW MAYAAq, 156.6, etc.) / (*III* 159.12) ...EY2MOOC MAYAAY / (*RE 10* 164b 31f.) ENENTAPNOYTE OYWW ETPEqMOY MAYAAq, opp. to line 33 PNOYTE PENTAqMOOYTq; *cf.* ACMOOYTC MAYAAC *III* 97.19, 204.10 etc. / (*IV* 161.19) NNEPWME qI-PKWWC MAYAAq / (*ibid.* 103.15f.) NNEYKAAY MAYAAY / (*A 2* 31) ENENOYAAB MAYAATN " had we alone been pure ". More exx.: *IV* 107.26, 157.28, *A 1* 135, *A 2* 110 (NTETNWINE AN MAYAATTHYTN " you are not ashamed of yourselves "), 535, etc.

(b) With a double (identical) referate; here the overlapping with MMIN MMO= is more in evidence. Reflexive (contrastive, often " with no outside help "): (*P* 130² 54 TIA) MAPN+-CBW NAN MAYAAN / (*A 2* 190) H EPEIW2ANNHC NAAPNA MMOq MAYAAq / (*Miss.* 284) ...EqOYEW-MOOYTq MAYAAq (also *A 2* 93, 509) / (*A 2* 70) AYCOYWNOY MAYAAY (but not the things they had come for; also *IV* 188.12) / (*A 2* 110) ATETN-MECTE-THYTN MAYAATTHYTN / (*ibid.* 398) EKEIPE MMOK MAYAAK NTAAAIPWPOC / (*A 2* 501, 503) MPPWWPE EKEIPE MMOK NAIKAIOC MAYAAK/NqCYN2ICTA MMOq MAYAAq 2WC AIKAIOC/EqTAMIO MMOq MAYAAq 2WC AIKAIOC / (*RE 10* 164a 27f.) ...EN+ MMON E2PAI EPNOBE MAYAAN / (*Cl. Pr. 21* f.b ro) PEYXPIO ETEPEPOYA POYA XPIO MMOq N2HTq MAYAAq / (*III* 35.20 parall. *Ch.* 130.30ff.) EITAIO AN MMOI MAYAAT / (*A 2* 510) NECOOY... NETO NOYWNW EPOOY MAYAAY / (*ibid.* 529) ...EI2MOOC EIWAXE NMMAI MAYAAT / (*ibid.* 384) ANON PETPHT NCWN MAYAAN; note the recurring expression "TMNTPEqKA-2TH= EPO= MAYAA=" (*III* 176.5f., *IV* 42.4f., 116.8f., *Mun.* 163, *A 1* 219, etc.). This is a very common construction; additional exx. are *III* 168.1f., 221.21f., *IV* 32.12f., 92.6f., *Ch.* 180.15ff., *Wess. 9* 87a 9f., *A 2* 118, 372, 519, etc.

6.1.4.1.2 MAYAA= in cohesion with a *pronoun/noun syntagm*, mostly as a co-focusing modifier referring to the predicate of a Nominal Sentence/Cleft Sentence:

(a) Referate: P-, demonstrative, proper noun: (*A 2* 298) KAIrAP PNOYTE AN MAYAAq... PETO MMNTPE / (*ibid.* 32) AWHK PIAOYMAIOC MAYAAq AN PENTAqMEPE-NWAXE... / (*A 1* 250) TMNTATCWTM MAYAAC TE (scil. TETWOOP MPAAIMWN ETMMAY) / (*ibid.* 251) NAI AE MAYAAY AN NETNMMAq / (*Ryl. Cat.* 32 No. 67 Tqθ) NTOK PE PNOYTE MME MAYAAK: # *subject-copula-predicate* #: " You are the only true God " (perhaps a solemn pro-/acclamatory [" anacletic "] " theological " Nominal Sentence pattern [the ἐγώ εἰμι, σὺ εἶ-type], with both terms of equal informative weight; is NTOK the referate? see (d) below with more exx.); compare the recurring PNOYTE MME MAYAAq (*Wess. 9* 161b 10f., *A 2* 547, *P* 131⁶ 105 ro), PME MAYAAq " the only true One ", " the only One who is of truth " (*Ch.* 59.29ff.; for the masc. determinator see §5.1.1.0.1), POYA MAYAAq PNOYTE (*P* 130⁵ 35 vo) / (*IV* 184.8) TCYNArWrH NNIOYAAI MAYAAY (and not ours) / NB. (*A 2* 354) NA-NETMPWA MAYAAY NE, sim. (TA-NETMPWA MAYAATOY) *A 1* 193. More exx.: *Ch.* 95.11ff., *Wess. 9* 143a 9ff, *A 2* 489, 503, etc. Note here the striking prevalence of adjunctal negation (" not only... ", see §6.1.4.1.4), and the very common and typically Shenoutean EIMHTI E-/EPO= MAYAA= " but for X alone " (with pronoun: *III* 90.3, *Wess. 9* 147b 22f., 162a 9f.; with noun syntagm: *III* 186.28, *IV* 62.11ff., 171.15, 205.21f., *Ch.* 99.55ff., *Wess. 9* 162b 14ff.); this has a native Coptic equivalent in NCA- MAYAA= (*Ch.* 60.40f., 109.24ff.) and WATN- MAYAA= (*ibid.* 18.51f.).

(b) Referate: OY-/2EN- " only... ", " a mere... "; again, usually referring to the predicate of a Nom. Sentence/Cleft Sentence: (*A 2* 167) OYNA MAYAAq PET2MPEC2HT / (*ibid.* 408) OYPAN MAYAAq PETETNTAYO

ⲙⲙⲟϥ " a name, no more " — "ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ" / (*ibid.* 303) ⲉⲛⲉϩⲉⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲉ, ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲛⲟϭ-ⲛⲉϭ ⲡⲉ / (*III* 212.14f.) ϩⲉⲛⲃⲁⲗⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲟⲟⲩⲉ... / (*Ch.* 196.32ff.) ⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩϩⲣⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁⲧⲓⲕⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲧⲥ / (*IV* 107.7f.) ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ϩⲉⲛϩⲓⲟⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ.

(c) Referate: the *possessor exponent in the possessive article*; unlike ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-, not only with a double identical referate. This construction, much rarer than that with ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-, seems to be restricted to *inalienable nouns* (see §1.2.1.1 spec. obs. 1). ⲡⲉⲛϩⲧⲟⲣ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ (*A 2* 143) / ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲥⲁⲣⲝ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (*A 1* 239) / (ϫⲓ-ⲙ/ⲙⲁⲓ-)ⲡⲉⲩⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (etc.), a recurring expression (*III* 127.15, *IV* 153.13f., 172.21, *P* 130² 2 ⲡ: ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲓⲡⲉϥⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲓⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲧϩⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱϥ) / ⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (*IV* 165.10, *Ch.* 56.51f., *III* 193.22, *Wess. 9* 145d 17ff., 171c 31f.) / ⲡⲉⲩⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (*Ch.* 73.11ff., *Wess. 9* 171b 30f., *P* 130⁴ 141 ro) / ⲛⲉⲕⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ (*A 1* 46) / ⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (*III* 98.4f., *IV* 84.8) / ⲧⲁⲙⲛϩⲕⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲧ (*Ch.* 99.30f.) also ⲧⲉⲕⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥⲩⲛⲏ (*III* 90.8f.), ⲧⲉϥⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ (*IV* 89.17f.), ⲡⲉⲛⲟⲩϫⲁⲓ (*A 2* 248).

(d) Referate: *independent pronoun*: (*A 2* 99) ⲱ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲉϩⲉⲛⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲉⲛϩⲁⲡ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲉϥϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ — a pattern hybrid, of a vocative with a Nominal Sentence (predicating ⲛⲧⲟⲕ — or both terms in an acclamatory Nominal Sentence — yet without a formal pronominal subject or copula). Compare *ibid.* 173 ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ, v. l. ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ... See exx. for " ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ " and sim., under (a) above; consider (*RE 10* 161a 30) ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ / (*Wess.* 9 160c 24ff.) ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ / (*RE 11* 16b 9f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲕ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲥ / (*A 1* 283) ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲉⲣ-ⲡⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ / (*A 2* 16) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧϩⲙⲡⲡⲁⲣⲁⲇⲓⲥⲟⲥ / (*III* 13.8).

6.1.4.1.3 *Zero referate*: ' when on (one's) own " — "adnominal-circumstantial modification": (*Wess. 9* 125b 18ff.) (ⲧⲥⲓⲛⲯⲁⲏ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ) ⲧⲁ-ϩⲉⲛⲙⲁ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲥⲣⲁϩⲧ (parall. *IV* 67-8) / (*IV* 52.21f., 116.22) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲯⲁⲏ ⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲥⲁ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ (cf. *ibid.* 146.16, not Shenoute: ϩⲛⲟⲩⲥⲁ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ) / prob. also (*Wess. 9* 113a 27f. after *Mt.* 14:13) — ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲁ ⲛϫⲁⲓⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ. Compare ⲟⲩⲙⲁ ϩⲁⲣⲓϩⲁⲣⲟ- ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (§6.1.5.1 below).

6.1.4.1.4 *The affinity of* ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- *with the negator*: the ⲁⲛ adjunctal negation of ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- ⲁⲛ, see §2.9.1.2.3) is extremely common, as a kind of native Coptic equivalent for ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ (§1.3.11.2.1): " not only ", " not just " [79]; ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- here is, as a rule, ad(pro)nominal. Like its non-cohesive (non-pronominal) counterpart ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ [80], ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- may occur *after* ⲁⲛ, which then negates not the augens but, locally, a sentence constituent including its referate. This analytic difference is however not correlatable to any perceivable difference in meaning. Compare the contrast of ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- ⲁⲛ (augens neg. as adjunct: ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲛ *III* 209.14f., - ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ ⲁⲛ *ibid.* 13.8) *vs.* ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (augens modifying a neg. sentence constituent: - ⲛⲃⲁⲗⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ *Wess. 9* 145b 2ff.), with that of ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ (- ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ *RE 11* 18a 4f.) *vs.* - ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ (ⲯⲁⲣⲉⲡⲯⲱⲥ ⲉⲩⲫⲣⲁⲛⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲉⲭⲛ- *ibid.* 16b 17f.).

6.1.4.2 ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- " - *own* ", " - *self* ", Reflexive, non-contrastive, non-exclusive (ἀυτός, ἑαυτοῦ, ἴδιος) [81].

6.1.4.2.0.1 Morphology. The form ⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟ- is attested in Shenoute (e.g. *A 2* 17), and could give us an etymological clue (no etymology is suggested for this augens): *Young* ⲓⲁ, *P* 130⁵ 40 ⲙⲅ; in one MS (Borg. 189) we find ⲙⲙⲉⲓⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟ- (*A 1* 233, 239, 241, 271) beside the normal ⲙⲙⲓⲛ.

6.1.4.2.1 ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ- in cohesion with *actor* + *expansion* pronoun in a verb syntagm — more rarely, *subject* + *expansion* in a Nom. Sentence. Double identical referate (contrast §6.1.4.1.1): (*A 2* 302) ϥⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 108) ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛϩⲉⲧⲃ-ⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ / (*A 1* 204-5) ⲉⲣⲉⲩⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁ-

[79] Cf. Daumas 1952:128f.
[80] Cf. Kickasola 1975:301 and reff. there; our §1.3.1.1.(b).
[81] Stern §298 (ⲙⲙⲓⲛ " Adverb der Hervorhebung eines Suffixes ").

ⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ / (*Young* 1A) ⲙⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲛ-ⲡⲱⲛ (i.e. ⲡⲉⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ) ⲍⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ / (*A 2* 373) ⲁⲛⲥⲟⲧⲡⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲩⲣⲩⲱⲣⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ / (*III* 170.22f.) ⲟⲩⲏⲍⲁⲍ ⲧ-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 99) ⲛⲧⲁⲭⲥⲟⲕⲟⲩ ⲉⲭⲱⲭ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*RE 10* 162a 8f.) ...ⲉϥⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲁϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* b 14f.) ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲍⲁⲣⲟⲛ / (*A 2* 159) ⲙⲟⲣⲕ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲍⲛⲍⲉⲛⲙⲣⲣⲉ ⲛⲱⲛⲍ / (*P* 130[5] 40 ⲙⲅ) (those who wish) ⲉⲱⲙⲥ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲓ ⲍⲁⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*III* 117.5f.) ⲁⲛⲅ-ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲧⲁⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲁⲛⲅ-ⲟⲩⲕⲁ-ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲓ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ. (Rarely, the referate of ⲙⲙⲓⲛ- ⲙⲙⲟ- is included solely in an agentive phrase: [*A 2* 104] ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲟⲧⲃⲥ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ [and not by others, *contrastive* - an exception] / [*ibid.* 341] ...ⲍⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉⲍⲉⲛⲧⲱⲍ ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ). Additional exx.: *A 2* 370, 373, *III* 64.10f., 202.27f., *IV* 15.11, *Ch.* 97.6ff., 136.8ff., *Wess. 9* 117b 4ff., 131b 6ff., *RE 10* 162b 14f., *Rudnitzky* A 20ff., etc.

6.1.4.2.2 Referate: pronoun/noun syntagm: (a) the *possessor exponent* in the possessive article or pronoun: " (his) own "; as a rule, with a double referate; almost exclusively in delocutive (third) persons; as a rule, with *inalienable nouns*: (*A 1* 112) ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲟⲣϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ (the net) ⲉⲛⲉϥⲟⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 97) ⲍⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥⲧⲁⲁϥ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 213) ...ⲉⲩⲣⲡⲕⲉⲍⲱⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 1.2f.) ⲥⲉⲟⲩⲏⲍ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲩⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ / (*A 2* 368) ⲁϥϥⲓ-ⲡⲉϥⲣⲟⲟⲩⲱ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*RE 10* 164b 35f.) ϥⲣⲍⲟⲩⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲙⲡⲉⲙϥⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*III* 187.10f.) ⲁⲩⲍⲉ ⲍⲛⲧⲉⲩⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ. A marginal overlapping with ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (§6.1.4.1.2c) is evident here. This is the case with ⲍⲧⲟⲣ (ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-, *A 2* 143; ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-, *ViK* 908 ⲥⲛⲅ, *IF* 203 ap. *Dictionary* 727); ⲯⲩⲭⲏ (ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-, *IV* 165.10 ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-, *ibid.* 51.17f.). Other examples: *A 1* 233 (ⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ), 276 (ⲧⲉⲩⲡⲣⲟⲍⲁⲓⲣⲉⲥⲓⲥ), *Ch.* 175.23f. (ⲡⲉϥⲥⲛⲟϥ); note also ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ (*A 1* 292-3, *A 2* 341).

(b) Referate: *determinators*; *independent pronouns* (predicated in Nom. Sentence/Cleft Sentence): extremely rare, compared with the incidence of the exclusive ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (§6.1.4.1.2): (*A 2* 49) ⲧⲛⲁⲭⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲡⲓⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲧⲕⲉⲍⲉ, ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲓ ⲉⲭⲙⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ (" comparing the ship to man himself ") / (*Wess. 9* 156a 4ff.) (ⲡⲏⲣⲡ ⲛⲛⲉⲕⲃⲱ ⲛⲍⲉⲣⲙⲁⲛ) ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ / (*III* 177.5) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ.

6.1.4.3 ⲟⲩⲁⲁ- " only... ", " ... alone " [82] is relatively very rare in Shenoute, functionally overlapping ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-, compatible (in cotext patterns, §6.1.4.4) with ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-, but not with ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ- (to which ⲟⲩⲁⲁ- is etymologically related). The forms of this augens on my files are ⲟⲩⲁⲁ- (3rd person sgl. and plur.), ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲧ- (3rd sgl., 2nd plur.) and ⲟⲩⲁⲧ- (2nd plur.).

(a) *Double referate in verb syntagms* (+ expansion): (*A 1* 73) ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲭⲣⲟⲡ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲧⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*III* 184.15) ...ⲉⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲉⲙⲥ-ⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲧⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ / (*IV* 117.4f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲩ / (*A 2* 503) ...ⲉϥⲧⲁⲓⲟ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲟⲩⲁⲁϥ / (*P* 130[2] 52 ⲧⲑ) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲟⲩⲁⲁϥ / (*B.L.Or.* 8800 18 ⲛⲍ, this line skipped in error in *Ench.* 72, to follow line 38) ⲙⲏ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲁⲕⲉ-ⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲧⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ.

(b) Referate: *noun*, *indep. pronoun* (predicative): (*III* 35.6, parall. *Ch.* 129.36f.) ⲣⲁⲕⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ' ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲧϥ, ⲏ ⲉⲫⲉⲥⲟⲥ / (*Ench.* 71a-b) ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲧⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲃⲧⲉ-ⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲍⲛ ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲁⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ.

6.1.4.4 Cotext patterns: '**ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-** + **ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-**', '**ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-** + **ⲟⲩⲁⲁ-**'. The frequent co-textual pairing collocation of **ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-**, **ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-** and (rarely) **ⲟⲩⲁⲁ-** is a striking stylistic-rhetorical device, one that can be put to diagnostic use. The prevalent arrangement, more than twice as common as the other, is '**ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ-** → **ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ-**': (*A 1* 55) ⲙⲡⲛⲩⲛ-ⲍⲧⲏⲛ ⲍⲁⲣⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲧⲙⲉ, ⲉⲛⲭⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ / (*A 2* 67) ⲩⲁⲧⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲥⲱⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲛⲥⲱⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 241) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲡⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲁⲕⲟϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲍ, ⲡⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲥⲙⲛⲧϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 458 [not Sh.], *III* 224.9f.,17f.) ⲟⲩⲍⲏⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲩⲁⲛⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ. ⲙⲡⲁⲧⲉⲧⲉⲕⲑⲏⲥⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ /

[82] Stern §257, Schwarze-Steinthal 346.

(*IV* 6.18f.) ϵγϭοντ ϵροογ μαγατογ νογηρ... αγω ϵγϲαϩογ ϵροογ μμιν μμοογ / (*Ench.* 85a) νϵνταγ†-χρομ ναγ μαγααγ αγω ϵαγψωπϵ ναγ νϲκανδαλον μμιν μμοογ. In (*III* 146.24f.) αιχιτ νϭονϲ μαγαατ μμιν μμοι we have true clause-internal compatibility. Additional exx : *III* 162.11f.,14ff., 165.16ff., 176.6f., *IV* 51.16ff., *A 1* 305.

'μμιν μμο= → μαγαα=': (*A 1* 219) νιϩβηγϵ ϵτνπλαϲϲϵ μμοογ ϩμπϵνϩητ μμιν μμον αγω τνμντ-ρϵϥκα-ϩτην ϵρον μαγααν / (*A 2* 345) πϵττωβϵ μμοογ πχαχϵ ϵχορογ ϵροογ μμιν μμοογ ϵτρϵγρψρπ-ψωωτ μμοογ μαγααγ / (*Wess. 9* 176a 22ff.) αγτωογν... ϵϩραι ϵχωογ μμιν μμοογ ϵαγτογνοϲ ϵματϵ ϵϩραι ϵχωογ μαγααγ νϩωβ νιμ ϵϥϩοογ / (*P* 130² 1 oz) ϵγχι μμοογ νϭονϲ μμιν μμοογ ϵβολ ϩιτοοτογ μαγ-ααγτογ. Other exx.: *A 1* 17, *A 2* 45, *RE 10* 164b 21ff.

'ογαα= → μμιν μμο=': (*A 2* 504) αϥκτο ννϵϥψαχϵ ϵϩογν ϵροϥ ογααϥ ϵαϥτμαιοϥ μμιν μμοϥ.

Note also the cotextual combination of the two augentia in the following instances: πϵγμτον μμιν μμοογ: πϵγμτον μαγααγ (*A 1* 9.4:7); ανϩ-ογκαταροι μμιν μμοι: ντϵτν-ϩϵνκαταρωτν μαγατθηγτν (*III* 117.6:11); ϵτρϵνρ-ϩηβϵ ναν μαγααν: ϵρψαντμπρωμϵ μκαϩ νϩητ ϵχωϥ μμιν μμοϥ (*ibid.* 213.14:16f.).

6.1.5 Border-line augentia: ϩαριϩαρο=, να= are adjunctal prepositional modifiers pronominally cohesive (" reflexive "), with greater or lesser regularity and predictability of this cohesion. On the whole, however, they are *adverbal* (ad-lexemic) rather than ad(pro)nominal modifiers (although this distinction is gradient, not dichotomic, to judge by " true " augentia).

6.1.5.1 ϩαριϩαρο= " apart ", " on one's own " (*Dictionary* 634). (a) *Adverbal* (*ad-lexemic*) - usually *intransitive verbs*: (*III* 210.9) ...ϵϥνα ϵϥνηγ ϵϥκιμ ϩαριϩαροϥ / (*ibid. ibid.* 18f.) (of the soul) πϵϲπωτ η πϵϲ-κωτϵ ϵϩραι ϩαριϩαροϲ (*v.l.* ϩαροϲ) / (*ibid.* 117.6f.) ...ϵτραϭω ϩαριϩαροι ϵϵιμοκϩ νϩητ (also *IF* 95 apud *Dictionary* 643b) / (*P* 131⁷ 45 ro) νϵϩβηγϵ ϵτϵψψϵ ϵαλγ ϩαριϩαρον / (*P* 131⁵ 16 vo) ϵψχϵ-ογνογα δϵ χω μμοϲ χϵ-†ττββηγ ϩαριϩαροϥ (note the partial personal concord with the referate — " mixed " concord, an inverse kind of " style indirect libre " or " erlebte Rede "). Additional exx.: *A 2* 14, *Ch.* 42.26ff., *P* 130¹ 135 ταϵ.

(b) *Adnominal* (" apart "): (*Wess. 9* 176a 3ff.) (they sinned against him, every one in his own way) τϲγναγωγη νκορϵ ϩαριϩαροϲ... νϵνταγπορνηγϵ ϩαριϩαροογ, νϵνταγϵπιθγμϵι ϵγϵπιθγμια ϩαριϩαροογ αγω νκοογϵ τηρογ ϩαριϩαροογ / (*IV* 167.18f.) (every one to his job), νϵτρ-ϩμμϵ ϩαριϩαροογ, νϵτϲϩι ον ϩαριϩαροογ, μννκοογϵ τηρογ κατατα‡ιϲ.

(c) An instance of *zero referate*? (*IV* 91.14f.) ϵγναψωπϵ νογμα ϩαριϩαροογ μαγααγ (compare §6. 1.4.1.3).

6.1.5.2 να= [83] is a componential modifier of the verb lexeme (*intransitives*, mostly verbs of movement or posture; note one instance of ογωμ intransitivized by να=), which occurs as a rule as *imperative*; να= signals here a special *address tone*, corresponding (in non-imperatives) to a *self-centered* mode of action (*Aktionsart*); this often amounts to perfective-aspect characterization. Note that, like other augentia, να= here also supplies the gender-number characterization [84]. (*A 1* 73) αναχωρϵι νητν / (*A 2* 224) ϵι νητν ννϵτνϩηδονη νχωϩμ / (*ibid.* 398) μοοψϵ νακ ϵβολ / (*III* 192.1, *Ench.* 67a) μοοψϵ νακ ϵϩραι / (*Wess. 9* 139d 12f., 26f.) βωκ νητν ϵρατογ... βωκ νητν ϵμαγ / (*IV* 104.1) ϵγνανκοτκ ναγ ммαγ, jussive. Rarely, we find non-imperative verb-forms: πωτ να= " run *away* " (*IV* 121.27, 171.2f.) and ογωμ να= " eat *away* " (*Quot.* (2) τϵψγχη τωογν ντϵογωμ νϵ ϵβολ ϩμπϵνταρϵϵπιθγμϵι ϵροϥ).

[83] Stern §503. For the prosodic affinity of να= with the augens see Polotsky 1961:313 (= *CP* 417), Emmel 1981 (esp. 137f.).

[84] On the so-called " ethical dative " in Egyptian — a term singularly infelicitous — see Hintze 1950:82ff., with further literature.

6.2 The augens and modification

Beyond the paradigmatic identity of the augens, by itself amply indicative of its modifier status (as are also, without exception, the respective etymologies), we have encountered several instances where, even if formally in ad(pro)nominal cohesion, the augens nevertheless modifies the verb syntagm as a whole or its lexemic component. Two augentia have pronoun-less kindred and functionally close or concurrent associates: ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ for ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= (*A 2* 18 ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩⲧϥ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲉ ⲛⲉϥⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲩϩⲱ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ, the negation to be referred to both clauses / *III* 209.1f. ...ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲛϩ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲛ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲛⲕⲉⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲟⲛ, ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲩⲯⲏ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲧⲉⲧⲟ ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ) and ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ "singly", adnominal, which is (as unit-defining) quite different semantically from ⲟⲩⲁⲁ=. (ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ, like the adnominal ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=, is also a focusing adjunct.) [85]

6.2.1 Focalizability. Most augentia occur in focalization patterns (Ch. 2), where they either co-mark the focus or, more rarely, constitute together with their referate a complex (*pronoun + augens*) focus; this is common with ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=, ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ= and ⲟⲩⲁⲁ= (where I would impressionistically say this accounts for about a third of all occurrences): (*A 2* 238-9) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲯϫⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ / (*ibid.* 99) ⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲟⲕⲟⲩ ⲉϫⲱϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ / (*ibid.* 403) ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲁⲣⲟϥ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉϥⲛⲁϫⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲥⲟⲧⲙⲉϥ / (*ibid.* 547) ⲉⲕⲛⲁⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲕⲣⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ / (*A 1* 305) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲯⲁⲩⲕⲉⲧ-ⲡⲏⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧϥ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ / (*ibid.* 239) ⲉⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲩ-ⲁⲁⲩ / (*Wess. 9* 144c 24ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲡⲉⲑⲃⲃⲓⲟ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲧⲁϥϫⲟⲟⲥ... / (*A 2* 473) ⲉϥⲥⲱⲯ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉϥⲥⲱⲯ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲟⲩⲁⲁϥ. More exx.: *III* 78.23f., 165.16ff., *IV* 38.22f., 96.13,17, *RE 11* 17a 1, *Ch.* 28.32ff., 72.49ff., 76.52ff., 109.36ff., *Wess. 9* 110b 7ff., etc. [86]. Compare also the same augentia as co-focal in the "nominal" Cleft Sentence (§§6.1.4.1.2, 6.1.4.2.2): (*A 1* 251) ⲛⲁⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲙⲙⲁϥ / (*III* 177.5) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲉⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲕⲁⲣⲡⲟⲥ.

6.3 Concluding note: on the functional essence of the augens

To be precise, one must distinguish between the roles of the *pronominal* and *lexemic* components of the augens: the former serves the purpose of cohesion, gender-number characterization (after the imperative and zero referates) — this component is *syntagmatically* operative. The lexemic component, on the other hand, is paradigmatically assignable [87]:

• *distinctive confrontation*: Exclusive		*distinctive confrontation*: Inclusive
marked (+)	ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=	ϩⲱⲱ=
neutral (Ø)	ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=	{ⲛⲧⲟ=}

totality: Integral

marked (+)	ⲧⲏⲣ=
neutral (Ø)	— ⲛⲓⲙ (?)

{ⲛⲧⲟ=} is, beyond doubt, the most interesting of the group. In the first place, its pronominal and lexemic components *coincide* — it is after all the pronominal lexeme. (Or is ⲛⲧⲟ- to be taken as a lexemic isolable constituent? This would still leave us with the unanalyzable first persons.) Secondly, it alone

[85] Consider however *NHC* VII 125.6 *vs.* line 25f. ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ ⲟⲩⲁⲁϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲟⲛϩ *vs.* ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲡⲛⲉⲩⲙⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲧ ⲉϥⲟⲛϩ. Note also "adverbial" ϩⲱⲱ= in *Rom.* 11:21 (translating κατὰ φύσιν); see *Dictionary* 651b.

[86] On the other hand, ϩⲱⲱ= occurs as adjunct to the theme/topic: (*IV* 195.4) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲩⲯⲁϫⲉ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲁⲛ / (*Ch.* 106.25ff.) ⲉⲓⲟⲛϩ ϩⲱⲱⲧ' ⲉⲧⲉϩⲣⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲟⲛⲁϫⲟⲥ, but also co-focally: (*III* 56.14) ⲛⲧⲟⲥ ϩⲱⲱⲥ ⲉⲥⲙⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ, foc. pattern (3), §2.3.2.

[87] The prevalence of - ϩⲱⲱ= ⲟⲛ - compared with -ⲁⲉ {ⲛⲧⲟ=} is instructive for the semantics of the augens; so also is the fact that whereas ϩⲱⲱ= is invariably the *second term* in the cotextual patterning, {ⲛⲧⲟ=} is either first or second (although as the second term — in anaphoric contrast — it is undoubtedly more frequent).

of all augentia serves to mark a *prominent topic* (§2.0.2.1) [88]: like other well-known syntactic phenomena, augential modification (esp. by {NTO-}) constitutes an *option of staging* (§2.0.2.0.1) and a means of information structuring. The augens is essentially a dialogue, not narration element (first-person egocentric " reporting " narration excepted). It is not *per se* " emphasizing "(§2.0.2.2), although it does often play a contributive part in focalization: *confrontation* does after all cover a considerable section of the spectrum of inter-clausal cotextual relations, for which *focalization* is in a way the archetypal functional category.

[88] The prominent topic — also marked by extraposition (§6.0.1) — should be kept distinct from the marked logical predicate (rheme/focus), *pace* Callender 1970:186ff.

CHAPTER 7

THE CONJUNCTIVE: AN N-MARKED CONJUGATED ADNEXAL MODIFIER

7.0.1 Research-historical: grammatical opinion
7.0.2 A morphological note on the Shenoutean conjunctive
7.1 Categorial and macro-syntactic characterization of the conjunctive
7.1.1 A non-initial, inherently satellital verb-form: a modifier
7.1.2 Verbal nucleus: the conjunctive a categorizable, atemporal, amodal form; group categorization; micro-/sub-coordination; ⲁⲩⲱ *vs.* Ø-; compatibilities; text-grammatical properties; paradigms
7.1.3 Non-verbal nucleus: the conjunctive an *adnexal* (rhematic) modification form
7.2 Cotext patterns and paradigms - the VERBAL NUCLEUS
7.2.1.1 Nucleus: THE IMPERATIVE SYSTEM: imperative, rhetorical jussive (ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ-/ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉϥ-), preceptive jussive (ⲉϥⲛⲁ-/ⲛⲛⲉϥ-), future III
7.2.1.1.5 The post-imperatival paradigm
7.2.1.2 Nucleus: OPTATIVE (ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ/ⲛⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ); paradigms
7.2.1.3 Nucleus: FINAL/CONSECUTIVE CONJUNCTIONAL SYNTAGMS; paradigms
7.2.2 Nucleus: EXTRATEMPORAL PREDICATIONS: ⲯⲁϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ/ⲙⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ, ⲯⲁⲛⲧϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ
7.2.3 Nucleus: PRESENT-BASED FUTURE (ϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ)
7.2.4 Nucleus: PROTATIC SYNTAGMS AND VERB FORMS
7.2.4.1 Nucleus: ATEMPORAL, GENERIC VERB FORMS: relative-protatic present, parabolic perfect
7.2.5 Nucleus: APERSONAL/PERSONAL VERB NOMINALIZATIONS: the infinitives; the generic person; paradigms
7.2.6 The rhetorical apodotic-retrospective role of the conjunctive; poorly documented or inadequately established functions
7.3 The NON-VERBAL NUCLEUS: adnexal (rhematic) conjunctive
7.3.1 Nucleus: PREDICATIVE MODIFIER
7.3.1.1 "Conjunctional" modifier + conjunctive syntagms
7.3.2 Nucleus: PREDICATIVE NOUN (adnominal conjunctive)
7.3.3 Nucleus: MISCELLANEOUS PREDICATIVE SYNTAGMS OR EXPRESSIONS
7.4 Excursus: the conjunctive and "that"-forms in functional assignment

7.0.1 RESEARCH-HISTORICAL: GRAMMATICAL OPINION

The conjunctive is, I believe, the most intriguing of Coptic verb forms: with the circumstantial (§7.1.3) it is probably the most important systemically. While its general semasiological value is fairly well understood, we are in the dark regarding its true nature, its syntagmatic and paradigmatic relationships, a comprehensive theory to cover all its functions. We know approximately *what* the conjunctive does environmentally; we do not understand its mechanism, nor its own value. Whereas the pre-Coptic (esp. Late Egyptian) conjunctive has had to date no less than *nine* monographs devoted to it (by Gardiner, Mattha, Černý, Wente, Sauneron, Lichtheim, Volten, Callender and Borghouts, in that order), not to

mention lengthy grammar and textbook discussions, we have had none for Coptic. This is unfortunate and redolent of the prevailing complacency about "familiar" Coptic grammatical categories. One suspects that giving the form a traditional "Indo-European name" has to some extent blunted the need for a fresh, unbiased examination, as well as prejudiced the appreciation of the function of this form, unconsciously and perhaps inevitably (witness the *modal* overtones rashly attributed to the Coptic conjunctive). In Egyptian, on the other hand, the strangeness has not been so damped ("conjunctive" in Egyptian is second- or third-hand terminological transference). Whoever hopes to find a consistent, integral systemic picture in the grammarians' descriptions [1] is due for a disappointment. He will have to become reconciled to the unaccounted-for, functionally dual nature of the form — "conjunctival" ("continuing") and "subjunctival" roles; to statements in terms of ellipsis, of various whims of this peculiar form, not to mention the fragmentated account: no taxonomy or descriptive statements in terms of functional load, compatibilities and generally *système de valeur* can be found. Corpus-specific statements are rare. Stern's account is, as usual, the most careful and reliable, and his presentation of the data is precise and cannot be faulted, even if his interpretation of them is sometimes open to objection. A paraphrase (in the original terminology) of the average impression would run as follows (no criticism is offered at this point): the conjunctive is a subordinated-clause form, serving as a coordinated ("copulative") continuation of preceding verb forms — it can be introduced by such conjunctions as **AYW, H, OYTE, ΛΛΛ.** Being too weak to constitute an autonomous sentence, it connects mostly subject-identical sentences to the main verb-form. In Bohairic, and to a lesser degree in Sahidic, it also has a "subjunctive" role [2]. It may have various modal values ("subjective", final-consecutive, with or without suitable conjunctions). In independent status, it expresses modal, deliberative or futuric nuances of will or obligation. It can also be dependent upon a Nominal Sentence [3]; it can be adnominal [4]. Callender's pan-chronic remarks (1973a:69ff) call for special attention. In the framework of a generative model, he says, the conjunctive can be handled in a "natural" way ("a natural explanation", p. 72). This is by no means a *description*, let alone a categorial or role appraisal, but one possible schematization of conjunctive constructions (meant to illustrate the advantages of a generative model). Although helpful (if one subscribes to, and deems instructive, "deep structure" realities), this presentation does not in any way add to our understanding of the Coptic system of grammar.

While I do not offer here a critical appraisal of the above statements — my own stand will be made clear in the course of the following paragraphs — I must point out that a careful examination of the examples on which they are based leads one to reject the modal functions alleged for the conjunctive. Moreover, there is no doubt that a dialect-internal, or better corpus-based investigation would make for better insight into the issues of **AYW** - *vs.* Ø-, **TA**⁻ *vs.* **NTA**⁻ in the 1st person sgl., and the functioning and compatibilities [5] of the form.

[1] Stern §§440ff., 595; Steindorff 1951:§§366-372, 386; Till §§321ff., 366, 401, 416, 485, etc.

[2] On this "subjunctive" role (mainly in the 1st person) see Stern §§442-6, Till 1928:§139d, Steindorff 1951:174, Till §421, Nagel 1969b:§55b; often it is obvious that the alleged modal value stems from misinterpretation of the construction or from the "quicksands of translation".

[3] Till 1928:§139d.

[4] A most important observation (see §7.3.2 below). However, the sole example offered by Till and Steindorff (*Job* 10:21 **MΠA+BWK ЄΠMA NTATMCOTT**) is not conclusive, since the conjunctive may be taken (in sense, even if not formally) to continue **MΠA+**⁻ (cf. the Hebrew בטרם אלך ולא אשוב, Greek ὅθεν οὐκ ἀναστρέψω).

[5] Most present-tense examples turn out to be either of the *protatic* circ. present (our §7.2.4) or non-actual, non-temporal or futuric (predicating **NHY**). Stern's one example of the conjunctive continuing past tense (*Act.* 27:33) is emended into the circ. present (so Thompson); the conjunctive in Steindorff's example (*Joh.* 12:5) is *apodotic* rather than continuative (our §7.2.6). Nagel's exx. of the "independent" conjunctive in *NHC* II (1969b:453) may all be interpreted as apodotic or governed by **H** (our §7.3.1.1; on the issue of the "independent" conj., cf. Polotsky 1962b:479 = *CP* 270). His "final" conjunctive (p. 455) is in fact part of the discontinuous '**ΧЄKAAC**... *conjunctive*' syntagm. The conjunctive allegedly continuing the perfect (p. 455) is not conclusive, and can be referred to **N**+*infinitive*.

7.0.2 A MORPHOLOGICAL NOTE ON THE SHENOUTEAN CONJUNCTIVE. But for occasional instances of transmission of a phonetic actualization of the conjunctive, with the supralinear stroke in its base replaced by the vowel ϵ: ⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (e.g. in *IV* 60.22), Shenoute's conjunctive has the classical Sahidic morphology. For the first person singular [6], ⲛⲧⲁ- is by far the more common form (over thirty occurrences in *Ch.* and *L*); ⲧⲁ- is attested almost exclusively in the post-imperative paradigm (§7.2.1.1.1) where the conjunctive has assumed part of the functional load of the classical ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (§7.2.1.1.5); ⲧⲁ- is thus specialized, at the overlap point of the two post-imperatival categories [7], while ⲛⲧⲁ- has been generalized; at any rate, the two are not mere variants in Shenoute [8].

7.1 CATEGORIAL AND MACRO-SYNTACTIC CHARACTERIZATION OF THE CONJUNCTIVE

7.1.1 A NON-INITIAL, INHERENTLY SATELLITAL VERB-FORM: A MODIFIER. The Coptic conjunctive is a non-autonomous finite Tripartite Clause conjugation form. Non-initial by nature, it is a specific modifier verb expanding (a) a verbal nucleus (§7.1.2, 7.2), (b) a non-verbal nucleus (other modifiers or nouns, often in predicative status; §§7.1.3, 7.3). The homonymity of its base (ⲛ-, prenominal and pre-zero allomorph ⲛⲧϵ-) with ⲛ-, the modifier marker *par excellence*, is in all probability meaningful (its pre-Coptic forms notwithstanding [9]); so is its synchronically peculiar personal morphology (the only Tripartite Conjugation base not followed by a " suffix "-paradigm pronoun). Except for the 1st person singular, this is homonymic with the Bipartite Pattern pronominal actor. This, no less than the base of the conjunctive, must be a constituent part of its distinctive feature, symptomizing its functional speciality as an *inductible, categorizable* form. More on the correlation of its formal composition and functional value — *adnexal modification* — see §7.1.3 below.

7.1.2 THE VERBAL NUCLEUS: THE CONJUNCTIVE A CATEGORIZABLE, ATEMPORAL, AMODAL FORM; GROUP CATEGORIZATION; MICRO-/SUB-COORDINATION; ⲁⲩⲱ VS. Ø-; COMPATIBILITIES; TEXT-GRAMMATICAL PROPERTIES; PARADIGMS

7.1.2.1 The conjunctive is a *categorizable verb-form*, that is not only retro-dependent but impressed with the characteristics of the nuclear form expressed by a conjugation base, converter or any other formal indications of tense, mode or syntactic status. Of its own, the conjunctive has only (beside the ability to predicate a verb lexeme) the exponents of person (nom. and pronominal actors) and negation categories; yet even for those the conjunctive may still be induced by the nuclear verb: this is signalled by the negative fact of non-assertion (zero) of negation, by the junctural linkage of pronominal-personal concord. By the assertion of negation (ⲧⲙ in its proper slot [10]), or by the disruption of the said concord for the (pro)nominal actor, the conjunctive is auto-categorized for negation and person respectively. The conjunctive is not tense/mode-indifferent, but " co-qualifiable " [11]. By itself *unmarked* for these categories, it is marked *cotextually*, with the effect of constituting, together with its nuclear verb, a specific

[6] See POLOTSKY 1944:10f. (= *CP* 115f.).

[7] POLOTSKY 1944:1ff. (= *CP* 106ff.), 1950:87ff. (= *CP* 222ff.).

[8] Variation status for ⲛⲧⲁ-/ⲧⲁ- in Shenoute immediately identifies the non-Shenoutean grammatical system of quotation (*III* 56.10f., 111.14f., *IV* 26.22f., *Ch.* 193.7ff. etc.).

[9] Diachronically, the original form of the conjunctive (acc. to Gardiner's thesis), *ḥn'-ntf-sḏm*, is analyzable as a preposition governing an (*actor* + *verb*) nexus, with its modifier status evident (*ḥn'* features in all reconstructions. See BORGHOUTS 1979 notes 2 and 9).

[10] I have no example of the *nucleus - conjunctive* dependency being adjunct-negated by ⲁⲛ (cf. §2.9.1.2.3 for other clause-conjugation adjuncts. In *I Cor.* 4:19, ⲁⲛ negates another modifier).

[11] Cf. GONDA 1957:19.

closely knit subtextual unit, its cohesion signalled by syncategorization [12]: the conjunctive represents [13] the nuclear verb in the linear sequence, with reduced characterization. The conjunctive extends, evolves, unravels and contentualizes the nuclear notion, or attaches [14] and often serializes additional verbal notions, in a construction that is paradigmatically related to (and in contrastive analysis is comparable with) a *coordinated* complex.

7.1.2.2 The ' *verb - conjunctive* ' dependence does not strictly fit the usual narrow definition of coordination (cf. Dik 1972:25ff.: " the coordinated terms are equivalent as to grammatical function and bound together at the same level of grammatical hierarchy " [15]) since the two terms are syntactically not on a par. Moreover, their attachment may be either paratactic-asyndetic (juxtaposed) or syndetic, with ⲁⲩⲱ, ⲏ (ⲛⲧⲟϥ), ⲁⲗⲗⲁ " mediating " between them. (These elements are hierarchically in the conjunctive immediate-constituent: they are its premodifiers [§1.1.2.2]. The pre-modification of the conjunctive is not less free than for other verb clauses; it may be fairly extensive, making it — together with intercalations and expansions of the nucleus — often difficult at first sight to refer the conjunctive to its nucleus. Some striking exx. are *IV* 74.4ff., 92.10ff. Particles too, like ⲇⲉ/ⲙⲉⲛ and ⲛⲧⲟϥ clearly belong in the conjunctive clause. Whatever the hierarchic status of coordinators in other languages [16], I cannot see any cogent reason for assigning the Coptic ones as a separate IC in the analytic model; ⲁⲩⲱ, even if regularly used in a coordinating role, is for all that a premodifier [§1.3.10] [17].) The opposition between syndetic and asyndetic conjunctives is complicated, being regulated by numerous juncture-significant parameters: concord/discord of person, of negation; extent of intercalation between nucleus and conjunctive. In the main paragraphs below, I shall adduce specific data on the distribution of both constructions. However, it is possible to present the - ⲁⲩⲱ - vs. -Ø- opposition in the *nucleus - conjunctive* syntagm as a binary privative one, and, by referring to its paradigmatic relationship with the real coordinative syntagm (' *verb* + ⲁⲩⲱ + *verb* '), resolve its function: MICRO-COORDINATION (hereafter symbolized ⟷; - ⲁⲩⲱ - , - ⲏ - , - ⲁⲗⲗⲁ - etc.; also *variant*, non-significant absence [–] of ⲁⲩⲱ) vs. SUBCOORDINATION (+→, Ø-, ⲁⲩⲱ excluded): the former *non-vectorial*, undirected, symmetric - reciprocal, antithetic, accumulative, reversible [18], synonymous (here we find the figure-like repetition of lexemes) and serializing [19]; the latter *vectorial*, directed, irreversible [20]. Whereas

[12] Among comparable " *Gruppenflexion* " (or " suspended affixation ") cases in other languages, one recalls the Turkish (Altaic) gerund or *converb* (esp. the *-ip* gerund, called by Kononov the " conjunctive gerund "); it is, however, not finite — with the progressive reduction in characterization being more drastic — and cannot be concatenated in a series of converbs; the *Amharic* gerund, being finite, is perhaps a closer parallel (see Lohmann 1965:225ff.; G. Goldenberg, *BSOAS* 40:489ff., 1977 for the terminological history of the Ethiopian forms). Compare also the well-known " narrative infinitives " in various languages (Latin, Romance languages [cf. Regula 1951:157ff.], Celtic languages, Semitic languages).

[13] " *Ablösend* " (" continuing + replacing ", " relieving ") seems to have been a keyword in the early descriptions (Stern §447, p. 277, Steinthal–Misteli 1893:298f.); cf. Tobler 1886:216ff. (on direct speech relieving indirect: " [ein Modus] der den Gedanken fortsetzt und weiterführt und, besonders wenn das Subjekt dasselbe bleibt, sämmtliche Verbalformen ablösen kann ").

[14] Cf. Steinthal–Misteli's " *adjunctiv* " (1893:298f.).

[15] Cf. Sandmann 1954:208ff. (" interchangeability, morphological uniformity, common relationship to a third element "). The ' *verb* + *conjunctive* ' complex does enter Bally's broader definition of coordination (1950:§68f.).

[16] Cf. Dik 1972:52ff. for the two views on the hierarchic structure of coordination. I cannot see how one can be dogmatic on this point in general, seeing this is a decided language-specific issue. On English *and*, though, I would agree with Wells, De Groot and others (against Blümel, Bloomfield and others, incl. Dik himself) assigning *and* in " *he huffed and he puffed* " to the second IC, rather than regarding it as a third intermediating constituent (see reff. in Dik *loc. cit.*).

[17] Compare in Late Egyptian *ḥr* and *m-mjtt* preceding the conjunctive (Borghouts 1979:16 n. 19). Note that the junction of nucleus and conjunctive is by no means the same as between two conjunctives in a series — even though ⲁⲩⲱ, ⲏ etc. do occur in both slots. I concentrate here on the former; the latter is comparatively uninteresting, not differing (acc. to my analysis) from coordinated adjuncts.

[18] Cf. the Sanskrit *itaretayoga* and *samuccaya* dependencies (Gonda 1957:59f.).

[19] Not catalogic, but rather as " *enumerative Redeweise* " (Havers 1931:15, 114, 154, 203; *IF* 45:229-251, 1927) breaking the action up into stages and presenting them one by one.

the former differs from true coordination only in terms of closer juncture realized by the link of syncategorization [21], the latter may express logical nuances of purpose, consequence, circumstance and content, which would (in contrastive consideration) correspond to a *hypotactic* rather than paratactic manner of expression [22].

In the following pages, we shall observe the varying *categorization contour* of the individual patterns, displaying data regarding *personal maintenance* (i. e. pronominal concord [23]), *negation syncategorization* (negative → affirmative), *negation encategorization* (affirmative/negative nucleus → negative conjunctive, not resuming the nuclear negation) [24], *negation maintenance* (neg. nucleus → neg. conjunctive, resuming the nuclear negation) and the special *personal encategorization* (§7.2.5, *infinitive + conjunctive*). All must be correlated with the formal/functional distinction - ⲁⲩⲱ - *vs.* -Ø- (⟷ *vs.* +→) [25]; this information in fact constitutes the distinctive "profile" of each pattern.

7.1.2.3 *Compatiblities.* The nucleus verb may consist of (a) an *extratemporal* [26] or merely contextually temporal verb-form (ϣⲁϥ-/ⲙⲉϥ-, ϣⲁⲛⲧϥ-, ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥ-, protatic syntagms, infinitive, ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ) or (b) *modal* verb-forms (imperatives, optative [alias "Third Future"]) or (c) the present-based "imminent" future (— ⲛⲁ-), a complex temporal function or (d) the perfect and present tenses in certain *non-temporal* roles. The conjunctive is compatible only with a transcending, temporally non-specific, equivocal, non-actual, uncharacterized or irrelevant frame of reference.

7.1.2.4 On the text-grammatical level, the conjunctive (again, compatible with [rhetorical] dialogue and exposition, not with narrative texture and its catalogic, time-axis serialization) constitutes with its nucleus a specific subtextual unit, comparable (esp. in the case of a concatenation of multiple conjunctive

[20] Not necessarily in cases of "irreversible binomial" collocations (MALKIEL 1959) like "live and die", "eat and drink" (see §7.2.1.1.1 and *passim* for the latter collocation in Coptic).

[21] Other comparable types of the group-categorization link (§6.0.2): the narrative ⲛⲧⲁ- (rel.) ⲁϥ- (*IV* 40.3), ⲛⲧⲁⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ (Sec. Perf.) ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲁⲁⲛ ⲛⲙⲡϣⲁ... (*III* 73.5f.), ⲛⲉⲧⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧϩⲁⲣⲉϩ (*IV* 21.10); they are paradigmatically relatable to the 'verb + *conjunctive*' syntagm.

[22] The "subjunctive" function of the conjunctive, diachronically regarded (by STEINTHAL–MISTELI 1893:298) as the last phase of a transition from a coordinative "adjunctive" to a subordinative role, as a "parataxis" (in the sense of "conjunctionless hypotaxis").

[23] Not necessarily simple concord: in cases like (ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ) → ⲛⲧⲛ- (*IV* 32.14f.) or (ⲁⲁⲁⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ⲏ ϩⲁⲧⲛⲑⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ) → ⲛⲥⲉ- (*ibid.* 35.27f.) the concord is no less in evidence than in a straighforward repetition of the pronoun.

[24] *Affirmative* encategorization is marked by premodifiers such as ⲁⲗⲗⲁ (e.g. *III* 31.4f.).

[25] A frontal extraposition to the actor of the conjunctive as a rule conditions ⲁⲩⲱ, overruling and neutralizing the *micro-subcoordination* opposition (e.g. *III* 139.17f., *IV* 66.8ff.). This reduces the tridimensional opposition (a) to a bidimensional one (b) (consider however the construction in *A 1* 135-6, *III* 220.2ff.).

[26] KOSCHMIEDER 1965:13ff.25, 31 (of the Turkish aorist). Cf. POLOTSKY 1959:460 (= *CP* 237) n. 1.

forms) with our (Western) paragraph — a polyarthric unit with unmistakable initial and terminal signals and exponents of cohesion, which (at the thematic level) sets forth and " embroiders " [27] a specific topic.

7.1.3 The non-verbal nucleus. It is somewhat more difficult to conceive of the conjunctive as expanding any element but the verb; yet this construction is most important, a key pattern furnishing a clue to the functional mystery of the form. On first analysis, here too the nucleus is predicative (in its limited extent): a predicate noun (**ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ (ⲡⲉ), ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓⲍⲉ (ⲧⲉ)** etc.) with the conjunctive both an expansion and (in the larger complex) a sentence-constituent in its own right; a modifier (mostly of Greek origin; **ⲙⲟⲣⲓⲥ, ⲍⲱⲥⲧⲉ, ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ, ⲕⲁⲛ, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ** etc.) — here the conjunctive may be taken to expand (also contentualize) the modifier, predicative in a single-term clause (# *modifier*-Ø #, §1.2.1.3.2). [28] — yet also having a role of sentence-constituent in the larger extent of *modifier* + *conjunctive;* a modifier in another predicative pattern (**ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ (ⲡⲉ),** §1.2.1.2); other predicative (sometimes modifier-equivalent) syntagms or expressions: **ⲙⲉⲯⲁ=(ⲕ)** " perhaps ", " (you) do not know "; **ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-** " it is something else... ", **ⲙⲏ ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ** " God forbid ", **ⲍⲁⲙⲟⲓ** " would that ", **(ⲛⲉ)ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ (ⲡⲉ)** " it (were) better ". (The individual nuclei will be studied in paradigmatic detail below, with the paradigms of substitutables for the conjunctive.)

7.1.3.1 As noted, all these nuclei can be shown to be, *in their own extent*, predicative. In terms of overall *information-structure*, however (FSP, §2.0.2.3) careful evaluation shows them to be essential first-position sentence constituents — *themes* — with the conjunctive the second, *rhematic* constituent; the relationship between the nucleus and the conjunctive is *nexal* in addition to its being *expansional.* This analysis is, I believe, equally applicable to the adverbal conjunctive: the *verb - conjunctive* dependency is complex, twofold, combining a *nexal* relationship with a *satellital* (expansional) one. That the two dependencies are not by any means incompatible [29] is amply illustrated by the other important *adnexal* modifier sentence-form in Coptic, namely the CIRCUMSTANTIAL [30] — in fact, the conjunctive is often in paradigmatic association with the circumstantial, both adnominally [31], adverbally, and occasionally in ad-modifier status. Both circumstantial and conjunctive are " *wortbezogen* ", participial (μετοχή-) forms, in the sense of " sharing ", " participation ", " cooperative union " (" Teilhabe eines Vorgangs oder Zustands an einem anderen " [32]) of two predication-carrying clauses in an ultraclausal predication com-

[27] Borghouts 1979:16, 24.

[28] This is Tesnière's analysis (1965:188f.) of such French constructions as " *heureusement que...* ", " *probablement que...* " (see Tobler 1886:51-4, 102f., for two comparable *que*-constructions in Old French). Comparable are Israeli Hebrew *še*-clauses after " impersonals " (Rosén 1977:113-5; a special part of speech, definable by this pattern as a " predicative constituent of a sentence nucleus ": *kᵉdáy še-* " it is advisable that... ", *mutár/asúr še-* " it is allowed/forbidden... "; the *še-* clause is the personal alternant of the infinitive). See also Rosén 1979:462f.). I would not term the Coptic nuclei " impersonal ", which has a specific morphological and morphosyntactic Indo-European connotation, but rather define them as " non-verbal elements adnexally expanded by the conjunctive ".

[29] Cf. Ch. 2 (p. 81) on *III* 191.21ff. (cf. Barri 1978).

[30] Shisha-Halevy 1972:§0.4 and *passim*, 1976a:47, 1976c:134 n. 3.

[31] The interesting *adnominal paradigm*, which has yet to be further investigated, is:

(NOUN SYNTAGM)	*relative* (attributive)	neutralized after non-ⲡ determination
	circumstantial (adnexal)	
	conjunctive (adnexal, micro/subcoordinating, contentualizing)	
	ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- (contentualizing)	
	ⲭⲉ- (generic, " such... as ")	

See further in §7.4 below.

[32] Lohmann (1965:224ff.) studies this category in languages of different type.

plex (*Satzgefüge*). Beyond the basic semasiological differences [33] between the two verbal modifiers, we note the following interrelated structural ones:

Circumstantial	Conjunctive
(a) "Converter": a "vertical", transsecting syntactic category; self-characterizing for grammatical categories.	Non-transsecting. Unmarked for most grammatical categories.
(b) With no significant syncategorization.	In syncategorization cohesion.
(c) Also initial.	Non-initial.
(d) Focalizable. Characteristically predicative complementation.	Non-focalizable. Uncharacteristically pred. complementation.

Notes. (b) The circumstantial *is* syncategorized (for person) when it is a predicative complement of auxiliary "descriptive" verbs (ⲁϥⲁⲟ ⲉϥ-, ⲁϥⲟⲩⲱ ⲉϥ-), in suppletive periphrases (ⲁϥϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥ-) [34] or generally after verbs "of incomplete predication". (c) It is an open question whether the conjunctive can occur in absolutely initial position (i.e. after ⲁⲛⲉ- or in text-initial position). The view that it is found initially is held by most grammarians: I do not share this view, which is not corroborated by Shenoutean usage. (d) I do not know of any unequivocal instance of the conjunctive focalized by the Second Tense or any other topicalization form, yet some exx. indicate that the conjunctive can complement verbs "of incomplete predication", in paradigm with the more usual circumstantial (ⲥⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ/ⲉⲥϣⲁⲛϣⲱⲡⲉ + *conjunctive*, exx. below).

Needless to say, point (a) subsumes the elementary difference between a *converted* syntagm and a "basic" (i.e. unconverted — but, in our case, *unconvertible*) "conjugation-form" syntagm; this distinction makes for others, in the negativing procedure and other syntactic phenomena. But in this respect it will not do to be too dogmatic: one realizes, with some surprise, that here the morphological oddity of our form somehow falls into place. Historically, this is the only Tripartite Pattern form the base of which does not go back to an auxiliary-verb nucleus or to *jw*-. Synchronically, it is the only Tripartite Pattern form in which the actor-expression is not a suffix pronoun, but a paradigm coincident with that of the prefix pronouns (except for the 1st person sgl. which, it may be argued, is "heteroclitic", suppletively imported from ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ). Putting two and two together, it may perhaps not be rash to make the following suggestions:

(a) The conjunctive characteristic ⲛ/ⲛⲧⲉ occupies an intermediate position between a conjugation base and a converter (in the micro- and macro-syntactic sense) [35].

(b) Whereas the first IC-analysis of all other Tripartite Pattern forms is

$$\overbrace{\textit{conjugation base} + \textit{actor suffix}}^{\text{(n u c l e u s ["pro-verb"; §5.4])}} \Big] \; \textit{verb lexeme} \quad \underset{\text{(s a t e l l i t e)}}{\text{("infinitive")}}$$

[33] These are as a matter of fact not as pronounced as might be expected: the circumstantial too is often "coordinative" (consider ⲉϥ- *III* 13.15, 203.19f., and especially ⲉⲁϥ- *Ch.* 54.58, 93.30f., *III* 18.3, 113.18, *Cat.* 42.39), while the conjunctive may express various "subordinative" shades of meaning (cause, effect, result, content).

[34] Shisha-Halevy 1972:§1.3 (pp. 57-66).

[35] See §2.0.1.1 above.

— or, in the thematic structure, $\left.\begin{matrix}\textit{actor}\\(\text{theme})\end{matrix}\right\rceil\ \left\lfloor\begin{matrix}[\textit{base}\ +\ \textit{verb lexeme}]\\(\text{discontinuous rheme})\end{matrix}\right.$ —

that of the conjunctive is different:

$$\left.\begin{matrix}\text{N}\\(\text{NTЄ})\end{matrix}\right\rceil\ \left\lfloor\begin{matrix}[\textit{actor}\ +\ \textit{verb lexeme}]\\(\text{theme})\quad(\text{rheme})\end{matrix}\right.$$

and is to a degree analogous to the structure of a converted conjugation form: N⁻, the syntactically signalling "*nota relationis*" is a full constituent, not in the same IC as the actor exponent. Thus, we cannot claim full material identity of the converter-like base of the conjunctive with the prepositional — adjunctal, but often also adnexal — N⁻, but the similarity in form and function cannot be ignored. I see the conjunctive base N⁻ as the signal or exponent of a specific syntactic status: NЧCШTM is the *representative* of the whole class of verbal predications in the modifier-conversion form. Just as the *nota relationis* N⁻ is the modifier-mark *par excellence* (§1.0.1 and *passim*), so is NЧCШTM the quintessential verbal modifier — and this is correlatable with its present-like bipartite # *theme* - *rheme* # schematic structure [36].

(c) Following the base, the rest of the conjunctive form — noun-syntagm/prefix-like pronoun + verb lexeme — must be further IC-analyzed (second analysis) as two pattern constituents of equal syntagmatic standing: *theme* + *rheme*, and *not* in terms of a nucleus - satellite dependency. This returns us to the Bipartite Pattern, and this ties in with the functional "indifference" or unmarkedness of the conjunctive with regard to most temporal-modal categories [37]. (Incidentally, -TM- — characteristic of all Clause Conjugations, Polotsky 1960a:§27 — is the verbal-modifier negation in Coptic, apart from its use to negative the infinitive.)

7.2 Cotext patterns and paradigms

7.2.1 # modal predication + conjunctive

7.2.1.1 The imperative system

7.2.1.1.1 The imperative

(a) *Subcoordination* (+⟶): nuclear verb affirmative/negatived; conjunctive affirmative; personal maintenance disrupted; negation syncategorization [38] (*III* 181.10) ⲦⲰⲞⲨⲚ ⲚⲦⲚⲘⲈⲦⲀⲚⲞⲒ, inclusive 1st person plural: "you and us" / (*A 1* 206) ⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲚⲒⲤⲰ — "irreversible binomial", cf. *ibid.* ⲈⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲤⲰ, ⲀⲨⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲀⲨⲤⲰ. However, in the light of (*A 2* 437) ⲚⲒⲘ ⲠⲈⲦⲚⲀⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲦⲤⲰ ⲀⲬⲚⲦⲤ, (*RE 11* 18a 11ff.) ⲘⲀⲢⲈⲤⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲦⲤⲰ, (ⲠⲈⲦⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲦⲤⲰ, ⲈⲦⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲦⲤⲰ), (*IV* 66.17) ⲘⲠⲀⲦⲞⲨⲞⲨⲰⲘ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲤⲈⲤⲰ, etc., one must conclude that subcoordination is not the rule in Coptic in this case. / (*III* 210.15f.,19f.) ⲀⲘⲞⲨ ⲚⲒⲚⲀⲨ ⲈⲦⲈⲒⲰⲨⲬⲎ ⲈⲚⲦⲀⲠⲤⲀⲦⲀⲚⲀⲤ ⲀⲀⲤ ⲚⲂⲀⲖⲀⲎ / (*ibid.* 16.12, 18.1) ⲔⲀⲀⲦ ⲦⲀⲦⲢⲈⲚⲈⲤⲚⲎⲨ ⲢⲞⲨⲀⲚⲀⲰ ⲚⲀⲒ [39] / (*IV*

[36] The non-actual, non-durative present (§3.1.2.1.1) being tense-unmarked, is here called to mind.

[37] This analysis (already suggested in outline by Schwarze, Schwarze-Steinthal 451: "die Verbindung des Relativs... mit den Verbal-Präfixen des Präsens") is here advocated for Sahidic (and "Middle Egyptian") only. The Akhmimic conjunctive (and some other non-literary forms) in which the pronominal form is truly homonymic with the present, might be similarly analyzed, although the zeroing of the N⁻ must be accounted for. In Bohairic, the conjunctive base + actor seems a veritable "pro-verb" (§5.3). See Kahle 1954:160ff. for an interesting analysis of N⁻zeroed forms of the conjunctive in various dialects. Incidentally, this approach ties in with Mattha's reconstruction of the conjunctive as *ḥn' ntt-jw.f ḥr sḏm* (*BIFAO* 45:43-55, 1947; rejected by Černý, *JEA* 35:25-30, 1949; see Volten 1964:79f.).

[38] Cf. Sauneron, *BIFAO* 61 (1962) 59-67.

[39] ⲔⲀⲀⲦ ⲦⲀ⁻, not attested in the Sahidic New Testament, occurs in the Old Testament (*Job* 10:20), Bohairic (ϫⲱ ⲛⲏⲓ ⲛⲧⲁ⁻, ϫⲁⲧ ⲛⲧⲁ⁻), and especially (?) in Akhmimic (cf. Till 1928:§139c).

1.14) ϣⲱⲧⲙ ⲧⲁⲧⲁⲙⲟⲕ ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲧⲯⲁⲛⲍⲧⲏϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲭⲟⲥⲉ. Note that both instances of the 1st person sgl. are causative (lexically or grammatically): see §7.2.1.1.4 / (*Ch.* 185.48ff.) ϭⲱⲯⲧ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲕⲥⲁⲣⲍ ⲛⲅⲛⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲓⲕⲙⲟⲙ ⲛⲯⲱⲃⲍ (cf. *IV* 200.14) / (*Ch.* 72.25ff.) ⲕⲁ-ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛⲯ ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲩⲁⲍⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛⲯ / (*ibid.* 102.5ff.) ⲙⲡⲣⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲉⲓⲭⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲉⲃⲯ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲛⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ⲉⲧⲧⲏⲯ, consecutive. Syncategorized negation / (*P* 131[7] 25 ro) ⲗⲟⲓⲡⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲣⲣ-ⲁⲙⲉⲗⲏⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲯⲧⲁⲙ ⲉⲣⲱⲛ ⲉⲙⲡⲣⲟ (sic) ⲙⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲭⲓ-ⲡⲁⲍⲣⲉ / (*RE 10* 160a 32f.) ⲃⲱⲕ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲭⲟⲟⲥ... / (*III* 29.26) ⲯⲗⲗ ⲉⲭⲱⲛ ⲛⲧⲛⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲭⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 63.20f.) ⲫ-ⲍⲧⲏⲕ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲡⲗⲟ-ⲅⲟⲥ... ⲛϥⲭⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ... / (*P* 130[5] 83 ⲣⲓⲁ) ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲯⲟⲣⲡ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲛⲛⲉⲕⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ, ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲅⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ "ⲡⲁⲥⲱⲧⲏⲣ": the temporal sequence is explicitated; not so in (*Ch.* 55.4ff.) ⲧⲗⲗⲟ ⲉⲣⲟϥ ⲛⲅⲧⲟⲃⲥϥ ⲛⲅⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲅⲉⲓ " Mount it (your horse), and spur it, and go up (to the sky) and come away ".

(b) *Microcoordination* (←→) is here less usual. Nuclear verb — affirmative only; conjunctive: affirmative/negative (very rare); personal maintenance; negation syncategorization (very rare): (*Ch.* 164.19ff.) ⲫ-ⲍⲧⲏⲧⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲯⲗⲏⲗ / (*IV* 41.9f.) ⲗⲁⲕ ⲛⲉⲗⲁⲭⲓⲥⲧⲟⲛ ⲍⲙⲡⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲕⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ ⲛⲅⲁⲁⲕ ⲛⲁⲧⲛⲟⲉⲓ ⲍⲛⲧⲙⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲥⲁⲃⲉⲉⲩ (cf. *III* 91.4ff. ⲁⲛⲁⲩ... ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱϥ) / (*III* 193.3f.) ⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁ⳨ⲣⲏⲛⲏ ⲛⲅⲡⲱⲧ ⲛⲥⲱⲥ / (*ibid.* 63.9ff.) ⲥⲱⲟⲩⲍ ⲇⲉ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ... ⲛⲅⲧ[ⲙⲯⲱ]ⲭⲡ ⲉⲡⲁⲍⲟⲩ.

7.2.1.1.2 The rhetorical jussive ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ-/ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉϥ-. This form, in Scripture Coptic the *causative imperative*, functionally coextensive with the *jussive* (" third-person imperative ") [40], has in Shenoute a different standing. As a jussive, it is curtailed in function, specialized and marked for rhetorical and " figurative " jussive mode, while for the objective, " real ", usually preceptive and generally unmarked jussive the *autofocal Second Future* ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ (§§2.1.3, 7.2.1.1.3) is used (with ⲛⲛⲉϥ-, a suppletive negative form, apart from the rare ⲉϥⲛⲁ- ⲁⲛ and perhaps ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉϥ-): ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ and ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ are to be regarded as *allo-forms*, in rhetorical and preceptive/unmarked environment respectively.

(a) (+→): Nuclear verb: affirmative/negative; conjunctive: affirmative only; neg. syncategorization; personal maintenance disrupted (note that as a pronominal actor we find only the 3rd person plural): (*III* 149.19) ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲉⲭ-ⲡⲁϭⲥⲉ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲍⲣⲁⲛ, also *ibid.* 201.12 / (*ibid.* 18.24ff.) ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲙⲡⲧⲱⲯ... ⲟⲩⲉⲍ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲣⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ / (*IV* 39.4ff.) ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲟⲩⲁ ⲥⲱⲧⲙ... ⲭⲉ-... ⲛⲥⲉ-ⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ... ⲭⲉ-..., subcoordination of *consequence*; neg. syncategorization / (*ibid.* 37-8) ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲛⲉⲧⲧⲱⲍⲙ... ⲛⲥⲉϭⲛⲧⲛ ⲉⲣⲉⲛⲉⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲛⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲩⲟⲩⲉⲓⲧ, neg. syncategorization. Note the discontinuous actor exponence (for a passive-equivalent form), remarkable for ⲧⲣⲉ-, -ⲩ- + ⲍⲓⲧⲛ- + ⲥⲉ-.

(b) (←→): Nuclear verb: affirmative/negative; conjunctive: affirmative only; neg. syncategorization; personal maintenance. (*Ch.* 163.31ff.) ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲭⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ- / (*ibid.* 165.22f.) ⲙⲁ-ⲣⲛⲣⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲏⲫⲉ / (*RE 11* 18a 11ff.) ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲥⲱ: see under §7.2.1.1.1(a) / (*P* 130[5] 22 ⲫⲛ) ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲣ-ⲧⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲭⲱ ⲛⲧⲙⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲣ-ⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... / (*IV* 5.21ff.) ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲛⲁⲁⲛ ⲛⲯⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲭⲁⲭⲉ... — neg. syncategorization.

7.2.1.1.3 The preceptive/unmarked jussive: ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ/ⲛⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ. This is the form intruding (in diachronic view) into the neat Scriptural suppletive imperative paradigm *imperative*/ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ-, disturbing its equilibrium and acting to confine the classical jussive ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ to its specialized rhetorical value. Note the following distinctive characteristics of this cotext pattern: (a) The opposition *microcoordination*: *subcoordination* is here virtually neutralized, as pertinent ⲁⲩⲱ does not occur here at all [41], and the conjunctive as a rule specifies the actual (logico-temporal) sequence of phases in the execution of the instructions. (b) Personal maintenance is here usual. (c) The textual distribution is in this case understandably

[40] A (typically non-classical?) case like (*IV* 114.18f.) ⲙⲁⲣⲓⲙⲡⲯⲁ ⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟϥ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲕⲟⲗⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲓ proves the rhetoricity of the Shenoutean ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ.

[41] Barring the overruling conditioning of ⲁⲩⲱ before a frontal extraposition to the actor of the conjunctive, see n. 25.

limited: almost all instances occur in non-rhetorical "*Vita Monachorum*"-type textual stretches (a single instance in *Chassinat*). Nuclear verb: affirmative/negative; conjunctive: affirmative/negative; personal maintenance (see below); neg. syncategorization, encategorization. (*IV* 93.1f.) ϵγναναγ ϵπϵτογναχιτϥ ϵρooγ nοϵικ... ncϵχιτογ nαγ ϩmπchy mπτωϭ / (*ibid.* 61-2) ϵγναϵι nϭinϵcnhy ncϵψαλλϵι ϵρooγ ncϵtomcoγ / (*ibid.* 160.2f.) ϵγnαcϩaicoγ ncϵtnnooγcoγ nαγ ncϵnαγ ϵπϵtϵψψϵ ϵλλϥ / (*ibid.* 161.21f.) ϵγnαθnϵ-πϵ-ϭλοϭ ϵπcωmα ϵtmooγt ntϵϩϵnnοϭ nρωmϵ ϥϵι ϩλχωϥ αγω ϩαρατϥ... ϵρϵ-πϵtϥϵι ϵϩραι nαn-tϵϥnαϩβϵ ϵβολ ntϵπϵtnαϥϵι +-twϥ ϵϩογn / (*ibid.* 83.14f.) ϵγnαψαλλϵι nψomt ncοπ... ncϵψληλ nψomnt ncοπ... A solitary instance of the personal maintenance disrupted is rhetorical (*Ch.* 187.2ff.) ϵγnα+-ϩthy χϵ-ϵρϵnϵγραφη χϵ-οy αγω χϵ-οy nϵntαγcϩaicoγ... αγω ntnmton mmon ϩnnϵyψαχϵ noγoϵin (although here the 1st person person plur. may be taken to resume anacoluthically the preceding ρωmϵ nim). Additional exx.: *IV* 46.5f., 50-1, 66.2ff.,7ff., 83.12f.,17f.,20f., 111.9f.,14f., etc.

The negative counterpart of jussive ϵϥnαcwtm appears to be nnϵϥcwtm, syncategorizing the conjunctive: (*IV* 73.10ff.) nnϵλλαγ... χϵϥ-kωϩt ϵλλαγ mmα mmooγ... ϩ ncϵχι-cnoϥ mmooγ / (*ibid.* 88.1ff.) nnϵoγα ϩ ϩoinϵ oγϵm-nϵtcotπ... ntϵkϵoγα ϩ ϩϵnkooγϵ oγϵm-nϵtϭoχb ϩ nϵtcoψϥ / (*ibid.* 103.5f.) nnϵρωmϵ nϩhtn ϭω nϥtmbωk ϵπoγωm — a striking case of subcoordination: the neg. conjunctive does not maintain the negation of nnϵ-, but contentualizes ϭω; consider the variant reading ϭω noγϵψnbωk and the parallel in (*IV* 66.24f.) ϭω ϵtmbωk.

7.2.1.1.4 ϵϥϵcwtm, properly speaking the *optative* (§7.2.1.2), is also used as a polite or restrained imperative and jussive [42]: (*IV* 43.23) ϵϥϵψαχϵ mnnϵtnαχι thρoγ nϥϩωn ϵtootoγ ϵtρϵγ-... / (*ibid.* 62. 15f.,24) ϵtϵtnϵmooψϵ ϩιπαϩoγ nnϵcnhy ntϵtnϭω ϵtϵtnoγhy mmooγ... ϵtϵtnϵωψ ntϵtnψληλ / (*III* 157. 11f.) ϵγϵχοοc ϵπϩλλο ϩαthn αγω ϵγϵχοοc ϵθλλω ϩαϩtnthγtn ϩ ncϵχοοc ϵnϩλλοι ϵtϩαtnthγtn... / (*IV* 207.26) ϵγϵoγωψb ncϵχοοc χϵ-... (more exx.: *III* 157.21, *IV* 43.9ff.).

7.2.1.1.5. The post-imperative paradigm: members and functions

	ταρϵϥcwtm	rhetorical, affective; archaistic-Biblical stylistically marked; ensured desirable result (§7.2.1.1.5.1)
imperative	αγω + *fut. I*	unmarked, not purposeful consequence [43]: *III* 21.2ff., 116.4f., *Ch.* 152.49ff., *IV* 40.5ff., 41.3ff.
' cwtm '	∅ + *fut. I*	*III* 17.2, *Wess. 9* 139a 20ff.
' mπρcwtm '	αγω + *imperative*	coordination of reciprocally symmetric or mutually independent imperatives [44]:
	αγω + *rhet. jussive*	*III* 25.4, *IV* 162.10f.
	conjunctive	micro-/subcoordination
	ϵτρϵϥ-	deliberate purpose

[42] Polotsky 1950:84ff. (= *CP* 219ff.).
[43] Cf. Polotsky 1944:7f. (= *CP* 112f.). In Shenoute, the future is not restricted to the 1st person singular.
[44] Compare (*A 1* 57) ϩαρϵϩ mπρτρϵγταϩωτn oγtϵ mπρτρϵλλαγ ϵimϵ, *ibid.* 234 cwtm αγω mαρϵnρ-ϩoτϵ.

rhetorical jussive	ⲁⲩⲱ + *fut. I*	unmarked consequence: *Ch.* 37.10ff.
‘ ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ’	ⲁⲩⲱ + *rhet. jussive*	two coordinated jussives: mutually independent (*IV* 38.6ff., 114.18f.),
‘ ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ ’		or reciprocally symmetric (*IV* 156.7, *Ch.* 165.30ff.)
	conjunctive	micro-/subcoordination
	ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ-	deliberate purpose
	ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ	stylistically marked consequence (§7.2.1.1.5.1)
preceptive jussive		
‘ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ ’	ⲁⲩⲱ + *prec. jussive* (very rare)	mutually independent, non-sequential coordination: two separate enjoinments; reciprocal symmetry (*III* 157.11f., *IV* 58.15, 99.17f.)
‘ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ ’	ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ (rare)	
	conjunctive	sequential micro-coordination
	ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (rare)	§7.2.1.1.5.1

7.2.1.1.5.1 Like ⲙⲁⲣⲉ-, ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ, the classical “ Future Conjunctive ”, is in Shenoute restricted and shifted in value compared with its role in the Scripture idiom [45] — the post-imperatival apodotic form with a promissive overtone. In Shenoute, it is not the conjunctive (with which ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- has synchronically the satellital status in common — the same kind of modification dependency in relation to the nuclear verb [46]) that has encroached on its territory, but rather the coordinative ⲁⲩⲱ + *future I*. Generally speaking, three statements (illustrated below) may be made on the Shenoutean ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ: (a) It is *stylistically marked* as rhetorical, affective, redolent of archaic-Biblical overtones and typical of passages in which this atmosphere (often conveying an authoritative aura) must be effected, or in otherwise stylistically striking stretches. (b) The distribution of ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ - has been extended to post-interrogative [47] and generally final environments (inside the imperative system, we find ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- following the jussives ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ- and ⲉϥⲛⲁ-); the “ promissive ” semantic component of ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- has been greatly weakened. (c) Where it is opposed to other final constructions in cases (a) and (b), ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- seems to convey the sense of *final desirable result* rather than downright deliberate purpose.

(a) *Stylistic effect*: (1) *archaic-Biblical simulation*: (*III* 84.14ff., parall. *Ch.* 48.28ff.) ⲯⲛ-ϩⲧⲏⲕ ⲅⲉ ϩⲁⲡⲉⲕⲗⲁⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲥⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ... ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲥⲣⲏⲉ ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲙⲛⲅⲉⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲃⲁⲗⲁⲕ, addressed to God; an argumentative application of *Ps.* 45:11. Similarly, *III* 84.20ff. (parall. *Ch.* 48.52ff.) ⲧⲱⲙ ⲅⲉ ⲉⲣⲛⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲙⲛϫⲓ ⲛⲅⲟⲛⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ... ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲥⲣⲏⲉ ⲉⲣ-ϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛⲁⲕ. Indeed, ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- is an unmistakable sign of a Biblical quotation or reminiscence in the Shenoutean texture: *A 2* 228 (*Prov.* 7:2), *Cl. Pr.* 22 ⲧϫⲇ (*Ps.* 36:37), *A 2* 388 (*Ps.* 68:33), *A 2* 235 (*Rom.* 11:35), *III* 112.20f. (*Prov.* 7:1a), *A 2* 189 (*Mt.* 11:3) and many more.

[45] Polotsky 1944:1ff. (= *CP* 102ff.), 1950: 87ff.(= *CP* 222ff.).

[46] Consider (*Ch.* 198.44ff.) ⲙⲏ ⲉⲩ+-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲓⲕⲉⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲛⲁϩⲧⲉ, where ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- is focalized by a Second Present, showing itself to be a true modifier-clause.

[47] Polotsky 1944:5f., §3B (= *CP* 110f.).

(2) Ponderous, turgid categoric style (similar to (1)? Note the high incidence of ⲉⲓⲙⲉ or its paraphrases, which may be indicative of a certain tone of address): (*A 2* 64) ⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟ ⲧⲡⲁⲣⲑⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲟϭ ⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲛⲟⲩ-ⲥⲛⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-... / (*ibid.* 121) ⲕⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲥⲱⲱⲕ ⲛⲧⲙⲉ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲡⲱⲁϫⲉ ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲕ ϫⲉ-... / (*A 1* 234) ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲁⲣⲉⲛⲣ-ⲥⲟⲧⲉ ⲥⲏⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲥ ⲙⲡⲕⲁⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲣⲥⲟⲩⲉⲙⲟⲩⲥ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲏⲓ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ... ϫⲉ- / (*A 2* 72) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲙⲙⲛⲧⲱⲁⲛⲥⲧⲏϥ (sic) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲁⲁⲛ ⲛⲙⲡⲱⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲥⲱⲃ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲙⲉⲧⲉϫⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ / (*P* 131[6] 13 vo) ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲥⲏⲕⲉ ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲥⲛⲛⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ; ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲟⲩⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲥⲛⲧⲉⲕⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ. ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲙⲛⲧⲁⲕ-ⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ, ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲕⲕⲗⲏⲥⲓⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲛⲁⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲏⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ — suppletion of ⲁⲩⲱ + *future I* for the 2nd person?

(3) A special rhetorical effect or figure: ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- repeats the imperative verb: (*A 2* 224-5) ⲥⲉⲓ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲉ-ⲧⲛⲥⲏⲇⲟⲛⲏ ⲛⲭⲱⲥⲙ ⲥⲓⲥⲱⲱϥ... ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲉⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲣⲱⲕⲥ ⲙⲛⲡⲕⲱⲥⲧ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉϥⲱⲩⲙ / (*ibid.* 461) ⲩⲟⲡⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ (i.e. the Kingdom) ⲥⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲥⲩⲟⲡⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲥⲱⲱⲥ ⲥⲙⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ (cf. 462: ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲩⲟⲡⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ... ⲥⲛⲁⲩⲟⲡⲟⲩ ⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ) / compare here (*Ch.* 98.21f., 199.8ff.) ⲛⲁ ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ, + ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩ+ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ́ and (*P* 131[6] 43 ro) ⲛⲁ ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲛⲁⲕ, ⲩⲉⲛ-ⲥⲧⲏⲕ ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲩⲉⲛ-ⲥⲧⲏⲩ ⲥⲁⲣⲟⲕ, ⲕⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲧⲁⲣⲟⲩⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ, adaptations of *Luc.* 6:37-8.

(b) ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ in other environments than post-imperative: (1) as a rhetoric post-interrogative apodosis ("that he may... "): (*A 2* 510) ⲉϥⲧⲱⲛ ⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛⲩ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲡⲩⲱⲥ ⲡⲱⲧ ⲛⲥⲱϥ / (*Ch.* 197-8) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ... ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ (note the conjunctive subcoordinated to ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲧⲁⲁⲩ).

(2) Following final constructions: (*P* 131[5] 43 p) ⲉⲓⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲏⲧⲛ ϫⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲧⲁϫⲣⲟ-ⲡⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛ+-ϩⲏⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ / (*Thompson* K 3 vo) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲉⲩⲡⲏⲧ ⲛⲥⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ⲛⲛⲉ-ⲧⲛⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲃⲡ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲧⲛⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓⲙⲉ ϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲕⲣⲙⲉⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲡⲉⲧⲛϩⲏⲧ. Compare in the post-interrogative paradigm the apodotic-retrospective conjunctive (§7.2.7) (*III* 148.25ff.) ⲉⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲉⲛⲩⲃⲉⲉⲣ... ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ [48].

7.2.1.2 The optative (ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ/ⲛⲛⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ) [49] is relatively rarely expanded by a subcategorized conjunctive (there is not a single instance in *Ch.*). Multiple ⲉϥⲉ-periods are more common as nuclei. Personal maintenance is the rule; ⲁⲩⲱ is not attested; negation is syncategorized or encategorized; nucleus/conjunctive affirmative or negative.

(a) (+→): (*III* 179.11f.) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲱⲧⲛ ⲛϥⲁⲩⲯⲁⲛⲉ ⲛⲏⲧⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛϩⲓⲥⲉ ⲛϥⲑⲙⲕⲟ ⲙⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲏⲧⲛ / (*III* 20.16, *IV* 40.19f.) ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲓⲩⲁⲛⲡⲁⲣⲁⲃⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ ⲙⲙⲟϥ, ⲉⲓⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲙ-ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ, oath formula; neg. encategorization (adversative sense): " ... may I see the Kingdom... but not enter it ".

(b) (←→), very rare: (*IV* 50.9f.) ⲛⲛⲉⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲧⲁⲕⲟ... ⲛⲥⲉⲣ-ⲡⲱⲃⲩ ϫⲉ-ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ ⲟⲩⲥⲭⲏⲙⲁ ⲣⲱ ⲙⲙⲟⲛⲁⲭⲟⲥ ⲧⲟ ϩⲓⲱⲟⲩ.

7.2.1.2.1 The post-optative paradigm includes in addition to the conjunctive also the *coordinated optative* (- ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲱⲧⲙ): (*IV* 116.4f.) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉϥⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉϥⲉ+ⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*ibid.* 171.3f.) ⲉϥⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲩⲉⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱϥ ⲛϭⲓⲛⲉⲓⲥⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ / (*III* 131.5f.) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ

[48] Yet another member of the post-interrogative paradigm is ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ: (*III* 149.16ff.) ⲉⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲉ-ϩⲉⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲉ... ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲉⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲉⲭ-ⲡⲁϭⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲛ/ (*P* 131[4] 160 m) ⲉⲩⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲧⲱⲛ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲙⲁⲣⲟⲩⲧⲁⲙⲟⲛ. Post-imperatival ⲙⲁ-ⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ is perhaps more common in Bohairic, e.g. *Mt.* 13:30, *Luc.* 7:7 (codd.), *Joh.* 18:8, corresponding to Sah. conjunctive, ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ-, ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- (Horner) / ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- (Chester Beatty A, B). Cf. Kahle 1954:190 for the post-imperatival and final paradigm (featuring also ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-, ϫⲉ-final constructions, 190ff. for ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- as the apodotic component of oath formulae).

[49] Polotsky 1950:84ff. (= *CP* 219ff.). I use the term not as a name for a *mood* (in the Indo-European or Semitic sense, of a regularly transsecting morphological subsystem) but for a specific conjugation-form pair, affirmative and negative " Future III ".

ϵϥϵϹѠΤΜ ϵΡΟΟΥ ΑΥѠ ϵϥϵΝΑ2ΜΟΥ ϵ2ѠΒ ΝΙΜ ϵϥ2ΟΟΥ Ν϶ϯ-6ΟΜ ΗΑΥ 2Ν2ѠΒ ΝΙΜ — the second optative is micro-coordinated to a conjunctive (with the common theme " resisting everything "); so too in (*IV* 207.28ff.) ϵΡϵΠ⳨ΟϵΙϹ ϵΙΝϵ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ϵ⳨ѠΟΥ ΜΠϹΑ2ΟΥ ΑΥѠ ϵΡϵΠ⳨ΟϵΙϹ ΜΟΥΡ ΝΤΟΡΓΗ ΜΠϵϥ6ѠΝΤ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ΕΡΟΟΥ 2ΜΠϵ2ΟΟΥ ΝΤΟΡΓΗ Ν϶ΝΟ⳨ΟΥ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ϵΤϵ2ΡѠ ΝΚѠ2Τ — the conjunctive *specifies* (contentualizes) the second term of the optative coordination.

7.2.1.3 FINAL/CONSECUTIVE CONJUNCTIONAL SYNTAGMS. Here we encounter the well-known difficulty of determining the opposition between ⳨ϵΚΑΑϹ *vs.* ⳨ϵ-ϵϥϵϹѠΤΜ and ⳨ϵ *vs.* ⳨ϵΚΑΑϹ ϵϥΝΑϹѠΤΜ — an opposition the functional resolution of which must await some future study [50]. The conjunctive expands all constructions [51]. Note that ΑΥѠ-microcoordination is here incomparably more frequent than with the post-imperatival conjunctive.

(a) (⟷), usually with ΑΥѠ: (*III* 158.28ff.) ϵΥϵΤΑΜΟΝ 2ΝΟΥΜΝΤΜϵ ΕΠϵΝΤΑΥΝΑΥ ΕΡΟϥ ⳨ϵΚΑϹ ϵΥϵѰѠΠϵ ϵΥ-ϹΜΑΜΑΑΤ 2ΝΝϵΥ2ΒΗΥϵ ΤΗΡΟΥ ΑΥѠ ΝϹϵϵΙ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ϵ⳨ѠΟΥ Ν6ΙΝϵϹΜΟΥ ΤΗΡΟΥ ϵΤϹΗ2 / (*ibid.* 40.27f.)... ⳨ϵ-ΕΡϵ-2ϵΝΨΥ⳨Η ΝΑ϶-2ΗΥ ΑΥѠ ΝΤϵ2ϵΝΨΥ⳨Η ΒѠΚ ϵΡΑΤϥ ΜΠΝΟΥΤϵ 2ΝΤΒΒΟ ΝΙΜ / (*IV* 18.16f.) ...⳨ϵ-ϵϹΝΑϵΙΝϵ ΝΟΥΝΑ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ϵ⳨ѠΟΥ ΑΥѠ ΝϹΡ2ΟΥϵΤΑΑΥ ϵΤΟΟΤϥ ΜΠΝΑ / (*ibid.* 21.3f.) ...⳨ϵ-ΝΝϵϥΠΑΤΑϹϹϵ ΜΜΟΟΥ ΑΥѠ Νϥ̀ΟΟΥΤΟΥ. Additional exx.: *III* 78.19f., 99.6ff., 122.3f., 194.18f. Without ΑΥѠ: (*IV* 155.11ff.) ...⳨ϵ-ϵΝϵ⳨Ι ΝΟΥΒϵΚϵ ΜΠΙϹΤΙϹ... ΝΤϵΝ⳨Ι ΜΠΤѠѠΒϵ ΝΜΠΟΝΗΡΟΝ ΝΤΑΝΑΑΥ. Also *Ch.* 18-19, 101.44ff.

(b) (⟷), considerably less common: (*III* 119.7ff.) ϹϵϵΠΙΤΙΜΑ ΝΑΝ ϵΤΜΚΑΤΑΛΑΛϵΙ ΟΥΔϵ ϵΤΜΚΡΜΡΜ... ⳨ϵ-ΝΝϵΠΝΟΥΤϵ 6ѠΝΤ ΕΡΟΝ Νϥ̀ΤΑΚΟ ΝΝϵΝ2ΒΗΥϵ / (*Ch.* 148.47ff.) ...⳨ϵ-ϵϹΝΑΑΥ⳨ΑΝϵ ΝΤϵΝϵϹϵΚΙΒϵ ΑΥ⳨ΑΝϵ ΝΜΜΑϹ. Also *IV* 51.8f.

7.2.2 EXTRATEMPORAL PREDICATIONS

7.2.2.1 Ψ϶ϥϹѠΤΜ (and conversions): I know of no certain instance of ΜϵϥϹѠΤΜ subcategorized by the conjunctive. Conjunctive: affirmative only. Personal maintenance is the rule (only 3rd persons, sgl. and plur.).

(a) (⟷) (ΑΥѠ very rare): (*III* 110.2f.) Ψ϶ϥΤϹΑΒΟΟΥ ΕΡΟΟΥ ΑΥѠ Νϥ̀ϵΥΦΡΑΝϵ ΜΜΟΟΥ Ν2ΗΤΟΥ / (*ibid.* 176.3) ΝΘϵ Δϵ ϵΤϵΨ϶ΥΨΟΟΥϵ ΝϹϵΨѰΠϵ ΝΑΤΚΑΡΠΟϹ / (*IV* 24.19f.) ΝϵΤϵΨ϶ΥΜΟΥΟΥΤ ΜΠϹѠΜ϶ ΑΥѠ ΝϹϵΜΟΥΟΥΤ ΜΠΝΟΒϵ Ν2ΗΤΟΥ — repeated lexeme / (*ibid.* 38.29) ΟΥΝ2Α2 ΟΝ ΝϹ2ΙΜϵ ϵΨ϶ΥΡ-⳨ѠѰΡϵ ΚΑΤΑΚΑΙΡΟϹ ΑΥѠ ΝϹϵ⳨ΡΟ — etymologically related lexemes / (*ibid.* 82.11) Ψ϶ϥ϶-ΟϹϵ Ν2ΟΥΟ ΝϥΤΡϵ2ϵΝΚΟΟΥϵ ϯ — repeated lexeme / (*Ch.* 80.21ff.) Ψ϶ΥΠΑΡΑΙΤϵΙ ΜΠΟΥѰΨ ϵΤ2ΟΟΥ ΝϹϵϹѠΤΠ ΝΑΥ ΜΠΑΓ϶ΘΟΝ — antonyms / (*P* 131[4] 157 vo) ΠΟΥΟϵΙΝ ΠϵΨ϶ϥϥΙ ΜΜ϶Υ ΜΠΚ϶Κϵ Νϥ϶϶ϥ ΝΘϵ ΜΠϵΤϵΝϵϥΨΟΟΠ ϶Ν — paraphrase. Also *III* 45.3ff., 152.24f., 163.14f., *IV* 94.3ff.

(b) (⟶): doubtful, perhaps (*IV* 25.25f.) Ψ϶ΡϵΝϹΟΟΝϵ ϵΙ ΝϹϵϹΥ϶϶ ΜΜΟϥ ΝϹϵϥΙ ΜΠϵϥ⳨ΡΗΜ϶ ΤΗΡϥ / (*ibid.* 70.17ff.) Ψ϶ΥϵΓΚΡ϶ΤϵΥϵ ΜΜΟΟΥ... ΝϹϵΤѰΟΥΝ ϵΥ2Κ϶ϵΙΤ ΝϹϵϵΙ ϵΒΟ϶ ΝϹϵΟΥѰΜ / (*III* 31.9) Ψ϶ϥΚΤΟϥ ΟΝ Νϥ-ΟΥѰΝ2 ϵΒΟ϶. Also *III* 179.2ff., *IV* 26.4 (a rare case of the personal maintenance disrupted), 113.6f.

7.2.2.2 Ψ϶ΝΤϥϹѠΤΜ: affirmative conjunctive only; no pers. maintenance.

(a) (⟷): (*IV* 24.13f.) ΝϵΥΝ϶Νϵ⳨ϵ ΜΜΟΟΥ ΑΝ Πϵ Ψ϶ΝΤΟΥΝΟ⳨ΟΥ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ΕΠΚѠ2Τ ΑΥѠ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ΕΠΜΟΟΥ ΑΥѠ ΝϹϵ-ΡΑ2ΤΟΥ ΕΠΚΑ2 / (*Ch.* 121.6ff.) (Α϶2ΜΟΟϹ ϵ2ΡΑΙ ΜΠΔΙΑΒΟΛΟϹ ΑΥѠ 2Α2ΡΑΤΟΥ ΝΝΔΑΙΜѠΝ) Ψ϶ΝΤΟΥΠΛΗΓϵ

[50] See STERN §611-2, STEINDORFF 1951:§440-3, etc. WILSON 1970:23-51 is no help. Note that the distribution of the four terms of this complex category varies from one Shenoute text to another: *Chassinat* clearly favours ⳨ϵ-syntagms (ϵϥΝ϶-syntagms appear to be rather more frequent — less specialized? — in Shenoute than in the Scriptures).

[51] For Shenoutean instances of ⳨ϵΚΑΑϹ resumed by the conjunctive — a typical New Testament construction — see §7.2.6.1 (3) below.

ⲙⲙⲟⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲯⲁⲁⲣ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ / (*Wess. 9* 96b 16ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲯⲁϫⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛⲯ ⲯⲁⲛⲧϥⲡⲱⲧ ⲛϥⲃⲱⲕ... / (*P* 131[6] 31 vo) ...ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲗⲓⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛϫⲁⲩⲙⲟⲉⲓⲧ — same lexeme.

(b) (+→): (*Ch.* 45.55ff., parall. *III* 82-3) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲁⲛⲟⲩⲯⲟⲩ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛϥⲓⲧⲟⲩ / (*III* 143.7f.) ⲙⲡⲉ-ⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉⲓ ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϭⲱⲛⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϥⲧⲣⲉⲩⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲡⲉⲥⲏⲧ ⲉⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲛϩ / (*A 1* 77) (of honey) ...ⲯⲁⲛⲧⲟⲩ-ⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ϩⲱⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲟϫϥ...

7.2.2.3 ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (rare): (a) (←→): (*IV* 66.16ff.) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲇⲟⲕⲓⲙⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲯⲟⲣⲡ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲡⲁ-ⲧⲟⲩⲱⲙ (sic) ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲁⲡⲟⲧ.
(b) (+→): (*IV* 97.11f.) ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ ⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲟⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲯⲏⲙ ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥⲣ-ⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲉϥⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ϩⲓϫⲱϥ.

7.2.3 The present-based future (ϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ and conversions)

7.2.3.1 *Basic Tense*: ϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ.

(a) (←→): nuclear verb/conjunctive: affirmative, negative; negation syncategorization/encategorization; no personal maintenance. Note the frequent *prophetic style*: (*III* 124.5) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲯⲧⲟⲣⲧⲣ ⲙⲛⲡⲡⲱⲯⲥ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲛⲧⲁⲩⲡⲏ ⲙⲛⲡⲁⲯⲁϩⲟⲙ... ⲛⲁⲣ-ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲙϩⲁⲗ / (*ibid.* 219.8ff.) ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ϥⲛⲁϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲙⲡⲉϥⲑⲣⲟⲛⲟⲥ... ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ... ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉϥⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲛϥⲡⲱⲣϫ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ; also with coordinated ⲁⲩⲱ + *future* subunits: (*III* 101.14ff.) ⲧⲟⲧⲉ ⲕⲛⲁⲛⲟⲓ ⲛⲛⲉⲧϩⲏⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲉⲕϩⲏⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲕⲛⲁ-ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲣⲉϥⲣ-ϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲕⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲛⲁ ⲣⲱⲕϩ ⲛⲛⲉⲕϩⲩⲗⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡϩⲏⲃⲥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ. Compare also *IV* 104.12 (Biblical style, characteristic of quotations; consider *III* 123.6f.,12f., 173.20ff., 195.18ff., *IV* 8.5f., 9.11f.) / (*III* 125.18ff.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲯⲙⲙⲟ ⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲓⲥ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ϩⲟⲟⲩⲧ ⲉⲓⲧⲉ ⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲣ-ϩⲁⲉ ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲙⲧⲟⲛ... / (*ibid.* 158.7f.) (apodotically) ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲡⲉ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲕⲣⲓⲙⲁ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲛϫⲓ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲧⲛⲛⲁϭⲙ-ϭⲟⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲙⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ / (*IV* 97.22ff.) ⲟⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲉⲩⲙⲉϩ ⲛϭⲟⲗ ⲛⲁⲯⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲗⲟⲓⲙⲟⲥ ⲉⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲩⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲁⲁⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ — repeated lexeme: neg. syncategorization? / (*Ch.* 94.10ff.) ⲧⲛⲁⲧⲁⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩϫⲓ-ϭⲟⲗ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲥⲁⲃⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲛⲥϩⲁⲓⲥⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ — synonyms. Other exx.: (repeated lexeme) *III* 115.17f., *Ch.* 107.14ff.

(b) (←→): no personal maintenance; negation syncategorized, affirmation encategorized. (*III* 123.27) ⲧⲛⲁⲧⲟⲗⲙⲁ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲁϫⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲓⲯⲁϫⲉ / (*ibid.* 36.17f., parall. *Ch.* 132.9ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁⲁⲍⲓⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲩⲑⲉ-ⲣⲁⲡⲉⲩⲉ ⲉⲛⲃⲁⲗ ⲙⲡⲉⲛϩⲏⲧ / (*Ch.* 49.8ff.) ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁϭⲙ-ϭⲟⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛⲁⲕ (and so) ⲛⲥⲉⲣ-ϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛⲛⲣⲉⲩϫⲓⲛ-ϭⲟⲛⲥ, addressed to God; affirmative encategorization / (*IV* 3.18f.) ⲥⲉⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲃⲱⲕ / (*Ch.* 83.13ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲥⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲉϩⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲡⲯⲱⲥ ⲙⲙⲉ... ⲛⲥⲉⲡⲱⲧ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ / (*ibid.* 93.22ff.) ⲥⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲉⲥⲧⲱⲓ / (*A 1* 135-6) ⲏ ⲛⲥⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉⲧϫⲱ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲏ ⲡⲉⲧⲙⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩⲛⲥⲉϩⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ... ⲉϥⲟ ⲛⲣⲉϥϫⲓ-ϭⲟⲗ / (*P* 130[5] 56 ⲛⲃ) ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲉ ⲱϩⲥ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲥⲱⲯⲉ (see §7.2.3.6 below).

7.2.3.2 *Circumstantial future*: uncommon. Usually adnominal (or open to attributive adnominal interpretation) although a *protatic* role is not excluded (in fact, both functions are neutralized in the adnominal syntactic slot). No negation; no - ⲁⲩⲱ -: subcoordination only? (*Ch.* 190.31ff.) ⲟⲩ ⲡⲉⲧⲧⲁⲓⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϥⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛϥⲃⲱⲕ ϩⲁⲧⲙⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲛⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲛⲓⲙ, cf. *ibid. ibid.* 52ff. ⲉϥⲯⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*IV* 162.2ff.) ...ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ ϯ-ⲧⲱϥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ, ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲛ-ⲧⲱϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ. ⲁⲩⲱ ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ, ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ϯ-ⲧⲱϥ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ. The construction here is difficult, although the sense is clear: (talking of the pall-bearers) " As soon as one puts his (shoulder) in (under the pall), the other takes his (shoulder) out (from under the pall); and as soon as one withdraws, the other puts his (shoulder) in ". More specifically, difficult here are (a) the past tense in a preceptive context, (b) the apparent parallelism in the interdependence of, on the one hand, ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁ- and ⲛⲧⲁ- (Second Perfect), and, on the other hand, ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ

ⲉⲣⲉ- ⲛⲁ- and the conjunctive; while the former is well understandable as a circumstantial clause (ⲥⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁ-) focalized by a Second Tense, in the sense of " no sooner... than... " (§2.7.1.1), the latter seems anacoluthic, conflating a subcoordinative role (actual sequence, preceptive stage sequence) with a main-clause (jussive?) one. The juxtaposition of perfect and future tenses makes perhaps for vividness and a scenic dramatic effect in portraying the desired execution of this instruction.

7.2.3.3 *Second Future.* Cases of the conjunctive subcategorized by a thematic (topical) future in a focalization pattern — foc. patterns (2), (6), §§2.2, 2.6.1; the conjunctive is impressed also with the thematicity category. Note that in pattern (2) the conjunctive *follows the focus*, and is thus a case of the *dis. continuous multiple theme* figure (§2.7.1.3.3). Negation syncategorization (by the nexus negator - ⲁⲛ not the negatived theme), negation encategorization.

(1) (⟷): (*Ch.* 85.26ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡϫⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲡⲉⲭ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲁⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲟⲩⲏⲣ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥ+-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*III* 65.3f.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲕ-ⲛⲁⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲙⲱⲩⲥⲏⲥ ϫⲟⲟϥ ϫⲉ-..., ⲛⲓⲧⲙ+-ϩⲧⲏⲕ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲓⲉⲍⲉⲕⲓⲏⲁ ϫⲟⲟϥ ϫⲉ- — neg. encategorization / (*ibid.* 123.7f.) ⲛⲁⲩ ⲅⲉ ⲛϩⲉ ⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲛⲁϫⲓ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛ̀ⲅⲟⲛⲥ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲁⲑⲙⲕⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ. Also: *IV* 14.4ff., 76.20f., 161.12ff. (jussive ⲉϥⲛⲁ-?).

(b) (+→): (*III* 188.20f.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲧⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲕⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲙⲁⲧⲟⲓ ϩⲁⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲛϥⲕⲱⲗⲩⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲱⲛϩ / (*IV* 101.15ff.) ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲡⲟⲩⲁ ⲛⲁⲙ-ⲡⲉϥⲙⲁⲕϩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲁⲡⲛⲁϩⲃⲉϥ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩⲣⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲁ-ⲛⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓ-ⲡⲱⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲓⲡⲱⲣⲉⲓ — neg. syncategorization.

7.2.3.4 The *preterite future*, ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ: always apodotic to an *irrealis* protasis (ⲡⲉ, when present, immediately precedes the conjunctive). No ⲁⲩⲱ-microcoordination; negation syncategorization, affirmation encategorization. (*III* 88.25ff.) ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲛⲉⲣⲱⲟⲩ ⲛⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ϩⲟⲧⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ: the negative syncategorization does not extend to the conjunctive (= affirmation encategorization) but this depends on the sense of ⲁⲓⲥⲑⲁⲛⲉ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉ- (as far as I know, a unicum; cf. αἰσθάνεσθαι ἐπί, with an adversative sense of " feel against "? This could suit a neg. syncategorization) / (*IV* 42.3ff.) ...ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲧⲉⲓⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲁⲱⲙⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲙⲥⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ... ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲁⲧⲩⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲁⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲧⲩⲁⲩ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ / (*IV* 96.25) ([ⲉ]ⲛⲉⲩⲟ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲁⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ) ⲛⲉⲩⲛⲁϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲁϫⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲓ ⲛϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ.

7.2.3.5 The *relative future* ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁ- only in the following two cases:

(1) the " substantivized " relative ⲡⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ (i.e. ⲉⲧⲛⲁ- expanding the determinator series ⲡ-); ⲉⲧⲛⲁ- expanding *indefinite pronominal* nuclei (ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ, ⲣⲱⲙⲉ (ⲛⲓⲙ)) — paraphrasing the foregoing case —, temporal nouns (ⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ) paraphrasing a conjunctional construction. Note here the affinity with the various specific protatic or "*fallsetzend*" (case-presenting) conditional, relative or temporal syntagms (§7.2.4) and with cases of the hypothetic non-actual/non-narrative present/perfect (§7.2.4.1), as nuclei of the conjunctive. (⟷)/(+→) not in opposition. As with the protatic nucleus, we find here too frequent negation encategorization. (*III* 74.3f.) ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧϥⲛⲁⲧⲙϩⲟ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲭⲉⲣⲟ... ⲛϥⲧⲙⲟⲩⲙⲉϥ / (*ibid.* 154.27f.) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲭⲱ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩϩⲱⲃ ⲉϥϩⲟⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲧⲁϩⲟ ⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲙⲡⲱⲁⲭⲉ ⲏ ⲡϩⲱⲃ... — neg. encategorization / (*IV* 113.5f.) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛϥⲱⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲉⲛϩⲟⲧ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*ibid.* 171.1f.) ⲡⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ϩⲛⲟⲩϩⲱⲡ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲧⲙⲭⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁϥⲁⲁϥ — neg. encategorization / (*Ch.* 25.39ff.) ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ... ⲛⲁⲥⲉϩⲥⲱϩⲕ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲣⲙⲉⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥϩⲓⲧⲕ ⲛⲥⲩⲁⲩⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲁⲙⲛⲧⲉ, also *IV* 182.3f., 208.11f. Additional exx.: *IV* 122.5ff. (ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ-, ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧ- ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙ-), 125.20f., 126.8ff., 166.21f., 169.11, 207.27f., *Ch.* 34.34ff.

(2) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ-, the *glose* constituent in a rhetorical-interrogative Cleft Sentence [52]. Frequent negation encategorization (a rhetorical figure); neg. syncategorization.

(a) (⟷): (*III* 33.26f.) ⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ+-ⲯⲓⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉϥⲭⲓ-ϩⲟ ⲛϥⲉⲩⲫⲣⲁⲛⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ / (*IV* 4-5) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲗⲏ-ⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲛⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ ⲛⲙⲡⲛⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲣⲣⲟ / (*ibid.* 32.19ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲣⲙⲛϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲉⲧϩⲛⲙⲡⲛⲩⲉ ⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲩⲁϩⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲁⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲛⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ (sim. *III* 200.14ff.) / (*Ch.* 56.46ff.) ⲁⲯ ⲙⲙⲁ ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲛⲁⲡⲁⲅⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲥⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲧⲙⲛ-ⲡⲟⲥⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲥⲯⲩⲭⲏ — second conjunctive subcoordinated, neg. encategorized. Additional exx.: *III* 186.24f., *IV* 88.10f., 164. 13f., *Ch.* 203.20ff.

(b) (+⟶) (*A 2* 240) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲥⲧⲙⲕⲱ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲃⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ — neg. encategorization / (*IV* 74.25) ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲛⲅⲧⲁⲛϩⲟⲛ / (*ibid.* 156.19f.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲡⲣⲟⲥⲉⲭⲉ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛⲁⲯ ⲛϩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲛⲉϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲉⲣ-ϩⲟⲩⲟ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲟⲩⲭⲉⲣⲥⲟⲥ "so that... not": negation maintenance / (*Ch.* 120.25ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁⲕⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲁⲩ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲛⲥⲉⲃⲱ ϩⲛ̀ⲧⲙⲛⲧⲃⲱⲃ ⲑⲏⲣⲥ "and still...".

7.2.3.6 Paradigm

ϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ	ⲁⲩⲱ ϥⲛⲁⲥⲱⲧⲙ
	conjunctive

Observations: (1) ⲁⲩⲱ + *future* is very common in *prophetic*, *promissory* or *threatening* textual stretches (e.g. *III* 114.9f., 89.7f., 136.22ff., 198.18ff., *IV* 104.11f., *Ch.* 178.31ff., 103.1ff., 128.36ff., 148.10ff.).

(2) For ⲁⲩⲱ + *future* in post-imperatival status, see §7.2.1.1.5.

(3) I have found no evidence in Shenoute for the conjunctive following a futuric -ⲛ̀ⲏⲩ present predicate (cf. *I Cor.* 4:19, *II Tim.* 4:4).

(4) Following ⲥⲛⲁⲯⲱⲡⲉ, the paradigm is joined by ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-, a "that"-form heralded by -ⲥ- (§5.2.2.1).

(5) *Circumstantial future.* I have found no example of any form or construction in opposition to the conjunctive after this nucleus.

(6) *Second Future.* I have found no example of coordinated *thematic* Sec. Future units (as distinct from *jussive* Sec. Future, §7.2.1.1.3) opposed to the conjunctive here.

(7) A rare example of coordinate *irrealis* apodoses (with no common thematic denominator calling for microcoordination): (*IV* 157.15f.) ⲛⲉⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁⲥϩⲟⲩⲉⲣ-ⲕⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉϥⲛⲁⲉⲛ-ⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲉϫⲛⲁ-ⲛⲁⲛⲓⲁⲥ ⲙⲛⲥⲁⲡⲡⲓⲣⲁ ⲧⲉϥⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ.

(8) ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ- ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ- is extremely rare [53] (*III* 198.14ff. ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϫⲓⲟⲩⲉ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲙⲟⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁϥⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲛⲛⲕⲁ ⲛⲧⲇⲓⲁⲕⲟⲛⲓⲁ); so is ⲉⲧⲛⲁ- ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ- (*III* 137.19f. ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲯⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧ-ⲛⲁϥⲉⲃ-ⲡⲉϥⲥⲟⲛ paraphrases and transforms *I Thess.* 4:6 ...ⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲯⲓ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲙϥⲉⲃ-ⲡⲉϥⲥⲟⲛ).

7.2.4 Conditional and temporal protatic syntagms [54]. The frequent negative and affirmative encategorization here is stylistically distinctive (a figure). Distinction between (⟷) and (+⟶) is difficult, perhaps not warranted.

[52] The two syntagms, ⲡⲉⲧ- ("substantivized relative") and ⲡⲉⲧ-/ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧ-/ⲉⲧ- (*glose*) are diachronically and synchronically to be kept apart, as regards both external and internal relationships. However, they coincide as nuclei of the conjunctive. See Polotsky 1962, esp. §6, and Quecke forthcoming.

[53] In (*IV* 204.21ff.) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ- ...ⲏ ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ- *two categories* of persons are enumerated. ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧⲛⲁ-/ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ- is coordinated to a relative *present* (*III* 198.10f., *IV* 49.1, 90.13) as a rhetorical figure (the relative present is mainly subcategorized as (ⲛ)ⲉⲧ- ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧ-, e.g. *III* 21.10, 74.11f., 93.17f., 127.16f.); with *glose-forms*: *III* 46.6f.13, 215.14f., *Ch.* 27.32ff., 95.13ff., *Wess. 9* 108a 13ff.; cf. Shisha-Halevy 1972: 114ff. For the perfect, we find (ⲛ)ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥ- (ⲁⲩⲱ) ⲁϥ-/ⲉⲁϥ-, cf. *III* 69.14f., 177.24f., *Ch.* 29.37ff., 40.18ff. etc.

[54] Cf. Erman 1933:§584, Hintze 1952:271f., Spiegelberg 1925:§145, cf. §495, Johnson 1974:288ff.

(1) The *Conditional*: ϵϥψANCωTM unvested or vested [55] with KAN, ϩOTAN, ϵψωΠϵ. Note the following data regarding the categorization contour: frequent *negation encategorization* (ϵϥψAN- (AYω) NϥTM-), the neg. conjunctive signifying "the next (negative) stage", "and not...", "so that... not", "even though... not...", "nevertheless/but/still... not..." (*III* 158.10f., *IV* 3.17f.; *III* 121.8f., *IV* 85.3, *Ch.* 45. 16ff., 72.12ff.). *Negation syncategorization* (ϵϥψANTM- (AYω) Nϥ-, *IV* 106.5f.); *negation maintenance*, (ϵϥψANTM- AYω NϥTM- *III* 65.25f., 131.20ff.); *affirmation encategorization* (ϵϥψANTM- + *conjunctive* + AYω AAAA, Aϵ, *III* 19.4ff., *A 1* 88).

(a) (←→), personal maintenance: (*III* 19.4ff.) ϵYψANTMP-ANAψ MΠPAN MΠNOYTϵ NCϵϵIPϵ Aϵ NKϵANAψ—affirm. encategorization / (*ibid.* 125.14ff.) ϵψωΠϵ ϵNψANTMCωTM NCAΠNOMOC... AYω NTNTM†-ϩTHN ϵMΠAPAΔOCIC NNϵNϵIOTϵ — neg. maintenance / (*IV* 3.17f.) ϵYψANP-ΠϵTNANOYϥ NϩHTOY H NCϵTMϵIPϵ — neg. encategorization / (*ibid.* 106.5f.) ϵYψANTMCωTM AYω NCϵⲬI-CBω — neg. syncategorization / (*Ch.* 117.14ff.) KAN ϵYψANψωωT NNψHN NTϵXωPA NTAYBωK ϵPOC AYω NCϵψOϥC / (*A 1* 88) ϵψωΠϵ ϵPψANTMΠOYA MMON MϵTANOI AAAA NTNCωTΠ NAN... — affirm. encategorization. Additional exx.: *III* 36.8f., 110.17f., 153.23 (repeated lexeme), 183.7f., *IV* 56.15ff., 94.4f., 102.18f. (repeated lexeme), *Ch.* 28.44ff., 82.50ff., 88-9, 166.2ff., etc.

(b) (+→) (?), no personal maintenance: (*III* 65.24ff.) ϵψωΠϵ Pω ϵϥψANTMN-TMHCϵ ϵ2OYN NϥTMAAC (*v.l.* Cod. A NϥAAC) NOYKϵΦAAAION NϥⲬI-MHCϵ ON MMOC — variant reading neg. syncategorization/maintenance / (*ibid.* 16.22f.) KAN ϵPψANΠNOYTϵ ⲒⲤ OYωN2 ϵBOA... NCϵP-ANAψ MMOϥ ϵYNAY ϵPOϥ ("and so...") / (*ibid.* 220.2ff.) ϵYψANΠORⲬOY ϵBOA NNϵYϵPHY NϵCOOY MϵN NCϵMTON MMOOY 2NNϵYMA MMOONϵ NBAAMΠϵ Aϵ NCϵ2PA NCωOY ϵ2ϵNMA NⲬAϵIϵ... / (*IV* 69.13, *A 1* 136 etc.) ϵCψANψωΠϵ... NTϵ- — the conjunctive sharing this slot with ϵTPϵ- after the cataphoric -C- (§5.2.2.1). Peculiarly, - AYω - occurs here in cases of *actual sequence*: (*III* 150.14f.) ϵIψANTωOYN ϵI2MOOC... AYω NTAϵI ϵBOA.

PARADIGM: complete coordinated sets of *protasis* + *apodosis* excepted, "concurrent" constructions are here rare. For ϵϥψAN- AYω ϵϥψAN- I have very few examples; one (*IV* 155.14ff.), in ponderous rhetorical style, with relatively independent protases: ϵIψANC2OYωPϵT MAYAAT... AYω ϵIψANCMNTC ϵTMOYϵMOϵIK...; another (*III* 121.8ff.) with protases too incommensurate to be microcoordinated: ϵψⲬϵ-ϵYψAN-...AYω ϩOTAN ϵNψANTM-...

(2) ϵψⲬϵ, ϵψωΠϵ:	ϵψⲬϵ-	Aϥ-	ϵψωΠϵ	ϵ-	see under (3)
		OYN-		ϵϥψAN-, ϵϥTM-	
		NTAϥ- (§2.1.5)		OYNTA-	
				MMON	
				NTAϥ-	

(a) (←→): neg. encategorization/maintenance; no personal maintenance. (*III* 139.18) ϵψⲬϵ-OYNϩOϵINϵ... ϵYKPMPM... Ⲭϵ-ϵIⲬI MMOOY NGONC AYω NTOOY NCϵTMTAMOI... — neg. encategorization / (*A 1* 99) ϵψⲬϵ-NTAΠAI ⲬOOC ϩMΠNOGNϵG NTϵϥΨYXH Ⲭϵ-'MAPIMOY NTϵNAI ωNϩ' AYω NCϵMOY... / (*Wess. 9* 122d 11ff.) ϵψωΠϵ OYNTHTN-OYϩωB MNNϵTNϵPHY NTϵTNNAY ϵYTYΠOC NϵIPHNH... / (*Ch.* 195.8ff.) ϵψⲬϵ-AΠϵTϵOYNTAϥ-COY GM-GOM ϵTAAY NAK NΓTMGM-GOM Aϵ NTOK... ϵTAAY ϩAΠCωTϵ NTϵKΨYXH... — neg. encategorization. Also *A 1* 97, *P* 130[4] 111 ΦNΓ (ϵψωΠϵ NTAY- AYω NTOC NC-), *Ch.* 85-6.

(b) (+→) (?): (*IV* 101.8) ⲬϵKAC ϵYϵϵIMϵ Ⲭϵ-CϵOYωψ ϵ2APϵ2 ϵPOC; ϵψωΠϵ MMON NCϵTMⲬITOY... (i.e. the applicants to join the community. The neg. conjunctive [neg. maintenance] contentualizes MMON).

[55] SHISHA-HALEVY 1972:§0.3, Ch. 3.

(3) *Circumstantial-converter* protases (unvested or vested [55] with ϵψωπϵ, κλν, ϩλμοι):

ϵψωπϵ	‖		‖ Bipartite
κλν	‖		‖ ογντλч-/мнтλч-
	‖	ϵ	‖ λч-
	‖		‖ мпч- (here the conv. is often realized as zero)
ϩλμοι	‖		‖ нϵ ‖ мпч-/нтλч-
	‖		‖ Bipartite

(a) (⟷): characteristic frequent neg. encategorization; neg. syncategorization/maintenance; no personal maintenance. (*III* 157.1f.) (ϩϵнϩвнγϵ нсϵψоοп λн) н нточ ϵγψоοп нтλтмϵимϵ λнок оγтϵ пϩллο... — neg. encategorization / (*ibid.* 40.20ff.) κλν ϵιψληλ ммλγ κλν ϵγψληλ ммμι κλν ϵιογϵм-οϵιк ммλγ ϵγ-ογωм ммμι н ϵρϵтοοт λγω тоотоγ ϩмпϵιχοп ноγωт ϩιтϵιтрапϵζа λγω нсϵтолμа ϵтλко ннтλмιο мп-ноγтϵ... / (*ibid.* 139.25ff.) ...ϵтϵтнсοογн нλмϵ χϵ-λιχι-ϩοϵινϵ нϭонс... λγω нтωтн нтϵтнтмтλмοι... — neg. encategorization / (*P* 130² 41 ps) ϵψωπϵ оγϵιωт мноγмλλγ ϵоγнтλγ ммλγ нϩϵнψнрϵ мнϩϵнψϵϵрϵ λγω нтϵϩλϩ нϩнтоγ ϩϵ ϵϩрλι ϩноγψснϵ... / (*IV* 31.3ff.) ϩϵнрωмϵ ϵмнтλγ ммλγ нϩϵнψнрϵ н нточ ϵγнтλγ нсϵапотассϵ ммοογ мнϩϵнϩγпархонта ϵнλψωоγ... / (*ibid.* 196.14f.) (ϵψχϵ-оγнϩοϵινϵ... нсϵоγωψ άн ϵϭω ноγϵψноγωм...) н нточ кλн ϵλγоγωм нсϵтмϩλϩωоγ ϵβολ ммοογ... (i.e. from the victuals) — neg. encategorization / (*ibid.* 98.14f.) ...ϵλγтοψк ϵϩϵнϩβнγϵ мппνγматικον νгтωϩ ϩнϩϵнϩβнγϵ нсωматικον... / (*Ch.* 63.12ff.) оγатϭом пϵ ϵтрϵпδιαβολος трϵрωмϵ р-новϵ мпϵпϵчоγωψ р-ψорп ϵпмϵϵγϵ мпδιαβολος н νчϩотр ммμач / (*ibid.* 195.53ff.) (" Will our heart be capable of receiving love towards our neighbour) мппνψоγωч νψорп ϵβολ ϩнммнтμаιϩомт λγω нтνϵιλλч ϵβολ ϩмпϵслшωмϵ тнрч... / (*P* 130² 75 ro) ним пϵтνар-ναι ϵмпϵппоγтϵ рψрпсλϩϵ-пϵчϩο ϵβολ ммοογ λγω нчλλγ νψммο ϵпϵчпνλ... / (*A 2* 35?) (" What is his worth") кλн ϵмпчка-кϵϩνλλγ χϵ-мпчтрϵγψωпϵ νλч... λγω нчр-рммλο нϩнтоγ... — affirm. encategorization / (*Wess. 9* 88b 11ff.) ϵнϵмпϵпϩнт ннϵтоγнϩ ϩнθιλнм мпιоγоϵιψ сλϩωч ϵβολ ммоч λγω нтϵтϵγψγхн рψрпнψωпϵ ммλ νδλιмωн... нϵγνλλιχмλлωтιζϵ λн пϵ мпїнλ / (*Zoega* 200 tia) ϵнϵмпϵм-параφγсις тωм нβλл нсϵтωм мпϩнт ннϵтϵιрϵ ммοογ... / (*A 1* 202) ϩλμοι ϵнϵγψοοп ммμλн тϵноγ нсϵ-тмпϵϩ-нϵнϩοϵιтϵ ϩιχωн... — neg. encategorization / (*K* 928) (кλϵιн) ϩλμοι ϵнϵмпчр-ллλγ нλгλθон ϵнϵϩ нчтммογоγт δϵ он ноγатновϵ. (ιоγδλс) ϩλμοι ϵнϵмпчр-апостолос ϵнϵϩ нчтмпарλδιδоγ он мпχοϵιс. (кλιφλс) ϩλμοι ϵнϵмпчр-оγннв ϵнϵϩ нчтмχι-ψοχнϵ он ϵмоγоγт мпχοϵιс — neg. maintenance / (*IV* 9.18f.) ϩλμοι ϵнϵнтλγмоγр ноγωнϵ нсικϵ ϵпϵγмакϩ нсϵомсоγ ϩмппϵλλгос нθалλсса. Also: *IV* 123.20ff. (ϵψωπϵ ϵн- н ϵн- н нточ ϵн- λγω нтϵ-), 163.2f. (мпоγ- нсϵ-), *Ch.* 165.16ff. (ϵнϵмпоγ- λγω нсϵ-), *Wess. 9* 119b 9ff. (ϩλμοι ϵнϵмпоγ- нсϵтм-).

(b) (+→) (?): (*III* 111-2) ϩλμοι ϵнϵнтλιϭινϵ... ннινоγтϵ нϩλт ϩινоγв... мλλιстλ θιкωн ннογв тλι ϵтιрϵ нсϵ ммλϩϵ нχιсϵ λγω соογ ноγωψс нтλϭϵтϭωтс н нтλϭϵтϭωтоγ / (*A 2* 526) пмλϵин пϵ пλι мпϩнт ϵтсοοч накαθартос мпрωмϵ ϵчнλγ ϵγмϵλос нтϵпϵчсωма нчр-атψа[γ] ϩннϵчмϵϵγϵ.

Paradigm: ϵнϵ - λγω ϵнϵ- (rare): (*Ch.* 36.11ff.) ϵнϵоγнϭом гλр ммок, λγω ϵнϵтβоηθϵια λн тϵ мпϵχс... — incommensurate protases (the second non-verbal).

7.2.4.1 Atemporal, generic verb forms: (*non-actual*) *relative-protatic present*, *parabolic* (*non-narrative*) *perfect*. We encounter here either (a) the present form with no actual or durative reference [56],

[56] See §3.1.2.1.1. Cf. Young 1961:115-8 (past reference of the present), 118f. (esp. 118 n. 17, on the present as a habitual tense). For the conjunctive after the pres., Polotsky 1960a:§23 Obs. 4 (= *CP* 248), Browne 1979a:40; earlier, Stern §280f. (f). For pre-Coptic correspondents, see Erman 1933:§583, Spiegelberg 1925:§144, Johnson 1974:291f. (E528-9).

ⲟⲩⲛ- or the verboid ⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁ-, or (b) the non-narrative, gnomic-parabolic perfect tense [57] — as a rule in relative and adnominal-circumstantial conversion, the equivalents of a *generic relative clause* (" such... as...") or of a gnomic suppositive hypothetic protasis (" supposing...", " should it ever happen that...") [58]. (Note the frequent negation encategorization, cf. §7.2.4.)

(1) *Present*: (a) (⟷): (*Ch.* 26.12f.) ⲛⲉⲕⲥⲱⲱϥ ⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛϭⲟⲙ ⲛϩⲉⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ϣⲏⲙ ⲉⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙϩⲱⲡ ⲉⲛⲉⲧⲕⲱⲙϣ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ — neg. encategorization / (*IV* 122.5ff.) ⲛⲉⲧⲛⲁ+ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱϩ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲛ... ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧⲟ ⲛⲕⲟⲓⲛⲱⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲛ... ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲁⲡⲟⲧⲁⲥⲥⲉ ⲛⲛⲕⲁ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲧϣⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲁⲩ... — here the conj. is probably microcoordinated to the substantivized future / (*Leyd.* 355) ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲱⲧⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲛϥϩⲩⲡⲟⲙⲓⲛⲉ (sic) ϩⲓⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲣⲉϥϩⲓ-ⲗⲁ / (*IV* 156.9ff.) (ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲥϩⲓⲙⲉ) ⲉⲩⲁⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲁϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉϣⲓⲡⲉ ⲁⲛ ϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲥⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲉⲩⲕⲣⲁⲧⲏⲥ ⲛⲁⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲧϩⲟⲥⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣ-ⲡⲉⲩⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲛϩⲙϩⲁⲗ... / (*Cairo* 8007) ⲟⲩⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲧⲣⲉϥⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲙⲡⲁⲧϥϩⲙⲟⲟⲥ, ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲩⲉϣ-ⲧⲣⲉϥ ϩⲙⲟ[ⲟⲥ...].

(b) (+→): (*III* 41.5) ⲛⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲛⲉⲩϩⲃϩⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲉϩⲱⲡ ⲉϫⲱⲟⲩ — lexical equivalence of neg. encategorization: " ...and (should they) not tell " / (*Ch.* 195.1f.) ⲡⲉⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲧⲁϥⲥⲟⲩ ⲛϥⲧⲙⲛⲁ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ — neg. encategorization [59] / (*IV* 120.3f.) ⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ⲉⲩⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲏ ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙϫⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁϥ — ⲛⲁ- nucleus? / (*Wess. 9* 94b 10ff.) ⲛⲓⲙ ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ ϫⲉ-ⲛϩⲁⲗⲁⲧⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲧⲃⲛⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲕⲉⲥⲉⲉⲡⲉ ⲛⲍⲱⲟⲛ ⲥⲉⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲣϩⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲙⲣ-ⲡⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲧⲱⲡ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲉⲣϩⲩ — neg. encategorization, the conjunctive expanding the generic present ⲥⲉⲙⲉ — or better neg. maintenance, with ⲡⲉⲧⲥⲟⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲛ the nucleus (ⲧⲱⲡ ⲉ- " be familiar with ").

(2) *Perfect*: (*A 2* 363-4) ⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ + ⲛⲁϥ " There was a man to whom God had given...") ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ⲙⲛϩⲉⲛϩⲩⲡⲁⲣⲭⲟⲛⲧⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ +-ⲉϫⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲁϥ ⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ... ⲟⲩ-ⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ + ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ ϩⲓϫⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲛϥⲧⲙⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲛ+-ϭⲟⲙ ⲛⲁϥ ⲛⲣ-ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲥ — neg. encategorization / (*III* 204.12ff.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉϥϩⲛⲛⲉϥⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲁϥⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥϭⲙ-ⲡⲟⲩⲩⲓⲛⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲉϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁϥ ϫⲉ-'ⲧⲃⲃⲟⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲕⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ' ⲉⲣⲉⲩⲟⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲟ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛⲛⲟⲩⲡⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ. Very striking, with the whole *protasis-apodosis* complex hypothetic, is (*A 2* 453, not Sh.) ⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲟⲩⲁ ⲁⲁϥ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ϩⲓⲧⲛⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲏ ⲉⲁϥϫⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲧⲉⲓⲅⲉⲛⲓⲁ (sic) ⲧⲁⲓ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲥⲟⲩⲛ-ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲛⲁⲁⲕⲉ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥⲣⲁⲩⲉ.

7.2.5 Apersonal/personal verb nominalizations: the infinitives

7.2.5.1 The apersonal (non-causative) infinitive, in varying syntactic statuses and the full range of meaning nuances [60], is expanded by the conjunctive.

(1) The infinitive in *adjunct* status (expanding another verb: ' (ⲉ)ⲥⲱⲧⲙ '):

(a) (⟷): ⲁⲩⲱ-microcoordination is the rule. Personal maintenance; negation syncategorization. (*III* 40. 14f.) ...ⲉϥϩⲁⲣⲉϩ ⲉⲧⲙⲡⲁϩⲧϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛϥϣⲱⲡⲉ ϩⲁⲧⲉⲝⲟⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲟⲩⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ̅... / (*ibid.* 143.23f.) ⲉⲓⲁⲛⲁⲅ-ⲕⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲱⲧⲛ ⲉⲥⲁϩⲉⲑⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲣ-ⲑⲩⲥⲓⲁ ⲛⲛⲉⲓⲇⲱⲗⲟⲛ. Also: *III* 92.8ff., *IV* 38.12f. (here Leipoldt emends the text unnecessarily to ⲉ + inf.).

(b) (+→): personal maintenance; neg. encategorization. (*A 2* 405) ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲛϭⲟⲙ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲓⲇⲱⲗⲟⲛ ⲉϣⲃⲧϥ ⲏ ⲉⲡⲟⲟⲛⲉϥ ⲉϥⲟ ⲛϣⲉ ⲛϥⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲟⲩⲱⲛⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϥⲁⲁϥ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲁⲧ ⲁⲛⲧⲓϩⲟⲙⲛⲧ — the first conj. premodified by the circumstantial present / (*P* 130[5] 38 vo) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲥⲟⲫⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲛⲕⲗⲏⲣⲟⲛⲟⲙⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣ-ⲁⲑⲏⲧ ⲛⲧⲛ-ⲥⲱⲧⲡ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲱϣ ⲉϥϫⲟⲥⲉ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲉⲑⲃⲃⲓⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲛϫⲓ ⲛⲟⲩϩⲙⲟⲧ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲓⲧⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲣ-ϫⲁⲥⲓϩⲏⲧ

[57] Compare (pre-Coptic Egyptian) Hintze 1952:61f., Erman 1933:§582, Borghouts 1979:20ff. (" ' thematic ' rather than temporal ", " non-witnessed acts ", " hearsay ", " non-objective sequence ", " inferential ", " customary, habitual, non-point past " [Wente]); Spiegelberg 1925:§147 Anm., Johnson 1974:291, 293.

[58] Cf. the similar role of ⲉϥϣⲁⲛ- (+ conjunctive), e.g. *Ch.* 190.49ff., or of ⲉϣϫⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛ- (+ conjunctive), e.g. *IV* 24-5.

[59] Cf. (Bohairic) *Jac.* 4:17 ⲫⲏ ⲉⲧⲥⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⲡⲉⲑⲛⲁⲛⲉϥ ⲉⲁⲓϥ ⲟⲩⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉϥϣⲧⲉⲙⲁⲓϥ.

[60] See Rudnitzky 1956:48ff.

ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲧ ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ / (*III* 118.25f.) ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-ⲩⲩⲉ ⲉⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ ⲛⲧⲛⲍⲩⲡⲟⲙⲓⲛⲉ — an instance of " generic " personalization (encategorization of person), see under (2). Also *III* 135-6, 140. 13ff., *IV* 196.11.

(2) The infinitive in *subject/predicate* status. In this case we find the *generic personalization* of the infinitive (i.e. person encategorization): for the *generic* (rhetorical) *person* [61], Coptic uses the 3rd person sgl. masc., the 2nd person sgl. masc. or the 1st plural. (*III* 65-6) ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲙⲁⲕⲁⲣⲓⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲧ ⲙⲡⲍⲏⲕⲉ ⲛⲩⲧⲙⲭⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲧⲩ, ⲏ ⲉⲁⲕⲭⲓ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲅⲍⲱ ⲉⲣⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲩⲃⲃⲉⲓⲱ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲕⲧⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ / (*Ch.* 104.28ff.,39ff.) ⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲙ-ⲡⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲅⲧⲙⲣ-ⲡⲉⲩⲍⲱⲃ — here the non-generic (anaphoric) 3rd person precludes its use as a generic person / (*A 1* 37) ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ-ⲩⲓⲛⲉ ⲧⲁⲣⲛⲅⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲥⲏⲍ — reminiscence of *Mt.* 7:7 (etc.) / (*Ming.* 89) ⲡⲱⲛ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲭⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲉⲕⲁⲁⲩ ⲍⲓⲱⲱⲩⲏ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲙⲩⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲍⲓⲭⲱⲏ — neg. encategorization. Cotextual categorization of person / (*III* 67.5ff.) ⲙⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲉⲧⲍⲓⲧⲟⲩⲱⲕ ⲛⲅⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-ⲡⲉⲕⲭⲁⲭⲉ... ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲡⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲙⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲛⲉⲕⲭⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲅⲩⲗⲏⲗ [...] — the infinitive is the predicate constituent in the Copular (# *subject-copula-predicate* #) Nominal Sentence pattern (reminiscence of *Mt.* 5:43-4 with *Rom.* 10:4, 13:10).

7.2.5.2 The causative infinitive (ⲉ-)ⲧⲣⲉⲩ-ⲥⲱⲧⲙ

(1) In *adverbal adjunctal* status (incl. object expansion): ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ

(a) (⟷) very common; as a rule, personal maintenance: (*III* 36.5ff., parall. *Ch.* 131.24ff.) ⲁⲩⲉⲣⲏⲧ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲍⲓⲭⲛⲧⲉⲩⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ, cf. *ibid.* 202.4 ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱ, see §7.2.1.1.1 / (*ibid.* 31.3ff.) ⲧⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲁⲗⲉⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲙⲏⲧⲣⲙⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲧⲉⲧⲛⲍⲟⲙⲉⲗⲉⲓ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ, ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲭⲓ-ⲍⲣⲏⲧⲛ ⲉⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩⲁⲁⲃ — affirmative encategorization / (*ibid.* 112.24f.) (ⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲧ-ⲥⲃⲱ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲙⲉⲥⲧⲉ-ⲡⲡⲉ-ⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲙⲉⲣⲉ-ⲡⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ / (*IV* 65.6ff.) (ⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲱⲩ) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲭⲟⲓⲥ ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲩⲕⲱ ⲙⲡⲩⲡ̅ⲛ̅ⲁ̅ ⲍⲓⲭⲱⲟⲩ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲩⲍⲁⲣⲉⲍ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ... / (*Ch.* 33.16ff.) (ⲛⲉⲧⲁⲯⲓⲟⲩ) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲧⲁⲕⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲩⲩⲟⲧⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ / (*P* 131[5] 65 vo) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛ+-ⲛⲁⲁⲕⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲩ. Additional exx.: *III* 106.18f., *IV* 30.25ff., 176.2f., *Ch.* 51.7ff., 86.21ff., etc.

(b) (+⟶) rarer: (*IV* 56.6f.) ⲛⲧⲟⲟⲩ ⲍⲱⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲍⲁⲣⲉⲍ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲩⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲱ ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ / (*ibid.* 122. 15f). ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲕⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲩⲁⲣⲛⲁ ⲛⲩⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲑⲉ ⲛⲭⲓⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲕⲉⲥⲟⲡ / (*Ch.* 189.18ff.) ...ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲉⲃⲡ-ⲛⲉⲩⲕⲉⲉⲥ ⲛⲥⲉ-ⲣⲟⲕⲍⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲟⲛⲍ: actual sequence - irreversible.

(2) *Adnominal*, *ad-modifier*, assorted adjunctal roles: ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ (*III* 211.2f.) ⲁⲩⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲃ ⲛⲕⲉ-ⲣⲁⲩⲛⲟⲥ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ... ⲍⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲕⲟⲛⲥⲟⲩ ⲍⲛⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲟⲩⲛⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲩⲕⲛⲥ-ⲛⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ — microcoordination / (*IV* 187.9ff.) ⲙⲏ ⲍⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲏ ⲍⲛⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲟⲩⲱⲍ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ ⲉⲣ-ⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲙ-ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ — neg. encategorization of a second conjunctive (coordinated by - ⲁⲩⲱ -). For adnominal ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- see §7.4 below.

(3) In *subject/predicate* status: ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ

(a) (⟷): no ⲁⲩⲱ; personal maintenance. (*III* 182.20ff.) ...ⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲙⲉⲗⲉⲧⲁ ⲛⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ... ⲛⲧⲛⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲍⲱⲱⲩ ⲍⲛⲍⲉⲛ+-ⲧⲱⲛ... ⲛⲧⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲓⲁ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲏⲣ-ⲍⲉⲛⲛⲏⲥⲧⲉⲓⲁ ⲙⲛⲍⲉⲛⲩⲗⲗ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲛⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲍⲱⲱⲩ ⲛⲕⲣⲟⲩ ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲍⲛⲍⲱⲃ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲉⲩⲍⲟⲟⲩ / (*Ch.* 160.15ff.) (ⲕⲉⲍⲱⲃ) ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲣ-ⲍⲟⲧⲉ ⲍⲏⲧⲩ ⲛⲧⲛⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲍⲏⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ.

(b) (+⟶): (*III* 104.19f.) ⲙⲏ ⲟⲩⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡⲕⲁⲍ ⲡⲱⲍ ⲛⲩⲱⲙⲕ ⲛⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ / (*ibid.* 150.18ff.) ⲉⲡⲉⲧⲉⲯⲩⲉ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲍⲓⲧⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲛⲏⲩ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲍⲓⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲛⲙⲟⲕⲍ ⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ... ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲍⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲛⲧⲛⲣⲁⲩⲉ — actual sequence.

[61] Another case in which personalization is called for is the object-slot of a reflexive infinitive: (*A 1* 199) ⲉⲃⲱⲕ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲉⲛ-ⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲣⲧⲩⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲱⲗⲏⲗ ⲉⲱⲱ ⲉⲫⲁⲗⲗⲉⲓ ⲉⲧⲃⲃⲟⲕ... ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲩ; consider also (*P* 131[6] 13 vo) ⲙⲡⲣⲧⲣⲉⲛⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲛ ⲍⲛⲟⲩⲕⲣⲟⲩ... ⲛⲅⲫⲛⲧⲥ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲟⲣⲱ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ. For the " generic person " see Jespersen, *Philosophy of Grammar* (1924) 215ff.

(4) Conjugation carrier in the *coeventive* (ϩⲘⲠⲦⲢⲈϥⲤⲰⲦⲘ) and *posteventive* (ⲘⲚⲚⲤⲀⲦⲢⲈϥⲤⲰⲦⲘ) forms: -ⲦⲢⲈϥⲤⲰⲦⲘ (Nuclear verb affirmative only). Only (⟷); personal maintenance disrupted; neg. encategorization. (*III* 169.12ff.) ⲘⲚⲚⲤⲀⲦⲢⲈⲔ+-ⲤⲂⲰ ⲚⲀⲨ ⲚⲞⲨⲤⲞⲠ ⲀⲚ ⲞⲨⲦⲈ ⲤⲚⲀⲨ ⲀⲚ ⲀⲖⲖⲀ ⲚϩⲀϩ ⲚⲤⲞⲠ ⲈⲘⲀⲦⲈ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲤⲈⲦⲘⲢ-ϩⲚⲀⲨ ⲈⲤⲰⲦⲘ (also *IV* 52.6, 156.11) / (*A 2* 403) ϩⲘⲠⲦⲢⲈϥⲢ-ⲞⲨⲀ ⲚⲞⲨⲰⲦ ⲘⲚⲠⲈⲠⲚⲀ̄ ⲈⲦⲞⲨⲀⲀⲂ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲦⲈ-ⲠⲈⲠⲚⲀ̄ ⲈⲦⲞⲨⲀⲀⲂ Ⲣ-ⲞⲨⲀ ⲚⲞⲨⲰⲦ ⲚⲘⲘⲀϥ / (*III* 134.3f.) ⲘⲚⲚⲤⲀⲦⲢⲈⲨⲂⲰⲔ ⲈⲂⲞⲖ ⲈⲠⲘⲀ ⲈⲦⲞⲨⲘⲈⲈⲨⲈ ⲈⲢ-ⲠⲞⲨⲰⲰⲨ ⲘⲠⲚⲞⲨⲦⲈ ⲚϩⲎⲦϥ ⲀⲨⲰ ⲚⲤⲈⲈⲒⲢⲈ ϩⲰⲰϥ ϩⲘⲠⲘⲀ ⲈⲦⲘⲘⲀⲨ ⲚⲚⲈⲨⲞⲨⲰⲰⲨ ⲚϩⲎⲦ ⲈⲐⲞⲞⲨ. Also *III* 49.1ff., *Ch.* 66.18ff.

(5) *Personal infinitive* after prepositions: -ⲦⲢⲈϥⲤⲰⲦⲘ: (*Wess. 9* 118b 11ff.) ⲀⲚⲦⲒⲦⲢⲈⲚⲢ-ⲘⲞⲈⲒϩⲈ ⲈⲭⲚⲚ-ⲦⲀⲘⲒⲞ ⲘⲠⲚⲞⲨⲦⲈ ⲘⲚⲚⲈϥⲘⲈⲖⲞⲤ ⲦⲎⲢⲞⲨ ⲚⲦⲚ+-ⲈⲞⲞⲨ ⲚⲀϥ ⲀⲔⲦⲢⲈϩⲀϩ Ⲣ-ⲘⲞⲈⲒϩⲈ ⲈⲭⲘⲠⲦⲀⲔⲞ / (*Ch.* 178-9) ⲠⲈϩⲞⲞⲨ ⲠⲈ ⲚⲦⲢⲈⲨⲠⲀⲢⲀⲄⲈ ("they" - heaven, earth and its inhabitants) ⲚⲦⲈⲘⲠⲨⲀⲎ ⲚⲘⲠⲎⲨⲈ ⲞⲨⲰⲚ... ⲚⲤⲈⲂⲰⲔ ⲈϩⲞⲨⲚ ⲚϩⲎⲦⲞⲨ — actual, dramatic succession of apocalyptic events. All these are apparently subcoordination instances.

(6) ⲦⲢⲈϥⲤⲰⲦⲘ *causative*, predicated in a conjugation form — very rarely expanded by the conjunctive (subcoordination only?): (*III* 131.20) ⲈⲒⲮⲀⲚⲦⲘⲦⲢⲈⲠⲔⲀϩ ⲞⲨⲰⲚ ⲚⲢⲰϤ ⲚϤⲞⲘⲔⲞⲨ — neg. syncategorization; sim. (*Ch.* 114-5) ⲚⲈϤⲚⲀⲦⲢⲈⲀⲘⲚⲦⲈ ⲞⲨⲰⲚ ⲚⲢⲰϤ ⲚϤⲞⲘⲔⲞⲨ ϩⲚⲐⲀⲎ.

7.2.5.3 Paradigms: It is striking that, whereas coordination of multiple infinitives is much more common for the simple infinitive than micro-/subcoordination by the conjunctive, the inverse ratio is observable for the causative-personal infinitive ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-, where micro-/subcoordination is more usual by far than coordination of terms.

(a) ⲈⲤⲰⲦⲘ ⲚⲤⲰⲦⲘ ⲚⲤⲰⲦⲘ	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲤⲰⲦⲘ	(1) adverbal adjuncts: coordinated series of co-nuclear adjuncts (e.g. *III* 122.7f., *IV* 37.11, *Ch.* 87.19ff., 107.25ff., etc.; very frequent) (2) neg. infinitive coordinated to a homolexemic affirm. one (*IV* 75.29ff., 163.16, *Ch.* 65.14f.). (3) adjuncts expanding extraconjugational infinitives [62] (*III* 94.12, 114.13f., *IV* 38.21, 95.2, *Ch.* 197.8ff.).
(b) in-conjugation -ⲤⲰⲦⲘ	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲤⲰⲦⲘ	*III* 107-8, 215.7f., *Ch.* 165.30ff.
(c) ⲚⲤⲰⲦⲘ	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-	*Ch.* 203.24ff. [63]
(d) ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-	independent coordinated adjuncts (*III* 86.9f., *IV* 33. 16ff., 183.9f., *Ch.* 67.17ff.).
(e) ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲈⲤⲰⲦⲘ	*IV* 91.2f.
(f) ⲘⲚⲚⲤⲀⲦⲢⲈϤ-	ⲀⲨⲰ ⲘⲚⲚⲤⲀⲦⲢⲈϤ-	*III* 169.10ff. (3×)
(g) ϩⲘⲠⲦⲢⲈ-	ⲀⲨⲰ ϩⲘⲠⲦⲢⲈ-	*III* 138.8ff.

[62] ⲀⲨⲰ Ⲉ + *infinitive* coordinated to abstract nouns: *Ch.* 41.43ff. (parall. *III* 80.24f.), 98.45ff.

[63] An even more radical cohesive syncategorization (reduction of categories) than with the conjunctive. This is a very close junctural *link* in paradigm with constructions of looser juncture (§6.0.2.1). Rudnitzky 1956:56-8 quotes many instances of a "conjunctive" role of Ⲉ + *infinitive*/ⲈⲦⲢⲈϤ-. Upon examination, these are classifiable as follows:

7.2.6 The rhetorical apodotic-retrospective role of the conjunctive; poorly documented or inadequately established functions

7.2.6.1 The *rhetorical apodotic-retrospective-eventual role* of the conjunctive [64]

(1) The conjunctive as a non-initial rhetorical question or asseveration, following a formal or logical rhetorical protasis (" given that... ", " in view of this... "): (*IV* 195.6ff.) ϣⲭⲉ-ⲟⲩⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲉⲩⲁⲩⲡⲏ (sic) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲣⲉⲡⲉⲩϩⲏⲧ ⲅⲛ-ⲁⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲩⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲡⲛⲧⲁⲡⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ (sic) ⲭⲟⲟϥ... ⲉⲓⲉ-ⲛⲅⲟⲩⲭⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ⲉⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉⲕⲁⲡⲁⲧⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲕⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲉⲧⲣⲁⲡⲉⲍⲁ ⲛⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲟⲛⲓⲟⲛ... ⲏ ⲛⲅⲃⲱⲕ ⲉϩⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲉⲣⲟ (Leipoldt's suggested emendation, adding - ⲁⲛ, is I believe unacceptable) / (*ibid.* 100.2ff.) ⲏ ⲉϣⲭⲉ-ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲱϩⲧ-ϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲛⲟϥ ⲛϩⲏⲕⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲛⲥⲉⲧ-ⲥⲟ ⲉⲥⲉϣⲧ-ⲧⲏⲩⲧⲛ ⲛⲧⲱⲧⲛ (for ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ + *conj.* see §7.3.1 below) / (*Ch.* 15.14ff.) ⲙⲏ ⲡⲁⲏⲣ ⲣ-ⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲛ ⲁⲛ ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲛⲅⲱϣⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ... ϣⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲡⲉ ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲛⲟⲛ ⲡϣⲁⲛϩⲧⲏϥ ⲟⲛ ⲛϥⲧⲙⲧⲥⲁⲃⲉ-ⲛⲉⲛⲉⲃⲓⲏⲛ — negation maintenance: the conjunctive realizes the ⲙⲏ (" *nonne* ") rhetorical question after the protasis-equivalent circumstances expressed by the preceding present forms: " Isn't the air full of light in daytime, and do we not often look up at the sky, and still do not see anything, nor does God enlighten us miserable ones " / (*B.M.Cat.* 82, No. 198 f.1 vo) ⲁⲩⲛⲉⲭ-ⲡⲥⲁⲧⲁⲛⲁⲥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲧⲡⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲁϥⲕⲱⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲑⲉ ⲛⲣ-ⲛⲉϥⲃⲟⲧⲉ, ⲛⲅⲁⲁⲩ ⲇⲉ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲅⲭⲟⲕⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ; " ... and wilt thou too do and carry out these abominations? " / (*A 1* 210) ⲡⲉⲭⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲛⲥⲟⲃⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲇⲁⲡⲁⲛⲏ ⲙⲡⲃⲱⲗ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲡⲁⲥⲭⲁ, ⲏ ⲛⲅⲧⲙⲭⲱⲕⲙ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲅⲧⲙⲧⲁϩⲥⲕ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲉϩ ⲏ ⲛⲅⲭⲟⲕⲙⲉⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲅⲧⲁϩⲥⲕ ⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲧⲏⲣϥ ⲙⲡⲭⲁⲭⲉ; / (*Ch.* 167-8, parall. *III* 74.14ff.) ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲟⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲃⲁⲣⲃⲁⲣⲟⲥ ⲉⲛⲉⲩⲯⲏⲣⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲩⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ... ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ. ⲁⲣⲁ ⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩⲟⲩⲭⲁⲓ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲛϩⲁϩ; "' ... and may this perhaps mean that salvation of many will ensue? " — an ironic-sceptical question [65] / (*ibid.* 13.8ff.) ⲛⲧⲟⲕ ϩⲱⲱⲕ ⲧⲅⲟⲙ ⲙⲡⲉⲕⲥⲱⲙⲁ ⲯⲟⲟⲡ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲕ, ⲙⲙⲛⲯⲱⲛⲉ, ⲙⲙⲛⲧⲕⲁⲥ, ⲙⲙⲛⲡⲉⲓⲣⲁⲥⲙⲟⲥ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲅⲧⲙⲉⲯ+ ⲟⲩⲃⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ; "... and still thou canst not fight against sin?" / (*ibid.* 58.15ff.) ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲟⲩ ⲉⲓⲛⲁⲣ-ⲛⲓⲡⲁⲣⲁⲫⲩⲥⲓⲥ ⲙⲙⲛⲧ-ⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ; ⲟⲩ ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ϯϩⲱⲛ ⲭⲉ-' ⲙⲡⲣⲁⲁⲩ ', ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲭⲉ-' ⲥⲉⲣϩⲟⲩⲉⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ ⲛⅾⲓⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ', ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲙⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲉⲓⲥϩⲟⲩⲟⲣⲧ ⲉⲓϣⲁⲛⲁⲁⲩ; / (*Wess. 9* 139a 24ff.) ⲥⲱⲧⲙ ⲉⲛⲉⲓⲙⲛⲧⲁⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ. ϩⲉⲛⲓⲉⲓⲃ ⲛⲃⲁϣⲟⲣ . ϩⲉⲛⲁⲡⲉ ⲛϩⲟϥ. ϩⲉⲛⲛⲁⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲙⲥⲁϩ... ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲕⲁ-ϩⲑⲏⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲉⲩⲛⲁⲙⲧⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ... — a case of rhetorical dependent exclamatory asseveration (overlapping the adnominal adnexal role of the conjunctive, §7.3.2): " foxes' nails, snakes' heads, crocodiles ' teeth, and people should trust them to allay (their pains)! ". Compare here the use of the conjunctive (and of ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ) following a rhetorical interrogative. See exx. in §7.2.1.1.5 — e.g. *III* 148.25ff. ⲉⲩⲧⲱⲛ ⲛⲉⲛϣⲃⲉⲉⲣ... ⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲛⲉⲛⲕⲁⲕⲓⲁ.

(2) The conjunctive non-rhetorical, following a formal or logical temporal protasis: (*A 1* 204f.) ⲉⲣⲉ-ϣⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲣⲓⲙⲉ ⲉⲟⲩⲥⲱⲛⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲟⲉⲓⲧ ⲉⲣⲟ ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ (" ... and you end up by... ") / (*A 2* 505) ϩⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲩ-

(a) Following *jussive* ⲛⲛⲉϥ- (*IV* 110.19ff.), ⲉϥⲛⲁ- (*IV* 93.1ff.), neg. imperative (*IV* 104.22): here ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- apparently serves as a *jussive* form (by virtue of its " that "-form nature?), while ⲉ + *infinitive* is a true subcategorization form. The jussive context (as Rudnitzky rightly observes) is here probably the primary factor; but see a case of *initial* jussive ⲉ + inf./ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ-: (*IV* 68.10ff.) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲡⲟⲣϣⲟⲩ... ⲉϥⲓⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧϣⲟⲩϣⲟⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲙⲱϣ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... ⲟⲩⲇⲉ ⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉⲛϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲓⲧⲃⲛⲏ...

(b) ⲉ + *infinitive* as a subcategorization form after ⲡⲉⲧⲛⲁ- (*IV* 90.7ff.).

(c) ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- anacoluthically coordinated to another verb: (*III* 181.18ff.) ϩⲛⲛⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓϣ ⲉⲧⲉⲛⲥⲉⲛⲁⲡⲱϩⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲟⲩⅾⲟⲡⲉ ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲧ-ⅾⲟⲙ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲙⲡϣⲁϩ ⲙⲡⲕⲱϩⲧ ⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ.

(d) ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- coordinated to ⲉ + *infinitive*: (*IV* 80.24ff.).

(e) ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- anacoluthically *expanding* another verb (*III* 179.20ff., the nucleus ⲙⲡϣⲁ). I do not include here the frequent occurrence of this construction in Leipoldt's No. 76 (not Shenoute; *IV* 133.17ff., 136-7 *passim*, 146 *passim*, 149.17ff. etc.). Compare also *Dictionary* 52a (III: " (ⲉ + *inf.*) coordinating a 2nd verb ") and 430a (" elliptical jussive use of ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- ").

[64] Cf. Crum 1926:I 250f., II 373. For earlier stages of Egyptian, see Erman 1933:585; Hintze 1952:272f., Frandsen 1974: 148-152; Spiegelberg's instances of the " independent " conjunctive are all open to this interpretation (1925:§§152-3); Volten 1964:65f.; Lichtheim 1964:3f. expresses some doubts concerning this function (however, the alleged " independent injunctive " role is far from established for Coptic).

[65] Cf. Denniston 46 (ἆρα): " a sceptical tone ", " leaving the question open ", or even presupposing a negative answer. Or do we here have the *inferential* ἄρα in initial position (Blomquist 1969:128f.)?

ⲛⲁⲯⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲥⲁⲛⲉⲩⲍⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲫⲛⲧⲟⲩ, ⲏ ⲉⲁⲩⲫⲛⲧⲟⲩ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲥⲉⲭⲓ-ⲯⲓⲡⲉ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ / (*IV* 60.2ff.) ⲥⲉⲥⲟⲧⲡ ⲛⲛⲁⲍⲣⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲫⲓⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-' ⲧⲛⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲙ ' (on an eating day)... ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲟⲩⲱⲙ, ⲛⲍⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲡⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ- ' ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁ-ⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲛ ' ⲍⲙⲡⲉⲍⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ ' ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲍⲏⲧϥ ' ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲟⲩⲱⲙ — the conjunctive with an *eventual* sense: " ... and (they) finished by eating/not eating ".

(3) A few instances of ' ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ + *conditional/circumstantial* + *conjunctive* ', where the conjunctive is both apodotic and resumptive-constitutive of the final clause. This famous construction, frequent in the New Testament, has been studied by Lefort (1948a): he concludes that the " adverbial " (really protatic) interposition is not the conditioning factor for the conjunctive, which must have here a special (" volitive ") modal value and stand in a " *liaison grammaticale vague* ", and anacoluthic syntax, with ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ. Nevertheless, he does not entirely renounce the interpretation of the conjunctive as " copulative " — which raises the question: To what is the conjunctive coordinated? The construction is uncommon in Shenoute; it can here be interpreted as an *apodotic-resuming* role, or (less probably, I think) as the conjunctive in construction with and adnexal to ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲁⲥ [66]. (*Thompson* L ro) ...ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲁⲛ-ⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱⲛ ⲛⲙⲙⲛⲧⲯⲁϥⲧⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲓⲁ ⲛⲕⲟⲥⲙⲓⲕⲟⲛ, ⲛⲧⲛⲱⲛⲍ ⲍⲛ ⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲣⲙⲛⲍⲏⲧ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲉⲩⲥⲉⲃⲏⲥ / (*P* 131[8] 94 ro) ...ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲡⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲯ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲭⲣⲏⲙⲁ [.....] ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲉⲕⲣⲓⲥⲓⲥ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲟⲩⲱⲛⲍ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ. (*Ch.* 87.46ff.) ⲁⲗⲗⲁ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲥⲁⲍⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲓⲛⲟⲩ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲛ-ϯⲍⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ ⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁⲯⲟⲙ-ⲟⲙ ⲛⲁⲁⲩ is admittedly difficult. Can the conjunctive here be in construction with and adnexal to ⲕⲁⲛ " at least ", to ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ, or syncategorized by ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲥⲁⲍⲱⲛ (§7.2.1.1.2)?

7.2.6.2 The conjunctive in *action-advancing* (*promotive*) role: ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲯⲱⲡⲉ (*IV* 52.16, 53.23) ...ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲥⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲣⲯⲁⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲣ-ⲡⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲯⲗⲏⲗ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲙⲉⲩⲉⲯⲟⲙ-ⲟⲙ ⲉⲯⲗⲏⲗ / [...] ⲏ ⲍⲉⲛⲯⲉⲉⲣⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲏ ⲍⲉⲛⲍⲗⲗⲟ ⲏ ⲍⲗⲗⲱ ⲍⲣⲁⲓ ⲛⲍⲏⲧⲛ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲉⲥⲯⲱⲡⲉ (sic) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲛⲥⲟⲡ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲙⲙⲏⲛⲉ... This role, already more or less stereotyped in Late Egyptian [67], is not really established by these exx., since the lacunae may have contained a nuclear verb form subcategorizing the conjunctive.

7.2.6.3 Questionable cases. In (*III* 108.12f., collated) ⲉⲯⲭⲉ-ⲁⲕⲣ-ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲛⲯⲁⲁⲧ ⲛ†-ⲛⲟⲩⲅⲥ ⲛⲁⲕ, ⲉⲓⲉ-..., -ⲁⲛ should perhaps be added, since the stative ⲯⲁⲁⲧ shows the form to be the (circumstantial) negative present.

7.3 The non-verbal nucleus: adnexal (rhematic) conjunctive

Both nucleus and conjunctive are here essential *sentence constituents*, with the conjunctive the adnexal (" predicative ") expansion of an element which, in its own extent, constitutes or contains a predicative unit (§7.1.3). With reference to the following conjunctive-rheme, the initial constituent is thematic (topical), often passing judgment, appreciating, expressing an opinion (about probability, imminence, significance etc.) or attitude.

7.3.1 Nucleus: *predicative modifiers* (predicative - in their own extent).

(1) ⲡⲁⲣⲁ-/ⲉⲧⲓ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + *conjunctive* — a recurring, typical (though by no means exclusively Sheboutean [68]) expression, for which we also find the variant ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲯⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ: " shortly, nearly, almost... " (ἔτι/παρὰ μικρόν) — affirmative, negatived, even converted. (Although strictly speaking ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ is a

[66] Cf. ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ + *conjunctive* in Bohairic, Stern §§448, 511, Mallon–Malinine §250. For LE and Demotic (*dd* + conj.) cf. Volten 1964:67ff., Johnson 1974 exx. E526-7.

[67] Cf. LE *mtw.ḫpr* (Volten 1964:63ff., Frandsen 1974:165, Borghouts 1979:19f.).

[68] Cf. *Prov.* 5:14 (ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲯⲏⲙ + *perf.*), *Ps.* 36:10 (ⲉⲧⲓ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + *conj.*), 72:2 (ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ + *perf.*), *Sap.* 15:8 (ⲙⲛⲛ-ⲥⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲉⲩⲛⲁ-), *Is.* 10:25 (ⲉⲧⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + *conj.*), 28:10, 13 (ⲉⲧⲓⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ [ⲭⲉ ⲉⲩⲉ-]), 29:17 (ⲛⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ + *conj.*), *Joh.* 14:19 (ⲉⲧⲓ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + ⲁⲩⲱ + *neg. fut.*), 16:16ff. (ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + *conj.*), *Apophth. Patr.* (Chaîne) 101.3 (ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ... ⲉⲓⲛⲁ-ⲡⲉ), Levy 1909:§85.

case of predicative *noun* — §7.3.2 — I suspect this is the modifier predicated by ⲡⲉ, §1.2.1.2; anyway, both are neutralized in this environment). (*RE 11* 15a 7ff.) ⲉⲧⲉⲓ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲉⲧⲥⲏⲥ ϫⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ... / (*A 2* 390) ⲡⲓⲗⲏⲥⲧⲏⲥ ⲉⲧⲉⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲭⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲥⲙⲡⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲩⲃⲏⲣ / (*ibid.* 140) ⲉⲧⲓ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲙⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉⲡⲧⲏⲣⲭ / (*ibid.* 113-4) ⲉⲛⲉ-ⲉⲧⲃⲏⲏⲧⲟⲩ, ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲩⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲉⲧⲣ-ⲡⲁⲥⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲛ ⲥⲗⲁⲁⲧⲉ... / (*P* 130[4] 116 ⲓⲑ) ⲏ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲣⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲥⲓⲧⲛⲛⲉⲓⲱⲁϫⲉ (also *P* 131[4] 160 vo) / (*P* 131[5] 79 ⲡⲇ) ⲛⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲅⲟⲩⲱⲥⲙ ⲟⲩⲃⲉⲡⲣⲉⲭⲥⲱⲛⲧ / (*III* 173.28f.) ⲛⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲛⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲛⲕⲉⲅⲣⲁⲫⲏ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ / (*IV* 100.2ff.) ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩⲡⲱⲥⲧ-ⲥⲁⲥ ⲛⲥⲛⲟⲭ ⲛⲥⲏⲕⲉ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ...

(2) ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ " hardly ", " almost... not " (" *kaum, schwerlich* ") with the conjunctive is used as an elegant rhetorical negation, a striking distinctive Shenoutean trait [69]. ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ is a circumstantial/relative-converter, syntactically marked alternant [70]. (*IV* 67.21f., parall. *Wess. 9* 125b 3ff.) ⲉⲛⲛⲁⲁⲥⲉⲣⲁⲧⲛ ⲥⲛⲟⲩ-ⲥⲟⲟⲩⲧⲛ ⲥⲛⲟⲩⲱⲓ ⲙⲙⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲛⲕⲱⲗϫ ⲛⲧⲛⲛⲁⲥⲃ ⲙⲛⲧⲛⲁⲡⲉ ⲙⲙⲁⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲥⲟⲡ ⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁⲥⲫⲣⲁⲅⲓⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ / (*Ming.* 84) ⲡⲥⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲉⲱⲁⲭⲃⲱⲕ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲭ ⲛⲟⲩⲟⲛ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲥⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ ⲉⲣ-ⲡⲁⲥⲣⲉ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ, ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲭⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲣⲁⲧⲭ ⲙⲡⲁⲣⲭⲱⲛ ⲏ ⲡⲣⲙⲙⲁⲟ (" hardly even to the Governor... ") / (*P* 130[4] 100 vo) ⲉⲱϫⲉ-ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲧⲁⲱⲉⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ· ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲕⲱ ⲛⲥⲱⲟⲩ ⲙⲡⲉⲩⲉⲓⲱⲧ ⲙⲛⲧⲉⲩⲙⲁⲁⲩ... ⲣ-ⲙⲡⲱⲁ ⲛⲓ̅ⲥ̅, ⲉⲓⲉ... / (*IV* 111.1f.) ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲇⲉ ⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱ ⲧⲉ, ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲉⲣ-ⲧⲉⲩⲁⲡⲣⲏⲧⲉ ⲛⲉⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲛⲥⲉⲧ-ⲟⲩⲱ / (*III* 39.9ff.) ⲉⲩⲁⲣⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲉ ⲉϫⲙⲡⲕⲁϩ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲑⲟⲧⲉ ⲉⲩⲱⲁⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ, ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲛϩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲧⲁϫⲣⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲡⲉⲓⲙⲉⲉⲩⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲓϩⲉ — the conjunctive is here in paradigm with the thematic Second Tense, following the focalized ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ (consider *III* 24.23 ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲁ-ⲧⲉⲧⲛⲟⲡⲟⲩ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲛ): (*A 1* 51) ⲡⲉⲧⲱⲁϫⲉ ⲛⲙⲙⲉ ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲡⲟⲣϫϥ ⲉⲣⲟ — "almost", synonymous with (ⲡⲁⲣⲁ-)ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ (Amélineau: " peu ne s'en est fallu ") / (*ibid.* 165) ⲛⲉⲧⲟ ⲛϩⲙϩⲁⲗ ⲛⲧⲁⲕⲁⲑⲁⲣⲥⲓⲁ ⲙⲛ-ⲧⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲙⲟⲩ ⲡⲟⲗⲅⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲟⲩ / (*III* 181.15ff.) ...ⲉⲛⲛⲱϩⲧ ⲣⲱ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉϫⲱⲟⲩ ⲛϩⲉⲛ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲛⲁⲱⲱⲟⲩ, ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲱⲱⲙ ⲛⲟⲩⲕⲟⲩⲓ / (*RE 10* 160b 17f.) (ⲟⲩⲛⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉϩⲥⲉ... ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲙⲡϩⲓⲛⲏⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲛⲕⲟⲧⲕ) ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲉⲫⲏ / (*Wess. 9* 144d 8ff.) ...ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲟⲥ ⲡⲁϩⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉ-ⲟⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲛⲁϥ ⲕⲁⲧⲁⲡⲙⲡⲱⲁ / (*Miss.* 234) ... ⲉϥⲧⲁⲙⲟ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲙⲡⲁⲓ ⲁⲉ-ⲙⲛⲧⲟⲩ ϩⲛⲧⲁⲣⲉⲧⲏ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲙⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉϥⲉⲡⲓⲑⲩⲙⲉⲓ ⲉⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲛⲁⲩ ⲛⲓⲙ. Additional exx.: *III* 149.8f., 200.10 (ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ), *IV* 86.4, 109.7. 167.26, 192.11, *A 1* 157, 201, *A 2* 26 (ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ), *P* 130[2] 76 ro etc.

(3) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ- + *conjunctive* [71]. (*A 2* 430, not Sh.) ⲉϥⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲁ ⲉⲁϥⲧⲥⲓⲟϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲉⲃⲓⲱ ⲉⲟⲩⲛ-ⲟⲩⲡⲁϩⲣⲉ ⲉϥⲧⲁⲕϩⲩ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧⲁⲁⲙⲁϩⲧ, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲛⲧⲁⲧⲁⲙⲁϩⲧⲉ ⲡⲱⲱⲛⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧϥ ⲉⲩⲭⲏⲙⲟⲥ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲥ — possibly a case of the conjunctive subcategorized by a non-temporal " parabolic " perfect, §7.2.4.1(2) / (*Wess. 9* 138b 3ff.) (ⲙⲏ ⲉⲱⲁϥⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲁⲛ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ϩⲙⲡⲧⲟⲕ) ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛϥⲑⲉⲣⲁⲡⲉⲩⲉ ⲙⲙⲟϥ — the conjunctive expanding ⲉⲱⲁϥⲩⲱⲱⲧ? / (*IV* 83.22f.) ...ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲱⲱⲥ ⲙⲙⲟϥ in a preceptive context — conj. subcategorized by ⲉⲩⲛⲁ- ? / (*Ch.* 18.13ff.) ⲛⲑⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲟⲩⲣⲣⲟ ⲛⲁⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲥ ⲉⲁϥⲣⲉϩⲧ-ⲡⲉϥϫⲁϫⲉ... ⲉⲁϥ-ϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲉⲧⲉⲛⲟⲩϥ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛ-ⲧⲟⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲉϫⲱϥ, ⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲩϫⲓ-ⲉⲟⲟⲩ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ϩⲓⲟⲩⲥⲟⲡ, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ ⲛϥⲕⲧⲟϥ ⲛϥϥⲓ ⲛⲧⲉϥⲁⲡⲉ ϩⲓϫⲱϥ — the conj. microcoordinated to ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-, or a case of the conj. after the parabolic perf.? / (*IV* 45.22f.) ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲛⲉⲓϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲑⲏⲣⲟⲩ ⲛⲥⲉⲑⲛ-ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ⲉⲩⲟ ⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ⲉⲧⲉⲩⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ... / (*P* 130[1] 37 ⲣⲛⲍ) ...ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲩϩⲟⲙⲟⲗⲟⲅⲉⲓ ⲙⲡϩⲱⲃ ⲉⲑⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲁⲩⲁⲁⲩ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲟⲩⲟⲩⲟⲓⲱ ⲛⲥⲉⲁⲣⲛⲁ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙⲛⲧ-

[69] See §1.3.11.6 with exx. and references. For the " conjunctional syntax " of correspondents in other languages, Tobler 1912:15ff. (" *à peine si...* "), Jespersen 1962:38ff. (" *hardly* "), Löfstedt 1936:48 (" *vix*: Adverbium in konjunktionaler Funktion "). In Irish, the equivalent *ar éigean* usually enters a Cleft Sentence construction as the formal rheme (" *vedette* "), although one suspects that here too it is not focal. The *grammatical* significance of ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ lies in the peculiar negation categorization of the conjunctive: ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ marks a non–cotextual, "uninduced" negation.

[70] Although ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ is not proclitic (witness ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲛⲧⲉ-, *Wess. 9* 144d 8ff.), it is but rarely separated from its following conjunctive, and is to a degree univerbized with it. This is symptomized by the conversion of the whole complex (the conjunctive cannot of course be converted — probably another reason why ⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ + *conj.* is so converted). Cf. the double conversion in ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲉⲣⲉ- (*Luc.* 23:53 Horner codd., ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲉⲙⲟⲩⲓⲥ ⲉⲛⲉⲣⲉ- Quecke).

[71] The Coptic conjunctive recalls here the LE " narrative-continuative " (" Clause Conjugation ") *jw.f ḥr sḏm* following *ḥr-ḥr-s3* phrases (Hintze 1950:14ff., Frandsen 1974:91f.).

ϣογϣογ ⲙⲡⲛⲣ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ — the conjunctive expanding the protatic ("*fallsetzend*") relative? Compare here too the focalized ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲱⲥ before the Second Perfect (*III* 210.21)[72].

(4) ⲕⲁⲛ "at least": (*Ch.* 87.49ff.) ⲕⲁⲛ ⲙⲁⲣⲛⲥⲁϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲓⲛⲟϭ ⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ ⲕⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲛ†ϩⲏⲩ ⲉⲡⲕⲉ-ⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ... ⲉⲧⲛⲛⲁϣϭⲙ-ϭⲟⲙ ⲛⲁⲁϥ. — see §7.2.6.1 (3) above.

7.3.1.1 Conjunctional modifier + conjunctive syntagms. Here the already difficult question of a modifier preceding a non-autonomous verb form to create a new autonomous whole becomes even more critical: here are elements which (I believe) are still bona-fide modifiers, expanded by the conjunctive, but which are nevertheless difficult to envisage as thematic sentence constituents (or, on their own, as predicative). As I see it, three alternative approaches present themselves here. (a) This difficulty stems from ethnocentric prejudice — either because of the status of these elements in Greek or their equivalents in other Indo-European languages; (b) the conjunctive functions here in fact as a "conjunctional" alternant-form of the verbal sentence, or (c) the conjunctive is really integrated in the verbal framework — i.e. it is subcategorized by some verbal element or other preceding the "conjunctions", the latter not entering any dependency with it: this last analysis would account for many, though not all, of the following examples:

(1) ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ/ⲙⲏⲡⲱⲥ, ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ "consequently (... not...)", "as a result (... not...)", "so that... (not)/lest" (see footnote 66): (*Wess. 9* 142a 1ff.) ⲟⲩⲛϩⲁϩ ⲛϣⲏⲣⲉ ⲉϣⲁⲩⲥⲟⲩⲱⲛⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲉⲓⲟⲧⲉ ⲭⲉ-ⲥⲉⲉⲓⲛⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ... ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ ⲉⲡϣⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲥϩ ⲭⲉ-ⲡⲉⲥⲡⲉⲣⲙⲁ ⲛⲛⲟⲉⲓⲕ ϩⲓⲡⲟⲣⲛⲏ / (*Ch.* 85.21ff.) ⲥⲉⲣⲁϣⲉ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲧⲉⲓⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲟⲛ ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲥⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲣⲟⲟⲩ / (*IV* 23.10ff.) ⲧⲛϥⲓ ϩⲁϩⲁϩ ⲛϩⲓⲥⲉ ϣⲁϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲛⲕⲉϩⲃⲥⲟⲟⲩⲉ ⲉⲧϭⲟⲭⲃ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲕⲉⲧⲣⲟⲫⲏ ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲙⲥⲉ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲉⲥⲉⲓ; similarly specifying ("even that...", "namely, that...") *ibid.* 158.2, *III* 21.14f. / (*III* 169.20f.) ⲁⲙⲟⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ϩⲛⲙⲡⲟⲗⲓⲥ ⲛⲧⲁⲛⲟⲙⲓⲁ ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲭⲓⲧⲕ ⲛⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲟⲟⲧⲥ ⲛⲧⲟⲣⲅⲏ ⲉⲧⲛⲁⲉⲓ / (*ibid.* 222.4f.) ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ ⲛϩⲟⲩⲟ ⲉⲛϣⲁⲛⲥⲁϩⲱⲛ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩⲙⲕⲁϩ ⲛϩⲏⲧ ϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲙⲛⲟⲩⲁϣⲁϩⲟⲙ. The conjunctive after ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ is in paradigm with ⲉ- + *infinitive* and the "that"-form ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (§7.4); the conj. usually expresses an *intended* consequence, whereas ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- conveys the meaning of a consequence naturally or automatically ensuing, objective, unintentional and even undesirable[73]; consider such a typical instance as (*III* 155.3ff.) ...ϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲕⲟ ⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲛϩⲉⲛⲕⲟⲟⲩⲉ ϩⲱⲥⲇⲉ (sic) ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲡϣⲁⲭⲉ ⲉⲧⲥϩ ⲭⲱⲕ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ ⲭⲉ..., *III* 33.28f., 63.12, 114.23, *IV* 95.21, 156.23, 180.5f., *Ch.* 64.33ff., 127.21f. etc. Note that ⲙⲏⲡⲱⲥ + *conjunctive* negatives only ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ + *conjunctive*; ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- is negatived by ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲙⲧⲣⲉϥ- (*IV* 196.2). The post-ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ slot features also the following constructions, external to the opposition of ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- and the conjunctive (non-pertinent, suppletive):

ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ‖ Ø-Nominal Sentence (*IV* 183.2)
ⲙⲛⲧⲁϥ- (*IV* 184.11)
thematic Sec. Present (*Ch.* 103.53ff., focalizing ϩⲙⲡⲥⲏⲩ...)
ⲉ+adjective-verb (circumstantial, with ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ a premodifier; *IV* 87.4)

After ⲙⲏⲡⲱⲥ we find the thematic Second Perfect (focalizing ⲉⲡⲭⲓⲛⲭⲏ: *Wess. 9* 131b 25ff.).

(2) ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ "otherwise", "unless", "be it not that..." — the conjunctive affirmative; the conjunctive may be taken here as entering a *protatic* syntagm (§7.2.4). (*III* 138.11f., parall. *Wess. 9* 163-4)

[72] This (and ⲙⲟⲣⲓⲥ above) brings us yet again to the question of the *premodifiers* (considered above, §1.1.2.2). Rosén's suggestion (1979:462ff.). that Hebrew pre-*še* adverbials are invariably focal ("logical predicates", in a construction comparable to the Cleft Sentence) is hardly acceptable without further qualification: the (essentially contextual) question of their thematic or rhematic status can only be settled on the basis of (a) contextual (FSP), (b) suprasegmental data. Be that as it may, the Coptic conjunctive is, I believe, a specifically *rhematic* subordination form.

[73] Somewhat like the the Greek opposition of ὥστε + *finite verb vs.* ὥστε + *infinitive* (Blass–Debrunner §391, Mayser II/1 298f.).

ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ϩⲙⲡⲁⲩⲁⲓ ⲙⲡⲛⲁ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲓ̅ⲥ̅ ⲛⲧⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲛⲛⲁⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲧⲏⲣⲟⲩ, ⲉⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲥⲛⲁⲧⲱⲙ ⲛⲑⲓⲧⲁⲧⲁⲡⲣⲟ / (*K* 933) ⲙⲛⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲑⲉ ⲛⲁⲣ-ⲙⲡⲩⲁ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛⲅⲣ-ϩⲛⲁⲕ / (*Ch.* 158.25ff.) ⲛ†ⲛⲁⲩⲟⲩⲱⲙ ⲁⲛ ⲟⲩⲧⲉ †ⲛⲁⲩⲥⲉ-ⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲁⲛ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛⲧⲁⲑⲛ-ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲓⲟⲩⲟⲙϥ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲡⲉⲩⲁⲓⲥⲟⲟϥ / (*III* 107.8f.) ⲟⲩ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉⲧ† ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛⲧⲛ† ⲟⲩⲃⲏⲛ ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁⲛ / (*IV* 60.15) (ⲛⲛⲉⲩⲗⲗⲁⲩ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ... ⲃⲱⲕ ⲉⲡⲥⲱⲟⲩϩ...) ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲕⲱⲗϩ ⲛⲩⲟⲣⲡ. The paradigm following ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ includes the following finite pred. syntagms [74]:

	ⲭⲉ-	extraposition + Sec. Present (*A 1* 64 ⲉⲓⲟⲩⲱⲩ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲣ-ⲃⲟⲗ... ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲟ)
		circumstantial present (ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ premodifier, *IV* 61.2)
		Cleft Sentence with nom. *vedette* (*K* 9067)
		ⲙⲉⲩⲁⲕ + Nom. Sentence (*A 2* 75)
ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ		perfect (*A 1* 122f., *A 2* 392, *IV* 36.16)
		present (*Wess. 9* 142d 2ff.)
		(i.e. non-verbal predications, converted/complex syntagms or tense-marked verbal predications)
	ⲉ- ⲧⲣⲉϥ- (*III* 144.17, 183.1f., *IV* 34.27 etc.) [75]	
	conjunctive - tense-unmarked.	

(3) ⲏ (- ⲏ) " alternatively ", " unless " [76]. With the disjunctive ⲏ the difficulty in analysis is acute. The conjunctive may be here a means to give the disjoined term(s) a *marked form* of alternative members in a disjunction framework [77]: (*Leyd.* 328) ...ⲭⲉ-ⲏ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲭⲱϥ ⲏ ⲛϥⲧⲱⲟⲩⲛ ⲉⲭⲱⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟϥ ⲏ ⲛϥⲩⲱⲱⲧ ⲙⲙⲟⲟⲩ ⲛⲧⲟϥ / (*III* 38.17) ⲕⲁⲛ ⲉⲕⲩⲁⲛⲑⲱ, ⲛ†ⲛⲁⲑⲱ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲅⲧⲁⲙⲟⲓ " I shall not desist unless you tell me... ".

7.3.2 Nucleus: *Predicative Nouns*

(1) ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ + *conjunctive* (" it is a small [matter] that..."): (*IV* 81.25f.) ⲏ ⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲁⲛ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲛⲣ-ⲧⲱⲣⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲛⲟⲩⲉⲣϩⲧⲉ ⲁⲩⲱ ⲛⲧⲛⲭⲁⲁⲭⲉ ϩⲛⲛⲉⲛⲑⲓⲭ...

(2) ⲟⲩⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ + *conjunctive* (" it is (but) a small turn whether... "): (*Ch.* 68.43ff.) ⲟⲩⲣⲓⲕⲉ ⲩⲏⲙ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛϥⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲛⲩⲏⲣⲉ ⲛⲇⲓⲁⲃⲟⲗⲟⲥ.

(3) ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲓϩⲉ ⲧⲉ + *conjunctive* (" it is a wonder that... "): (*III* 156-7) ⲙⲙⲟⲛ ⲟⲩⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲁⲛ ⲧⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲉⲓ-ⲩⲟⲙⲧ ⲛⲥⲩⲛⲁⲅⲱⲅⲏ ⲙⲟⲩϩ ⲛϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲏⲩⲉ ⲛⲥⲉⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲁⲛ ⲏ ⲛⲧⲟϥ ⲉⲩⲩⲟⲟⲡ ⲛⲧⲁⲧⲙⲉⲓⲙⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ.

(4) ⲟⲩⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲡⲉ + *conjunctive* (" it is a shame that... "): (*P* 131[5] 76 vo, not Sh. ?) ⲟⲩⲩⲓⲡⲉ ⲅⲁⲣ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲭⲣⲏⲥ-ⲧⲓⲁⲛⲟⲥ . ⲛϥⲁϩⲉⲣⲁⲧϥ ⲉⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲉⲣⲉⲧⲉϥⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲙⲉϩ...
The conjunctive is here in paradigm with the " that "-forms, ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- and ⲭⲉ- (§7.4). This is striking in an instance such as (*P* 130[4] 116 ⲕ) ϩⲉⲛϩⲃⲥⲱ ⲛⲇⲁⲓⲙⲱⲛⲓⲟⲛ (sic) ⲛⲉ, ϩⲉⲛⲩⲁⲭⲉ ⲛⲉ ⲛⲁⲓ ⲛⲧⲉϩⲉⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲭⲟⲟⲩ (and not divine truth). (Read ⲛⲧⲁ-?)

[74] For ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉ+(*pro*)*noun* (e.g. *III* 45-6, 90.3) in the sense of " except for... ", see §6.1.4.1.2 and Ch. 1, n. 98. In that sense, ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ also precedes modifiers (*III* 168.8f.,12, *IV* 120.11).

[75] In most instances ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- may be interpreted as complementing (expanding) a preceding nucleus, not in construction with ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ (which is but a premodifier). However, in view of the frequent ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ expanded by ⲉ + (*pro*)*noun* (preceding note) I think ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- too is a case in point. For the construction of ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ in the NT and in general, see Lefort 1948b and Jelanskaja 1977; for ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ as a protasis form, cf. Shisha-Halevy 1974:374.

[76] See Blass-Debrunner §448(8) and reff.; Kühner-Gerth II 297f.(4) (ἤ = alioquin) cf. Schwyzer II 578 n. 3 ἀλλ'ἤ).

[77] Cf. the same dilemma with regard to Hebrew *'o še-*: Blau *apud* Rosén 1979:464f. (Rosén doubts that the adverbial nature of *'o* " or " is sufficiently established by its syntax). See note 72.

7.3.2.1 A few examples raise the question whether the conjunctive can also be adnominal-adnexal (contentualizing) to non-predicative nouns: (*IV* 10.2f.) (I truly wonder that, seeing how much they blasphemed), ⲙⲡⲉⲡⲉⲩⲁⲅⲅⲉⲗⲓⲟⲛ ⲏⲱ ⲛⲟⲩⲉⲯⲛⲥⲁϩϥ ⲉⲟⲩⲙⲁⲉⲓⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲡⲉⲭ̅ⲥ̅ ⲕⲱ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ "the Gospel did not remain unwritten, as a sign that Christ (did) not forgive them..." / (*ibid.* 113-4) ⲙⲏⲡⲟⲥ (sic) ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲉⲓ ⲉⲩ-ⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲉⲧⲁⲣⲭⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲓⲧⲟⲡⲟⲥ... ⲉⲣ-ⲧⲉⲓⲁⲛⲟⲙⲁ / (*ibid.* 121.22f.) ⲉⲩⲱⲡⲉ ⲉϥⲯⲁⲛⲉⲓ ⲛⲑⲓⲟⲩⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲛⲧⲉ-ⲡⲛⲟⲃⲉ ⲑⲙ-ⲑⲟⲙ ⲉⲥⲣⲁⲓ ⲉⲭⲛⲛⲉⲧⲟⲩⲏϩ ϩⲙⲡⲉⲓⲙⲁ — here the conjunctive could be *formally* subcategorized by the conditional (§7.2.4).
Here too the conjunctive shares the paradigm with ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ (§7.4).

7.3.3 Nucleus: *Miscellaneous Predicative Syntagms or Expressions*

(1) ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ + *conjunctive*: (*Ch.* 124.54ff.) ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ ⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲛⲁⲏⲧ ⲭⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-... / (*Berl.* 1611 5 ⲁⲥ) ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ ⲉⲧⲃⲉⲧⲉϥⲑⲓⲛⲣ-ϩⲱⲃ ⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲁⲓ ⲛⲁⲩ... (read ⲛⲧⲁ-?). Add. exx.: *Ch.* 28.40ff., 78.31f., *IV* 160.18, *A 2* 147, etc.

The paradigm after ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ includes:

ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ	ⲛⲉⲟⲩⲛ- (*P* 131⁴ 86 ⲣⲁ)	*tense-marked*
	perfect (*Wess. 9* 164c 26ff., parall. *III* 139.4f.)	
	future (*III* 219.20ff., *IV* 97ff.)	
	conjunctive	*tense-unmarked*

Not in opposition with the preceding are:

ⲙⲉⲯⲁ-	ⲭⲉ-[78] / (Ø-) Nom. Sentence (*A 1* 76, *Ch.* 201.30f.)	
	Second Tense (ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ- *Ep.* 66; *Ch.* 188.19ff., *P* 130⁴ 116 ⲓⲑ)	
	ⲟⲩⲛ (*IV* 72.16f.)	

(2) ⲁⲣⲏⲩ + *conjunctive*: (*III* 117.8) (...ⲉⲉⲓⲙⲉⲧⲁⲛⲟⲉⲓ...) ⲁⲣⲏⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲭⲱⲉⲓ ⲙⲡⲉⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ / (*IV* 128.6f.) ⲉϥⲟⲩⲱⲯ ⲛⲑⲓⲡⲭⲟⲉⲓⲥ ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲛⲯⲁⲁⲧϥ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲙⲟⲛ... ⲭⲉ-ⲁⲣⲏⲩ ⲛϥⲣ-ϩⲧⲏϥ. The paradigm after ⲁⲣⲏⲩ includes also the (tense-marked) perfect (*III* 140.30f.), and the (non-pertinent) Second Present (*ibid.* 184.20).

(3) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ + *conjunctive*: *negative conjunctive* only — thus in suppletive neutralization with ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ + *conj.* (4). (*IV* 96.4f.) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲡⲯⲁⲭⲉ ⲧⲥⲁⲃⲱⲧⲛ ⲉϩⲉⲛⲕⲉⲥⲕⲓⲙ... / (*ibid.* 164.7f.) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲣ-ⲃⲟⲧⲉ ⲙⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲏ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲁⲁⲩ ⲛⲃⲟⲧⲉ / (*Ch.* 183.27ff.) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲉⲧⲉⲙⲉⲥϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛϩⲉⲛϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲛⲁⲅⲁⲑⲟⲛ... ⲛⲥⲧⲙϯ-ⲟⲩⲱ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲙⲡⲟⲛⲏⲣⲟⲛ / (*P* 130⁴ 139 vo) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲩⲕⲟⲧⲟⲩ ⲛⲁⲩ ⲣ-ⲅⲣⲱϩ / (*Wess. 9* 117a 15ff.) ϩⲁⲙⲟⲉⲓ ⲛⲥⲉⲧⲙⲭⲓ ⲛⲧⲉⲛⲯⲩⲭⲏ ⲛϩⲏⲧⲛ ϩⲛⲟⲩⲟⲣⲅⲏ. Also *Ch.* 113.14ff. After ϩⲁⲙⲟⲓ, the conjunctive is in paradigm with ⲉⲛⲉ- (ⲛⲁ)- (*Wess.* 9 120b 16ff., *III* 173.26, *P* 131⁸ 94 ro) and ⲉⲣⲉ- ⲛⲁ- (*IV* 116.23f.); ⲛⲉ + Nom. Sentence is a non-pertinent member (*IV* 92.18).

(4) ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ (ⲅⲉ/ⲇⲉ) + *conjunctive*: (*III* 112.16ff.) ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲑⲉ ⲛⲧⲁⲡⲛⲟⲩⲧⲉ ⲛⲁϩⲙⲉⲛ ⲛⲅⲉⲛⲟⲥ ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲣⲱⲙⲉ ⲛⲭⲧ-ⲅⲟⲙ ⲛⲁⲛ ⲟⲛ ⲛⲧⲛⲧⲁⲉⲓⲟⲭ / (*Wess. 9* 124a 12ff.) ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ ⲇⲉ ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲣⲉⲟⲩⲥⲙⲓⲛⲉ ⲯⲱⲡⲉ ⲙⲛⲛⲉⲧⲛⲉⲣⲫⲩ ⲛⲧⲉⲡⲁϩⲏⲧ ⲙⲧⲟⲛ / (*Ch.* 118.31f.) ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ ⲅⲉ ⲛⲧⲛⲅⲛ-ⲟⲩⲛⲁ ⲙⲡⲉⲭⲙⲧⲟ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲙⲡⲉϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲙⲡϩⲁⲡ. ⲙⲏ ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ "God forbid" is construed with ⲉⲧⲣⲉⲭ- (*III* 29.16f., 41.15, *IV* 15.4).

(5) ⲁⲗⲗⲟ[79] + *conjunctive*: (*IV* 85-6) ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-ⲛⲧⲉⲧⲙⲡϩⲏⲧ ⲭⲓ-ⲗⲁⲁⲩ ⲭⲉ-ⲭⲯⲱⲛⲉ, ⲁⲗⲗⲟ-ⲧⲣⲉⲕⲁⲛⲁⲅⲕⲁⲍⲉ ⲙⲙⲟⲕ ⲡⲁⲣⲁⲛⲉⲛⲧⲁⲡⲉⲕϩⲏⲧ ⲩⲟⲡⲟⲩ. One cannot say which (if any) of the differences between the conjunctive and the "that"-form ⲧⲣⲉ- here (neg.:affirm., nom.:pronom. actor, non-reflexive:reflexive object) is

[78] ⲭⲉ- appears to be the valency-rection of the verbal lexemic component -ⲯ- in ⲙⲉⲯⲁ-, this analyzability significantly coinciding with *conjugability*: ⲙⲉⲯⲉ ⲭⲉ- (*A 1* 76), ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲓ ⲭⲉ- (*Ep.* 66): "you / I do not know that...".

[79] Not in the NT (yet cf. *I Cor.* 15:39). See Blass–Debrunner §127(1), Preisigke 59, Mayser II/3:16f.

responsible for the selection of either form. ⲁⲗⲗⲟ- is elsewhere followed by a noun(-equivalent): *IV* 3.2, *A 1* 161-2, 191, *A 2* 52, 391, 411 (note the position of ⲁⲛ in ⲏ ⲁⲗⲗⲟ + *noun* ⲁⲛ... ⲁⲗⲗⲟ...) etc. I doubt that ⲁⲗⲗⲟ in Coptic is by itself predicative; it is probably (like ⲟⲩⲉⲧ- in the synonymous ⲟⲩⲉⲧ— ⲟⲩⲉⲧ—, a favourite Shenoutean constellation which does not contain the conjunctive, *Dictionary* 495-6) a *predicative-frame* (ⲁⲗⲗⲟ - ⲁⲗⲗⲟ -) component.

(6) (ⲛⲉ)ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ (ⲡⲉ) + *conjunctive*: (*Wess. 9* 158b 24ff.) ⲛⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲁⲛ ⲛⲧⲛⲣ-ⲟⲩϩⲟⲟⲩ ⲏ ⲥⲛⲁⲩ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲉⲃⲟⲧ ⲏ ⲟⲩⲣⲟⲙⲡⲉ... ⲉⲛⲏⲓ ⲉϩⲣⲁⲓ ϩⲁϩⲉⲛⲃⲁⲥⲁⲛⲟⲥ — note the ⲛ- ⲁⲛ negation / (*P* 130[1] 37 ⲣⲛⲍ) ⲛⲉⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲛⲛⲉⲧⲙⲙⲁⲩ ⲛⲥⲉϫⲟⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-. The conjunctive here is in paradigm with the non-rhematic (adjunctal) (ⲉ)-ⲧⲣⲉϥ-, cataphorically heralded by -ⲥ- (§5.2.2.1).

7.4 Excursus: the conjunctive and " that "-forms in functional assignment

In certain environments, the conjunctive is in substitution not only with specifically adjunctal, modifier verb-forms but also with such as display elsewhere a typically *nominal* syntax: " that "-forms. The question whether or not the conjunctive itself is an adjunctal " that "-form is *per se* irrelevant. What is significant is that the conjunctive contracts extensive substitution relationships with two Coptic " that "-forms: the prospective ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥⲥⲱⲧⲙ and ϫⲉ-, nominalizing tense-marked verbal predications, Nominal-Sentence patterns, ⲟⲩⲛ-/ⲙⲛ-, adjective-verbs and various focalization patterns. These (conj./ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-) paradigms are defined by the following environments:

(a) *adnominal*: ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- (*III* 146.15, 163.19f., 186.15, *IV* 68.19; *Mich. 158* 17b; *Ch.* 130.11f. [80]); after *predicative nouns*: pred. time expressions [81]: ⲡⲉⲟⲩⲟⲉⲓⲱ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*III* 224.20), ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*Ch.* 167.47ff., parall. *III* 74.14), ⲡⲛⲁⲩ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*IV* 29.26); ⲡⲙⲁ ⲡⲉ ⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*Mich. 158* 14a 6); cf. *IV* 33.20f. (ⲡⲉⲥⲙⲟⲧ...), 51.7 (ⲡⲱⲁⲩ ⲛⲱⲟⲙⲧⲉ ⲛⲟⲩⲛⲟⲩ).

(b) *ad-modifier*: ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ, ϩⲱⲥⲧⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (§7.3.1.1); ⲉⲧⲓⲕⲉⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡⲉ ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- (*Rossi 2/3* 90).

(c) *adverbal*, after ⲥⲛⲁⲱⲱⲡⲉ, ⲉⲥⲱⲁⲛⲱⲱⲡⲉ, ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩⲥ (§§7.2,, 7.2.4, 7.3.3, see §5.2.2.1); after ⲙⲏ ⲅⲉ-ⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ (*III* 29.16f.).

This substitution must be pointed out, even if we cannot at present isolate a real functional difference between ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- and the conjunctive in those environments; note that in case (a), it is at times impossible to distinguish between adnominal and *ad-pattern* status of ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ-.

The following table is a display of functional domains of " that "-forms (finite verb nominalizations, " abstract relative " forms or syntagms), for Shenoutean Sahidic and (for a comparative-contrastive rather than diachronic view) two earlier stages of Egyptian [82]. This issue awaits yet special monographic study, for every dialect and stage of the language (in Coptic, the difference between Sahidic and Bohairic is very

[80] In (*III* 82.18f., parall. *Ch.* 45.4ff.) ⲉⲡⲙⲁ ⲛⲧⲣⲉⲩⲣ-ϩⲏⲃⲉ... ⲁⲧⲉⲧⲛⲧⲣⲉⲩⲉⲱ-ⲗⲟⲩⲗⲁⲓ, ⲧⲣⲉ- is fully causative.

[81] A nominal time-expression displays the broadest paradigmatic spectrum of adnominal expansion in Coptic:

ⲡⲛⲁⲩ, ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ		*circumstantial*: adnexal, contentualizing (*IV* 102.15 cod. C)
		relative, no anaphora: attributive (*III* 68.2f., 83.12, *IV* 94.25f., 102.15 codd. A, B)
		relative, with anaphora: attributive (*III* 21.1, 189.20f., *IV* 87.7, 179.1)
ⲡⲛⲁⲩ/ⲡⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ ⲡⲉ	ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ:	prospective, contentualizing (*III* 74.14, 224.20, *IV* 29.26)
ⲟⲩⲕⲁⲓⲣⲟⲥ		*circumstantial*: adnexal + attributive, neutr. (*III* 181.10f.,23f.)
		conjunctive: adnexal, contentualizing (*IV* 113-4, 121.22).

[82] I am here merely collecting together and sometimes rearranging material to be found in the following studies: (ME/OE) Polotsky 1969:470-4, 1964:269ff., 275ff. (= *CP* 54ff., 60ff.), 1976:§§2.2-7; Callender 1975 (esp. §4.4); de Cenival 1972; Frandsen 1975; Vernus 1980; Schenkel 1981; Edel *passim*, esp. §§511-531; Gardiner *passim*, esp. §§156, 187, 192, 223, 233, 237, 329. (LE) Erman 1933 esp. §425 Anm., 409-440, 795; Groll 1970 esp. 178-191; Frandsen 1974 esp. 109ff., 153-170; Černý-Groll, esp. 188f., 491ff.

striking); the picture needs further resolution in Coptic no less than in pre-Coptic Egyptian [83]. The thematic function (in focalization patterns) has, for obvious research-historical reasons, been overplayed to an extent at the expense of others. Note that the presentation below is schematic and incomplete, not taking into account (a) " concrete " nominalizations — participles, relative forms; (b) the infinitive with no actor in immediate syntagm; (c) the *negatived* " that "-forms (incl. " that "-forms after negators of existence), not necessarily coextensive with affirmative ones. The exclusion of these important elements cannot but distort the picture. Furthermore, some less central functional categories are omitted as well: " that "-forms as headings (superscriptions) [84]; in initial (protatic) " *casus adverbialis* " status [85]; in apposition to an anaphoric or cataphoric pronoun.

	Coptic	Late egyptian	Middle/old egyptian
theme-topic in focalization patterns	(Ch. 2) *Second Tense/ relative; circumstantial*	*j.jr.f sḏm / j.sḏm.f circumstantial* [86]	*mrr.f / sḏmw.f/sḏm.n.(tw).f*
subject = theme in Nominal Sentence	ϵτρϵ- [87] ϫϵ- [88]	*p3y.f sḏm /* *p3 sḏm j.jr.f*	*mrr.f*
(grammatical) subject of verb/adjective	(ϵ)τρϵ- [89]	*p3y.f sḏm /* *p3 sḏm j.jr.f*	*mrr.f*
predicate of Nominal Sentence	ϫϵ- (gloss, after πϵ [90]) (ϵ)τρϵ- [91]	*p3y.f sḏm /* *p3 sḏm j.jr.f*	*mrr.f, sḏm.n.(tw).f,* (passive *sḏmw.f?*)
" *Wechselsatz* " (" balanced construction ")	ϵϥ- (§2.7.1.1)	?	*mrr.f / sḏmw.f / sḏm.n.f*
object of verb	(ϵ)τρϵ- (prosp.) ϫϵ- (non prosp.)	*p3y.f sḏm / p3 sḏm j.jr.f*; *r-ḏd*; prosp. *sḏm.f* (lex. valency distr.)	*mrr.f* / prosp. *sḏm.f, sḏmw.f,* (*sḏm.n.f*); *ntt-/wnt-* (lexeme valency/sentence-form distribution)

[83] In ME/OE, for instance, the distribution of *sḏmw.f* and its relationship with *mrr.f* and the non-" emphatic " prospective are far from clear; so are the distributional schemes of *ntt-/wnt-*, and of *mrr.f/sḏm.n.f* (" emphatic ") outside focalization patterns. For Demotic, almost all of the assignment work awaits to be done.

[84] ME: *mrr.f*; LE: infinitive + *jr.n.*? Coptic: ϵτρϵϥ-? (cf. *III* 218.14), ϫϵ- (*Ch.* 153.5ff.).

[85] Cf. Shisha-Halevy 1974 (see §2.8.3 here for the Sec. Tense as a " that "-form outside focalization patterns).

[86] Cf. Shisha-Halevy 1978.

[87] *III* 26.4, *Ch.* 155.44ff.

[88] *III* 26.4, *Ch.* 47.42.

[89] *III* 29.16f., 105.14, *IV* 85-6, *Ch.* 197.19f.

[90] *III* 214.17, *Ch.* 122.18ff., 137.30ff., 142.11f.

[91] Also after ϵτϵπαι πϵ (*Ch.* 160.14f.); after the copular πϵ: *III* 184.7,8, 224.20f.

	Coptic	Late egyptian	Middle/old egyptian
governed by prepositions, expanding modifiers	ⲧⲣⲉ- (ⲉ-, ⲛ-, ⲛⲥⲁ-, ⲁⲛⲧⲓ-, ⲥⲓⲧⲛ-, ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-) ⲭⲉ- (ⲉⲧⲃⲉ-, ⲉⲃⲟⲗ) (conjunctive)	*p3y.f sḏm / p3 sḏm j.jr.f*; prosp. *sḏm.f* (after *m-ḏr-*, *m-ḫt-*) [92]	*mrr.f* / prosp. *sḏm.f*, (*sḏmw.f.*), (*sḏm.n.f*) / *sḏm.t.f*; *ntt-* (lexeme valency/sentence-form distribution)
in initial modal role: jussive-optative-hortative	Second Future (ⲉϥⲛⲁ-) (§2.1.3) (ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-, n. 63)	prospective *sḏm.f*	prospective *sḏm.f*, *mrr.f* (?) [95]
adnominal	(ⲉ)ⲧⲣⲉ- [93] ⲭⲉ- [94] (conjunctive)	(*n-*) (*p3*) *sḏm j.jr.f* / *p3y.f sḏm*	(*n-*)*mrr.f*, (*sḏm.f*, *sḏm.n.f*)

[92] Not analyzable synchronically, according to Groll 1970:409ff.

[93] *III* 218.14 (ⲟⲩⲗⲟⲅⲟⲥ), *IV* 118.24 (ⲧⲉⲭⲛⲓⲁ), 61.24f. (ⲧⲅⲓⲛⲯⲁⲏⲁ), see above §7.4 (a), and note 81; exx. in Rudnitzky 1956: 131ff.

[94] See Rudnitzky 1956:132, Shisha-Halevy 1972:97.

[95] See De Cenival, *RdE* 24:42f. (1972); Junge 1978.

TEXTUAL SOURCES CONSTITUTING THE CORPUS

Observations on editions follow the bibliographical information. For reasons of space, I have limited cross-references to a minimum (parallels between *A*, *Ch.*, *L* and *Wess.*, also with numerous unpublished fragments, are not specified here, neither are codicological interrelationships. The following is not a bibliography of Shenoutean philology, the need for which is met elsewhere (*Bibl.* = P. J. Frandsen and E. Richter-Aerøe, " Shenoute: A Bibliography ", in: D. W. Young [ed.] 1981:147-176). For some surveys of editions, see R. McL. Wilson, *ed.* 1978:21 n. 122 (Krause), 156f. (Orlandi).

A. Editions of Published Manuscripts

(arranged in alphabetic order of abbreviations or reference codes)

A 1, 2 — E. C. AMÉLINEAU, *Œuvres de Schenoudi*, Paris, Leroux, 1907-1914. (*Bibl.* No. 1). Quoted by page. *A 2* 268-285 is by Besa (Kuhn, CSCO 157/copt. 21 [1956] p. X f.), 530-2 by Basilius (Lucchesi, *Analecta Bollandiana* 99:78 [1981]). Amélineau's fragment XXI (*A 2* 415ff.) has now been identified as a translation (at first sight, expert and faithful) of some of Gregory of Nyssa's homilies on Ecclesiastes: Orlandi, *Vetera Christianorum* 18:337f. (1981). In special cases, quotations from this fragment have been retained, marked as " not Sh. ". — This, the first extensive edition of Shenoute's works, is on the whole negligent and not always reliable. Wherever possible, I have collated Amélineau's more suspect readings with the Naples MSS and, when necessary, emended them; sometimes I quote the MS in preference to Amélineau's text. Reviews and critical remarks by Nau, Leipoldt, von Lemm and others.

Berl. Sitz. — L. Th. LEFORT in *Anhang* to Bang - von Gabain, " Türkische Turfantexte, II. Manichaica ", *Berliner Akad. Sitzungsberichte* 1929:430. Edition of *P* 131[4] 158 ro. (Not in *Bibl.*).

BKU — *Ägyptische Urkunden aus den Königlichen Museen zu Berlin: Koptische Urkunden* (Berlin, Weidemann, 1904): No. 180[2] (*Ostr. Or.* 8710 vo). (*Bibl.* No. 6).

BMCat. — W. E. CRUM, *Catalogue of the Coptic MSS in the British Museum* (London, The British Museum, 1905): see below for fragments described and/or edited here). (Not in *Bibl.*).

Cat. — L.-Th. LEFORT, " Catéchèse christologique de Chenoute ", *ZÄS* 80:40-45 (1955). (*Bibl.* No. 71).

Ch. — E. CHASSINAT, *Le quatrième livre des entretiens et épîtres de Shenouti* (MIFAO 23, Le Caire 1911). (*Bibl.* No. 19). Parallels with *A 1*, *BMCat.*, *L III*, *Wess.* and unpublished MSS. Part translations, commentaries, glossaries etc. by Du Bourguet, Barns, Koschorke-Timm-Wisse and Cherix. The attribution of *Ch.* 200-209 (206.56-208.22 is paralleled in Kahle, *Bala'izah*, No. 50) is problematic: the authorship of " Liberius " is historically impossible, and in my opinion the Shenoutean authorship is still a pos-

sibility (a commented edition and translation has been prepared by F. Wisse). Quoted by page and line.

CO W. E. Crum, *Coptic Ostraca from the Collections of the Egypt Exploration Fund, the Cairo Museum and others* (London, The Egypt Exploration Fund, 1902): No. 13 (Ostr. Cairo 8113). (*Bibl.* No. 26).

(*Gol.*) *Jelanskaja* A. I. Jelanskaja, " Fragment sotryvkom iz sočinenija Senute ", *Pigulevskaja Volume* (*Ellinističeskij Bližnij Vostok, Vizantija i Iran*, Moscow, Nauka, 1967) 48-51 (formerly MSS Gol. Copt. 40). (*Bibl.* No. 39).

Ench. A. Shisha-Halevy, " Unpublished Shenoutiana in the British Library ", *Enchoria* 5:53-108 (1975), with plates 9-30. (*Bibl.* No. 123). Quoted by page and column.

Ep. Crum-Winlock-Evelyn-White, *The Monastery of Epiphanius at Thebes*, II (New York, The Metropolitan Museum, 1926) Nos. 56, 57, 58, 66. (*Bibl.* No. 35).

(*L*) *III, IV* J. Leipoldt, *Sinuthii Archimandritae Vita et Opera Omnia*, III (CSCO 42/copt. [ser. 2] 4, Paris 1908) and IV (CSCO 73/copt. [ser. 2] 5, Paris 1913). The best extensive critical edition to date. (*Bibl.* No. 80, see the index of references, p. 175f.). Reviewed by Spiegelberg and Junker. Numerous observations by von Lemm, Jernstedt and others. Translation by H. Wiesemann (CSCO 96/copt. 8, 1931, and CSCO 108/copt. 12, 1936), partial translation (of No. 20-22) by Leipoldt himself (in *Festschrift Barnikol*, Berlin 1964, 52-56). Parallels in *A*, *Ch.*, *Wess.* etc. (some noted by Leipoldt, with many additions), also in unpubl. or recently published fragments (e.g. Leipoldt's No. 22 - *III* 76.16-77.10 - in *ViK* 922; No. 32 in *B.L.Or.* 8664, see *Or.* below; Nos. 71, 74: see *Lucchesi* below; others are noted above, following relevant quotations). Leipoldt's No. 76 (*IV* 129-153) is not by Shenoute (see *IV* pp. x-xiii; Leipoldt 1903:11ff., with various indications of non-Shenoutean composition; Lefort, *Œuvres de S. Pachôme* [CSCO 159/copt. 23] xxiif.). Among other linguistic phenomena betraying non-Shenoutean authorship, observe the frequent *jussive* ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- (e.g. 133.20, 136.13, 145.12), extensive non-rhetorical use of ⲙⲁⲣⲉϥ- (e.g. 129.22, 131.20, 135.4); peculiar use of the conjunctive, esp. the conj. continuing or relieving ⲉⲧⲣⲉϥ- at a distance (e.g. 130.7, 131.8, 133.8, 141.22f., 147.19f. etc.): the conjunctive supplies the details in a framework of ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- preceptive jussive. Way of expression different from the Shenoutean: 132.26f., 140.12, 143.5; a special use of -ⲟⲩⲉ-, 131.27, 136.11, 138.12,24, 143.5, 145.4; different sentence structure, with frequent anacoluthia, which is unusual in *preceptive* Shenoutean texts. For *III* p. 244 (Gregory of Nyssa) see above, on Amélineau fgt. XXI. — Quoted only by volume (*III, IV*), page and line.

Lemm O. von Lemm, " Koptische Miscellen, No. CXXIV " (von Lemm 1972b:413ff.): P. Gol. 38. (*Bibl.* No. 91).

Leyd. Pleyte-Boeser, *Manuscrits coptes du Musée d'antiquités des Pays-Bas à Leide* (Leiden, Brill, 1897): *Sh.* Nos. 57, 58, 61, 63-5, 67, 72, 73, 75-7, 79-81, 84, 89; *Sh.*? Nos. 60, 68, 69, 89, 90. (Not in *Bibl.*). See *Crum Papers* XI 54, also observations in von Lemm 1972b:44ff., 1972a:401.

Lucchesi E. Lucchesi, " Deux feuillets coptes inédits de Shenouté ", *Mus* 91:171-8 (1978): *P copte* 130² 115, 122, 131 (partly parallel to *L* Nos. 71 and 74). (*Bibl.* No. 98).

Ming. G. L. Mingarelli, *Aegyptiorum codicum reliquiae...* (Bologna, Typis Laelii a Vulpe, 1785): Nos. IV, V, XIII, XIV (according to Gabrielli, *Manoscritti e carte orientali* p. 56, " Marciani 9, 10, già orientali 192-3 "). (Not in *Bibl.*).

Miss. E. C. Amélineau, *Monuments pour servir à l'histoire de l'Égypte chrétienne aux IV^e^, V^e^, VI^e^ et VII^e^ siècles* (Mém. de la Mission Archéol. Française 4/1, Paris 1888) 277-287 (" Fragmentum ", ⲛⲅ - ⲍⲇ, see p. xlvii); pp. 229-236, although somewhat unusual in genre for Shenoute, is nevertheless Shenoutean in style. (Not in *Bibl.*).

Mun. H. Munier, *Manuscrits coptes* (*Catalogue général des antiquités égyptiennes du Musée du Caire* Nos. 99201-9304; Le Caire, IFAO, 1916): *Sh.* Nos. 9257, 9262, 9266-9, 9281, 9282, 9291, 9292, 9298; *Sh.*? 9289, (??) 9255. (*Bibl.* No. 103). Quoted by page.

Or. A. Shisha-Halevy, " Two New Shenoute Texts from the British Library ", *Orientalia* 44:149-185 (1975), with plates IX-X. (*Bibl.* No. 121). New parallels: *VIK* 9292 parallels *B.L.Or.* 8664, here publ., from ⲁϵ 34 to ⲁⲍ 46; *P* 131[6] 72 parallels ⲙⲃ 17 to ⲙⲇ 20. Prof. B. Layton informs me that the originals for *B.L.Or.* 7561 have been located; that fragments CIII, CIV, CV and CVII cannot have belonged to the main MS (pp. ϥⲑ-ⲣⲇ), also that CI is parallelled by the fragment of Crum, *Papyruscodex*, Appendix. It would therefore seem that the Shenoutean authorship of all fragments on pp. 172-5 is at best doubtful. Quoted by page and line.

Quot. Quotations from Shenoute: (1) In Besa (*ed.* Kuhn, CSCO 157/copt. 21, Louvain 1956), 7.16f.,19ff., 32.33 (see p. 141-2); (2) in Sahidic " Lives of Shenoute ": ed. Amélineau in *Miss.* (1888) 240.3ff., (1895) 640.2f.; ed. Shore, *JEA* 65:143 (1979), p. 138. (3) In the unpublished MS *B.L.Or.* 8811 (formerly Curzon 110), quotations edited by the present writer in *BASP* 17:167-172 (1980); see *Ryl.Cat.* 29f.; one quoted passage parallels *Wess. 9* 91a-b, No. 30b. (4) In *BMCat.* 94 (No. 214).

RE 10, 11 H. Guérin, " Sermons inédits de Senouti ", *Revue égyptologique* 10:148-164 (1902), 11:15-34 (1904), publ. separately in 1903 (Paris, Leroux): Louvre 10.162. (*Bibl.* No. 49). The worst edition of Shenoute: see criticism and corrections by von Lemm 1972a:405-419. Parallel in part: *BMCat.*, No. 253 (unpubl., see below). Quoted by page and line.

Rossi F. Rossi, *I Papiri copti del Museo egizio di Torino* (Torino Accad. Memorie 41-2, Torino, Loescher, 1887-1892): *2/3* (1891) 4-90 (" Pap. Peyron IV ", ⲓⲑ-ⲣϥϵ), *2/4* (1892) 44-45 (17 fgts.). (*Bibl.* No. 113). See Orlandi, *Mus* 87:122 (1974). Critical observations, emendations, reconstruction and reedition in part by von Lemm 1972b:27f., 1972a:350-398. Quoted by fascicle and page.

Rudnitzky G. Rudnitzky, " Ein Sermon aus dem Schatzkästlein unseres Vaters Apa Schenute ", *Festgabe C. Wehmer* (Amsterdam 1963) 13-18 (Cod. Heidelb. 63). (*Bibl.* No. 115).

Ryl.Cat. W. E. Crum, *Catalogue of the Coptic MSS in the John Rylands Library* (Manchester, The University Press, 1909): Nos. 67-70. (*Bibl.* No. 30). Quoted by page.

Teza E. Teza, " Frammenti inediti di un sermone di Scenuti in dialetto sahidico ", *Accad. Nazionale dei Lincei, Rendiconti*, ser. 5 degli Atti, v. 1 (1892) 682-97. (*Bibl.* No. 137). Critical observations etc. by von Lemm 1972a:298-400.

Wess. 9 C. Wessely, *Studien zur Paläographie und Papyruskunde* IX (= *Griechische und koptische Texte* I, Leipzig, Haessel, 1909): *Sh.* Nos. 29-32, 35, 36, 38, 41, 42, 44-49, 50-54 (No. 50 is an incipit catalogue of Shenoutean works, to be published and translated, with identifications and additional incipits, by F. Wisse); *Sh.*? 37, 39, 43. (*Bibl.* No. 144). Parallels in some editions and unedited fragments. Textual observations etc. by von Lemm 1972b:217. Quoted by page, column and line.

Wess. 18 C. Wessely, *Studien zur Paläographie und Papyruskunde* XVIII (= *Griechische und koptische Texte* V, Leipzig, Haessel, 1917): *Sh.* No. 287; *Sh.*? No. 281. (*Bibl.* No. 145). Quoted by page, column and line.

Young D. W. YOUNG, " A Monastic Invective against Egyptian Hieroglyphs ", in D. W. YOUNG *ed.* 1981:348-360 (Mich. 158.13 a-d).

Z, Zoega G. ZOEGA, *Catalogus codicum copticorum manuscriptorum qui in Museo Borgiano Velitris adservantur* (Roma 1810). (Not in *Bibl.*). Forty-eight Borgian codd. are attributable, with greater or lesser certainty, to Shenoute. Of these 15 were edited in *A* and *L*; 17 in *L* (two in *L* alone), 27 in *A* alone (No. 230, Leipoldt's No. 76, is not by Shenoute: see above). Nos. 301 (*IB* 15, 474 - a copy of 300), 233* (*IB* 9, 408, copy of 233), and 287-8 (*Sh.*?? *IB* 14, 461) have not been edited to date. I quote *Zoega*, where applicable, in lieu of the unreliable *A*.

B. Unpublished Fragments

This list is not meant as a check list or repertory of unedited sources of Shenoute's writings, but as a reference listing of all MSS actually scanned and utilized in the present work. A few words on the procedure of sifting out unedited Shenoute fragments: I have relied heavily on CRUM's opinion, in his *Dictionary*, Catalogues and Papers (Large blue " *S* "; XI 14, XI 54 are here especially relevant). His opinion is used as an authoritative starting point for further examination, never as a last word. I have not as a rule touched upon the question of *codex assignment* of fragments. This important project (of which the main proponent is Prof. Tito Orlandi of Rome) should be undertaken by competent palaeographers, with all the material before their eyes, and should be combined with the compilation of such a repertory as is mentioned above (see §0.1).

ENGLAND

LONDON, *The British Library*, Dept. of Oriental MSS and Printed Books

Fragments (in *BMCat.* numbering):
Sh. (*B.L.Or.* 3580A) 144 (publ. in *BMCat.*)
(*B.L.Or.* 3581A) — all (partly = [p]) published in *BMCat.* —
192[p], 194[p], 195[p], 196[p], 198[p], 199, 201, 202[p], 203[p], 205, 206, 209[p], 210[p], 211[p], 212, 232[p], 253[p] (parallel to *RE 10* 159a 1-24), 991, 992[p].
B.L.Or. 6954 (12) vo, one of the " Horner fragments "; I have used a copy made by Prof. Layton.
Sh.? (*B.L.Or.* 3581A) 215 (partly publ. in *BMCat.*), 251. *Sh.*?? 252.
No. 214 contains a Shenoute quotation (VON LEMM 1972b:27f.).

MANCHESTER, *The John Rylands University Library*

Nos. 67-70 (partially publ. in *Ryl.Cat.*; No. 67 is included in *L*, No. 22, cod. D, where however Leipoldt merely reprinted the *Ryl.Cat.* text). I have used photographs and Crum's copies (*Crum Papers* II 10).

CAMBRIDGE, *University Library*

Or. 16/1699 (H. Thompson's MSS [" Thompson ", " HT "], presented in 1939), fragments *E* (1f.), *F* (1f.), *G* (1f.), *H* (4ff.), *J* (2ff.), *K* (4ff.), *L* (1f.), *X* (1f.). This is part of a collection of approx. 80 fragments, previously in the possession of Hyvernat. Some Shenoutean ones (*A*, *C*, *D*, *E*) have been published. A

large box (Or. 16/1700) contains various items, including the paper and envelopes which previously held these fragments, slips with Thompson's transcripts, notes regarding the fragments, correspondence, etc. Thompson seems to have paid special attention to the Shenoutean texts, to judge by his notes on parallel MSS, Biblical quotations and a detailed list of the Shenouteana of the collection.

OXFORD, *The Bodleian Library*

(Volume b 4) *Sh. Cl.Pr.* 22, 36; *Sh.*? *Cl.Pr.* 33. The " b 4 " fragments, originally Woide's, were bought following his death for the Clarendon Press, then deposited in the Bodleian. Abbé Hyvernat's handwritten catalogue of 1887 is very detailed in the description of the fragments. For further information on this collection, see *Crum Papers* II 1; *PSBA* 30:231f. (1908); *RdE* 1:106 n. 2 (1933). (*Cl.Pr.* 39 is " Pseudo-Shenoute ".)

FRANCE

PARIS, *Bibliothèque Nationale*

Fonde copte (I have used microfilms):
130[1]: ff. 14-19, 35-7, 124-142 (ff. 14-16 were edited in P. Cauwenbergh, *Étude sur les moines d'Égypte*, Paris 1914, p. 176f.; other isolated passages have been edited elsewhere).
130[2]: *Sh.* ff. 1-11, 24, 25, 44-8, 49-64, 65-74, 75-6, 78, 80-1, 89-96, 97-100, 103-4, 105, 109-111, 112, 115, 116, 117-9, 123, 124, 126, 128, 130, 132; *Sh.*? ff. 32-7, 38-43, 106-8, 120.
130[4]: *Sh.* ff. 90, 93-4, 95-6, 97-8, 100-5, 107, 110-111, 115-130, 139-142 ro (" Florilegium Sinuthianum "), 155-160 (" Florilegium Sinuthianum "); *Sh.*? ff. 84-9, 99, 114.
130[5]: *Sh.* ff. 15-7, 18, 19, 20, 21-2, 23-4, 27, 37-9, 48-9, 52, 55, 56, 57, 58, 59, 61, 64, 65, 66, 67, 69, 70, 80, 81, 83, 86, 87, 88, 90, 92, 93, 94-5, 97-8, 100, 101, 103, 105, 106, 108, 111, 112, 113, 115-9, 121, 125, 128; *Sh.*? ff. 33-4, 50, 51, 96, 99, 133.
130[8]: f. 153.
131[1]: ff. 37, 75.
131[4]: ff. 86-93, 140-7, 150-3, 154-8, 160, 161.
131[5]: *Sh.* ff. 4-6, 8, 19, 20, 47, 52, 56, 65, 67, 118, 126, 128, 133-5, 144, 149; *Sh.*? ff. 13, 16, 17, 22, 28, 42, 43, 64, 79-82.
131[6]: *Sh.* ff. 13, 14-5, 16, 23, 29, 30, 31, 32, 44, 56-7, 66-7, 80, 81, 105, 117; *Sh.*? ff. 20, 21, 28, 42-3, 64, 71, 90, 110.
131[7]: *Sh.* ff. 32, 39, 40, 45, 46, 57, 65, 71; *Sh.*? ff. 11, 25.
131[8]: *Sh.* ff. 84, 94, 109; *Sh.*? ff. 91, 92, 105, 119.
(NB: there is a wide margin of error in including or excluding fragments in this list.)

AUSTRIA

VIENNA, *Nationalbibliothek*

ViK: Sh. 912, 913, 918, 920, 921, 924, 926, 927, 928, 933, 940, 9006, 9028, 9040, 9099, 9291, 9292, 9293, 9294, 9298, 9315, 9316, 9320; *Sh.*? 929, 9066. (Crum, who identified in *Dictionary* as Shenoutean also Nos. 919, 9100, 9343, 9598, 9764, 9868, was well aware of the existence in Vienna of unedited Shenouteana. See also Till in *Or.* 41:388 [1935] and *ZDMG* 95:169 [1941].) I have used microfilms.

GERMANY

BERLIN (WEST), *Staatsbibliothek Preussischer Kulturbesitz*

MS Or. 2[0] 1611.5-7, 1613.1-7 (microfilms and copies).

UNITED STATES

NEW YORK, *Columbia University Library*

Parchment (# 25), photograph in *Crum Papers* I 101.

ANN ARBOR, *University of Michigan Library*

Mich. Ms. 158 (Crum's " 550 "), 14a, 17 (D. W. Young's copies), 15, 16, 18, 19 (quoted from *Dictionary*). The Michigan Shenouteana are being edited by D. W. Young. See *Young* p. 348 and now YOUNG 1982.

DURHAM (*North Carolina*), *Duke University Library*

Duke Univ. Coptic MS (unnumbered), 2ff. (in the Perkins Rare Books Room), kindly copied by Mr. D. Spanel. Possibly Shenoute.

REPUBLIC OF EGYPT

CAIRO, *Egyptian Museum*

No. 8007 (photographs).

CAIRO, *Institut Français d'Archéologie Orientale* (*IF*)

Cod. 1, quoted from *Dictionary*.

BIBLIOGRAPHICAL REFERENCES

ABBREVIATIONS (OF PERIODICALS AND SERIALS)

ASAE	Annales du Service des Antiquités de l'Égypte
BASP	Bulletin of the American Society of Papyrologists
BIFAO	Bulletin de l'Institut français d'Archéologie orientale (Le Caire)
BO	Bibliotheca Orientalis
BSAC	Bulletin de la Société d'Archéologie Copte
BSL	Bulletin de la Société de Linguistique de Paris
BSOAS	Bulletin of the School of Oriental and African Studies
CdE	Chronique d'Égypte
CFS	Cahiers Ferdinand de Saussure
CSCO	Corpus Scriptorum Christianorum Orientalium
FL	Folia Linguistica
GGA	Göttingische gelehrte Anzeigen
GLECS	Groupe linguistique d'Études chamito-sémitiques
GM	Göttinger Miszellen
IF	Indogermanische Forschungen
IJAL	International Journal of American Linguistics
IOS	Israel Oriental Studies
JAOS	Journal of the American Oriental Society
JEA	Journal of Egyptian Archaeology
JL	Journal of Linguistics
JNES	Journal of Near Eastern Studies
JPs	Journal de Psychologie
Lg	Language
MDAIK	Mitteilungen des Deutschen Archäologischen Instituts, Abteilung Kairo
MH	Museum Helveticum
MIFAO	Mémoires de l'Institut français d'Archéologie orientale
MIO	Mitteilungen des Instituts für Orientforschung
MLR	Modern Language Review
Mus	Le Muséon
OLP	Orientalia Lovanensia Periodica
OLZ	Orientalistische Literaturzeitung
Or	Orientalia
PICL	Proceedings of the International Congress of Linguists
PSBA	Proceedings of the Society for Biblical Archeology
RdE	Revue d'Égyptologie
RE	Revue égyptologique
RT	Recueil de travaux relatifs à la philologie et à l'archéologie égyptiennes et assyriennes
SL	Studia Linguistica

TCLP	Travaux du Circle linguistique de Prague
TLP	Travaux linguistiques de Prague
TUGAL	Texte und Untersuchungen zur Geschichte der altchristlichen Literatur
VR	Vox Romanica
WZKM	Wiener Zeitschrift für die Kunde des Morgenlandes
ZÄS	Zeitschrift für ägyptische Sprache und Altertumskunde
ZcPh	Zeitschrift für celtische Philologie
ZDMG	Zeitschrift der Deutschen Morgenländischen Gesellschaft
ZPh	Zeitschrift für Phonetik und allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft
ZRPh	Zeitschrift für romanische Philologie
ZV	Zeitschrift für Völkerpsychologie und Sprachwissenschaft

BOOKS AND ARTICLES

Abel, K.	1876-7	*Koptische Untersuchungen*, Berlin: Dümler, Harrwitz u. Gossmann
Ahlman, E.	1938	" Über Adverbien ", *Studia Fennica* 2:19-44
Allerton, D. J.	1978	" The Notion of ' Givenness ' and its Relations to Presupposition and to Theme ", *Lingua* 44:133-168
Ammann, H.	1920	" Von doppelten Sinn der sprachlichen Formen ", *Sitzungsber. Heidelb. Akad., philos.-hist.*, IX, Abh. 12
Andersson, E.	1904	*Ausgewählte Bemerkungen über den bohairischen Dialect im Pentateuch koptisch*, Uppsala: Almquist and Wiksell
Bally, Ch.	1950	*Linguistique générale et linguistique française*, Berne: Francke
Barri, N.	1975a	" Nucleus and Satellite in Nominal Syntagmatics ", *Linguistics* 157:67-85
	1975b	" Adjectifs antéposés et adjectifs postposés comme signes linguistiques différents ", *FL* 7:209-220
	1977	" Giving up Word-Formation ", *FL* 11:13-38
	1978	" Theme and Rheme as Immediate Constituents ", *FL* 12:253-365
	1979	" Giving up Neutralization ", *CFS* 33:7-20
Baum, R.	1976	*Dependenzgrammatik*, Tübingen: Niemeyer
Bazell, C. E.	1949	" Syntactic Relations and Linguistic Typology ", *CFS* 8:5-20
	1954	" The Choice of Criteria in Structural Linguistics ", in: U. Weinreich – A. Martinet, *Linguistics Today*, New York: Publications of the Linguistic Circle of New York, 6-15
Becker, C. F.	1836	*Ausführliche deutsche Grammatik*, Frankfurt a. M.: Hermann
	1841	*Organism der Sprache*², Frankfurt a. M.: Kettembeil
Beckman, N.	1934	" Västeuropeisk Syntax: Några Nybildningar i Nordiska och andra västeuropeiska Språk ", *Göteborgs Högskolas Arsskrift* XL, 4
Beneš, E.	1968	" On Two Aspects of Functional Sentence Perspective ", *TLP* 3:267-274
Bergson, L.	1960	*Zur Stellung des Adjektivs in der älteren griechischen Prosa*, Uppsala: Almquist and Wiksell
Blass, Fr.	1960	*Der Ausdruck der zeitlichen Unmittelbarkeit* (= Romanica Helvetica, 68) Bern: Francke
Blass–Debrunner:		Fr. Blass – A. Debrunner, *Grammatik des neutestamentlichen Griechisch* [12], Göttingen: Vandenhoek and Ruprecht, 1965
Blomqvist, J.	1969	*Greek Particles in Hellenistic Prose*, Lund: Gleerup

Bloomfield, L. 1926 " A Set of Postulates for the Science of Language ", *Lg* 2:153-164
1935 *Language*², London: Allen & Unwin

Blümel, R. 1914 *Einführung in die Syntax*, Heidelberg: C. Winter

Böhlig, A. 1973 " Zu einer ungewöhnlichen Verwendung des Qualitativs im Koptischen ", *GM* 8:7-9
1977 " Zu N im Koptischen ", *GM* 23:11-23
1979 " Zur Stellung des adjektivischen Attributs im Koptischen ", in: *Festschrift Elmar Edel* (= *Ägypten und Altes Testament*, Bd. 1), Bamberg, 42-45

Böhlig, G. 1956 *Untersuchungen zum rhetorischen Sprachgebrauch der Byzantiner* (= Berliner byzant. Arbeiten, 2), Berlin: Akademie-Verlag

Bolinger, D. L. 1972 " Linear Modification ", in: *Syntactic Theory*, I. *Structuralist*, ed. F. W. Householder, Penguin Books, 31-50

Borghouts, J. F. 1979 " A New Approach to the Late Egyptian Conjunctive ", *ZÄS* 106:14-24

Brinker, K. 1972 *Konstituentenstrukturgrammatik und operationale Satzgliedanalyse*, Frankfurt a. M.: Athenäum

Brøndal, V. 1943 *Essais de linguistique générale*, Copenhagen: Einar Munksgaard

Browne, G. M. 1976 " Notes on Coptic Texts ", *CdE* 50:231-2
1978a " Notes on Coptic Literary Texts ", *Enchoria* 8 (Sonderband):7(53)-10(56)
1978b " Ad CG II 7, 139:20 ", *BASP* 15:191-3
1979a *Michigan Coptic Texts* (= Studia et Textus, 7), Barcelona: Papyrologica Castroctaviana
1979b " The Sahidic P Palau Rib. Gospel of Luke ", *CdE* 53:199-202
1979c " Notes on Coptic Texts ", *BASP* 16:169-173

Busse, W. 1974 *Klasse, Transitivität, Valenz: transitive Klassen des Verbs im Französischen* (= Intern. Bibliothek für allgem. Linguistik, 36), München: Fink

Callender, J. B. 1970 *Coptic Nominal Sentences and Related Constructions*, University of Chicago Dissertation, mimeographed
1971 " Notes on Constructions with *jn* ", *Studies in African Linguistics* (UCLA) 2:1-21
1973a " Grammatical Models in Egyptology ", *Or* 42 (Gelb Volume): 47-77
1973b " Coptic Locative Constructions ", *JEA* 59:190-8
1975 *Middle Egyptian* (= Afroasiatic Dialects, 2), Malibu: Undena Publications

Cardona, G. 1973 " Indian Grammarians on Adverbs ", in: *Issues in Linguistics*, Papers in Honor of H. and R. Kahane, ed. B. B. Kachru *et al.*, Urbana: Univ. of Illinois Press, 85-98

de Cénival, J. L. 1972 " Sur la forme *sḏm.f* à redoublement ou *mrr.f* ", *RdE* 24:40-5

Černý, J. 1976 *Coptic Etymological Dictionary*, Cambridge: Cambridge Univ. Press

Chafe, W. L. 1976 " Givenness, Contrastiveness, Definiteness, Subjects, Topics and Point of View ", in Ch. N. Li (ed.), *Subject and Topic*, New York/London: Academic Press, 25-55

Chaîne, M. 1933 *Éléments de grammaire dialectale copte*, Paris: Geuthner

Cherix, P. 1979 *Étude de lexicographie copte: Chenouté, Le discours en présence de Flavien* (*Les noms et les verbes*) (= Cahiers de la Révue Biblique, 18), Paris: Gabalda

Coseriu, E. 1969 *Einführung in die strukturelle Linguistik*, Tübingen: Fotodruck Präzis
1971 *Sprache: Strukturen und Funktionen* (= Tübinger Beiträge zur Linguistik, 2), Tübingen

	1975	*Sprachtheorie und allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft* (= Intern. Bibliothek für allgem. Linguistik, 2), München: Fink
Coyaud, M.	1979	" Les modes d'expression de l'emphase dans divers langues ", in: *Actes des colloques: Relations Prédicat-Actant(s) dans les langues de types divers*, Paris: SELAF (LACITO-documents), 109-122
Crönert, W.	1903	*Memoria Graeca Herculanensis*, Leipzig: Teubner
Crum, W. E.	1939	*Coptic Dictionary*, Oxford: The Clarendon Press (referred to as *Dictionary*)
Crum, W. E. – Evelyn-White, H.G.	1926	*The Monastery of Epiphanius at Thebes*, vols. I, II, New York: The Metropolitan Museum of Art
Crum Papers, kept at the Griffith Institute, The Ashmolean Museum, Oxford		
Czermak, W.	1928	" Rhythmus und Umbildung im Agyptisch-Koptischen ", *ZÄS* 63:78-89
	1931	*Der Rhythmus der koptischen Sprache...*, Wien: Hölder-Pichler-Tempsky (Sitzungsberichte d. Akad. d. Wissenschaften Wien, philos.-histor., 213/2)
Dahl, Ö.	1974	" Topic-Comment Structure Revisited ", in: Ö. Dahl (ed.), *Topic and Comment, Contextual Boundness and Focus* (= Papiere zur Textlinguistik, 6), Hamburg: Buske, 1-24
Damourette, J. – Pichon, E.,		*Des mots à la pensée: essai de grammaire de la langue française*, 1932-1951, Paris: Éditions d'Artrey, 1911-49
Daneš, F. (ed.)	1974	*Papers on Functional Sentence Perspective* (Janua Linguarum, s. minor 147), The Hague: Mouton
	1970	" Zur linguistische Analyse der Textstruktur ", *FL* 4:72-9
Daumas, F.	1952	*Les moyens d'expression du grec et de l'égyptien comparés dans les décrets de Canope et de Memphis* (= Supplément de l'ASAE, Cah. 16), Le Caire: Imprimerie de l'IFAO
Denniston, J. D.	1966	*The Greek Particles*², Oxford: The Clarendon Press
Dik, S. C.	1972	*Coordination: Its Implications for the Theory of General Linguistics*, Amsterdam: North-Holland Publ. Company
Drescher, J.	1969	" Graeco-Coptica ", *Mus* 82:85-100
	1970	" Graeco-Coptica II ", *Mus* 83:139-155
Dressler, W.	1968	*Studien zur verbalen Pluralität* (= Sitzungsber. österreich. Akad., philos.-histor., 259/1)
	1973	*Einführung in die Textlinguistik*² (= Konzepte d. Sprach- und Literaturwissenschaft, 13), Tübingen: Niemeyer
	1978	*Current Trends in Text-Linguistics*, Berlin/New York: W. De Gruyter
Dressler, W. – Schmidt, S. J.	1973	*Textlinguistik: Kommentierte Bibliographie*, München: Fink
Dubois, J.	1965	*Grammaire structurale du français: nom et pronom*, Paris: Larousse
Ebeling, G.	1905	*Probleme der romanischen Syntax*, Halle a.S.: Niemeyer
Edel, E.	1959	" Die Herkunft des neuägyptisch-koptischen Personalsuffixes des 3. Person Plural *-w* ", *ZÄS* 84:17-38
	1956-1964	*Altägyptische Grammatik* (= Analecta Orientalia, 34/39), Rome: Pontificium Institutum Biblicum
Edgerton, W. F.	1935	" On the Origin of Certain Coptic Verbal Forms ", *JAOS* 55:257-267
Emmel, S.	1981	" Proclitic Forms of the Verb + in Coptic ", in: Young (ed.) 1981, 131-146

Erman, A.	1915	" Unterschiede zwischen den koptischen Dialekten bei der Wortverbindung ", *Sitzungsber. preuss. Akad.* 1915/1, 180-8
	1933	*Neuägyptische Grammatik*² (written by W. Erichsen), Leipzig: Engelmann
Fecht, G.	1964	" Die Wiedergewinnung der altägyptischen Verskunst ", *MDAIK* 19:54-96
Fehling, D.	1969	*Die Wiederholungsfiguren und ihr Gebrauch bei den Griechen vor Gorgias*, Berlin: W. de Gruyter
Firbas, J.	1964	" On Defining the Theme in Functional Sentence Analysis ", *TLP* 1: 267-280
Fodor, I.	1959	" The Origin of Grammatical Gender ", *Lingua* 8:1-41, 186-214
Fraenkel, E.	1964a	" Kolon und Satz: Beobachtungen zur Gliederung des antiken Satzes, I ", in: E. Fraenkel, *Kleine Beiträge zur klassischen Philologie*, Rome: Edizioni di storia e letteratura, 73-92
	1964b	" Kolon und Satz, II ", in: *Kleine Beiträge...* 93-130
	1964c	" Nachträge zu Kolon und Satz II ", in: *Kleine Beiträge...* 131-9
	1965	*Noch einmal Kolon und Satz* (= Sitzungsber. bayer. Akad., philos.-histor., 2), München: Beck
Fraenkel, J. J.	1947	" A Question in Connection with Greek Particles ", *Mnemosyne* III/13:183-201
Frandsen, P. J.	1974	*An Outline of the Late Egyptian Verbal System*, Copenhagen: Akademisk Forlag
	1975	*At-Former*, Aegyptologisk Institut, Københavns Universitet
Frei, H.	1956	" Charactérisation, indication, spécification ", in: *For Roman Jacobson* (edd. Halle, Lunt et al.), The Hague: Mouton, 161-8
	1961	" Désaccords ", *CFS* 18:35-51
	1966	" Modes de réduction des syntagmes ", *CFS* 22:41-51
	1968	" Syntaxe et méthode en linguistique synchronique ", in: *Methoden der Sprachwissenschaft* (edd. Frei, Robins, Schnelle *et al.*), München/Wien: Oldenbourg, 39-63
Fries, Ch. C.	1957	*The Structure of English*, London: Longman, Green
Frobeen, C.	1898	*Zur Lehre vom Prädikativum*, Königsberg: Hartung
Funk, W.-P.	1976	" ' Blind ' oder ' unsichtbar '? Zur Bedeutungsstruktur deverbaler negativer Adjektive im Koptischen ", paper delivered in the *IV. Koptologische Arbeitskonferenz*, Halle (Sale), 15-17 Nov. 1976; I have used a typescript kindly put at my disposal by the author.
	1977	" Zur Syntax des koptischen Qualitativs ", *ZÄS* 104:25-39
	1978a	" Towards a Synchronic Morphology of Coptic ", in: Wilson (ed.) 1978, 104-124
	1978b	" Zur Syntax des koptischen Qualitativs (II) ", *ZÄS* 105:94-114
	1981	" Beiträge des mittelägyptischen Dialekts zum koptischen Konjugationssystem ", in: Young (ed.) 1981, 177-210
von der Gabelentz, G.	1869	" Ideen zur einer vergleichenden Syntax ", *ZV* 6:376-384
	1875	" Weiteres zur vergleichenden Syntax ", *ZV* 8:129-165
	1901	*Die Sprachwissenschaft: ihre Aufgaben, Methoden und bisherigen Ergebnisse*, Leipzig: Tauchnitz
Gamillscheg, E.	1930	" Zur Einwirkung des Affekts auf den Sprachbau ", *Neuphilologische Monatsschrift* 1:14-34

Gardiner, A. H.	1957	*Egyptian Grammar*³, London: Oxford University Press
Garvin, P. L.	1954	Review of Hjelmslev's *Prolegomena to a Theory of Language* (tr. Whitfield, 1953), *Lg* 30:69-96
	1958	" Syntactic Units and Operations ", *Proceedings of the Eighth International Congress of Linguistics* (Oslo, 1958) 626-633
Gerber, G.	1885	*Die Sprache als Kunst*², Berlin: R. Gärtners Verlagsbuchhandlung
Godel, R.	1945	" Formes et emplois du redoublement en turc et en arménien moderne ", *CFS* 5:5-16
	1954	" Notes inédites de F. de Saussure ", *CFS* 12:49-71
Goldenberg, G.	1971	" Tautological Infinitive ", *Israel Oriental Studies* 1:36-85
Gonda, J.	1957	" The Use of the Particle *ca* ", *Vâk* 5:1-73
Goodwyn, W. W.	1965	*Syntax of the Moods and Tenses of the Greek Verb*, London/New York: Macmillan
Gossen, C. Th.	1951	" Quelques aspects de la mise en relief d'une idée en français et en italien ", *ZRPh* 67:147-8
Greenbaum, S.	1969	*Studies in English Adverbial Usage*, London: Longman
Gregorius, Anba	1981	" Greek Loan-Words in Coptic ", *BSAC* 23:199-222
Grimes, J. E.	1975	*The Thread of Discourse* (= Janua Linguarum, s. minor 207), The Hague: Mouton
Groll, S. I.	1970	*The Negative Verbal System of Late Egyptian*, London: Oxford University Press
Gülich, E. – Heger, K. – Raible, W.	1974	*Linguistische Textanalyse* (= Papiere zur Textlinguistik, 8), München: Fink
Gülich, E.–Raible, W.	1975	*Textsorten: Differenzierungskriterien aus linguistischer Sicht*², Wiesbaden: Athenaion
Guillaume, G.	1919	*Le problème de l'article et sa solution dans la langue française*, Paris: Hachette
Gunn, B.	1924	*Studies in Egyptian Syntax*, Paris: Geuthner
Hall, R. A. Jr.	1965	" Fact and Fiction in Grammatical Analysis ", *Foundations of Language* 1:337-345
Halliday, M. A. K.	1961	" Categories of the Theory of Grammar ", *Word* 17:241-292
	1967	" Notes on Transitivity and Theme in English, 1-2 ", *JL* 3:37-81, 199-244
	1968	" Notes on Transitivity and Theme in English, 3 ", *JL* 4:179-215
	1972	" Language Structure and Language Function ", in: J. Lyons (ed.), *New Horizons in Linguistics*, 140-165
Halliday, M. A. K. – Hasan, R.	1976	*Cohesion in English*, London: Longman
Harris, R.	1972	" Performative Paradigms ", *Transactions of the Philological Society* 1972:44-58
Harris, Z. S.	1951	*Methods in Structural Linguistics*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press
	1952	" Discourse Analysis ", *Lg* 28:1-30
Hartmann, P.	1971	" Texte als linguistisches Objekt ", in: W.-D. Stempel (ed.), *Beiträge zur Textlinguistik*, München: Fink, 9-29
	1975	" Textlinguistische Tendenzen in der Sprachwissenschaft ", *FL* 8:1-49
Haselbach, G.	1966	*Grammatik und Sprachstruktur: Karl Ferdinand Beckers Beitrag zur allgemeinen Sprachwissenschaft in historischer und systematischer Sicht*, Berlin: W. de Gruyter

Havers, W. 1931 *Handbuch der erklärenden Syntax*, Heidelberg: C. Winter

Hausenblas, K. 1966 " Über die Bedeutung sprachlicher Einheiten und Texte ", *TLP* 2:59-69

1964 " On the Characterization and Classification of Discourses ", *TLP* 1: 67-83

Helbig, G. 1971 " Theoretische und praktische Aspekte eines Valenzmodels ", in: G. Helbig (ed.), *Beiträge zur Valenztheorie*, The Hague: Mouton, 31-49

Hellwig, A. 1974 " Zur Funktion und Bedeutung der griechischen Partikeln ", *Glotta* 52: 145-171

Hintze, F. 1950-1952 *Untersuchungen zu Stil und Sprache neuägyptischer Erzählungen* (= Veröffentlichungen d. deutschen Akad. d. Wissenschaften z. Berlin, Institut für Orientforschung, 2, 6), Berlin: Akademie-Verlag

Hjelmslev, L. 1939 " Notes sur les oppositions supprimables ", *TCLP* 8:51-7

(1943) *Omkring Sprogteoriens Grundlaeggse*,

1961 translated[2] by Whitfield as: *Prolegomena to a Theory of Language*, Madison: University of Wisconsin Press.

1947 " Structural Analysis of Language ", *SL* 1:69-78

Hockett, Ch. F. 1967 " Where the Tongue Slips, There Slip I ", in: *To Honor Roman Jakobson* (The Hague: Mouton) II, 910-936

Hofmann, E. 1936 *Ausdrucksverstärkung: Untersuchungen zur etymologischen Verstärkung und zum Gebrauch der Steigerungsadverbia...* (= Ergänzungshefte d. Zeitschr. f. vergl. Sprachforschung, 9), Göttingen: Vandenhoek & Ruprecht

Horn, J. 1980 " *'innamā* und die Zweiten Tempora oder: Wie man Polotsky nicht beikommen kann ", *GM* 39:61-88

Householder, F. W. 1952 Review of Harris (1951), *IJAL* 18:260-8

1971 *Linguistic Speculations*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press

International Congress of Linguists, Proceedings (*PICL*):

6 (1949) Paris: Klincksiek

8 (1958) Oslo: University Press

9 (1964) The Hague: Mouton

10 (1969) Bucarest: Éditions de l'Académie

11 (1974) Bologna: Il Mulino

Isačenko, A. V. 1954 *Grammatičeskij stroj russkogo jazyka...*, Bratislava: Isdat. Slov. Akad. Nauk

Jacobson, S. 1964 *Adverbial Positions in English*, Stockholm: AB Studentbok

Jacobsson, B. 1977 " Adverbs, Prepositions and Conjunctions in English: A Study in Gradience ", *SL* 31:38-64

Jannaris, A. N. (1897) *An Historical Greek Grammar, Chiefly of the Attic Dialect*. .., 1968, Hildesheim: Olms (reprint of 1897, London)

Jelanskaja, A. I. 1965 *Koptskij Jazyk*, Moscow: Nauka

1966 " Osnovn'e osobennosti sintaksisa složnopodčinennyx predloženij v koptskom jazyke ", *Jazyky Afriki* 309:183-204

1967 " Slučaj nesoglasovanija podxvatyvajuščego mestoimenija s antecedentom opredelitel'nogo predloženija v koptskom jazyke ", in: *Drevnij Egipet i Drevnjaja Afrika*, Moscow: Nauka, 27-29

1970 " Razgadka zakona Šterna-Jernstedta ", in: *Pismenn'e Pamjatniki i Problemy Istorii i kultury Narodov Vostoka...*, Moscow: Nauka, 145-6

1977 " ⲭⲉ en tant qu'indice d'irréalité en copte ", in: *Ägypten und Kusch* (*F. Hintze Anniversary Volume*) (= Schriften z. Geschichte u. Kultur d. alten Orients, 13), Berlin: Akademie-Verlag, 139-142

Jernstedt, P. V. 1925 " Zum Gebrauch des koptischen Qualitativs ", *Doklady Akad. Nauk SSSR*, ser. B, 74-7
1927 " Das koptische Praesens und die Anknüpfungsarten des näheren Objekts ", *Doklady Akad. Nauk SSSR* 1927, 69-74
1929 " Graeco-Coptica ", *ZÄS* 64:122-135
1949 " K determinacii v koptskom jazyke ", *Sovetskoje Vostokovedenije* 6:52-62 (I refer to P. Nagel's German translation, with paragraph division and notes, " Zur Determination im Koptischen ", in: *Wissenschaftliche Zeitschrift der Martin-Luther-Universität Halle-Wittenberg*, Gesellsch.- u. sprachwiss. Reihe 27, Heft 3:95-106 (1978)
1959a *Koptskie Texty Gosudarstvennogo Muzeja...*, Moscow/Leningrad: Akad. Nauk SSSR
1959b *Koptskie Texty Gosudarstevennogo Ermitaža...*, Leningrad/Moscow: Akad. Nauk SSSR
1967 " Egipetskie privativn'e prilegatel'n'e-istočnik grečeskix slovarnyx novšestv ", in: *Ellinističeskij Bližnij Vostok*, *Vizantija i Iran...* (Pigulevskaja Volume), Moscow: Nauka, 44-5
Jespersen, O. 1937 *Analytic Syntax*, London: Allen and Unwin
1948 *Modern English Grammar*, II: *Syntax*, Copenhagen: E. Munksgaard
1949 (by N. Hailsund), *Modern English Grammar*, VII: *Syntax*, Copenhagen: E. Munksgaard
1962 *Selected Writings*, London: Allen and Unwin
Johnson, J. R. 1976 *The Demotic Verbal System* (= Studies in Ancient Oriental Civilization, 38), Chicago: The Oriental Institute
Jones, L. K. 1977 *Theme in English Expository Discourse* (= Edward Sapir Monograph Series, 2), Lake Bluff, Illinois: Jupiter Press
Junge, F. 1972 " Mehrfache adverbielle Bestimmungen nach zweiten Tempora ", *ZDMG* Supplement II (Vorträge d. XVII. deutschen Orientalistentages) 33-41
1974 " Linguistik und Ägyptologie ", *GM* 10:59-75
1978 *Syntax der mittelägyptischen Literatursprache: Grundlagen einer Strukturtheorie*, Mainz a. Rhein: Philipp von Zabern
Kahle, P. E. 1954 *Bala'izah: Coptic Texts from Deir el-Bala'izah in Upper Egypt*, Oxford: Oxford University Press
Karcevskij, S. 1936 " Sur la nature de l'adverbe ", *TCLP* 6:107-111
Kasser, R. 1965 " Comment séparer les mots en copte? ", *Mus* 78:307-312
Kern, F. 1888 *Die deutsche Satzlehre: eine Untersuchung ihrer Grundlagen*², Berlin: Nicolai
Kickasola, J. N. 1975 *Sahidic Coptic* (N) ... AN *Negation Patterns: A Morpho-Syntactic Description of Sequences and Adjuncts*, Brandeis Univ. Dissertation, Ann Arbor: University Microfilms
Klum, A. 1961 *Verbe et adverbe* (= Acta Univ. Upsaliensis, Studia Romanica Upsal., 1), Stockholm: Almquist and Wiksell
Koschmieder, E. 1965 *Beiträge zur allgemeinen Syntax*, Heidelberg: C. Winter
Krámský, J. 1972 *The Article and the Concept of Definiteness in Language* (= Janua Linguarum, s. minor 125), The Hague: Mouton
Kühner, R. – Gerth, B., *Ausführliche Grammatik der griechischen Sprache: Satzlehre*⁴, 1955, Leverkusen: Gottschalk

Kuryłowicz, J. 1936 " Dérivation lexicale et dérivation syntaxique ", *BSL* 37:79-92
1960 " La position linguistique du nom propre ", in: J. Kuryłowicz, *Esquisses linguistiques*, Wroclaw-Kraków: Zaklad Polsk. Akad. Nauk, 182-192
1964 *The Inflectional Categories of Indo-European*, Heidelberg: C. Winter

Lauer, S. 1959 *Zur Wortstellung bei Pindar* (Inaugural-Dissertation philos.-histor. Fakultät Univ. Bern), Winterthur: Keller

Layton, B. 1979 *The Gnostic Treatise on Resurrection from Nag Hammadi* (= Harvard Dissertations in Religion, 12), Missoula: Scholars Press
1981 " Compound Prepositions in Sahidic Coptic ", in: D. W. Young (ed.) 1981, 239-268

Lefort, L. Th. 1948a " ⲭⲉⲕⲁⲥ dans le NT sahidique ", *Mus* 61:65-73
1948b " ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ dans le NT sahidique ", *Mus* 61:153-170
1950 " Gréco-copte ", in: *Coptic Studies in Honor of W. E. Crum*, Boston: The Byzantine Institute, 65-71

Leipoldt, J. 1903 *Schenute von Atripe und die Entstehung des nationalägyptischen Christenthums* (= TUGAL, 25), Leipzig: Hinrichs

von Lemm, O. 1972a (ed. P. Nagel), *Kleine koptische Studien* (= Subsidia Byzantina, X), Leipzig: Zentralantiquariat der DDR
1972b (ed. P. Nagel), *Koptische Miscellen* (= Subsidia Byzantina, XI), Leipzig: Zentralantiquariat der DDR

Lepschy, G. C. 1972 *A Survey of Structural Linguistics*, London: Faber and Faber

Levy, A. 1909 *Die Syntax der koptischen Apophthegmata Patrum Aegyptiorum* (Inaugural-Dissertation), Berlin: Gröschel

Lichtheim, M. 1964 " Notes on the Late-Egyptian Conjunctive ", in: *Studies in Egyptology and Linguistics in Honour of H. J. Polotsky*, Jerusalem: The Israel Exploration Society, 1-8

Löfstedt, B. 1966 " Die Konstruktion *c'est lui qui l'a fait* im Lateinischen ", *IF* 71:253-277

Löfstedt, E. 1936 *Vermischte Studien zur lateinischen Sprachkunde*, Lund: Gleerup
1956 *Syntactica: Studien und Beiträge zur historischen Syntax des Lateins*, II: *Syntaktisch-stilistische Gesichtspunkte und Probleme*, Lund: Gleerup

Löpfe, A. 1940 *Die Wortstellung im griechischen Sprechsatz, erklärt an Stücken aus Plato und Menander*, Freiburg i. d. Schweiz: Paulusdruckerei

Lohmann, J. 1965 *Philosophie und Sprachwissenschaft* (= Erfahrung und Denken, 15), Berlin: Duncker und Humblot

Longacre, R. E. 1976 " Discourse ", in: *Trends in Linguistics, Studies and Monographs*, 1: *Tagmemics*, vol. 1 (edd. Brend-Pike), The Hague: Mouton, 1-44

Lyons, J. 1966 " Towards a ' Notional ' Theory of the ' Parts of Speech ' ", *JL* 2:209-236
1968 *Introduction to Theoretical Linguistics*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press

MacCana, P. 1973 " On Celtic Word Order and the Welsh ' Abnormal Sentence ' ", *Ériu* 24:90-120

Malkiel, Y. 1959 " Irreversible Binomials ", *Lingua* 8:113-160

Mallon, A. – Malinine, M., *Grammaire copte*[4], 1956, Beyrouth: Imprimerie catholique

Martinet, A. 1949 " About Structural Sketches ", *Word* 5:13-35
1965 *La linguistique synchronique, études et recherches*, Paris: Presses Universitaires

Mathesius, V. 1941 " Základní fonce poradku slov v čestine " (" The Fundamental Functions of Word-Order in Czech "), *Slovo a Slovenost* 7:169-180

Mathesius, V. – Vachek, J. 1975 *A Functional Analysis of Present-Day English on a General Linguistic Basis*, The Hague: Mouton – Prague: Academia

Matthews, P. H. 1974 *Morphology: An Introduction to the Theory of Word-Structure*, Cambridge: Cambridge University Press

Mayser, E., *Grammatik der griechischen Papyri aus der Ptolemäerzeit...*, 1926-1938, Berlin: W. de Gruyter

Meier, G. F. 1961 *Das Zero-Problem in der Linguistik* (= Schriften zur Phonetik, Sprachwissenschaft und Kommunikationsforschung, 2), Berlin: Akademie-Verlag

Mingarelli, A., *Aegyptiorum codicum reliquiae Venetiis in bibliotheca Naniana asservatae*, Bologna 1785

Mink, G. 1978 " Allgemeine Sprachwissenschaft und Koptologie ", in: Wilson (ed.) 1978:71-103

Misteli, F. 1882 Review of Stern, *Koptische Grammatik*, *ZV* 13:428-455

Mohrmann, C. *et al.* 1961 *Trends in European and American Linguistics, 1930-1960. Edited on Occasion of the 9th International Congress of Linguists...*, Utrecht: Spectrum

Moorhouse, A. C. 1959 *Studies in the Greek Negatives*, Cardiff: University of Wales Press

Morenz, S. 1952 " Die NGI-Konstruktion als sprachliche und stilistische Erscheinung des Koptischen ", *ASAE* 52:1-15

Müller, C. D. G. 1956 " Koptische Redekunst und griechische Rhetorik ", *Mus* 69:53-72

Müller-Hauser, M. L. 1943 *La mise en relief d'une idée en français moderne* (= Romanica Helvetica, 21), Herlenbach-Zürich: Rentch

Nagel, P. 1964 *Untersuchungen zur Grammatik des subachmimischen Dialekts* (dissertation, mimeographed), Halle a. Saale

1969 " Grammatische Untersuchungen zu Nag Hammadi Codex II ", in: Altheim-Stiehl (edd.), *Die Araber in der alten Welt*, Berlin: W. de Gruyter, V/2 393-469

1973a " Marginalia Coptica I: ' Die Wolke neben ihm ' ", *Wissenschaftl. Zeitschr. d. Martin-Luther-Univ. Halle-Wittenberg*, Gesellsch.- u. sprachwiss. Reihe 22, Heft 6:111-115.

1973b " Marginalia Coptica II: Zum substantivierten Relativsatz ", *ibid.* 117-121

1980 " Die Determination des Subjektsnomen im Präsens I und das Problem der Satztypen des Koptischen ", *Hallesche Beiträge zur Orientforschung* 2:77-93 (= Martin-Luther-Univ. Halle-Wittenberg Wissenschaftl. Beiträge 1980/8 [I 11])

Otto, E. 1965 *Stand und Aufgabe der allgemeinen Sprachwissenschaft*², Berlin: W. de Gruyter

Palek, B. 1968 *Cross Reference: A Study from Hyper-Syntax* (= Acta Univ. Carolinae. Philologica. Monographica, 21), Prague: Univ. Karlova

Parker, R. A. 1961 " The Durative Tenses in P. Rylands IX ", *JNES* 20:180-7

Paul, H. 1920 *Prinzipien der Sprachgeschichte*⁵, Halle a. Saale: Niemeyer

Peyron, V. A. 1841 *Grammatica Linguae Copticae*, Taurini: ex Regio Typographeo

Piehl, K. 1902 " Etudes coptes III ", *Sphinx* 5:89-92

Pinkster, H. 1972 *On Latin Adverbs*, Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Company

Poch, M. 1959 " Procédés de mise en relief. La phrase segmentée dans quelques oeuvres d'Albert Camus ", *Orbis* 8:161-8

Polotsky, H. J.
1930 Review of De Vis, *Homélies coptes de la Vaticane*, *OLZ* 33: 871-881 (= *CP* 342-7)
1933 Review of Erichsen, *Fajumische Fragmente der Reden des Agathonicus...*, *OLZ* 36:417-9
1934 Review of Till, *Koptische Dialektgrammatik*, *GGA* 196:58-67 (= *CP* 363-372)
1937 " Deux verbes auxiliaires méconnus du copte ", *GLECS* 3:1-3 (= *CP* 99-101)
1939 Review of Crum, *Coptic Dictionary* (fasc. 2-5), *JEA* 25:113 (= *CP* 373-377)
1940 " Une règle concernant l'emploi des formes verbales dans la phrase interrogative en néo-égyptien ", *ASAE* 40:241-5 (= *CP* 33-7)
1944 *Études de syntaxe copte*, Le Caire: Publications de la SAC (= *CP* 102-207)
1949 " Une question d'orthographe bohairique ", *BSAC* 12:25-35 (= *CP* 378-388)
1950 " Modes grecs en copte? ", in: *Coptic Studies in Honor of W. E. Crum*, Boston: The Byzantine Institute, 73-90 (= *CP* 208-225)
1957a Review of Till, *Koptische Grammatik*, *OLZ* 52:219-234 (= *CP* 226-233)
1957b " The Emphatic *sḏm.n.f* Form ", *RdE* 11:109-117 (= *CP* 43-51)
1957c " Zu den koptischen literarischen Texten aus Balaizah ", *Or* 26:347-9 (= *CP* 389-391)
1959 " Zur Neugestaltung der koptischen Grammatik ", *OLZ* 54:453-460 (= *CP* 234-7)
1960a " The Coptic Conjugation System ", *Or* 29:392-422 (= *CP* 238-268)
1960b Review of Böhlig, *Der achmimische Proverbientext*, *OLZ* 55:23-7 (= *CP* 395-7)
1961 " Zur koptischen Wortstellung ", *Or* 30:294-313 (= *CP* 398-417)
1962a " Nominalsatz und Cleft Sentence im Koptischen ", *Or* 31:413-430 (= *CP* 418-435)
1962b Review of Till, *Koptische Grammatik*², *OLZ* 57:478-481 (= *CP* 269-271)
1964 " Ägyptische Verbalformen und ihre Vokalisation ", *Or* 33:267-285 (= *CP* 52-70)
1965 *Egyptian Tenses*, Proceedings of the Israel Academy of Sciences and Humanities, II, 5 (= *CP* 71-96)
1969 " Zur altägyptischen Grammatik ", *Or* 38:465-481
1970 " Coptic ", in: Th. A. Sebeok (ed.), *Current Trends in Linguistics*, 6: *Linguistics in South West Asia and North Africa*, The Hague: Mouton, 558-570
1971 *Collected Papers*, Jerusalem: The Magnes Press, The Hebrew University (*CP*)
1973 " Notre connaisance du néo-égyptien ", in: *Textes et langages de l'Égypte pharaonique: Hommage à Jean-François Champollion*, Le Caire: IFAO, 133-141
1976 " Les transpositions du verbe en égyptien classique ', *IOS* 5:1-50

Prätorius, J.
1881 Review of Stern, *Koptische Grammatik*, *ZDMG* 35:750-761

Quecke, H.
1962 " Eine mißbräuchliche Verwendung des Qualitativs im Koptischen ", *Mus* 75:291-300

1970 *Untersuchungen zum koptischen Stundengebet* (= Publications, 3), Louvain: Institut Orientaliste
1972 *Das Markusevangelium saïdisch* (= Papyrologica Castroctaviana, 4), Barcelona: Papyrologica Castroctaviana
1975/6 "Zu Schenutes Gebrauch des Qualitativs", *OLP* 6/7 (*Miscellanea in honorem Josephi Vergote*) 479-486
1977a *Das Lukasevangelium saïdisch* (= Papyrologica Castroctaviana, 6), Barcelona: Papyrologica Castroctaviana
1977b "Eine neue koptische Bibelhandschrift, II", *Or* 46:300-303
1978 "Das saïdische Jak-Fragment in Heidelberg und London (S 25)", *Or* 47:238-251
1979 Review of Janet H. Johnson, *The Demotic Verbal System*, *Or* 48:435-448
1981 Review of B. Layton, *The Gnostic Treatise on Resurrection from Nag Hammadi*, *Or* 50:259-263
Forthcoming: "Zum substantivischen Relativsatz im Koptischen", to appear in: *Proceedings of the Second Congress of the International Association for Coptic Studies* (held in Rome, 1980)
1982 Review of P. Cherix, *Étude de lexicographie copte*, *Or* 51:284-288

Regula, M. 1951 *Grundlegung und Grundprobleme der Syntax* (= Bibliothek der allgemeinen Sprachwissenschaft, Reihe 2), Heidelberg: C. Winter
1966 "Espèces et formes de la mise en relief et de l'anticipation", *CFS* 23: 121-138

Reiner, E. 1968 *La place de l'adjectif épithète en français: théories traditionnelles et essai de solution* (= Wiener romanistische Arbeiten, 7), Wien/Stuttgart: Braumüller

Robins, R. H. 1966 "The Development of the Word Class System of the European Grammatical Tradition", *FL* 2:3-19
1970 *Diversions of Bloomsbury: Selected Writings on Linguistics*, Amsterdam: North-Holland Publishing Company

Rosén, H. B. 1957 "Die 'zweiten' Tempora des Griechischen: zum Prädikatsausdruck beim griechischen Verbum", *MH* 14:133-154
1964 "Outlines of a General Theory of Juncture", in: *Studies in Egyptology and Linguistics in Honour of H. J. Polotsky*, Jerusalem: The Israel Exploration Society, 153-189
1968 "Die Grammatik des Unbelegten", *Lingua* 21:359-381
1970 "Les successivités", in: *Mélanges M. Cohen*, The Hague: Mouton, 113-129
1977 *Contemporary Hebrew* (= Trends in Linguistics, State of the Art Reports, 11), The Hague: Mouton
1979 Review of J. Blau, *An Adverbial Construction in Hebrew and Arabic*, *BSL* 74:459-465

Rothenberg, M. 1970 "Quelques remarques sur les relations syntaxiques de l'adjectif qualificatif en français contemporain", *FL* 4:229-268
1971 "Les propositions relatives à antécedent explicite introduites par un présentatif", *Études de Linguistique Appliquée* (n. s.) 2:102-117

Rudnitzky, G. 1956 "Zum Sprachgebrauch Schenutes, I, II", *ZÄS* 81:48-58, 129-139

Säve-Söderbergh, T. 1949 *Studies in the Coptic Manichaean Psalm-Book: Prosody and Mandaean Parallels* (= Arbeten utg. med understöd av Vilhelm Ekmans universitetsfond, 55), Uppsala: Almqvist and Wiksell

Sandmann, M. 1939 " Substantiv, Adjektiv-Adverb und Verb als sprachliche Formen ", *IF* 57:81-112

1956 " On Neuter Adjectives Determining Verbs ", *MLR* 41:24-34

1954 *Subject and Predicate: A Contribution to the Theory of Syntax* (= Edinburgh University Publications, Language and Literature, 5), Edinburgh: The University Press

Satzinger, H. 1976 *Neuägyptische Studien: Die Partikel* ir. *Das Tempussystem* (= Beihefte zur WZKM, 6), Wien: Verlag des Verbandes der wissenschaftlichen Gesellschaften Österreichs

Saussure, F. de 1949 *Cours de linguistique générale*[4], Paris: Payot

Sauvageot, A. 1950 " La catégorie de l'objet ", *JPs* 43:157-170

Schenkel, W. 1966a " Die Konversion, ein Epiphänomen des Kemischen (Ägyptisch-koptischen) ", *MDAIK* 21:123-132

1966b " Das Präpositional- und Adverbialattribut des älteren Ägyptisch, eine Apokoinou-Konstruktion ", *JEA* 52:53-8

1967a " Adversarien zum Attribut, Apposition und Genitiv-Relation des Ägyptischen ", *MDAIK* 22:71-83

1967b " Antizipation innerhalb der Wortgruppe und die sog. Badalapposition im Ägyptischen ", *JNES* 26:113-120

1972 " Neue linguistische Methoden und arbeitstechnische Verfahren in der Erschließung der ägyptischen Grammatik ", in: *Textes et Langages de l'Égypte pharaonique*, I, Le Caire: IFAO, 167-176

1978 " Infinitiv und Qualitativ des Koptischen als Verbaladverbien, oder: Die Jernstedtsche Regel und die Satzarten des Koptischen ", *Enchoria* 8:13-15

1981 " *Sḏm=f* und *sḏm.w=f* als Prospektivformen ", in: Young (ed.) 1981, 506-527

Schmidt, K. H. 1973 " Transitiv und Intransitiv ", in: *Akten der IV. Fachtagung der indogermanischen Gesellschaft*, Wiesbaden: Reichert, 107-124

1974 " Zur formalen Verkettung von Determinans und Determinatum ", in: *PICL* 11:445-451

Schmidt, R. 1839 *Stoicorum Grammatica*, Halle (reprinted 1967, Amsterdam: Hakkert)

Schoemann, G. F. 1862 *Die Lehre von den Redetheilen nach den Alten*, Berlin: Hertz

Schuchardt, H. 1905/6 " Über den aktivischen und passivischen Charakter des Transitivs ", *IF* 18:528-531

Schuchardt-Brevier: see Spitzer 1928

Schwarze, M. G. – Steinthal, H., *Koptische Grammatik*, 1850, Berlin: Dümmler

Schwyzer, E. (with Debrunner, A.), *Griechische Grammatik*[3], II (*Syntax und syntaktische Stilistik*), 1950, München: Beck

Sebeok, Th. A. (ed.) 1975 *Current Trends in Linguistics*, 13 (*Historiography of Linguistics*), The Hague: Mouton

Sechehaye, A. 1950 *Essai sur la structure logique de la phrase*, Paris: Champion

Seiler, H. J. 1952 " Negation, den Begriff des Prädikats betonend ", *SL* 6:79-91

1960 *Relativsatz, Attribut und Apposition*, Wiesbaden: Harrassowitz

1967 " On Paradigmatic and Syntagmatic Similarity ", *Lingua* 18:35-79

	1968	" Probleme der Verbsubkategorisierung, mit Bezug auf Bestimmungen des Ortes und der Zeit ", *Lingua* 20:337-367
Sethe, K.	1916	*Der Nominalsatz im Ägyptischen und Koptischen* (= Abh. königl. sächs. Gesellschaft d. Wissenschaften, philologisch-histor. Kl., 33/3), Leipzig: Teubner
Sgall, P.	1974	" Focus and Contextual Boundness ", in: Dahl (ed.) *Topic and Comment, Contextual Boundness and Focus*, Hamburg: Buske, 25-51
Shisha-Halevy, A.	1972	*The Circumstantial Sentence in Shenoute's Coptic*, Jerusalem (Hebrew University Dissertation, mimeographed)
	1973	" Apodotic ЄЧСШТМ: A hitherto Unnoticed Late Coptic, Tripartite Conjugation Form and its Diachronic Perspective ", *Mus* 86:455-466
	1974	" Protatic ЄЧСШТМ: A hitherto Unnoticed Coptic Tripartite Conjugation-Form and Its Diachronic Connections ", *Or* 43:369-381
	1975	" Two New Shenoute-Texts from the British Library, II (Commentary) ", *Or* 44:469-484
	1976a	" Commentary on Unpublished Shenoutiana in the British Library ", *Enchoria* 6:29-60
	1976b	" Akhmîmoid Features in Shenoute's Idiolect ", *Mus* 89:353-366
	1976c	" The Circumstantial Present as an Antecedent-less (i.e. Substantival) Relative in Coptic ", *JEA* 62:134-7
	1978	" Quelques thématisations marginales du verbe en néo-égyptien ", *OLP* 9:51-67
	1981	" Bohairic - Late Egyptian Diaglosses ", in: Young (ed.) 1981, 314-338
Siertsema, B.	1965	*A Study of Glossematics: Critical Survey of its Fundamental Concepts*², The Hague: Nijhoff
Spiegelberg, W.	1909a	Review of Leipoldt, *Sinuthii Archimandritae Vita et Opera Omnia* III, *OLZ* 12:439-441
	1909b	" Koptische Miszellen ", *RT* 31:153-161
	1912	" Koptische Miscellen ", *RT* 34:152-163
	1925	*Demotische Grammatik*, Heidelberg: C. Winter
Spitzer, L. (ed.)	1928	*Hugo-Schuchardt-Brevier: ein Vademecum der allgemeinen Sprachwissenschaft*², Halle: Niemeyer
Steindorff, G.	1904	*Koptische Grammatik*², Berlin: Reuther & Reichard
	1951	*Lehrbuch der koptischen Grammatik*, Chicago: University of Chicago Press
Steinitz, R.	1969	*Adverbialsyntax* (with E. Lang) (= Studia Grammatica, 10), Berlin: Akademie-Verlag
Steinitz-Schädlich, R.	1970	" Probleme der adverbialen Subkategorisierung ", in: *PICL* 10, II 977-984
Steinthal, H.	1847	*De pronomine relativo commentatio philosophico-philologica cum excursu de nominativi particula*, dissertation reprinted in: *Kleine sprachtheoretische Schriften* (ed. Bumann, 1970), 3-113
	1890	*Geschichte der Sprachwissenschaft bei den Griechen und Römern*², Berlin: Dümmler
Steinthal, H. – Misteli, F.	1893	*Charakteristik der hauptsächlichsten Typen des Sprachbaues*, Berlin: Dümmler
Stempel, W. D. (ed.)	1971	*Beiträge zur Textlinguistik*, München: Fink

Stern, L. — *Koptische Grammatik*, 1880, Leipzig: Weigel
1886 — " Versuch über eine gleichmäßige Worttrennung im Koptischen ", *ZÄS* 24:56-73
Tesnière, L. 1965 — *Éléments de syntaxe structurale*² (ed. J. Fourquet), Paris: Klincksiek
Thesleff, H. 1955 — *Studies on Intensification in Early and Classical Greek* (Commentationes hum. Litterarum, Soc. Scientiarum Fennica, 21/1), Helsingfors
Till, W. 1928 — *Achmîmisch-koptische Grammatik*, Leipzig: Hinrichs
1941 — " Zur Worttrennung im Koptischen ", *ZÄS* 77:48-52
1954 — " Die Satzarten im Koptischen ", *MIO* 2:378-402
1960 — " La séparation des mots en copte ", *BIFAO* 60:151-170
1961 — *Koptische Grammatik* (*saïdischer Dialekt*)², Leipzig: VEB Verlag Enzyklopädie
Tobler, A. 1886 — *Vermischte Beiträge zur französischen Grammatik*, I
1894 — *Vermischte Beiträge zur französischen Grammatik*, II
1899 — *Vermischte Beiträge zur französischen Grammatik*, III
1908 — *Vermischte Beiträge zur französischen Grammatik*, IV, Leipzig: Hirzel
Trubetzkoy, N. S. 1936 — " Die Aufhebung der phonologischen Gegensätze ", TCLP 6:29-45
1939a — *Grundzüge der Phonologie* (= TCLP, 7), Prague
1939b — " Le rapport entre le déterminé, le détérminant et le défini ", in: *Mélanges de linguistique offerts à Charles Bally* (Genève), 52-75
Tuki, R. 1778 — *Rudimenta Linguae Coptae sive Aegyptiacae*, Roma
Vernus, P. 1981 — " Formes ' emphatiques ' en fonction non ' emphatique ' dans la protase d'un système corrélatif ", *GM* 43:73-88
Volten, A. 1964 — " The Late Egyptian Conjunctive ", in: *Studies in Egyptology and Linguistics in Honour of H. J. Polotsky* (Jerusalem), 54-80
Wackernagel, J. 1892 — " Über ein Gesetz der indogermanischen Worstellung ", *IF* 1:333-436
Weil, H. 1879 — *De l'ordre des mots dans les langues anciennes comparées aux langues modernes: question de grammaire générale*³, Paris: Vieweg
Weinrich, H. 1966 — " La place de l'adjectif en français ", *VR* 25:82-9
1977 — *Tempus: besprochene und erzählte Welt*³, Stuttgart: Kohlhammer
Weiss, H. F. 1968 — " Beobachtungen zur Frage der griechischen Komponente in der Sprache des Schenute ", in: *Probleme der koptischen Literatur* (ed. Nagel, Wissenschaftliche Beiträge d. Martin-Luther-Universität Halle-Wittenberg, 1968/1) 173-185
1972 — " Zum Problem der Einwirkung des Griechischen auf die Sprachen des byzantinischen Orients ", in: *Von Nag Hammadi bis Zypern*, 28-34
Wente, E. F. 1959 — *The Syntax of the Verbs of Motion in Egyptian*, Chicago (Univ. of Chicago dissertation, photographic reproduction)
Werlich, E. 1975 — *Typologie der Texte*, Heidelberg: Quelle & Meyer
Wiesmann, H. 1914 — " Miszellen ", *ZÄS* 52:128-130
1917 — " Miszellen ", *ZÄS* 53:146-7
1927 — " Miszellen ", *ZÄS* 62:66-8
Wilson, M. R. 1970 — *Coptic Future Tenses* (= Janua Linguarum, s. practica 64), The Hague: Mouton
Wilson, R. McL. (ed.) 1978 — *The Future of Coptic Studies*, Leiden: Brill
Worrell, W. H. 1945 — *A Short Account of the Copts*, Ann Arbor: Univ. of Michigan Press (the Henry Russel Lecture for 1941-2)

Young, W. D. 1960 "Unfulfilled Conditions in Shenoute's Dialect", *JAOS* 89:399-407
1961 "On Shenoute's Use of Present I", *JNES* 20:115-9
(ed.) 1981 *Studies Presented to Hans Jakob Polotsky*, Beacon Hill: Pirtle & Polson
1982 "Unpublished Shenoutiana in the University of Michigan Library", in: *Egyptological Studies* (ed. S. Israelit-Groll; Scripta Hierosolymitana, 28), Jerusalem, 251-267

Zoega, G. 1810 *Catalogus codicum copticorum manuscriptorum qui in Museo Borgiano Velitris adservantur*, Roma: Typis Sacrae Congregationis de Propaganda Fide

§**0.0.1** My investigation, analytic (not synthetic), microscopic (not macroscopic or panoramic), aims at a description of (sub-)systemic structure, not language structure. However, this work does not constitute a monography in the strictest sense, or claim the last word on any of the issues treated therein. As a matter of fact, it embodies a compromise between the need for a broad basis and for a charting as detailed as possible.

§**1.1.2.1** B2 (p. 27) and p. 36 n. 75: ϵIC + *temporal expression*. ϵIC is here not a preposition but a focussing element. A series of work-notes by the author on the syntax of ϵIC, ϵIC 2HHTϵ and various existential clauses in the Sahidic New Testament, published in the *Göttinger Miszellen* (77:67ff., 1984), suggests that ϵIC- is a *hic-et-nunc*-deictic member in the existential-statement paradigm.

§**1.2.1.1**, spec. obs. (1): On " inalienable " possession, see Lévy-Bruhl's classic study, " L'expression de la possession dans les langues mélanésiennes", *MSL* 19:96-104 (1914); also H. B. Rosén, "Die Ausdrucksform für 'veräusserlichen' und 'unveräusserlichen Besitz' im homerischen Griechisch", *Lingua* 8:264-293 (1959), reprinted in *Strukturalgrammatische Beiträge zum Verständnis Homers*, Amsterdam 1967; *idem*, " Sur quelques catégories à expression adnominale en hébreu-israélien ", *BSL* 53:316-342 (1958). Lévy-Bruhl's term is not satisfactory, since many of the items intimately related or belonging to their owner can nevertheless be "alienated" from him — note the rather extreme and macabre example of limbs being severed from the body (e. g. in martyrological context; in the Bohairic Martyrologies they then cease in fact to be grammatically treated as existing in a special relationship with their owner).

The predication of possession is of course a more comprehensive issue. Observe that, beside OYN- syntagms, Coptic employs for this purpose the Nominal Sentence predicating the pronominalized *possessum* [with a pronominal possessor: (*III* 90.19f.) ΠWK Πϵ ΠNOYB, ΠWK Πϵ Π2AT, TWK Tϵ TOIKOYMϵNH; nominal possessor: (*ibid.* 47.20) ΠA-NϵΘHPION AN Πϵ].

§**2.0.2.1** (Thematization): A germane question not treated here is the determination of the actor noun in the verbal topic, more specifically the correlation of prominent thematization with the *definite* or *referential* actor.

§**2.0.2.4**, §**2.8**: The possible correlation of complement placement with relative rhematicity is a direction worth pursuing. A hypothesis: cases of conditioned/non-pertinent placement excepted, the further in the clause an element is placed, the more rhematic it is.

§**4.2.2**: It appears aften all viable to integrate the phenomenon of " Affective Placement " in a general theory of the information-functional structure of the text; that is to say, placement or paradigm " β ", ΠΠONHPOC NPWMϵ, signals a higher degree of Communicative Dynamism than placement " α ", ΠPWMϵ MΠONHPOC, this opposition in information weight being in either case mapped onto the basic attributive dependence.

§**5.1.1.0.1**: A general theory of Coptic determination — of noun definiteness, indefiniteness, specificity, genericity, in relation to such discourse-oriented phenomena as reference and indication — is yet a

distant goal. Particular constituents of this theory will be the functional definition of *zero-determination* (different zeroes, according to the various commutations and paradigm extent) and *proper names.*

§5.3 n. 42: A. Schleicher's study was published as Mém. Acad. St.-Pétersbourg, ser. VII, 1859, I No. 7.

§6.0.1.1 (Frontal extraposition): The significance of " definitization " of the fronted noun must be correlated with topicalization in the framework of a general theory of discourse-oriented determination. It appears that all grades of formal determination are represented in this status, although zero determination is very rare; ⲁⲛⲁϣ ⲙⲉⲛ ⲙⲡⲟⲩⲉⲓⲣⲉ (*III* 18.15 f., cf. §3.1.1.1.0.1) is instructive: the noun is the lexical component of a compound verb, and here is the only way of *focalizing* this component, with the zero resumption completing an idiomatic native equivalent of the "tautological infinitive" (Goldenberg 1971).

§6.0.2 (Links and delimitations): Another link:delimitation opposition is symptomized by the non-syllabic:syllabic status of the plural definite article before the initial vowel of a noun lexeme, regular (inside the noun syntagm) at least with native lexemes (ⲛ̄ϣⲛⲉ, ⲛ̄ⲓⲟⲩⲇⲁⲓ *vs.* ⲛⲉⲣϣⲟⲩ, ⲏⲉϫⲏⲩ). With lexemes of Greek origin, we find (in Chassinat's edition) both ⲛ̄ⲁⲣⲭⲏ and ⲛⲁⲣⲭⲏ, ⲛ̄ⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ and ⲛⲁⲡⲟⲥⲧⲟⲗⲟⲥ, and so on; it is my impression that these cases too may be accounted for as conditioned by factors outside the noun syntagm, e.g. sandhi with the preceding word. (See Polotsky, *OLZ* 59:253 n. 1, 1964 - note omitted by error in *CP.*) See now, for the " Middle Egyptian " dialect, *CdE* 58/115-6, p. 316.

§6.0.2.3: Generally speaking, two lexemes join in relatively open juncture, unless one contains an active grammeme (the case of ⲥⲉⲧⲡ-ⲡⲣϣⲙⲉ), whereas grammemes and mixed grammeme-lexeme syntagms join in relatively close juncture.

§6.1.1.2.1 (d), ad *RE 10* 161a 27ff.: The augens may have a special standing when the referate is a noun syntagm in address (" vocative ") status: here the definite article is situation-conditioned, hence (like a proper name) not really (i.e. pertinently) " definite ".

§6.1.3, §6.2.1: The prominence of personal indication marked by the augens *may* overlap and coincide with thematic prominence, especially in the case of coincidence with a different marking of topicalization; consider (*III* 137.27) ⲉⲓⲛⲁϣⲱⲡⲉ ⲁⲛⲟⲕ ⲙⲡⲓⲥⲧⲟⲥ ⲭⲉ-, sim. *Ch.* 156.1f. or (*Cat.* 42.14, 43.8) ⲛⲧⲕ-ⲛⲓⲙ ⲛⲧⲟⲕ.

§7.1.3.1 (The conjunctive base and the *nota relationis*): See also Schleicher, "Zur Morphologie der Sprache " (reference in add. to §5.3, above), p. 24.

§7.2.1.1.5.1: See now M. Green, " The ⲧⲁⲣⲉ Pattern in Coptic Non-Biblical Texts ", *ZÄS* 110 (1983) 132-143, arriving at very similar conclusions regarding the rhetorical role of this form.

§7.2.3.2, ad *IV* 162.2ff.: Compare the variant text in *K* 9223 p. 67, where the same effect of vivid, dramatic action is achieved by the juxtaposition of perfect forms: ⲛ2ⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ +-ⲧⲉϥⲛⲁ2ⲃ ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ ⲛ2ⲟⲥⲟⲛ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ +-ⲧⲱϥ ⲉ2ⲟⲩⲛ ⲁⲡⲁⲓ ⲉⲓ ⲉⲃⲟⲗ.

§7.3.1.1 with n. 73 and §7.4: The distinction of *factive* and *non-factive* introduced by P. and C. Kiparsky in *Progress in Linguistics* (edd. Bierwisch and Heidolph, The Hague 1970) 143-173, applies to Coptic " that "-forms: ⲭⲉ- factive or unmarked, ⲉⲧⲣⲉ- marked non-factive, the conjunctive a marginal non-factive form. (Consider the variation of ⲧⲣⲉ- and conjunctive after ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ- in Ruth 2:11 (Shier), although ⲧⲣⲉ- does not share the markedness for non-factivity of ⲉⲧⲣⲉ-.)

INDEX OF SUBJECTS DISCUSSED

(The references are to chapters, paragraphs or pages. The index is selective.)

Absence, systemic: *see* Non-attestation
Actants: *see* Valency
—, focalized: §2.3
Actor expression: 146ff., 149f.
Actor, nominal, placement of: §6.0.1
Adclausal modification: §§1.1.2.2-3, 1.3.1 ff. *passim*
Adjectives: Ch. 4
—, defined: §4.2.2
—, in marked/unmarked placement: §4.2.2.2
—, Greek loan-adjectives: §4.2.2
Adjuncts and focus (negation): 102ff.
Adnexal modification: §0.3.2; 11[54], 64f., 116[36], 190f.
—, dependence, compatible with nucleus-satellite dependence: 81, 190[29]
Adnominal expansion: §§1.1.1 f., 1.3.1 ff. *passim*, Ch. 4; 11[54]
Adnominal paradigm: 190[31]
Adverb: *see* Modifiers
— *vs.* adjective: §0.3
Adverbal expansion: Chs. 1, 3, 7
—, defined: 23[35]
—, rectional *vs.* complementational: §3.0.1.2; 24f.
Adverbal verb forms: 25f., 187ff.
Affect: *see* Emotive principle
Akhmimic: 20[27], 87[114], 102[159], 109
Anacoluthia, cohesional definition of: 163[41]
Analysis, delicacy of: 6, 9f.
—, descending continuous: 2, 6, 9
Anaphora and cataphora, conflict of: 152
Anaphoric reference, masculine to "feminine" zero-determinated noun: §5.2.1.1-3
Antithetic configurations: 79, 133[17]
Aorist, Second — circumstantial — relative: 68f.
Apodosis, Second Tense in: 79
—, focalization-pattern selection in: 89f.
Appositive relative construction: 67
Appositive syntagms expanding pronouns and proper names: §4.3
Arrangement, in adnominal syntagmatics: Ch. 4 *passim*
—, in focalization syntagmatics: Ch. 2 *passim*
—, of adverbal/adclausal modification constructions: Ch. 1 *passim*
Article(s): *see* Determinators

Article, definite plural: 6[19], 160[27]; *Addenda* ad §6.0.2
—, indefinite: 142ff.
—, zero: *see* Zero article
Assimilation as link/delimitation: 160, 162
Asyndetic parataxis: 67
Atemporal, generic verb forms, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.4.1
Augens: §0.3.2, Ch. 6; 12, 19; *Addenda* ad §§6.1.1.2.1(d), 6.1.3, 6.2.1
—, defined: 155f.
—, functional essence of: §6.3
—, modifier: §6.2
—, paradigms and compatibilities of: §6.1.0.1-3
Auxiliary verbs, deriving: §3.1.1.2.3

Basic and Second Tenses, interrelationship of: §2.7.3
Basic syntagmatic sequence (" Grundrichtung "): 18, 23, 131, 132[14], 159
Biblical style: §7.2.1.1.5; 1, 90
Bipartite Pattern, predicating a modifier: §1.2.1.1
—, Second-Tense conversion of: 65, 76
Bohairic: 18[16], 21[32], 87[114]

Cataphora: 81, 146, 148ff.
Category: §0.2.1.2-3
Chiasmus: 84, 87, 90, 94, 159[20]
Circumstantial: 26, 31, 64f., 66f., 68f., 416, 149f.
—, adnexal: §7.1.3.1; 39, 44[99], 64f., 81, 148f.
—, adnominal: 6[14], 19, 34[69], 146ff.
—, adverbal (of aorist): 68[35]
—, before Second Tense: §2.0.1.1.2
—, coordinated/disjoined in complex theme/topic: 100
—, focalized: 81
—, *glose*-form: §2.5
—, with ⲛⲉ: 38
—, preceded by ⲁⲩⲱ following a Basic Tense: 51f.
—, zero-conversion form: 85[105]
Cleft Sentence and circumstantial *glose*: §2.5
—, devaluated: §2.5.0.1
—, ⲛⲉ representing *glose* of: 152[41]
—, with (pro)nominal *vedette*: 33, 152
—, and Second Tense: §2.7.2; 82, 85
Cliches, fixed espressions, collocations (selection): 3f., 58f., 138; *see also under* Figures
Coeventive (ϩⲙⲡⲧⲣⲉϥ-): 26, 31, 205
Cohesion: 26, 100, 144[20]; *see also* Juncture
Colon: §§2.8.1, 6.0.3; 156
Colon-second, colon-final/intercolary placement of enclitics, augentia: Ch. 6 *passim*
—, of modifiers: §1.3.1 ff. *passim*
Communicative Dynamism (" CD "): 73ff., 104
Commutability, function of analyzed extent: 6[15], 6[16]

Compatibility (selection): §§2.0.1.1.2, 7.1.2.3-4; 141ff., 142[3], 144; *see also* Mutual exclusion
Compound verbs, object of: §3.1.2.2.2
Concord: §4.2.2.1; 144
Conditional: 26, 31; *see also* Protasis
—, as topicalization form: §2.7.2.1.2
Conjugation bases, bracketing: 161f.
—, = " pro-verbs ": §5.3
Conjugation (predication) mediators: §3.3
—, bracketing: 161[33]
" Conjunct participle " *nomina agentis*: 114[26]
Conjunctive: Ch. 7; 10[46], 12, 19, 146, 149, 150, 216
—, adnexal rhematic expansion-form: §§7.1.3, 7.3
—, its " base " not nuclear, converter-like; its *actor* + *infinitive* a nexus: §7.1.3
—, inductible categorizable verb-form: §7.1.1 f.
—, object construction of: 122
—, quintessential verbal modifier: §7.1.1
Conversion, second-power: §2.0.1.1.2
Converters: §2.0.1.1; 6[16], 64ff.
—, bracketing: 161
Coordination and the conjunctive: 187ff.
—, of modifiers: §1.1.2.4.2; *see also under* AYW, MN-, 2I-
Coptic, typology of (selection): §§0.4.1, 5.3; 7f., 12f., 157[11]
Cotext *vs.* context: 10[42]

Descriptive order (selection): §2.6.4; 8, 89[120], 131
Determinators: §5.1.1; 82, 83
—, and concord: 135f., 144ff.
—, additional expansion of: 131[12], 132[13]
—, bracketing: 161
—, expanded by iterated noun: §1.3.4.4.1
—, expanded by modifier: §1.1.1.1
—, expanded by relative: 113, 114
—, expanding the verb in object construction: 109[13], 112[21], 113ff.
—, in expansion concatenation: 133[16], 135, 142f., 144ff.
—, pronominal object anaphoric to: §3.1.1.1.0.1
Dialogue: §0.2.5.2.1
—, response substructure of: 72
Diathesis: §3.0.1.1-2
—, pattern- (not lexeme-) referred: 107[6]
Disiunctio Sinuthiana: 3, 90, 94, 112[18], 122
Durativity and object construction: §3.1.2.1

Emotive principle in adjective placement: §4.2.2.2
Emphasis and related notions: 71ff., 155ff., 175[67]
Enclisis: §6.0.3
Encliticity, scale of decreasing: 166
Enclitics, placement of: §6.0.3

—, polar placement in Nominal Sentence: §6.0.3.4
—, relative placement and compatibilities: §6.0.3.2
—, simultaneous double occurrence: §6.0.3.3; 103
Extraposition, frontal: §6.0.1.1; *Addenda* ad §6.0.1.1
—, rear: §6.0.1.2; 99
Extratemporal verb forms and predications, continued by conjunctive: §7.2.2

Figures and recurring expressions (selection): 3[3], 79, 121, 123, 125, 171, 176, 178, 179, 195f., 200f., 207f.; *see also under* Antithetic configurations, Cliches, Chiasmus, Disiunctio Sinuthiana, Focus (complex), Focus (" disguised ").
—, *figura etymologica* (cognate object): 123
—, focalization: §2.7.1
—, opistho-parenthesis: 79[90]
—, topicalization: §2.7.2
Final-consecutive syntagms: §§7.2.3.1, 7.3.1.1; 69
Focal modifiers: Ch. 2 *passim*; 12, 23[39]
Focality: §2.0.2.2.1 ff.
—, inherent: 72
—, marked: 71f.
—, paradigm: 71f.
—, values of: 72
Focalization, preincluded (figure): §2.7.1.4.2
—, simultaneous double (figure): §2.7.1.3.1
Focalization patterns: Ch. 2
—, conjunctive in: §7.2.3.3
—, focus-initial: §2.4-6
—, negativing of: §2.9.1.1 ff.
—, structural assignment of: §2.6.4
—, topic-initial: §2.1-3
Focus, complex (figure): §2.7.1.3.2
—, final *vs.* non-final: 99
—, indirect or " disguised " (figure): §2.7.1.4.1
—, interrogative *vs.* non-interrogative: 99
—, marked, pattern-initial: 71ff.
Functional Sentence Perspective (" FSP "): 11, 73ff., 140
Future, present-based, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.3

Gender: Ch. 5
—, feminine/masculine: 141ff., 154f.
—, neuter: 145f.
" *Glose* " (topic of Cleft Sentence): §2.7.3.5; 38[80]; *see also under* Cleft Sentence
Greek-origin loan adjectives in Coptic: 130, 135
Greek-origin loan modifiers in Coptic: §§1.3.11.1 ff., 1.3.11.6
Greek-origin loan prepositions in Coptic: §1.3.11.5
Greek-origin particles in Coptic: §6.0.3; 165[50], 166[54], 167[56]

Halliday, M. A. K.: 69f., 106[2]
Hyperdetermination: 143[9,13]

Identity, analytic: 6f.
—, and homonymy: §0.2.1.3 with 6[19], §2.0.1.2, §3.1.2.0.1
Idiolect: §0.2.4
Immediate-constituents ("IC") analysis:
—, of adnominal modification syntagms: 19, 20[29]
—, of adverbal modification syntagms: 24f.
—, of compound verb + object: 25
—, of conjunctive: 191f.
—, of prepositional phrases: 17[13]
Imperative, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.1.1.1
—, post-imperatival paradigm: §7.2.1.1.5
—, post-imperatival occurrence: 172, 173, 176, 192ff.
"Inalienable" (inherent) possession: 37, 151, 157, 180; *Addenda* ad §1.2.1.1
Indeterminables as object: §3.1.1.2.1
Infinitive (verb lexeme), extraconjugational, object of: 122
—, morphophonemic alternation mechanism of: §§3.0.2.1, 3.1.2.2
Information unit, organization, structure of: 69ff.
Interrogative clause, in direct-object status: 99[146]
Interrogative focus: Ch. 2 *passim* (esp. §2.6.3-4); 8[34], 72, 99
Interrogative modifier and Basic Tense, a delimitation: 96
Interrogative, post-interrogatival apodosis: 195f.
Irrealis (remote-condition) protasis: §1.2.1.3.3
Isolation of grammatical and lexical elements: §5.3; 157[11]
Iteration of modifiers: 36
Iteration-marked noun syntagm in modifier status: §1.3.3

Jernstedt, V.: 111[17]; *see* Stern-Jernstedt Rule
Juncture contour: §3.1.1.2.3; 143, 163f.
Juncture, close: §3.1.1.2.3
—, and CD: 73ff.
—, delimitations: §6.0.2.2; *Addenda* ad §6.0.2
—, of lexemes and grammemes: *Addenda* ad §6.0.2.3
—, links: §6.0.2.1; *Addenda* ad §6.0.2
—, open: §6.0.2.2. *See also under* Cohesion
Jussive: 193f., 216
—, preceptive, precative, unmarked (ϵϥNA-): §§2.1.3, 7.2.1.1.3
—, rhetorical (MAPϵϥ-): §7.2.1.1.2
—, ϵ(TM)TPϵϥ-: 77[81]

"*Koinzidenzfall*": *see* Performative discourse

Macrosyntax: Chs. 2, 5, 7 *passim*; §0.2.5
Metanalysis: 23
Microcoordination: Ch. 7 *passim*
"Middle Egyptian" dialect of Coptic: 18[16], 68[32], 87[114], 90[121]
Models: §0.2.1.3
—, Listener's model: 7

Modifier-predicating patterns: §1.2.1.1ff.
Modifiers, expanding determinators: §1.1.1.1
—, focal: Ch. 2 *passim*; §§2.2, 2.4
—, in general: Ch. 1; §§0.3, 1.0.1.1-2
—, nuclear, expandable modifiers: §1.1.2.4.1; 28ff.
—, pronoun-containing: *see* Augens
Morphology *vs.* syntax: 7f.
Mutual exclusion: §3.1.1.2.1

Negation:
—, adjunctal: 102f.
—, componential (local): 100ff., 102[159]
—, focal: 102
—, of focalization patterns: §2.9.1.1 ff.
—, and " emphasis ": 101[154]
—, encategorization, maintenance, syncategorization of: Ch. 7 *passim*; 187ff.
Neutralization: §§0.2.1.1, 3.1; 145f. etc.
—, of adjective placement opposition: §4.2.1
—, of attributive : adnexal expansion opposition: 6[14], 19[24], 131[12]
—, of mediate : immediate object-construction opposition: §3.1
Nexus, syntagmatics of: §§2.0.2.4, 2.8
" No sooner... than... ": 94
Nominal actor, placement of: 159f.
Nominal Sentence patterns: 22, 32ff., 96[133], 143[9], 146[24], 150f., 167, 168, 175, 179f., 180f.
—, with anaphoric pronominal predicate: 112[19]
—, placement of augens in: §§6.0.3.3-4, 6.1.2.2, 6.1.3.2
—, modified: §§1.1.2.3, 1.3.1 ff.
—, pro-/acclamatory: 167f., 179
—, prosodic properties of: 34f., 161[36]
—, with zero-determinated predicate: 38[81], 130[7], 143[14]
See also " Wechselsatz ".
Nominal time-expression: 45, 212[81]
Nominalizations of the verb: §§5.2.2, 7.4
—, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.5
Non-attestation: §0.2.3
Norm: §0.2.4
Nota relationis: *see under* N⁻ and *see* Steinthal, H.
Noun in Coptic: §4.0.2; 11[53]
—, focalized: §2.3
—, movable: 142
—, predicative, contentualized-expanded by conjunctive: §7.3.2
Noun syntagm: Ch. 5 and *passim*
Nucleus, article as: 142f.
Nucleus/satellite analysis: §5.3; 22f., 75, 81, 115[32], 124, 126, 142f., 191f.
Nucleus and satellite, semantic *vs.* syntactic: §4.1; 142[7]

Object *vs.* complement: *see* Adverbal expansion, rectional *vs.* complementational

Object, non-reflexive, marked by ⲙⲙⲟ=: §3.1.3.2.1
Object-expansion: Ch. 3; 79, 82f., 146ff., 149f.
—, mediate *vs.* immediate: Ch. 3, §3.0.2
—, pronominal: §3.1.1.1
Objective pronoun: §3.1.1.1.0.2
Optative (ϵⲩϵ-), followed by conjunctive: §7.2.1.2
Order, descriptive: *see* Descriptive order
—, *determinans/determinatum*: §4.0.1 ff.
—, structural: 8[31]

Paradigm: §0.2.1.2 and *passim*
Particles: *see* Enclitics, Greek-origin particles
Parts of speech: §§1.0.1.1, 4.0.1; 7, 11[53], 11[55]
Passive in Coptic: §3.0.1.1 with 107[6]
Pattern: §0.2.1.2
Pejorative attribute: §4.2.2.2.1
Perfect, non-narrative (generic), parabolic: §7.2.4.1
—, Second *vs.* relative: 68f.
Performative discourse: 79[92]
Person, generic: 204
—, unshifted in indirect speech: 78[85]
Personal encategorization/maintenance: Ch. 7 *passim*; 189
Personalization of infinitive: §7.2.5.1
Phorics (ana-, cata-): Ch. 5 *passim*
Polemicity: 72
Polite cliches, with anteposed adjectives: 138
Polotsky, H. J. (selection): §2.0.0.1; 17[9], 155
Posteventive (ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁⲧⲣϵⲩ-): 26, 31, 205
Precursive (ⲛⲧⲉⲣϵⲩ-): 26, 31
Preinclusion of extraposed noun: 148
—, of focalization pattern: §2.7.1.4.2
Premodifiers: §§1.1.2.0.1, 1.1.2.2, 1.3.1 ff. *passim*; 88
—, lexeme premodifiers: *see* Conjugation mediators
Prepositions, compound *vs.* non-compound: 158
—, "locative" syncretized with "ablative": 43[96]
Present, non-actual generic: §§3.1.2.1.1, 7.2.4.1
Preterite converter: 38, 66[26], 67
Primary : secondary functions: 8
"Proforma" expansion: 132[13]
Pronominalization of a sentence: 148ff.
Pronoun, independent, and the augens: §6.1.3.3
Pronouns, personal, nuclear: §4.3
Pronouns, prime nuclei: Ch. 4, 5 *passim*
Proper names, nuclear: §4.3
Prosodic hierarchy: §6.0.3.2
Prosodic "rest": 165, 178
Prosody: §§6.0.1-3, 6.0.3.2

—, of augens: §6.1.0.2 ff.
—, of modifiers: §1.3.1 ff. *passim*
—, of Nominal Sentence patterns: 34f., 161[36]
Protasis: 100, 201ff.
Protatic "*fallsetzend*" forms, followed by conjunctive: §§7.2.3.5, 7.2.4
Protatic forms, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.4
Pro-verbs, conjugation bases: §5.3; *Addenda* ad §5.3
—, conjunctive "base" not one: 191f.
Punctuation: 98[138], 164

Quantifiers: 143f.
Questions, multiple: 90; *see also* Rhetorical questions
Quotation, topicalization of (figure): §2.7.2.4
Quotations in Shenoute: 4, 198
—, topic and focalization-pattern selection: 88ff.
—, ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ-: §7.2.1.1.5.1

Rection: §4.2.2.1.4; 5, 24ff., 108, 144f.
Relative conversion: 6[14], 19, 68f.
Relative, substantivized (determinated): §5.2.3.1; 83f., 114, 152[38]
—, as object: two distinct syntagms: §3.1.1.2.1
—, of future tense, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.3.5
—, of present tense, followed by conjunctive: §7.2.4.1
"Relief": 65[14], 72
Resumption as junctural symptom: 94f., 162; *see also* Zero, resumption of
Rheme: 69ff., *see also* Focus
Rhetorical apodosis, eventual role of conjunctive in: §7.2.6.1
Rhetorical dialogue: §0.2.5.2.1
Rhetorical figures and schemes: 9[41]; *see also under* Figures
Rhetorical focalization/topicalization figures: §2.7.1-2
Rhetorical narrative: 10[46]; *see also* Perfect, non-narrative
Rhetorical questions, Second Tenses and focalization patterns: §2.1.2; 76f., 89, 90, 94
—, apodosis of (ⲧⲁⲣⲉϥ- and conjunctive): 196
—, and particle placement: 171
Rhetoricity: §0.2.5.2.1
Rhythmic factors regulating object construction: §3.1.3.3.2; 121
—, and placement of rear extraposition: 99
Rosén, H.B.: 8, 160[22]

Second Tenses: Ch. 2; 8[34], 10[46], 183, 191
—, autofocal: §2.1
—, and Basic Tenses: §2.7.3.1; 65[16]
—, circumstantial conversion of: §2.0.1.1.2
—, conjunctional uses of: 100
—, constituents of Bipartite Pattern: 62ff.
—, and converters: §2.0.1.1
—, coordination + disjunction of, with Basic Tenses: §2.7.3.1

—, extensions in use of: 63
—, following focus (in dialects other than Sahidic): 87[114]
—, functional essence of: §2.10
—, lemmatic: §2.1.4.2
—, morphology of: §2.0.1.1.1
—, parenthetic: §2.1.6
—, predicated by ⲡⲉ: 99
—, quoting discredited claim or statement: §2.1.5.1
—, signalling focality/thematicity: Ch. 2 *passim*; §2.10; 71ff.
—, " that "-form: §2.8.3
Second-Tense construction, prosody and syntagmatics of: §2.8.1-2
Segmentation: 71, 156
Shenoutean corpus and sources: §0.1, Appendix
Shenoutean style: §0.1.1-2; 216
Staging: 65, 69f.
Steinthal, H.: 18[15], 18[17]
Stern, L., as structuralist: 13[60]
Stern-Jernstedt Rule: Ch. 3 *passim*, esp. §3.1.2.1
Subakhmimic: 98[139]
Subcoordination: Ch. 7 *passim*; 188f.
Syncategorization: §7.1.2 and Ch. 7 *passim*
Synchrony *vs.* diachrony: §0.2.4
Syntagm, defined: 7[27]
System: 5[9]

" Tautological infinitive ": 32, 156[7]; *Addenda* ad §6.0.1.1
Texture, texteme: §0.2.5.2
" That "-form: §2.8.3, 7.4; *Addenda* ad §7.3.1.1
Thematic progression and selection of focalization pattern: 90
Thematic structure: 44, 79ff.; *Addenda* ad §§2.0.2.1, 2.0.2.4, 2.8, 4.2.2
Thematicity, paradigm of: 71
Thematization: §2.0.2.1
Theme(-topic):
—, complex (figure): §§2.7.1.3.3, 2.8.4
—, negative: 102[157], 103[161]
—, prominent (marked): §6.0.1.1; 41, 71
Theme-focus seam: §2.8.2
Theme/rheme, linear-axis conception of: 71[49]
Time expressions: §1.3.2; 85, 212[81]
Topic/focus: 69ff.
Topic form, conditioning of: §2.6.4; *see also* Theme(-topic)
Topicalization, lemmatizing: §2.7.2.1.4
—, " proforma ": 89f.
—, relative in form: §2.7.2.1.3
—, ⲉⲩⲭⲉ-, ⲉⲧⲩⲁⲛ-: §2.7.2.1.1-2
Totality: §6.1.1; 144
Transformation: 8[30]

Transitive/intransitive verb lexemes in Coptic: 106[4]
Transitivity/intransitivity: §3.0.1.1-2
Tripartite Conjugation bases, pro-verbs: §5.3
Tripartite Conjugation pattern, IC-analysis of: §5.3; 124, 191f.

" Unique morpheme ": §1.3.1.1

Valency: §§3.0.1.1-2, 3.1.2.0.1; 24ff.
" Vedette ": *see* Cleft Sentence, Focus
Verb lexeme, marked as focal: 76ff.
—, morphology of: §3.0.2.1
Verbal predicate, durative/non-durative, homonymous: §3.1.2.1.1
Verboid of possession: 113
Verbs of incomplete predication, object construction of: §3.1.1.2.3
" *Verstärker* ": *see* Augens

" *Wechselsatz* ": §2.7.1.1; 33, 81, 161[36]
Word in Coptic: §6.0.2.3; 6, 7[25], 9
Word order: §§2.8.2, 6.0.1.3; 14 and *passim*

Zero: 6
—, anaphora: §3.1.1.1.0.1; 133
—, cataphora: 151
Zero article: Ch. 5 *passim* (esp. 142ff.)
—, resumption of: Ch. 5 *passim* (esp. 146ff.); 109
Zero determination: *see* Zero article
—, incompatibility with ⲛ- in object construction: §3.1.1.2.1
—, pronominal object anaphoric to: §3.1.1.1.0.1
Zero-marked nouns in modifier status: §1.3.2
Zero morpheme (2nd person sgl. feminine) in juncture contour: 162[37]
Zero subject of predicative modifier: §1.2.1.3.3; 151
Zeroing, anaphoric: 112f.

I. OF GREEK ORIGIN

ⲁⲗⲏⲑⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.2
ⲁⲗⲗⲁ: §1.3.11.6
ⲁⲗⲗⲟ: §7.3.3
ⲁⲛⲧⲓ: §1.3.11.5
(ϩⲁⲡⲁⲍ) ϩⲁⲡⲗⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.7
ⲁⲣⲁ: 76[74]
ⲁⲣⲭⲁⲓⲟⲥ: 136

ⲅⲁⲣ: *see* Greek particles, Enclitics
ⲅⲉⲛⲟⲓⲧⲟ: §7.3.3

ⲇⲉ: *see* Greek particles, Enclitics
ⲇⲓⲕⲁⲓⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.7

ⲉⲓⲙⲏⲧⲓ: §§1.3.11.6, 7.3.1.1
ⲉⲕⲙⲉⲣⲟⲩⲥ: §1.3.11.6
(ⲟⲩⲕ)ⲉⲧⲓ: §1.3.11.6
ⲉⲩⲧⲁⲝⲓⲁ (εὐταξία): §1.3.11.6

ⲏ (– ⲏ): §7.3.1.1

ⲕⲁⲕⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.3
ⲕⲁⲗⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.3; 72[57], 85
ⲕⲁⲛ: §1.3.11.6, 7.3.1
ⲕⲁⲧⲁ: §1.3.11.5

ⲗⲟⲓⲡⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.2.4

ⲙⲁⲗⲓⲥⲧⲁ: §1.3.11.2.5.1
ⲙⲁⲗⲗⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.2.5
ⲙⲉⲛ: *see* Greek particles, Enclitics
ⲙⲏ... ⲁⲛ: 101[56]
ⲙⲟⲅⲓⲥ: §1.3.11.6; 52, 70, 72[57], 84, 208
(ⲟⲩ) ⲙⲟⲛⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.2.1

ϩⲟⲙⲟⲓⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.4
ϩⲟⲙⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.4
-ⲟⲛ-marked modifiers: §1.3.11.2
ⲟⲛⲧⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.6
-ⲟⲥ, -ⲟⲛ, concord in adjectives of Greek origin: 4.2.2.1
ϩⲟⲥⲟⲛ, ⲉⲛ-, ⲉⲫⲟⲥⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.6
ϩⲟⲧⲁⲛ: §1.3.11.6

ⲡⲁⲗⲓⲛ ⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.3
(ⲟⲩ) ⲡⲁⲛⲧⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.1.5
ⲡⲁⲣⲁ: §1.3.11.5
ⲡⲁⲏⲛ: §1.3.11.6
ⲡⲟⲗⲗⲁⲕⲓⲥ: §1.3.11.6
ⲡⲣⲟⲥ: §1.3.11.5

ⲥⲭⲉⲇⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.2.3

ⲧⲁⲭⲁ: §1.3.11.6
ⲧⲁⲭⲩ: §1.3.11.4
ⲧⲟⲧⲉ: §1.3.11.6

ⲫⲁⲛⲉⲣⲟⲛ: §1.3.11.2.2

ⲭⲱⲣⲓⲥ: §1.3.11.5
-ⲱⲥ-marked modifiers: §1.3.11.1; 81

ϣⲱⲥ: §1.3.11.5; 59, 80
ϣⲱⲥⲧⲉ: §§1.3.11.6, 7.3.1.1

II. OF NATIVE COPTIC ORIGIN

ⲁⲛ, ⲛ- ⲁⲛ: §§2.9., 6.0.3.3; 63[7], 69
ⲁⲣⲏⲩ: 211
ⲁⲧ-: §3.4.2
ⲁⲩⲱ, and enclitics: 165
—, coordinating modifiers: 35
—, a modifier: §1.3.10
ⲁⲩⲱ *vs.* zero, coordinating the conjunctive: 188f.

ϵ-, preposition in adnominal status: 21
ϵⲁϥ-: 10[42], 82, 86
ϵⲃⲟⲗ ⲁⲛ ϫϵ-: 78, 102[160]
ϵⲓϵ: 98
ϵⲙⲁⲧϵ: §1.3.1.1
ϵⲛϵ, converter *vs.* interrogative marker, juncturally distinct: 163[42]
ϵⲛϵ, interrogative marker: 66[26]
ϵⲛϵϩ: §1.3.6; 23
ϵⲡ-marked modifiers: §1.3.7
ϵⲡ- + infinitive: §1.3.7.6
ϵⲡⲧⲏⲣϥ: §1.3.7.2
ϵⲡϩⲁϵ: §1.3.7.1
ϵⲡϩⲟⲩⲟ: §1.3.7.4
ϵⲡϫⲓⲛϫⲏ: §1.3.7.3.1
ϵⲣⲟ-, predicative: 38
ϵⲧⲣϵϥ- as "that"-form: §7.4
—, as topic: 91
—, jussive: 205[63]
—, with conjunctive: §7.2.5.2
ϵⲩϫϵ-, topicalizing: §2.7.2.1.1
(ϩⲱⲥ) ϵⲩϫϵ-: 78f.
ϵϩⲟⲩⲛ ϵ-: 19[22]
ϵϩⲣⲁⲓ, "up/down": 29f.
ϵϫⲛ-, predicative: 38
ϵⲓⲣϵ, with ⲛ- + iterated noun as predicative complement: §1.3.3.2
ⲟ ⲛ-: §1.2.1.3.1
ⲣ-, object of: §3.1.1.2.3
ⲣ-/ⲟ ⲛ-, allomorphs of "intransitive" ⲣ-: 106[4]
ⲣ-, + modifier: §1.2.1.3.2
ⲣ-, with Second Tense: 80
ⲣⲡⲕϵ-: *see* Conjugation mediators
ⲣϩⲟⲩⲟ/ϵ-: *see* Conjugation mediators
ϵⲓⲥ + time expression: 85, *Addenda* ad §1.1.2.1 B
ϵⲓⲥ + (Nom. Sentence + modifier): 36[75]

ⲕϵ-/ⲅϵ-: 143ff., 146ff.; *see* Determinators
ⲕⲟⲩⲓ, ϵⲧⲓⲕϵⲕⲟⲩⲓ ⲡϵ: §7.3.1
ⲕⲟⲩⲓ, ⲯⲏⲙ: 134

ⲙϵ, ϩⲛⲟⲩⲙϵ: §1.3.5.2
ⲙⲙⲏⲛϵ: §1.3.1.1
ⲙⲙⲓⲛ ⲙⲙⲟ=: §6.1.4.2
ⲙⲙⲁⲧϵ: §1.3.1.1
ⲙⲙⲁⲩ: §1.3.1.1
ⲙⲛ-, preposition, in adnominal status: 21, 36
—, coordinating modifiers: 36
ⲛⲙⲙⲁ=, coordinating a second pronominal *rectum* of a prepositional phrase: 36
ⲙⲓⲛϵ: 137[28], 143[9]
ⲙⲛⲛⲥⲁ-: §7.3.1
ⲙⲁⲩⲁⲁ=: §6.1.4.1
—, and ⲙⲙⲁⲧϵ: §6.2; 43
ⲙⲉⲯⲁⲕ: §7.3.3
ⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ ⲉϫⲛⲙⲟⲉⲓϩⲉ: 38, 143[9]

ⲛ-, conjugation "base" of conjunctive: §§7.1.1, 7.1.3
ⲛ-, "*nota relationis*": §1.0.1-2; 6[19], 131[12] and *passim*; *Addenda ad* §7.1.3.1
—, adnominal: Ch. 4 *passim* (esp. §4.0.1 ff.); 20f., 131f.
—, adverbal: Ch. 3 *passim*; 27, 29, 81
ⲛ-modifiers: §§1.0.1.2, 1.3.1; 2, 11f.
ⲛ-/ⲙⲙⲟ=, predicated in Bipartite Pattern: 36f.
—, identity and homonymy issues: §3.1.2.0.1
—, rection: Ch. 3 *passim* (esp. §§3.0.1.1, 3.1.2)
—, "belongs" to the verb, not the governed noun: 17[13], 107[5]
ⲛⲁ=, preposition: §6.1.5
—, predicated: 37f.
-ⲛⲁ-, future characteristic, bracketing: 161[33]
ⲛϵ-, converter: *see* Preterite converter
ⲛⲁⲙϵ: §1.3.5.1
ⲛⲓⲙ, determinator: 143f., 144[16], 146ff.
—, Ø-...ⲛⲓⲙ, as object: §3.1.1.2.1
ⲛⲓⲙ ϵⲛϵϩ, "whoever": §1.3.6.1; 83
ⲛⲁⲛⲟⲩ=: 150
ⲛⲛⲁϩⲣⲛ-: 35
ⲛⲧⲁ-/ⲧⲁ-, conjunctive, 1st person sgl.: §7.0.2
ⲛⲧⲁϥ-/ⲉⲛⲧⲁϥ-, Second/relative perfect: 68f.
—, circumstantial + Second Perfect: 67

{NTO=}, augens *vs.* independent pronoun: §6.1.3.3
NTOч, invariable: §6.1.3.4; 146[24]
N2OYO: §1.3.1.3
NϪINϪH: §1.3.7.3.2
NGI-: §§2.8.2, 6.0.1.2; 99[144]

{ПЄ}, pronoun, concord of: 150f.
—, double simultaneous occurrence of: §6.0.3.3
ПЄ, "backgrounding" signal, macrosyntactic focussing signal: 38
—, with preterite converter: 10[43], 65[13]
{ПІ-}, "affective" determinator: 137f.
ПNOYTЄ, proper name: 139
ПЄϪA=, colon-boundary signal: §6.0.3.1.1
—, delimitation signal: §6.0.2.2

РШ: *see* Enclitics
РШМЄ, indefinite pronoun: 114[28]
TЄРОМПЄ: §1.3.2
РЄч-: §3.4.1
РОУ2Є, 2ІРОУ2Є: 23, 45

СNAУ: 134
СОП, in modifier status: §1.3.2
—, 2ІОУСОП: §1.3.8
С2АІ: §3.1.1.1.0.2

TЄNOУ: §1.3.4; 35
TШNЄ, TШNOУ: §1.3.9
TNNOOУ: §3.1.1.0.2
TÀPЄч-: §7.2.1.1.5.1; 4, 187; *Addenda* ad §7.2.1.1.5.1
TШ ЄTШ: 3, 43[96]
THP=: §6.1.1
TШN: 76, 81, 97
—, ЄBOA TШN: §2.6.3.2; 84
TPЄч: §1.3.11.5; 125[59], 161[33], 204f.
—, negated by TM- in Tripartite Pattern: 125[59]

ОУ, ϪЄОУ, "(saying) what?": 83
—, ЄTBЄОУ: §2.6.3
ОУАА=: §6.1.4.3
ОУШ, durativity neutralized in ОУШ Єч-: 118f.
—, АЧОУШ Єч-, marked perfect: 119[43]
ОУОЄІ N-: 37
ОУN-/МN-, in Bipartite: §1.2.1.1
—, bracketing: 161[33]
ОУNTA=, continued by conjunctive: §7.2.4.1
—, object of: 123
—, pronominal object of: §3.1.1.0.2
ОУНР, NOУНР, following Basic Tenses: 97
ОУШШ, object construction of: §3.1.1.2.2

ШШПЄ, ШÀNTЄОУ ШШПЄ: §2.5.0.2; 4
—, С-ШШПЄ, with conjunctive or ЄTРЄч-: 148f., 200
-ШРП(N)-: *see* Conjugation mediators

2АЄ: 133
2Є
—, NAШ N2Є: §2.6.3; with Basic Tense: 97; -О NAШ N2Є: 89[119]
—, in various syntagms preceding enclitics: §§1.3.4.2, 6.1.2.2, 6.1.3.2
—, -ΘЄ N-: 39, 47, 67
—, NTЄI2Є: §1.3.1.2; 8[34], 39, 67; predicated by ПЄ: §1.2.1.2
2І-: adnominal, coordinating: 21, 143[9]
2ШШ=: §6.1.2
2АМОІ: §7.3.3
2N-: 32
2N-, "into": 30
2ШN, "enjoin", pronominal object of: §3.1.3.1
2АРІ2АРО=: §6.1.5
2ТООУЄ: 45
-2ОУЄ-, nuclear: 126[63]
2А(2)TN-, adnominal: 21
2ШШч, invariable: §6.1.2.3; 146[24]; *see also* Enclitics

ϪЄ-inclusion, adnominal: §1.1.1; 148
—, adverbal: 149f.
—, and selection of focalization pattern: 89f.
—, with Basic Tense as prefocal theme: 97
ϪЄ-, "as if": 78[84]
ϪЄ-/ЄTРЄч-, as topic: 91
ϪШ: 83, 115[31], 149[31]
—, ЄІШАNϪООС, topicalization: §2.7.2.1.2.1
—, ЄІϪШ МПАІ ϪЄ-: "by which I mean to say, that...": §2.0.1.1.2
—, ЄКϪЄОУ, ЄКϪШ ММОС ϪЄОУ: 83f.
—, ЄϪООС ϪЄ-topicalization: 95[130]
ϪЄКААС: §6.1.2.2; 149[31], 162, 163, 207
—, resumed by conjunctive: 207
ϪООУ, pronominal object of: §3.1.1.1.0.2

-ϬЄ-: 216
ϬЄ$_1$, ϬЄ$_2$: *see* Enclitics
ϬINЄ, focalization pattern as direct object of: 99

Amélineau

A 1

1 151, 152
9 112
9.4.7 182
11 35, 44
12 46, 136
14 48, 53, 171
15 127, 137
16 22, 55, 139, 171, 173
21 125
33 133
34 117
37 107[4], 204
39 35, 112, 173
41 113[24], 174
43 74
44 78
45 112
46 166, 180
48 171
51 208
52 94, 148
55 181
56 74, 78
57 47, 194[44]
58 51
61 174, 177
62f. 90
64 91, 94, 210
65 133
67 81
68 51, 93
69 90, 99, 176
70 76, 79[90], 172
71 85, 90, 99, 177
72 48, 103, 148
73 181, 182
74 177
75 58
76 132, 135, 174, 211
77 46, 49, 143[9], 161, 167, 173, 198
78 176
80 82, 90
81 103
82f. 112
87 139, 171, 174
88 104, 112, 201
89 74, 104
90 157
92 133
95 168
96 87, 125
97 30, 181
98 37
99 201
100f. 99
101 46[104]
102 33
103 139, 152[40]
104 74, 82, 174
105 139
105f. 52
106 22
108 46, 47, 76, 100, 101, 115[30], 177
109 94
110 126
111 86
112 181
113 84, 86, 96, 99, 103, 175, 177
114 87, 104, 172
118 99
121 171
122 26, 176
123 167, 178
124 104
125 88, 104, 167
130 139[35]
131 177
131f. 78
132 79[90]
133 21, 152[40]
135 79[90], 167
135f. 198
136 201
137 163[41]
150 22, 46[104], 79[90], 150
151 102
154 139
154f. 112[21]
155 22, 46, 125
158 40, 90, 104
162 175
162f. 44[99]
163 74
165 208
167 121, 157
171 48, 51
173 112[19]
175 139
177 119[46]
181 151
182f. 138
183 101
188 38, 41
193 179
194 138
199 148, 204[61]
202 30, 202
204 56, 125, 172
204f. 180-1, 206
206 192
210 38[81], 176, 206
212 76, 158
213 48, 151, 181
215 148
219 104, 179, 182
226 148
227 97, 149[34]
233 87
234 125, 194[44], 196
236 94
239 89, 180, 183
240 46
241 66[26], 161[33]
248 78
249 79
250 49, 179
251 39, 52, 179, 183
256 112, 114
258 78
260 50, 168
265 52, 89
266 125, 171
267 39
269 127
276 22, 50, 125
281 95, 133
283 180
287 47
289 106[4], 172
292f. 181
293 34, 47
295 49, 168, 178
297 47, 106[4], 174
298 50, 158
302 22, 171
304 125
305 34, 86, 183
306 22
307 150, 151
312 86
327 161
331 125
333 156
335 47
353 88
365 152
373 172
374 97
380 102
381 171
382 54
395 46
405f. 148
412 94
446 50
461 174
463 117, 173
464 158, 174
465 22

A 2

2 33, 60
3 151
5 58
7 86, 151
7f. 125
8 79[90], 91
8f. 94
9 91
10 125
11 96, 176
12 175
16 148, 166, 172, 173, 180
17 83, 125
18 49, 53, 83, 183
19 90, 100, 173-4
20 41
21 46
21f. 33, 43
24 79[90], 161
26 46f.

31 179
32 22, 34, 179
33 78, 148
34 38[81]
45 94, 100, 168
49 32, 174, 181
51 82
52 101
53 47, 74, 76, 81
53f. 74
54 91, 99
55 48
59 112
60 41, 48
61 151
62 91, 112[19]
63 94
64 196
65 42[92], 47
67 181
70 179
71 133
72 196
73 74, 138
74 132[13]
76 18[19], 34, 161[36], 175
80 104, 123
84 127
86 97
87 25, 102
90 86
92 20[31]
96 48
97 161[33]
99 180, 181, 183
100 23
102 22
104 181
105 85
106 49
107 117, 123
108 172, 180
109 49
I10 179
111 168
113f. 40, 208
114 38[81], 66, 81, 99
119 103
120 22
121 58, 196
122 136
138 44
140 91, 208
143 180
146 74, 89
148 150
151 49
153 41, 49, 112, 115, 176
155 66, 86
159 47, 181
165 54
167 179
169 152
173 180
174 53
177 52
178 139
179 123
190 179
191 53
192 30
194 90
196 48, 168
223f. 95
224 182
224f. 196
228 55
234 25, 127
236 23
238 115, 172
238f. 74, 83, 171, 183
240 200
241 181
242 147
244 137
245 22, 78[86], 96, 125
246 45, 79
247 39, 172
248 74
249f. 54, 79
252 40
254 112[19]
256 22, 152[40]
257 60
258f. 50
262 54
265 52
267 175-6
280 174
287 139
289 147
292 51, 176
293 116
293f. 174
295 168
296 43
298 47, 175, 179
299 51
299f. 78, 83
300 87
301 22, 86, 125
302 180
303 180
304 22, 35, 38
305 88
306 47
307 176
308 49
310 24[45]
312 67, 94, 102
313f. 50
315 172
317 43
318f. 86
319 51
320 175
322 125
330f. 96
332 32, 34, 48
333 39, 53, 95
334 88
335 163
336 81, 99, 158
336f. 76
338 53, 131[12]
339 96
340 76, 101
341 44, 161, 181
343 22
345 121, 126, 182
346 38
351f. 89
352 114
354 I79
356 125
357 202
358 173
360 54, 113, 171
361 25
362 78
363f. 203
364 11, 34, 161[36]
365 96
367 138
368 181
371 34, 48, 95
372 100
373 181
374 176
376 125[61], 138[33], 139[35]
378 94
378f. 54
380 32
380f. 55
381 161
382f. 174
384 179
385 90, 117
386 96
388f. 89
390 102, 208
392 95[130], 112
395 38[81]
396 21, 99, 112, 126, 157, 171-2
397 25, 42[92]
398 40, 137[28], 179, 182
400 103
401 40
402 33, 48
403 21, 82, 101, 158, 166, 183, 205
405 203
407 48
408 179-180
409 94
411 139[35]
412 81, 91, 132[13], 138
413 94
414 103
415 50
418 23
419f. 131[12]
420 21
422 96
429 179
430 84, 163, 208
431 98, 163
432 151
433 21
435 143[9], 161, 163
437 192
440 137
442f. 151
443 95[130], 148
443f. 158
447 168
449 157
451 20[31], 47
452 21
453 21, 203
455 54
458 181
461 196
462 101, 162, 173, 196
463 49
463f. 68[34], 74, 96
464 33, 53, 54, 66, 79[90], 99, 102
465 22, 23, 103
465f. 150
468 112, 174
471 152[40]
473 53, 183
473f. 41
475 103, 168
476 87
478 138
479 66
481 114
483 89
485 32, 33, 56

486 125, 132[13], 137[28]
489 42[92]
491 150, 173
492 78[86]
498 53
499 43
501 48, 179
502f. 133
503 134, 179, 181
504 172, 182
505 161[33], 206
505f. 77, 101, 161[33]
507 138
509 83, 103
510 179, 196
510f. 56-7
512 33, 83, 97
513 94, 121
514 40
516 82
518 49
518f. 94
519 35, 87, 104, 174, 176
520 99, 113
525 94
526 22, 202
527 125
528 161
529 161, I61[33], 179
530 90
535 54
540 99, 178
541 98
547 53, 179, 183
548 52

Berl. Sitz. 79

BKU

180[2] 22, 97

BMCat. see: Unpublished MSS — **BL Or.**

Cat.

41.5f. 173
42.12 96
42.14 176
42.14f. 95[130]
42.16f. 40[85]
42.21f. 34
42.22 84
42.26f. 148
42.27f. 94
42.29 53
42.32 176
42.33 176
43.6 40[85]
43.8 176
43.29 38, 143[9]

Chassinat (Ch.)

9.8ff. 122
9.30f. 49
12.19f. 135
13.8ff. 206
13.31 139
14.13ff. 135
15.14ff. 206
16f. 81
17.28f. 171
17.39ff. 116
17.47ff. 20, 22
18.13ff. 208
18.19f. 171
18.28f. 44
21.3ff. 162
21.18ff. 162
21.26f. 23
21 *passim* 106[4]
22.3f. 172
22.18f. 172
22.49ff. 119[46]
23.19ff. 44, 115
23.54ff. 25
24.27f. 58
24.53ff. 83
25.27f. 49
23.39ff. 199
26.12f. 203
26.40ff. 54
26.50ff. 49
26.51ff. 25
27.4ff. 135
27.13ff. 123
27.24 36
28.18ff. 41
28.46f. 83
29.55f. 152
30.45ff. 44
32.19f. 35
32.36ff. 49
32.48f. 173
33.16ff. 204
33.37ff. 138
34.53ff. 48
36.11ff. 202
38.10f. 138
38.35ff. 87, 104
41.12ff. 162
41.42ff. 67
42.14ff. 177
43.2ff. 173
43.38ff. 158
44.49f. 121
44.52f. 139
44f. 121
45.4ff. 212[80]
45.55ff. 198
46.12ff. 41
47.1ff. 41
48.28ff. 195
48.52ff. 195
49.8ff. 198
49.17ff. 138
50.20ff. 156, 162
51.2ff. 173
52.15ff. 107[6]
52.37ff. 167
52.50f. 121
53.7ff. 57
53.54f. 49
54.19ff. 41, 82, 99
55.1ff. 54
55.4ff. 193
55.10ff. 114
55.24ff. 82
56.28f. 126
56.29ff. 177
56.46ff. 200
56.51f. 180
56.53f. 132, 138
57.40ff. 135
57.44ff. 176
58.15ff. 206
59.17ff. 57
59.20f. 143
59.29ff. 179
59.31ff. 33, 54
59.46ff. 82
60 30
61.5ff. 173
61.25ff. 95[130]
62.3f. 137[28]
63.6 36[72]
63.9f. 114
63.12ff. 202
63f. 33
64.1ff. 33
64.19ff. 95
64f. 67
65.31f. 139[34]
65.13f. 76
68.6ff. 48
68.28f. 115
68.43ff. 210
69.45ff. 122
70.38f. 49
70.43f. 171
70.49ff. 76
71.3ff. 117
71.6ff. 179
71.19f. 121
71.31ff. 112
72.1ff. 74, 87
72.25ff. 193
73.4ff. 90
73.5ff. 96
73.11ff. 180
76.3ff. 139
76.23ff. 151
76.36f. 107[6]
76.46f. 66
77.23ff. 48
77.41ff. 175
77.51f. 135
78.2ff. 157
79.19ff. 55
79.40f. 49
79.51ff. 51
80.21ff. 197
80.31ff. 60
81.6f. 78
81.7 74
82.37ff. 117
83.13ff. 198
85.1ff. 163
85.7f. 114
85.21ff. 209
85.26ff. 100, 199
86.50f. 133
87.49ff. 207, 209
88.2f. 74
88.16f. 152[40]
88.22ff. 163[41]
89.12ff. 67[29], 102
89.33ff. 41
90.8ff. 165, 177
90.9f. 171[57]
90f. 171
91.1ff. 102
91.17ff. 112
91.20f. 48, 60
92.25ff. 50
93.22ff. 198
93.38f. 115
93.46ff. 56
93.19ff. 49
94.10ff. 198
94.31ff. 18[19]
94.51ff. 117
95.33f. 163[42]
96.5ff. 50
96.9f. 83, 103
97.35f. 22
98.21f. 196

98.36ff. 20
98.44f. 137[28]
98.47ff. 106[4]
99.2f. 139
99.21f. 172
99.30f. 180
100.52ff. 55
101.35ff. 20[31]
101.38ff. 21
102.5ff. 193
102.9f. 21
102.19ff. 41, 66, 67, 74
102.24ff. 41
103.18f. 46
103.31ff. 152[41]
103.35f. 134
104.5ff. 95
104.8f. 112
104.28ff. 204
104.37f. 53
104.39ff. 204
105.3f. 124
105.17f. 74
105.55ff. 123
106.20f. 18[19]
106.25ff. 183[86]
106.47f. 115[30]
107.32f. 152[41]
108.15ff. 132[13]
111.35ff. 134
113.9ff. 116
113.47ff. 112
114.62f. 58
114f. 205
116.36ff. 25
116.57f. 21
117.14ff. 201
117.19f. 22, 33
117.49ff. 34
118.26ff. 41
118.31f. 211
118.44f. 22
119.45ff. 94, 100
119.47ff. 56
120.25ff. 200
121.6ff. 197-8
123.18ff. 126
123.48ff. 137
124.54ff. 211
125.10ff. 54
125.23f. 126[64]
125.38ff. 148
128.33ff. 54
128.43ff. 94
129.21ff. 53
129.23ff. 162
129.36f. 181
130.30ff. 179
131.24ff. 204
132.9ff. 198
132.15ff. 179
132.26ff. 85
132.31f. 58
132f. 55
135.44f. 87
135.50ff. 40
138.52ff. 135
140.20 48
141.31f. 157
143.44ff. 152
144.2f. 176
144.10f. 147
144.46ff. 22
146.14ff. 116
146.15ff. 43
146.20 40
146.50f. 137
146.52ff. 67
147.14f. 36
147f. 138
148.14f. 138
148.47ff. 197
149.27f. 125
150.24ff. 66[24]
150.42ff. 161-2
151.4ff. 125
153.36ff. 103
154.52ff. 114
155.27f. 168
156.48f. 47
158.14ff. 112
158.25ff. 210
159.33f. 66
159f. 177
160.15ff. 204
161.1f. 133
161.19ff. 148
162.7f. 157
162.18f. 25
163.31ff. 193
164.19ff. 193
165.22f. 193
165.44ff. 172
167.47f. 152[41]
167.56ff. 22
167f. 115, 206
168.3ff. 41
168.44ff. 48
169.7f. 176
169.11ff. 96
169.22ff. 175
171.2f. 44
171.30ff. 47
173f. 112
175.32f. 137
178f. 205
179.10ff. 172
179.31ff. 134
181.4 35
181.53ff. 96
182.15ff. 54
182.57f. 173
183.1ff. 96
183.2ff. 82
183.23 38[81], 130[7]
183.27ff. 211
183.52f. 46
183.54ff. 113
183.57ff. 99
185.8ff. 162[36]
185.48ff. 193
186.7 137
186.40f. 174
186.41ff. 76
186.52ff. 137
187.2ff. 194
187f. 50
188.40ff. 87
189.2ff. 127
189.18ff. 204
189.32ff. 119
190.31ff. 198
190.52ff. 198
191.28ff. 49
191.31 36
191.36ff. 134
191.46ff. 95
192.24ff. 77
192.31ff. 157
194.24ff. 67
195.1f. 203
195.8ff. 201
195.21ff. 125
195.53ff. 202
196.10ff. 96
196.32ff. 180
197f. 171, 196
198.2f. 133
198.17f. 133
198.44ff. 195[46]
198.45ff. 167
199.8ff. 196
199.23ff. 90
199.37ff. 134
200.2f. 139
202f. 94
203.51f. 83
205.48ff. 127
207.19ff. 79
208.25ff. 55
208.43f. 21

Ench.

66a 151
66b 112, 158
67a 94, 182
67b 151
71a-b 181
72b 161
74b 94
74f. 162
78b 56
80a 48
82a 22
85a 182
87a 32
89b 50
93a 40[85]

Ep.

66 211

Jelanskaja (Gol.)

1b 49

Leipoldt

L III

13.8 180
13.9 54
13.12f. 19
13.13 51
13.13f. 177
13.15 138
13.23 138
14.15 138
14.22 138
15.14 138
15.16 48
15.21 90
15.21f. 158
15.23f. 114
16.3f. 104
16.12 192
16.22f. 201
16.24 112
17.1ff. 101
17.6 173
17.27 60[159]
18.1 192
18.3.6f. 60[159]
18.15f. 112, 156
18.18ff. 102

18.24ff.	193	36.5ff.	204	56.14	183[86]	77.19	35, 56
18.28	22	36.15	52	56.17f.	86	78.6	135
19.2	33	36.17f.	198	57.2f.	125	80.17	53
19.4ff.	201	36.24f.	85, 178	57.7	135	81.12	165
19.6	77	37.2	55	58.29	23	82.18f.	212[80]
19.16ff.	103	37.12ff.	177	58f.	58	82.28	138
19.23f.	173	38.3	112	59.8	22	82f.	198
20.5f.	114	38.14f.	121	59.22f.	34	83.7f.	50
20.16	196	38.16f.	97	60.4f.	157, 177	84.14ff.	195
20.17f.	77	38.17	210	61.1f.	137	84.20ff.	195
20f.	22	38.19f.	174	61f.	173	85.13f.	95
21.9f.	101, 176	38.24	44	62.22	135	86.4	156
21.10	82	39.9ff.	208	62.25f.	166	86.16	55
21.13f.	163	39.11f.	158	63.9ff.	51, 193	86.20	57
21.19	158	39.19ff.	42	63.20f.	193	87.2	147
22.12f.	34	39.26	48	63.21ff.	173	87.10	57
22.16	34, 57	40.6	58	64.6f.	127	87.12f.	74
22.17	21	40.11f.	100	65.3f.	199	87.19	138
23.21	139	40.14f.	203	65.24ff.	201	87.22ff.	162
23.22	137	40.20ff.	202	65f.	204	88.11.14f.	176
24.10f.	95, 163	40.27f.	197	66.2f.	165	88.11f.	178
24.12f.	173	40f.	56	66.12f.	54	88.17f.	116
24.23	208	41.2f.	135	66.21f.	117	88.18	165
25.3f.	112	41.5	203	67.5ff.	204	88.25ff.	199
25.6	51	42.3f.	57	68.2f.	163	88.27	158
25.8	138	42.19f.	79	68.11	34	88.28	138
25.17f.	81	43.5f.	52	68.14ff.	152[41]	89.6	34
25.18	172	43.26	172	68.18f.	56	90.2	20, 22
24.24f.	54	44.1f.	119[46]	69.13f.	87	90.5f.	161[36]
26.4	151	44.18	176	69.14f.	161	90.18	135
26.8ff.	74, 84	45.5	78[84]	69.18f.	86	91.4ff.	193
26.22	151	45.5f.	173	70f.	135	91.15f.	78[85]
26.25	36[75]	45.17ff.	96	70.17f.	48	92.6f.	148
27.10	133[17]	45.22ff.	82	71.14f.	58	92.10	137[28]
28.6	49	45.27	133	71.17f.	48	92.21	78
28.25f.	161	45.28	171	71.18f.	79	93.10	147
29.10	165, 174	47.3f.	55	72.2f.	94	93.18	167
29.26	193	47.4f.	177	72.21	98	93.18f.	165
29.27f.	79	47.14	107[6]	72.24f.	81	94.3f.	57
29.28	46	47.15	138	73.5f.	189[21]	95.15	132[13]
31.3ff.	204	47.19	39	73.8f.	100	95.20ff.	67
31.6f.	165	47.21f.	116	74.3f.	199	95.23f.	34
31.9	197	47.24f.	56	74.4ff.	82	96.2	57
31.22f.	67	48.6ff.	165	74.11	119[46]	96.3	127
31.27	165	48.24f.	39, 44	74.14	34	96.11	117
32.1f.	166	48.28ff.	106[4]	74.14f.	206	96.21	21
32.4f.	138	49.2	135	74.16	22	96.24f.	165
32.10f.	95	50.3f.	135	75.10	32	96.25	79
33.4	125	50.4ff.	43, 101	75.12	176	97.1f.	165, 167
33.9f.	79	51.2f.	57	75.13f.	96	97.2	174
33.26f.	200	51.20	175	75.16	55	97.14	137
34.15f.	135	52.7	175	76.6f.	147	97.19	179
34.17	21, 134	52.18ff.	39	76.8	44	98.3f.	99
34.28f.	112	54.13	96	76.12f.	125	98.4f.	180
35.2	53	54.19	58	76.15f.	178	98.11ff.	44
35.2ff.	162	55.15f.	33	76.19f.	74	98.12	25
35.6	181	56.1	121	76.22	135	98.14	99
35.20	102, 179	56.10	175	77.4	48, 74	99.1	30

99.14 54
101.11f. 165
101.14ff. 198
102.12f. 98
102.19f. 98
103.7 175
103.7f. 135
103.18f. 46
103.20 50
104.1 114
104.4f. 45
104.13 117
104.15 121
104.19f. 204
104.23ff. 163[41]
105.6 166
105.24f. 167
106.2 46
106.11f. 138
106.18f. 25, 117
106.29 25
107.1 30
107.2f. 122
107.6 40, 53, 151
107.8f. 210
107.12 25
107.17ff. 23
107.23f. 34
107f. 161[33]
108.9 79
108.12f. 207
108.13f. 49
108.28 127
109.2f. 114
109.4f. 165
109.16 179
109.19ff. 176
109f. 44
110.2f. 197
110.6f. 165
110.8f. 41, 46
110.17 46
110.18 58
111.2 30
111f. 202
112.10f. 25
112.16ff. 211
113.1ff. 122
113.5f. 122[50]
113.9f. 122
113.11 114
113.13f. 79[90], 165
113.19f. 44
114.9f. 117
114.12 34
114f. 56
115.2f. 56
115.8f. 96
115.26ff. 53
115.28 44
116.6f. 99
116.16f. 35
116.17 23
116.23f. 103
116.25ff. 25
117.5f. 23, 181
117.6.11 182
117.6f. 182
117.8 211
117.17 51
117.27f. 78
117.28f. 99
118.5f. 33[68]
118.11f. 172
118.15f. 163
118.20 151
118.25f. 204
119.7ff. 197
119.28 153
120.7f. 100
120.9 99
120.24f. 49
120.27ff. 49
121.8ff. 201
121.21f. 114
121.23f. 134
122.20 94
123.1f 74
123.2 78, 78[85]
123.8 50
123.13f. 132[13], 139
123.27 198
123.27f. 138
124.12 50
124.17f. 78[85]
124f. 198
125.7f. 51-2
125.14ff. 201
125.18ff. 198
126.1ff. 22, 122
126.5f. 22
126.16 46
126.20f. 152[38]
126.23f. 35
127.15 180
128.18 112
128.20f. 138
130.3f. 35
130.6 24
130.7f. 26, 162
131.5f. 196-7
131.10 101
131.14f. 102
131.15f. 48, 166, 168
131.20 205
132.3f. 50
132.17 112
133.20 50, 78[85]
134.3f. 205
134.2 123
134.5f. 107[6]
135.10f. 132[13]
135.28f. 174
136.4f. 116
136.28f. 174
137.14 48
137.19f. 200
137.23 45
137.25 177
138.11f. 209-210
138.26ff. 163
139.10f. 56
139.18f. 201
139.21 172
139.25ff. 202
140.8 97
140.17 100
140.30f. 48
141.20 44
141.31f. 157
142.5f. 135
142.16ff. 67
142.18f. 166
142.28f. 22
143.7f. 198
143.23f. 203
144.1 139
144.14f. 171
144.16 139
144.26 47
144.28f. 173
145.1 116
145.3 116
145.10 176
146.20ff. 104
146.23 48
146.24f. 182
147.14 45
147.16 138
148.4f. 44
I48.25ff. 196, 206
149.16ff. 196[48]
149.19 193
150.1 121
150.7 113
150.14f. 201
150.18ff. 204
150.21 114
150.29 78
151.24 114
153.10f. 49
154.11 99
154.15 135
154.27ff. 199
155.3ff. 209
156.16 176
156f. 210
157.1f. 202
157.2 178
157.11ff. 21, 130[5], 194
158.7f. 22, 198
158.28ff. 197
159.12 179
160.22f. 157
161.13 175
162.7f. 157
162.9 173
163.19f. 175
163.22ff. 121
165.13 152[40]
165.17 112
165.19 166, 178
165.44f. 172
166.22f. 24, 117, 131[12]
168.5 172
168.5ff. 22
168.26 103
169.12ff. 103, 205
169.14f. 103
169.20f. 208
169.23f. 99
170.9 47
170.19f. 99
170.22f. 181
171.9f. 49
171.20f. 117
172.10f. 134
172.18 19[22]
172.21 180
173.10 138
173.18f. 161
173.26 48
174.28f. 208
174.15 166
174.28 166
174f. 178
176.3 197
176.5f. 179
176.20f. 163
177.5 181, 183
178.21 123
179.11f 196
179.13f. 168
180.16 123
181.3 165[51]
181.10 192
181.15ff. 208
181.18ff. 134, 206[63]
181.19f. 44
182.1 55
182.20ff. 204
183.3 97

183.28 151
184.2 151
184.8 172
184.15 181
184.21f. 36
185.3 166
185.6f. 177
185.10 136
185.17f. 25
185.24ff. 103
187.8 25, 113
187.10f. 181
187.12 175
188.20f. 199
189.23 135
189.27f. 122
189.30 135
190.14f. 134
190.18 33
191.22 48
191.25ff. 81, 97
192.1 182
192.4f. 94
192.14f. 96
192.19f. 178
193.3f. 193
193.6f. 172
193.11 96
193.22 180
194.19f. 47
194.22 22
195.2ff. 147
196.5f. 122
196.16 54
196f. 121
197.6f. 156
198.14ff. 200
199.5f. 163
199.27f. 88
199.28 117
200.22 166
200.22f. 51
200f. 102
201.16 148
202.4 204
202.18f. 175
203.8 33
203.15f. 47, 67
204.5f. 24
204.6f. 46
204.8 22
204.10 179
204.12ff. 203
205.4f. 114
205.16f. 123
205.17f. 147
205.22f. 47
205.23f. 143[9]
205.28 121, 122
206.4ff. 86
206.10 121
206.7 47
206.13 81
206.21 152[40]
207.8ff. 87
207.14ff. 90
208.5 78, 176
208.8 130[7]
208.12 136
208.17 56
208.17f. 25
209.1f. 183
209.13ff. 98
209.14f. 180
210.9 182
210.7f. 95
210.13 77
210.15f. 192
210.18 22
210.18f. 182
210.19f. 192
210.21f. 84
211.2f. 204
211.8f. 162
211.10f. 41
211.11 36
212.3f. 103
212.7ff. 79
212.8f. 44
212.14f. 180
212.22 58
213.9f. 138
213.14 182
213.16f. 182
213.19 54
214.10f. 54
214.18 20[31]
215.2f. 55
215.10 173
215.18 119[46]
215.23f. 78
215.24f. 172
216.17 165
216.18f. 119[45]
217.2f. 48
217.11 172
217.23 20, 22
218.1 100
218.5ff. 77
218.14 22
219.3f. 100, 161
219.4 47
219.8ff. 198
219.10f. 121
220.2ff. 201
220.20 41
220.21 54
220.23 53
221.4f. 41, 44
221.9 21
221.11ff. 44
221.18 44
222.3 53
222.4 35, 40, 44
224.4f. 53, 209
222.8 33
222.12 44, 121
223.16 48
224.9f. 181
224.17f. 181
224.20f. 152[41]
224.21f. 67

L IV

1.2f. 181
1.14 192-3
1.23f. 47
2.3 25
2.20ff. 54
3.4 44
3.17f. 114, 201
3.18f. 198
3.26 49
4.2f. 96
4.5 53
4.9f. 55
4f. 200
5.5f. 22
5.8 44
5.21ff. 193
5.26ff. 157
6.18f. 182
6.23f. 54
7.11 114
7.11f. 55
8.4 53
8.6 107[6]
8.12 50
9.18f. 202
9.20f. 44
9.22f. 55
10.2f. 211
10.4ff. 54
11.9f. 95
11.15f. 162[38]
12.10f. 178
12.14 76
13.9 178
14.4f. 100
14.10f. 87
14.21f. 172
15.5 178
15.8f. 147
16.18f. 98, 178
17.9f. 148
17.11f. 49
18.2 96
18.16f. 197
18.18f. 45
19.14f. 125
19.19 57
19.19f. 46
20.10 33, 47
20.20f. 171
21.3f. 197
21.5 48
21.10 189[21]
21.16 34
21.16f. 32
22.1 36[75]
22.18ff. 56
22.21 119[46]
23.10ff. 209
23.20f. 127
23.22 130[7]
24.2 116
24.2f. 51
24.6f. 35, 43, 81, 95, 102
24.13f. 30, 197
24.16 30
24.19f. 197
24.20 119[46]
25.2f. 53
25.25f. 197
26.2 20[31]
26.13 163
26.15 138
28.5f. 107[6]
28.16ff. 162[38]
28.22 22
29.26 34, 152[41]
29.26f. 22
31.3ff. 202
31.4 22
31.12 107[6]
32.2f. 48
32.8 18[19]
32.14f. 189[23]
32.19ff. 200
34.7f. 139
34.9f. 163
35.18 97
35.16f. 99
35.27f. 22, 189[23]
36.2 47
36.21f. 158
37f. 193
38.15 23
38.17f. 177
38.22ff. 67

38.29 197
39.4ff. 193
40.19f. 196
40.21f. 122
41.9f. 11, 135, 193
41.16f. 107[6]
42.1ff. 57
42.2 122
42.3ff. 199
42.4f. 179
42.12f. 127
43.5 127
43.23 194
43.28 114
44.2 122
44.5 121
44.24 53
45.4 53
45.22f. 58, 208
45.24f. 157
46.18 39
47.22ff. 126
49.12 127
50.9f. 96
50.20 174
51.6f. 34
51.16f. 82
51.17 74
52.16 207
52.21f. 180
52.27 168
53.4 22
53.23 207
54.3 123
54.6ff. 55
54.16 24
54.23f. 55
54.29 45
55.20f. 30
56.6f. 204
56.23ff. 102
57.22f. 172
58.19f. 45
58.26 114
59.10 121
59.13 50
60.2ff. 207
60.15 210
60.19f. 41
60.21 45
60.27f. 173
60.28 46
61.7 161[33]
61.27f. 77, 134
61.29 74
61f. 194
62.15f. 194
62.24 194
64.6 30
64.15ff. 95, 148
64.26f. 79
65.6ff. 204
66.16ff. 198
66.17 192
66.21f. 117
66.24f. 194
67.2f. 80
67.6 114
67.7f. 113
67.21f. 208
67.24 22
67f. 180
68.10ff. 206[63]
68.17f. 157
69.13 201
69.15f. 22
69.19f. 52
70.17ff. 197
70.23 50
71.4f. 172
72.15 50
72f. 77
73.8f. 148
73.10ff. 194
73.11 21
73.14f. 133
73.19f. 46
74.6f. 45
74.13 22
74.25 200
75.20ff. 51
76.15 133
76.20ff. 100
77.2 44
78.7f. 35
78.8 57
79.14 24, 117
79f. 121
80.1f. 163
80.2 74
80.2f. 40
80.9 125
80.18 114
80.23 48
81.5 23, 53
81.25f. 210
82.1 138
82.1f. 44[99]
82.11 112, 197
82.28 24, 117
83.3 112
83.14f. 194
83.22f. 208
84.2 136
84.8 46, 180
84.10 23
84.14 44
84.15 117
84.15ff. 162
84.21 127
85.6 148
85.6f. 161[33]
85.22 114
85f. 211
86.3 126
86.8 173
86.8f. 176
87.8f. 53
88.1 144
88.1ff. 194
89.1f. 121
89.2f. 51
89.14 150
90.18 175
91.11 36[75]
91.14f. 182
91.22 179
92.2 23, 45
92.20 42
92.22f. 33
93.1f. 194
93.6 52
94.3 103
94.3ff. 83
94.15f. 50
94.23 40
95.10 53
95.10f. 161
95.17 22
96.4f. 211
96.7 79[90]
96.12f. 11
96.13 81
96.24 117
96.25 199
97.11f. 198
97.22f. 198
98.14f. 202
98.25f. 47
98.26 47
99.16 134
99.20f. 52
99.21f. 57
100.2ff. 206, 208
101.8 201
101.15ff. 199
101.17 116[36]
102.16 32
103.1 178
103.5f. 194
103.6f. 46
103.14 134
103.15f. 179
104.1 182
104.4f. 45
104.7f. 44
104.9 168
105.5 94
105.22 173
105.29 175
106.5f. 201
106.12 25
107.5f. 67
107.7f. 180
107.19 152
107.29 53
108.3 133, 134
108.5f. 51
108.17f. 163
108.21 173
109.8 40
109.9f. 55
110.9f. 46
110.19 55
111.1f. 208
111.14 47
112.7 23
112.17f. 46
112.19 176
112.20 152
112.24 23
113.5f. 199
113.19 122
113f. 211
114.18f. 193[40]
115.15 49
116.4f. 196
116.8f. 179
116.12f. 102
116.22 180
117.4f. 181
117.23 87
117.24 138
119.20f. 176
120.3f. 203
120.4 176
120.12f. 36
121.22f. 211
122.5ff. 204
122.15f. 203
122.24 22
124.7f. 52
126.6f. 134
127.25f. 138
127.29 138
128.3 132[13]
128.6f. 211
128.11f. 26
128.27 114
129.11 48
146.16 180
146.20f. 40[88]

150.4 168
152.2 21
153.13f. 180
153.16 132[13]
153.22 43
153.23f. 172
154.22 147
155.1f. 165
155.8 50
155.11ff. 197
155.14ff. 201
155.22 57
156.3 30
156.7 135
156.9ff. 203
156.19 134
156.19f. 200
156.26 40
156.26f. 88
157.2f. 53
157.12 127
157.15f. 200
157.21ff. 79, 178
159.8 48
159.11f. 38, 40
159.13 20, 22, 23
160.2f. 194
160.17f 50, 56
161.2f. 36
161.19 179
161.21f. 194
162.2ff. 84, 198
162.5 23
163.22ff. 121
164.7f. 211
164.9f. 165
165.10 180
166.3f. 151
167.18f. 182
171.1f. 199
171.3f. 196
172.10 46
172.16 135
173.1 117
173.4 55
175.2f. 136
175.10f. 25
175.11f. 171
176.3 11
178.12 57
180.3 161[33]
180.12 166
181.11 78
181.11ff. 96[135]
181.13 112
183.7 47, 98, 166
184.2 163[42]
184.5f. 102
184.7 165
184.8 179
187.9ff. 204
189.3 176
191.7f. 51
193.9 51
194.1f. 126
195.2 178
195.4 183[86]
195.6ff. 206
195.8f. 54
195.14 20[31]
195.14f. 202
197.9 47
198.20 24[45]
199.2 46
199.7f. 80
199.15f. 107[6]
200.20 78
204.21ff. 200[53]
205.10f. 166
205.18f. 175
206.12f. 22
206.18 53
206.22 47, 122
206.27ff. 157
207.4f. 171
207.6f. 176
207.26 194
207.28ff. 197
208.10f. 133

Leyd.

301 25
302 36
311 165
328 121, 210
345 134
347 32
348 32
355 203
365 95
390 86
410 84, 94

Ming.

84 208
89 204
92 151
288 74, 100
318 67, 90

Miss.

231 133
234 208
278 86
279 76, 101
279f. 46
280 37
281 33, 132[14]
282 45
283 30, 81, 94, 133, 158
284 125, 179

Mun.

92 138
95 138
96 81, 87, 93
98 103
102 83, 132[13]
103 168
104 131[12]
142 96
160 46
163 179
177 114[36]

Or.

153.8f. 147
153.27ff. 161
153-155 *passim* 174
156.7ff 89
156.12ff. 107[6]
159.34ff. 38[81], 130[7]
159.51f. 147
159.52f. 125
159f. 48[114], 112[19]
160.3f. 86
160.4f. 147
160.27f. 158
160.34ff. 49
160.43f. 125
160.47ff. 147
160.50ff. 147
161.37ff. 79
163.19ff. 87
166.42ff. 136

Quot.

(2) 182

RE 10

159a 13ff. 78[86], 96[135]
159b 7 173
159b 30ff. 78
160a 16ff. 174
160a 27ff. 160
160a 32f. 193
160a 37 94
160b 17f. 208
161a 27ff. 172
161a 30 180
161a 31ff. 57
162a 1f. 171
162a 2f. 121
162a 5 49
162a 8f. 181
162a 10 138
162a 13ff. 52
162b 14f. 181
162b 16 48, 53
162b 23f. 97
163a 15f. 94
163a 17f. 158
163a 33 143
163a 36f. 179
163a 38 171
164a 2f. 175
164a 4 53
164a 27f. 179
164b 31f. 179
164b 33 179
164b 35f. 181

RE 11

15a 7ff. 208
15b 1 175
16a 17 33, 48
16a 27f. 60
16a 39ff. 94
16b 9f. 131[12], 180
16b 17f. 180
16b 20 152
17a 2 166
17a 12f. 161
18a 4f. 180
18a 11ff. 192, 193
18a 24f. 168, 175

Rossi 2/3

12 133, 148
13 114[29]
27 125, 178
34 125

58 158[14]
75 132[13], 138
76 86, 89
77 125

Ryl. Cat. see: Unpublished MSS — **Ryl.** (Manchester)

Teza

683 137
684 22, 96, 139[35]

Wessely:

Wess. 9

86a 16ff. 82
86b 21ff. 86
87a 31ff. 161
88b 11ff. 202
90b 13ff. 150
91a 26ff. 76
91b 6ff. 44[99]
94b 10ff. 203
96b 16ff. 198
98b 11ff. 96
105b 16ff. 132[13]
105b 24ff. 132[13]
106a 7ff. 86, 104
108b 23ff. 95
110a 5ff. 131[12]
110a 9f. 81, 94
110a 11f. 79
110a 14ff. 39
110b 18ff. 95
111a 29ff. 122
111f. 95
112a 4f. 36
112b 27f. 22
113a 27f. 180
115b 5ff. 172
115b 8ff. 174
117a 5f. 81, 94
117a 10ff. 32, 33
117a 15ff. 211
117a 23ff. 97
117a 24ff. 51
118a 23ff. 116
118a 24ff. 40
118b 11ff. 205
119a 21ff. 125
119a 27ff. 107[6]
120b 3ff. 49
121b 16ff. 47
122d 11ff. 201
124a 12ff. 211
125b 3ff. 208
125b 18ff. 180
127b 8ff. 97
128a 29ff. 99
129a 6f. 171
129b 30f. 22
131a 2ff. 84, 91
131a 9f. 22
131b 2ff. 133
132a 4f. 147
132a 28f. 22
133b 10ff. 94
138b 3ff. 208
138b 18ff. 102
138c 19f. 45
138c-d 22
139a 20f 117
139a 24ff. 206
139d 12f. 182
139d 26f. 182
140a 13ff. 58
140c 9ff. 50-1
141a 17 160
141b 24f. 152[40]
141d 6f. 147
142a 1ff. 209
142d 7ff. 126[64]
143d 15ff. 107[6]
144c 4f. 33
144c 24ff. 84, 103, 183
144d 8ff. 208
145a 11f. 126
145b 2ff. 180
145d 17ff. 180
146a 1ff. 36
146a 10ff. 36
146c 6ff. 65
147b 10ff. 39
147c 1ff. 49
147c 22ff. 86
147d 28f. 33, 176
148a 1f. 22
148a 16ff. 97
148b 16ff. 95, 148
148b-c 126
149b 41
149d 20f. 132[13]
150a 14ff. 22
150d 22f. 22
151c 1ff. 174
152c 17ff. 84
153c 2f. 99[146]
154d 4f. 125
155b 3ff. 22
156a 4ff. 181
156a 18ff. 175
156c 7ff. 48
158a 30ff. 81, 93, 104
158b 24ff. 212
160c 24ff. 180
161a 27f. 143
161b 10f. 179
161c 11ff. 157
161d 10ff. 163
162c 15ff. 174
163a 33 143
163f. 209-210
165c 27ff. 97
168b 13f. 138
171b 30f. 180
171c 2ff. 83
171c 6f. 83
171c 7 103
171c 15f. 168
171c 31f. 180
171d 1ff. 83
172d 6ff. 172
174d 29ff. 98
176a 3ff. 182
176a 22ff. 182
178a 25ff. 99[146]
179b 30ff. 152[38]
179d 7f. 114

Wess. 18

97b 9ff. 36
99.17ff. 106[4]
128b 1ff. 57
140b 8ff. 86, 172

Young

p. 11 181
p. 13 49, 175

Zoëga (Borg.)

No. 194 p. 16 174
No. 200 p. 411 202
No. 306 p. 257 159[20]
No. 247 Cat. p. 603 147

UNPUBLISHED MSS

Berl.

1611 5 p. 36 211
1611 7 p. 369 134
1613 1 p. 29 50
1613 2 p. 319 18[19]
1613 3 p. 320 52
1613 6 ro 134

BM (Cat.), BL Or. (London)

192 p. 273 (Cat. 77) 137
194 f. 3 (Cat. 79) 125
195 (Cat. 80) 57
196b (Cat. 81) 148
197 (Cat. 81) 90
198 1 vo (Cat. 82) 206
199 p. 361 (Cat. 83) 158
202 p. 184 89, 98, 178[77]
204 p. 77 25
209 p. 39 21
211 2 ro (Cat. 92) 86
213 p. 38 (Cat. 94) 76
230 p. 147 (Cat. 104) 125
253 p. 57 (Cat. 112) 78[86], 95, 96[135]
253 p. 58 (Cat. 112f.) 22
991 ro (Cat. 411) 143[9]
992 vo 46

BL Or.

3581 A
66 (No. 198) f. 2 vo 130[7]
71 (No. 202) p. 184 98
131 p. 252f. 52
6807 (2) 21[31]
6954 (12) vo 96[134]
8800 4 vo 143
18 p. 57 181

Cairo

8007 203

Cl. Press (Oxford)

21b ro 179
22 p. 357 138
22 p. 363 97
22 p. 365 95
33 l 74

Duke Univ.

2 vo 137

IF (Cairo)

67 22
85 46
88 35
108 112
188 46
268 161

Paris, Bibl. Nationale (P)

130[1] 15 ro 50, 53
35 p. 143 113, 176
36 p. 153 123, 133
37 p. 157 208, 212
132 p. 327 173
134 p. 331 174
135 p. 333f. 39
136 p. 335 177
136 p. 336 133
137 p. 338 52, 175
139 p. 345 45, 78, 166, 174
139 p. 346 30
140 p. 347f. 168
130[2] 1 p. 77 174, 182
2 p. 80 173, 180
5 p. 85 22
6 p. 87f. 147, 176
6 p. 88 162[39]
7 p. 89 171
7 p. 90 158
9 p. 238 161[35]
22 p. 549 173
22 p. 550 143
24 p. 554 175
24 p. 554f. 49
24 p. 555 30
33 p. 33 103
36 vo 97
37 ro 21, 31
40 p. 104 47
41 p. 106 202
42 p. 108 32
45 p. 219 97
46 p. 220 143
47 p. 223 86, 143
47-8 p. 223f. 39
48 p. 224 20[31], 22
52 p. 309 181
53 p. 311 138
54 p. 314 156, 179
55 p. 316 21
59 p. 70 21, 35
61 p. 73 176
62 p. 75 21, 35-6
63 p. 77 22, 35
65 ro 97
67 p. 178 122
70 p. 183 90
71 p. 185 88, 104, 167
74 p. 191 95
75 ro 83, 125, 202
86 ro 143
99 p. 195 46
102 p. 22 149[34]
103 ro 94
105 p. 343 40
105 p. 344 138
107 ro 22
109 ro 53
110 vo 101[159]
113 p. 108 37
121 vo 93
137 p. 337 125
130[4] 50 p. 220 22
54 p. 94 55
58 p. 14 33
84 p. 50 90
88 ro 26
89 vo 26
93 vo 133, 152[40]
97 ro 132, 137
100 vo 208
102 vo 163
103 p. 122 66, 89
104 p. 123 30
105 p. 125 40, 43[96], 49, 99
105 p. 126 56
110 p. 552 32
115 p. 17 95[130]
116 p. 19 208
116 p. 20 210
118 p. 23 47, 136
120 p. 28 91
122 p. 32 53, 55
123 p. 33 58
124 p. 36 22
125 p. 37 34, 56
126 p. 40 47
127 p. 42 21[31], 58
131 vo 50
139 ro 34, 35, 53
139 vo 211
140 vo 21
141 ro 180
141 vo 33
156 p. 364 171
156 p. 365 52
130[5] 15 ro 148
16 ro 21
16 vo 30
17 p. 107 49, 125
19 p. 103 3[3]
19 p. 104 46
21 ro 21[32]
22 p. 549 21, 21[31], 173
22 p. 550 193
24 p. 181 176
24 p. 182 23
34 p. 10 114
35 vo 18[19], 179
36 vo 50
37 vo 51
38 vo 203
39 ro 57
40 p. 43 51, 81, 181
48 vo 91
50 p. 220 76
50 p. 221 151
52 vo 172
55 p. 97 87
56 p. 82 198
59 vo 148
61 p. 35 82
64 p. 176 46
66 p. 73 60, 95[130], 163[42]
69 p. 63 46, 134
70 p. 87 78
70 p. 88 88
71 p. 263 97[136]
71 p. 264 53
79 p. 1 27, 82
83 p. 111 60, 193
90 ro 90
95 vo 148
97 ro 102[159]
98 ro 125[59]
100 p. 28 22
111 ro 23
119 ro 66
125 vo 95
133 ro 174
131[4] 87 p. 131 51
87 p. 131f. 90
87 p. 132 67
88 p. 133 84
88 p. 134 41
90 p. 138 41
141 vo 134
142 p. 20 52
144 p. 168 85
156 p. 40 95
157 vo 51, 197
158 ro 88
160 p. 40 196[48]
161 vo 46
131[5] 4 ro 22
4 vo 83
13 ro 45
16 vo 182
19 p. 43 18[19], 126
23 p. 79 136
23 ro-vo 176
28 ro 21
36 p. 242 177
43 p. 100 56, 196
47 ro 85, 131[12]
56 ro 40
63 vo 56
65 vo 204
67 vo 84
76 vo 210
79 p. 84 208
133 ro 45
131[6] 13 vo 196, 204[61]
15 ro 127
19 p. 43 96
20 p. 24 163
23 p. 79 51
23 p. 80 133, 139
30 p. 145 50, 175
30 p. 146 125
31 vo 198
43 ro 196
44 p. 115 107[6], 173
81 ro 173
88 ro 172
105 ro 179
108 ro 172
117 vo 86
131[7] 25 ro 22, 50, 193
39 ro 60
39 vo 113
45 ro 22, 163, 182
45 vo 127
71 ro 59
131[8] 84 vo 22
94 ro 106[4], 207
105 ro 112
109 vo 138

Ryl. (Cat.) (Manchester)

67 p. 395 (Cat. 31) 148
67 p. 396 33
p. 399 (Cat. 32) 49, 53, 179
p. 405 99
68 p. 260 (Cat. 32) 112
p. 262 (Cat. 32) 101
69 p. 53 55
70 p. 242 (Cat. 34) 85
p. 244 (Cat. 34f.) 160
p. 245 (Cat. 34) 85, 86
p. 249 (Cat. 35) 172

Thompson (Cambridge)		**ViK** (Vienna) (**K**)	
D 59	45	913	24
H 1 ro	46	926	79
2 vo	46	927	22
3 ro	47	928	52, 202
K 3 vo	137, 196	933	95, 112, 210
L ro	207	934	19

9028	78, 133, 134	9298	18^{19}, 151
9040	115	9315	78
9068	85	9316	65, 99
9100	106^{4}	9317	95
9223	Add.		
9291	22		
9292	107^{6}		
9294	24, 25, 125		